

[illegible]

THE ANCESTRY OF
SAMUEL STERLING SHERMAN
AND MARY WARE ALLEN

FREDERICK S. SHERMAN
CALIFORNIA GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY

Tuesday, 8
Ch.
Fairfax
F.H.S. Co.
Set off
Early was
a way to
I had a pen
Drove on
CT. to see Dr.
d. Caydonville
St. Louis
Capt. Ephraim
Stirling are be
did not longer
Greece
dred, "cross-country
Withers Road, where
B. Withersfield is a
a huge historic dig
copy of Adams & Stiles
at which is full of
very early days. I had
a big book about
and a set.

THE ANCESTRY OF
EL STERLING SHERMAN
MARY WARE ALLEN
FREDERICK S. SHERMAN
CALIFORNIA GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY

THE ANCESTRY OF
SAMUEL STERLING SHERMAN
AND MARY WARE ALLEN



Frederick S. Sherman

1928–2008

THE ANCESTRY OF
SAMUEL STERLING SHERMAN
AND MARY WARE ALLEN

INCLUDING THE FAMILIES

*SHERMAN
OF VERMONT AND CONNECTICUT*

*ALLEN, BRADFORD, COPELAND, DEWEY, KENT, MINOT,
RUGGLES, WARE AND WELD
OF NORFOLK COUNTY, MASSACHUSETTS*

*HARDIN, JACOB, SMITH AND JOHNSON
OF KENTUCKY*

FREDERICK S. SHERMAN

COMPILED AND EDITED BY MEMBERS OF THE
CALIFORNIA GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY



OAKLAND, CALIFORNIA

2017

Library of Congress Control Number: 2016950492
ISBN 978-0-9785694-6-4

© 2017 California Genealogical Society
All Rights Reserved, including the right of reproduction in whole or part in any form

Printed in the United States of America

Published by the California Genealogical Society & Library
2201 Broadway LL2
Oakland, CA 94612-3031
Telephone: 510.663.1358
Website: www.CaliforniaAncestors.org
Email: contact@CaliforniaAncestors.org

CONTENTS

List of Illustrations.....	xv
Introduction.....	xix
Preface and Acknowledgments	xxi
Chapter One: Parents.....	I
Samuel Sterling Sherman and Mary Ware Allen	I
Chapter Two: Grandparents.....	13
Frederick Sterling Sherman and Evelyn Johnson Hardin	13
Russell Carpenter Allen and Ella Bradford Copeland	20
Chapter Three: Great-Grandparents	31
Samuel Sterling Sherman and Eliza Dewey	31
Lemuel Smith Hardin and Annie Overton Jacob	38
Joseph Henry Allen and Hannah/Anna Minot Weld	45
Robert Morris Copeland and Josephine Gannett Kent	51
Chapter Four: Second Great-Grandparents	63
Sterling Sherman and Jane Noble	63
William Dewey and Hannah Bond	66
John J. Hardin and Sarah Ellen Smith	67
John Jeremiah Jacob Jr. and Evelyn Johnson	78
Rev. Joseph Allen and Lucy Clark Ware	81
Capt. William Gordon Weld and Hannah Minot	85
Benjamin Franklin Copeland and Julia Fellows Ruggles	87
Rev. Benjamin Kent and Eleanor Bradford	89
Chapter Five: Third Great-Grandparents	93
Enoch Sherman and Catharine Jane Seeley	93
Luke Noble and Mary McCleary	94

Unknown Dewey and Rebecca Unknown	96
Dea. Henry Bond and Hannah Stearns	96
Martin D. Hardin and Elizabeth Logan	97
Horace Smith and Eleanor Fulkerson	104
John Jeremiah Jacob Sr. and Anne Overton Fontaine	106
Darwin Johnson and Edward-Anne Payne	106
Phineas Allen and Ruth Smith	107
Rev. Henry Ware Sr. and Mary Clark	109
Eleazar Weld and Mary Hatch	110
Jonas Clarke Minot and Hannah Speakman	111
Nathaniel Copeland and Mary Page	113
Hon. Nathaniel Ruggles and Sarah Fellows	114
Samuel Kent and Rhoda Hill	115
Joseph Nash Bradford and Ann Tufts	116
Chapter Six: Fourth Great-Grandparents.....	121
Josiah Sherman and Miriam Gregory	121
Lt. Samuel Seeley and Sarah Silliman	122
Reuben Noble and Ann Ferguson	124
Daniel McCleary and Mary Mulliken	125
Lt. Col. William Bond and Lucy Brown	126
Capt. Phineas Stearns and Hannah Bemis	128
Col. John Hardin and Jane Davies	128
Benjamin Logan and Ann Montgomery	133
Thomas Smith and Mary Unknown	136
Abraham (Abram) Fulkerson and Elizabeth Black	137
William Jacob and Mary Monk	138
Aaron Fontaine and Barbara Terrill	139
James Johnson and Nancy Payne	141
James Orlando Payne and Tabitha Price	142
Noah Allen Jr. and Abigail Ellis	144
Asa Smith and Meriam Kingsbury	145
John Ware and Martha Prentice	145
Rev. Jonas Clark and Lucy Bowes	146
Capt. Joseph Weld and Martha Child	147
Jabez Hatch and Mary Fisher	148
Stephen Minot III and Sarah Clarke	149

Thomas Speakman and Mary Warner	150
Capt. Abraham Copeland and Elizabeth Tupper	152
Benjamin Page and Abigail Warner	154
Capt. Joseph Ruggles and Rebeckah Curtis	154
Cornelius Fellows and Sarah Williams	155
Lt. Samuel Kent Sr. and Rebecca Adams	156
Abraham Hill and Susanna Wellington	156
Capt. Job Bradford and Elizabeth Parkman	157
Chapter Seven: Fifth Great-Grandparents	159
Enos Sherman and Abigail Walker	159
Enoch Gregory and Esther Smith	159
Capt. Nathaniel Seeley and Elizabeth Jackson	160
Dea. Daniel Silliman and Sarah Burr	161
Moses Noble and Mary Grant	161
Samuel Ferguson and Eleanor Unknown	162
John Mulliken and Unknown	164
Jonas Bond Esq. and Hannah Bright	164
Jonathan Brown and Elizabeth Simonds	164
Josiah Stearns and Susannah Ball	165
Capt. Jonathan Bemis and Huldah Livermore	166
Martin Hardin and Lydia Waters.....	166
Nathaniel Davies and Unknown.....	168
David Logan and Jane McKinley	168
William Montgomery Sr. and Jean Patterson	169
Dirck Volkertsen (aka Richard Fulkerson) and Neeltje (aka Elenor) Unknown..	170
Robert Black and Elizabeth Love	171
Zachariah Jacob and Susannah Unknown	172
Renaldo Monk and Rachel Unknown	172
Rev. Peter Fontaine and Sarah Wade	172
Richmond Terrell IV and Ann Overton	174
Col. Robert Johnson and Jemima Suggett	174
Henry Payne and Anne Lane	175
Edward Payne and Ann Holland Connyers	176
Robert Price and Mary Lewis	177
Noah Allen Sr. and Sarah Gay	178
James Ellis and Tabitha Mason	179

Henry Smith and Ruth Barber	179
Col. Seth Kingsbury and Meriam Holbrook	179
Capt. Joseph Ware and Hannah Wood	180
Dea. Henry Prentice and Elizabeth Rand	181
Capt. Thomas Clark and Mary Bowen	181
Rev. Nicholas Bowes and Lucy Hancock	181
Lt. Joseph Weld and Sarah Faxon	182
Benjamin Child and Grace Morris	183
Josiah Hatch and Desire Hawes	183
John Fisher and Sarah Harris	184
Stephen Minot II and Sarah Wainwright	184
Jonas Clarke and Grace Tilley	185
William Speakman and Hannah Hackerel.....	186
Gilbert Warner and Sarah Wass	186
Samuel Copeland Jr. and Mary Owen	187
Israel Tupper Jr. and Mary Bourne	188
Edward Page and Ruth Jepson	189
Nathaniel Warner and Hannah Mountfort	189
Joseph Ruggles and Joanna White	190
Lt. Isaac Curtis and Mehitabel Craft	190
Capt. Jonathan Fellows Jr. and Elizabeth Norwood	191
Capt. John Williams and Elizabeth Williams	191
Joseph Kent and Rebecca Chittenden	192
Lt. Joseph Adams and Rachel Allen	192
Zachariah Hill and Rebecca Cutter	192
Thomas Wellington and Cherry Adams	193
Capt. Gershom Bradford and Priscilla Wiswall	193
Samuel Parkman and Dorcas Bowes	194
Chapter Eight: Sixth Great-Grandparents	195
Benjamin Sherman and Rebeckah Phippen	195
Samuel Walker and Abigail Butler	196
Ens. Samuel Gregory and Mary Sillaven/Silliman	196
Samuel Smith and Deborah Jackson	197
Nathaniel Seeley and Hannah Odell	197
Joseph Jackson Jr. and Elizabeth Sanford	198
Robert Silliman Jr. and Ruth Treadwell	198

Capt. John Burr and Catherine Wakeman	198
Sgt. Luke Noble and Ruth Wright	199
Sgt. Joseph Grant and Mary Warren	199
Col. Jonas Bond and Grace Coolidge	200
Nathaniel Bright and Mary Coolidge	200
Capt. Abraham Brown and Mary Hyde	201
Joseph Simonds and Mary Tidd	201
John Stearns and Abigail Fiske	202
James Ball and Elizabeth Fiske	202
Jonathan Bemis and Anna Livermore	202
Dea. Thomas Livermore and Mary Bright	203
Mark Hardin and Mary Unknown	203
Thomas Waters Jr. and Rosa Wickliffe	205
Owen Davis and Nathaniel Davie	206
Benjamin McKinley and Unknown	207
Volker Dircksen and Dina van Leeuwen	207
John Jacob Jr. and Mary Swanson	208
Rev. James Fontaine and Anne Elizabeth Boursiquot	208
Joseph Wade and Sarah Lide	210
Richmond Terrell III and Unknown	210
Capt. James Overton and Elizabeth Garland	210
Col. William Johnson and Elizabeth Cave	211
Lt. James Suggett and Jemima Spence	212
James Lane and Lydia Hardage	214
William Payne Jr. and Alicia Jones	215
Capt. Henry Conyers and Jannette Pattison	215
Joseph Allen and Hannah Sabine	216
Jonathan Gay and Mary Bullard	217
Joseph Ellis and Elizabeth Metcalf	217
Ebenezer Mason and Hannah Clark	218
Samuel Smith and Sarah Clark	218
Zechariah Barber and Abiel Ellis	219
Dea. Samuel Kingsbury and Joanna Guild	219
Ens. Daniel Holbrook and Elizabeth Clark	219
Capt. John Ware and Joanna Gay	220
Eleazar Wood and Dorothy Badcock	220
Solomon Prentice and Hepzibah Dunn or Dunton	221

William Rand and Persis Pierce	222
John Clarke and Ann Bird	222
Isaac Bowen and Hannah Winchester	222
Capt. Nicholas Bowes and Dorcas Champney	222
Bishop John Hancock and Elizabeth Clark	223
John Weld and Margaret Bowen	225
Thomas Faxon Jr. and Deborah Thayer	226
Benjamin Child and Mary Bowen	227
Lt. Edward Morris and Grace Bett	227
Samuel Hatch and Mary Doty	228
Capt. John Hawes and Desire Gorham	228
Col. Stephen Minot and Mary Clark	229
Col. Francis Wainwright and Sarah Whipple	230
Capt. Timothy Clarke and Sarah Richardson	230
William Tilley and Isabella Harris	231
John Wass and Ann Wilmot	232
Samuel Copeland Sr. and Mary Kingman	233
Nathaniel Owen and Deborah Parmenter	233
Dea. Israel Tupper and Elizabeth Bacon	234
Nathan Bourne and Mary Bassett	234
Edward Page and Abiel Thornton	235
John Jepson and Ruth Gardner	235
Philemon Warner and Abigail Tuttle	235
John Mountfort and Mary Cock	236
Capt. Samuel Ruggles and Martha Woodbridge	236
Benjamin White and Susanna Unknown	237
Isaac Curtis and Hannah Polley	238
Nathaniel Craft and Patience Topliffe	239
Jonathan Fellows and Hannah Dutch	239
Caleb Norwood and Alice Donnell	240
Ens. Joseph Williams and Abigail Davis	240
John Williams and Sarah Weld	240
John Kent and Hannah Grissell	241
Steven Chittenden and Mehitabel Buck	242
Joseph Adams and Margaret Eames	242
Joseph Allen and Anna Brazier	243
Abraham Hill and Sarah Cooper	243

Dea. John Cutter and Lydia Harrington	244
Joseph Wellington and Elizabeth Straight.....	245
Samuel Bradford and Hannah Rogers	245
Rev. Ichabod Wiswall and Priscilla Pabodie	246
William Parkman and Elizabeth Adams	247
Chapter Nine: Seventh Great-Grandparents	249
Hon. Samuel Sherman and Sarah Mitchell	249
Benjamin Phippen and Wilmot Yeo	250
Thomas Noble and Hannah Warriner	250
Joseph Wright and Ruth Sheldon	251
Capt. William Bond and Sarah Biscoe	251
Ens. John Coolidge Jr. and Hannah Livermore.....	252
Dea. Henry Bright and Anna Goldstone	253
Simon Coolidge and Hannah Barron	253
Jonathan Brown and Mary Shattuck	254
Job Hyde and Elizabeth Fuller	254
William Simonds and Judith Phippen	254
John Tidd and Rebecca Wood	255
Samuel Stearns and Hannah Manning	255
John Fiske Jr. and Abigail Park	256
John Ball Jr. and Sarah Bullard	256
Lt. Nathan Fiske and Elizabeth Frye	256
John Bemis and Mary Harrington.....	257
Daniel Livermore and Mary Unknown	257
Samuel Livermore and Anna Bridge	258
Martyn Hardewyn and Magdalena du Soisson	258
Thomas Waters Sr. and Mary Lloyd	261
Dirck Volkerts and Maria de Witt	261
Frederick Hendricksen van Leeuvin and Dina Janse	262
John Jacob and Anne Cheney	262
Richmond Terrell II and Unknown	263
William Overton and Elizabeth Waters	263
Edward Garland Sr. and Martha Jane Unknown and Jane Jennings	264
Benjamin Cave and Hannah Bledsoe	264
James Suggett and Katherine Lewis	265
Capt. Patrick Spence and Jemima Pope	266

William Payne and Elizabeth Pope	267
Edward Jones and Alicia Samford	267
William Lane and Martha Carr	268
James Hardwick and Elizabeth Unknown	269
James Allen and Anna Guild	269
William Sabin (or Sabine) and Mary Wright	270
John Gay and Joanna Hooker	271
Nathaniel Bullard and Mary Richards	272
John Ellis and Joan Unknown	272
John Metcalf and Mary Chickering	273
Thomas Mason and Marjery Partridge	273
Benjamin Clark and Dorcas Morse	274
Henry Smith and Elizabeth Unknown	274
Joseph Clarke and Alice Fenn	275
Capt. George Barber and Elizabeth Clarke	275
Thomas Ellis and Mary Wight	276
Sgt. Eleazar Kingsbury and Esther Judson	276
Dea. John Guild and Sarah Fisher	277
Eleazar Holbrook and Sarah Pond	277
David Clark and Mary Wheelock	277
Robert Ware and Margaret Hunting	278
John Gay and Joanna Hooker	278
Nicholas Wood and Mary Pidge and Mary Williams.....	278
Robert Badcock	280
Henry Prentice and Joane Unknown	280
Sgt. Thomas Rand and Sarah Edenden	281
John Clarke Sr. and Abigail Atherton	281
Thomas Bird and Thankful Atherton	282
Lt. Henry Bowen and Elizabeth Johnson	283
Josiah Winchester and Mary Lyon	283
Capt. Daniel Champney and Dorcas Bridge	284
Dea. Nathaniel Hancock and Mary Prentice	284
Rev. Thomas Clarke and Mary Bulkeley	284
Capt. Joseph Weld and Elizabeth Wise	285
Griffith Bowen and Margaret Fleming	286
Thomas Faxon Sr. and Joan Fawdry	287
Richard Thayer and Dorothy Mortimore	288

Walter Hatch and Elizabeth Holbrook	288
Edward Doty and Faith Clark	289
Edmund Hawes and Unknown	289
Capt. John Gorum and Desire Howland	290
Capt. John Minot and Lydia Butler	291
Capt. Christopher Clark and Rebecca Eire	292
Francis Wainwright and Philippa Sewall	293
Capt. John Whipple and Martha Reyner	294
Elder Jonas Clark and Elizabeth Clark	294
Amos Richardson and Mary Smith	295
Capt. Thomas Wass and Alice Unknown	296
Richard Wilmot and Unknown	296
John Copeland and Ruth Newcomb	296
John Kingman and Desire Harris	297
Nathaniel Owen Sr. and Mary Unknown	297
Joseph Parmenter and Mary Marsh	298
Capt. Thomas Tupper and Martha Mayhew	298
Nathaniel Bacon Jr. and Sarah Hinckley	299
Elisha Bourne and Patience Skiff	300
Col. William Bassett and Rachel Willison/Williston	300
Edward Page Sr. and Elizabeth Bushnell	301
Robert Thornton and Mary Doling	302
John Jepson Sr. and Emm Unknown	302
Richard Gardner and Anna Rolfe	303
Ens. Daniel Warner Jr. and Sarah Dane	304
Simon Tuttle and Sarah Cogswell	304
Edmund Mountfort and Elizabeth Farnum	305
Joseph Cock and Susannah Upsall	305
Lt. Samuel Ruggles and Hannah Fowle	306
Rev. John Woodbridge and Mercy Dudley	306
John White Sr. and Frances Unknown	307
William Curtis and Sarah Eliot	307
John Polley and Susannah Bacon	308
Lt. Samuel Craft and Elizabeth Seaver	309
Elder Samuel Topliffe and Patience Somes	309
Corp. Isaac Fellows and Joanna Boreman	310
John Dutch and Elizabeth Roper	310

Francis Norwood and Elizabeth Coldam	311
Samuel Donnell and Alice Chadbourne	311
Capt. Steven Williams and Sarah Wise	312
Ens. John Davis and Mary Torrey	313
Lt. Samuel Williams and Sarah May	313
Francis Grissell and Mary Unknown	313
Isaac Chittenden and Martha Vinal	314
Lt. Isaac Buck and Frances Marsh	315
John Adams and Anne Unknown	316
Thomas Eames and Mary Blanford	317
Walter Allen and Rebecca Unknown	318
Zechariah Hill and Deborah Norton	319
Timothy Cooper Jr. and Sarah Morse	319
William Cutter and Rebecca Rolfe	320
John Harrington and Hannah Winter	320
Roger Wellington and Mary Palgrave	320
Capt. Thomas Straight and Elizabeth Kemball	321
Maj. William Bradford and Alice Richards	321
John Rogers Jr. and Elizabeth Pabodie	322
Elder Thomas Wiswall and Elizabeth Unknown	322
William Pabodie and Elizabeth Alden	323
Elias Parkman Jr. and Sarah Trask	324
Alexander Adams and Mary Coffin	324
Appendix A: Unfinished Chapter	325
Appendix B: Pedigree Charts.....	327
Appendix C: Sherman Manuscript Collection	333
Appendix D: In Memoriam of Frederick Sterling Sherman.....	351
Index.....	353

ILLUSTRATIONS

Frederic S. Sherman, son and portrait of ancestor.....	Cover
Samuel Sterling Sherman (1898–1933), undated	2
Mary Ware Allen, circa 1897	4
Mary Ware Allen and dog, circa 1902	4
Mary Ware Allen (1897–1992) wearing her wedding dress, 1924	5
Mary Ware (Allen) Sherman, Samuel Sterling Sherman and child	6–7
Rick with sister, Eleanor, undated.....	8
Samuel Sterling Sherman with son, Rick, undated	8
Samuel Sterling Sherman fishing, undated.....	8
Mary Ware (Allen) and Samuel Sterling Sherman with children, undated	9
Nannies, Maria Delgadito and Maria Rodriguez, with Rick, 1932	10
Rick and his dog, undated.....	10
On the hay wagon at the Allen Ranch, 1938.....	10
Butler Etter Ward, Rick's stepfather, Bonita, California, 1962	11
Portrait of Frederick Sterling Sherman (1853-1935), undated	13
Frederick Sterling Sherman standing, undated.....	14
Frederick S. Sherman and Evelyn Johnson (Hardin) Sherman on a bench	15
Frederick S. Sherman golfing with President William Howard Taft	16–17
Evelyn Johnson Hardin (1870–1957), circa 1870s.....	18
Evelyn Johnson Hardin in ball gown, undated	18
Portrait of Evelyn Johnson Hardin, undated.....	18
Evelyn Johnson Hardin, circa 1890s.....	18
Ellen (Hardin) Walworth (Aunt Nellie), undated	19
Russell Carpenter Allen, circa 1879	20
Russell Carpenter Allen, undated	20
Russell Carpenter Allen leaning on wagon, undated	21
Allen Ranch, Dehesa, California, circa 1883	21

Railroad cars at the ranch, undated	22
Sweetwater Fruit Company, Bonita, California, 1896	23
Russell Carpenter Allen, Sweetwater Fruit Company, Bonita, California, 1914.....	23
Ella Bradford Copeland, 1868	24
Ella Bradford Copeland, circa 1880s	25
Ella Bradford (Copeland) Allen, Castleton, Vermont, 1880s.....	25
First Russell Carpenter Allen family home.....	26
Children of Russell Carpenter Allen and Ella Bradford (Copeland) Allen.....	27
Allen Family, undated	29
Ella Bradford (Copeland) Allen (1858–1949), undated.....	30
Samuel Sterling Sherman (1815–1914), undated	32
Samuel Sterling Sherman, Chicago, circa 1914	35
Eliza (Dewey) Sherman (1817–1900), undated	36
Homes of Samuel S. & son Frederick S. Sherman, North State Street	37
Certificate of Marriage for Samuel S. Sherman and Eliza Dewey	38
Lemuel Smith Hardin (center) and unidentified family members.....	40
Lemuel Smith Hardin (1840–1909), undated.....	43
Annie Overton Jacob (1846–1901), undated.....	44
Joseph Henry Allen (1820–1898), undated	47
Joseph Henry Allen reading, undated.....	48
Joseph Henry and Anna Allen and daughters, Cambridge, circa 1897	50
Joseph Henry and Anna Allen with family, Cooper House, Bonita, circa 1893	50
Robert Morris Copeland (1830–1874) as a young man	51
Robert Morris Copeland, 1861.....	52
Robert Morris Copeland in military uniform	52
Major Robert Morris Copeland and fellow officers, circa March 1862.....	53
Letter to the Editor of the <i>Transcript</i> signed 10 August 1867.....	54
Robert Morris Copeland wearing hat and cape.....	55
Robert Morris Copeland in Philadelphia.....	55
Robert Morris Copeland Home in Castleton, Vermont.....	56
Robert Morris Copeland Home in Beaver Brook Falls, Waltham, Massachusetts	56
Josephine Gannett Kent as a young girl.....	57
Josephine Gannett (Kent) Copeland with Fred and Ella, undated	58
Robert and Josephine Copeland with children, undated.....	59
Josephine Gannett (Kent) Copeland (1833–1907), undated	60
Josephine Gannett (Kent) Copeland later in life, undated	61
Sterling Sherman (1794–1865), circa 1850s.....	64

Jane (Noble) Sherman (1788–1852), early 1850s	65
Portrait of John J. Hardin as a young man.....	68
Portrait of Sarah Ellen (Smith) Hardin (1811–1874)	71
John J. Hardin (1810–1847).....	72
Gravestone for John J. Hardin.....	74
Sarah Ellen (Smith) Hardin Walworth, circa 1851.....	76
Evelyn Johnson (1828–1901) as a young woman, undated.....	79
Four Generations: Evelyn (Johnson) Jacob through great–granddaughter.....	80
Evelyn (Johnson) Jacob later in life, undated	80
William Gordon Weld (1775–1825), undated	85
Hannah (Minot) Weld (1780–1860), undated	85
Painting of Hannah (Minot) Weld by Chester Harding, undated.....	86
Probably a portrait of Hannah (Minot) Weld later in life	87
Julia Fellows (Ruggles) Copeland (1803–1867)	88
Kent family, circa 1850.....	91
Eleanor (Bradford) Kent (1802–1885), 1880	92
Martin D. Hardin (1780–1823)	99
Elizabeth (Logan) Hardin (1784–1861)	103
Revolutionary War powder horn of Phineas Allen (1764–1836)	108
Bas-relief of Jonas Clarke Minot (1738–1808)	112
Bas-relief of Hannah (Speakman) Minot (1749–1825)	112
Silhouette of Ann (Tufts) Bradford (1765–1826).....	117

INTRODUCTION

✂ *Allen-Sherman Family Lines*

Having enjoyed the hobby of genealogy for about thirty years, I judge that it is time for me to write down what I have learned about my ancestry. I do not wish to deprive my descendants and relations of the pleasure and excitement of discovering these things for themselves, but hope that this account will interest and inspire some of them to carry forward what is an intrinsically endless project.

As far as I have learned, all my ancestors came to this country from Europe, predominantly from the British Isles. They were in the vanguard of that migration, starting at Jamestown, Plymouth and New Amsterdam before the seventeenth century was a quarter over. The latecomers arrived with the great Scots-Irish immigration in the first quarter of the next century. All ancestral lines were established here before the American Revolution.

On my mother's (Allen) side, they came exclusively to New England—my mother used to say that all her ancestors were born within a hundred miles of Boston. She was not far wrong. I have found only one exception, born 230 miles away in Nova Scotia. Of course, I don't count those born before their families crossed the Atlantic.

My father's (Sherman) side adds many more New England lines, but my grandmother Sherman was a Kentucky-born woman, whose ancestors came in through Virginia, Maryland and New Amsterdam. She was intensely proud of her ancestors, though not very accurately informed about them.

This work is essentially a narrated guide to a series of pedigree charts. The first two charts reach back from my parents to their great grandparents. These set up the maternal, Allen, and paternal, Sherman, lines of the title.

The final sixteen charts reach back from each of their great-grandparents to his or her immigrant ancestors, or to dead ends beyond which I could not trace the lines. [*Editor's Note: While it was the intention of the author, Frederick S. Sherman, to prepare sixteen pedigree charts, he did not complete these charts. The pedigree charts which he did complete are included in Appendix B.*]

Before starting on the detailed narratives, I want to attempt an overall view of my ancestors. Occupationally, they were mostly farmers (or in the South, planters) or craftsmen, such as blacksmiths, weavers, carpenters, coopers and wheelwrights. A few made their living from the sea as master mariners or fishermen. They were soldiers when required to be so, but very few were professional military men. Some, however, lived a somewhat regimented life during the settlement of our Western frontiers. A few were lawyers and politicians on the colonial, state, or national scene. A fair number were merchants or innkeepers. Many on the Allen side were ministers, predominantly Harvard-schooled Unitarians or Congregationalists. On both sides, there were a few schoolteachers and college professors. Curiously, no direct-line ancestor that I have discovered was a doctor. When our country got around to discovering the intellectual and leadership talents of its women, it would find plenty to applaud on both sides of my family.

Frederick S. Sherman

September 2007

PREFACE AND ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Frederick Sterling “Rick” Sherman spent decades carefully gathering and documenting his ancestry, only to die suddenly while writing a comprehensive description of his distinguished ancestors, the final chapter barely outlined.

The Sherman family contacted the California Genealogical Society (CGS) and asked if we would receive Rick’s papers. Georgia Lupinsky and Virginia Turner, Manuscript Chairs, organized his personal research into more than twelve linear feet of material. Besides superb documentation of many of his forebears there are numerous photos and charts that he had gathered to further illuminate their lives. Appendix C of this book details the CGS holdings.

During his membership at CGS, Rick served not only as president, but most notably for a number of years as our chief genealogical researcher. The quality of Rick’s research for clients was always top-notch. Along with CGS member Ken Haughton, in the 1990s Rick also established a fund to provide financial security for the future of the society. It has grown significantly and still provides a safety net for CGS.

After retiring from the Mechanical Engineering Department at University of California, Berkeley in 1991, Rick spent more time focusing on his own ancestors. He would share with us all the amazing information he found both on research trips and online. His manuscript demonstrates the quality and depth of this research. Rick did have many illustrious ancestors. Among those researched extensively were the Sherman, Allen, Hardin and Copeland families.

As his work was organized, we realized the manuscript Rick left behind represented an incredible research effort, and would be worth publishing and sharing with others. Now in our archives, his material contains much more information and documentation on various families than is actually in his manuscript.

Once we determined that his manuscript should be published, we felt the end result should be a professional product. Several CGS members generously volunteered their time to help, and we thank them all for their commitment to this project:

Georgia Lupinsky and Kathy Beals did light editing, correcting spelling, punctuation and spacing, and occasionally revised unclear phrasing.

Realizing the need for a complete index, Matt Berry accomplished this daunting task.

Georgia Lupinsky and Jane Knowles Lindsey selected appropriate family photos to be scanned and inserted into the manuscript.

Cathy Paris donated her graphics skills, using InDesign for the layout. Shirley Thomson did the copy editing, and Marie Treleaven proof read the final version.

Finally, we wish to thank the Sherman Family for entrusting us with Rick's work. Rick's wife Patricia "Pat" (Malone) Sherman and son Bradford "Brad" Sherman assisted us with the donation and interpretation of some of the materials. Rick's cousin Allen "Beau" Mitchum Jr., on the Allen side, provided additional family information and helped to identify family members in our photo collection.

We hope you enjoy Rick's labor of love for his ancestral history and benefit from his comprehensive research.

Jane Knowles Lindsey

Georgia Lupinsky

Coordinators, Sherman Manuscript Project

CHAPTER ONE

& Parents

Samuel Sterling Sherman, our father, was born in the family home at 547 North State Street, Chicago, Illinois, on 26 October 1898. He was the third and last child of Frederick Sterling Sherman and Evelyn Johnson Hardin, having two sisters, Annie Hardin Sherman and Elizabeth Evelyn Sherman.

His mother evidently put great store in the christening of her children, celebrating these events in places of sentimental interest to the family. Thus Annie was christened at St. Chrysostom's Episcopal Church in Chicago, only a few blocks from the family home; Elizabeth and Samuel were both christened in Louisville, Kentucky, at the home of their grandfather Hardin. Sponsors and godparents were Hardin and Jacob relatives from Kentucky. Samuel was named for his paternal grandfather.

Samuel had his elementary schooling at Chicago Latin School. When the family finally settled in Coronado, California, he attended Coronado High School from 1912 to 1916. He then attended the University of California at Berkeley for two years, receiving his Junior Certificate in May 1918. He immediately joined the army, and by August 1918 was in England with the Headquarters Company, 144th Field Artillery. He was honorably discharged on 27 January 1919 as private first class, without having seen any action, as far as we know. Later he frequently quipped, "I never shot a gun so little as when I fit in the Great War."

After World War I, he felt no inclination to return to college, but sought a place in one of the emerging industries of San Diego: tuna fishing and packing. He did his bit in the old days when strong men flipped the huge fish into a boat with rod and line; he also became quite involved in the management of the packing operations. However, circumstances which he described in a fascinating letter to a brother-in-law put a sudden end to this career, and he decided to try citrus farming. He was advised to contact Mr. R. C. Allen of Bonita, manager of the Sweetwater Fruit Company.

Citrus farming thoroughly captured his interest, and in time he became president of the Sweetwater Fruit Company, secretary of the Sweetwater Cooperative Exchange, chairman of the Citrus Board of the County Farm Bureau and an organizer of the Growers Research Club. He acquired some reputation as a citrus expert, and in November 1930 was commissioned by Gen. Arturo Bernal,



Samuel Sterling Sherman (1898–1933), undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Governor of Baja California, to survey the prospects for citriculture on the governor's estate in Michoacán. He made the trip with a friend, Milton P. Sessions, and wrote a charming and fascinating account of it.

For family purposes, the most important effect of Samuel's encounter with R. C. Allen was meeting again Mr. Allen's youngest daughter, Mary Ware. They fell in love and were wed in the Allen family home in Bonita on 24 April 1924. Their honeymoon was a rugged camping trip on San Pedro Martir, about two hundred miles down into Baja California. An album of photos of this trip, with a charming narrative written mostly by Sam, survives today. The photos show, incidentally, that Sam was tall, about six feet even, and prematurely bald, looking much older than twenty six, his age at the time.

His own writings, along with pieces written soon after his death and our few personal recollections, suggest that Sam Sherman was a very down-to-earth practical man, though marked with a tinge of romanticism. He was passionately fond of the great outdoors, of riding, hunting and fishing. One of Mary's notes in the honeymoon album says it best: "Sam with a fish pole and a trout stream is being transported to the seventh heaven." He was a great story teller, both in narrating real events and in inventing imaginary stories for the amusement of his children. Somehow this blend of characteristics seems just what one might expect from a mingling of Sherman and Hardin blood.

Samuel Sherman died on 24 October 1933 after a short and unexpected illness, just two days before his thirty-fifth birthday. The cause was bronco-pneumonia, fatally complicated by cervical adenitis (strep throat). Brief published obituaries attested to a great sense of loss among outdoorsmen, citrus growers and a wide community of friends. I (F.S.S.) was really too young to have known my father well, but for years I was vaguely aware that I often received special favors from strangers (to me), because I was "Sam Sherman's son."

Samuel left a simple will, made 9 November 1927, witnessed by his father and sister Elizabeth, leaving everything to his wife, and naming her his executrix. His estate consisted of shares of stock in the Sweetwater Fruit Company, one acre of land with the family home on Bonita Mesa and some life insurance. My one-third share of one of the insurance policies paid my way through Harvard. Our mother, Mary, became our guardian after our father's death. Her mother and her brother Richard were her bonded sureties.

Mary Ware Allen, our mother, was born in the old Henry Cooper house in Bonita, California, on 3 April 1897. Her birth was not certified until 23 September 1932, when she wanted to apply for a passport. Fortunately, "Aunt" Harriet Rose, the midwife who had assisted at her birth and those of her siblings, was still alive to do the honors.

Mary was the fourth and last child of Russell Carpenter Allen and Ella Bradford Copeland. She was five and a half years younger than her youngest sibling, and to add to the indignity of that, she was much the smallest of the children. When I was grown, and extended an arm horizontally, she would just fit under it. Thus she had to suffer as a child all that comes with being the "baby" of the family. Anyone who knew her as an adult, as one of the dominant leaders of community life in Bonita, would find that hard to imagine.

Mary and her sister Eleanor were probably the first women in her family to attend college. Their brothers had continued a long family tradition by going to Harvard.

First, Mary took off a year, during which she joined the women's ZLAC Rowing Club in San Diego, therein meeting her future sisters-in-law, Annie and Betty Sherman. Then she joined her sister Eleanor at Bryn Mawr College for a year and a half. Finding the Eastern school too snooty for her tastes, she returned to California.



Mary Ware Allen, circa 1897
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Mary Ware Allen & dog, circa 1902
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

She was interested in a career in nursing and started on a five-year program recently devised at the University of California. For her, this started with a period of probation at Stanford, which ended suddenly when her brother Dick became seriously ill during the great flu epidemic of 1918. She attended him successfully, and then returned to college, this time at University of California, Berkeley, where she majored in bacteriology, receiving her degree with honors on 19 December 1919.

She went home again to try to find work as a nurse, but had no success. She then entered the training school for nurses at the University Hospital in San Francisco, earning a certificate of completion of the three-year course on 26 February 1922. Following that she served as an Instructor of Theory in the School of Nursing, receiving a very gracious letter of regret in July 1923, when she resigned her appointment to return home again to focus on child welfare.

She had not been home long when she became reacquainted with our dad, whom she had met in La Jolla while she was rowing with her sisters. Soon after they were married.



Mary Ware Allen (1897–1992) wearing her wedding dress, 1924
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Mary Ware (Allen) Sherman, Samuel Sterling Sherman and child, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

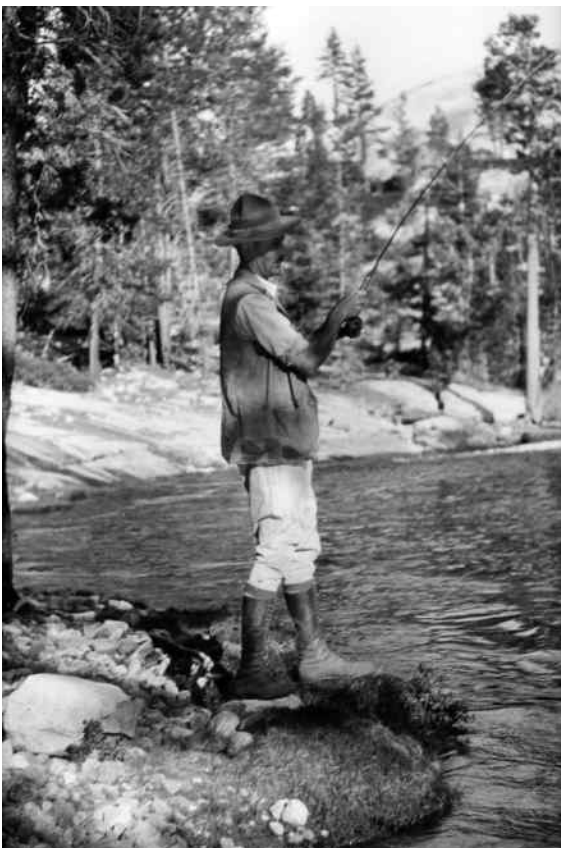




Rick with sister, Eleanor, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Samuel Sterling Sherman with son, Rick, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Samuel Sterling Sherman fishing, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Mary Ware (Allen) and Samuel Sterling Sherman with children, Eleanor and Rick, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Sam and Mary built their home on Bonita Mesa, overlooking the valley of the Sweetwater River, with a view that culminated in the east with the symmetrical shape of San Miguel Mountain.

They had three children, Eleanor, myself and Russell. Even in the years of the Great Depression things seemed to be going well. Then, totally unexpectedly, Sam sickened and died.



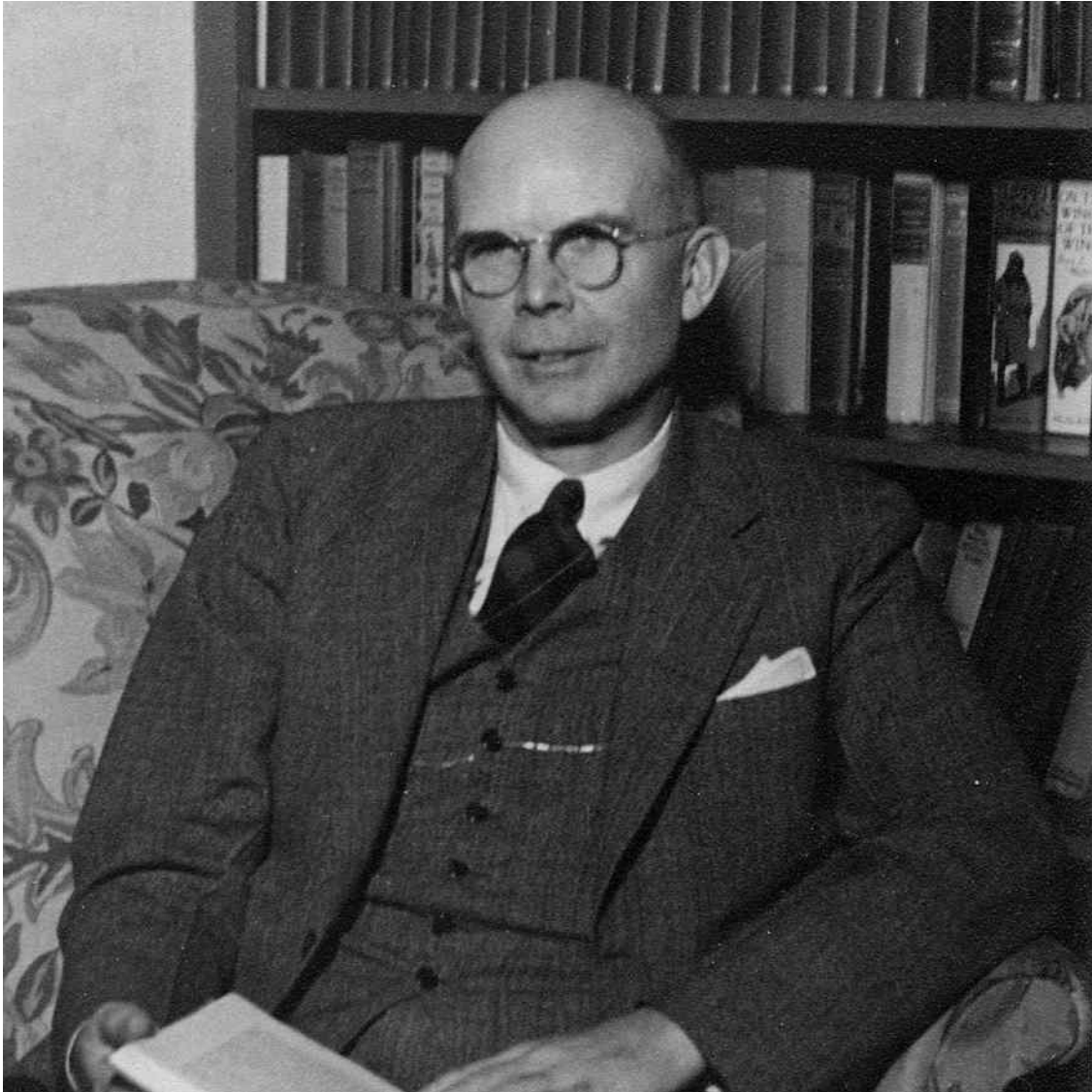
Nannies Maria Delgadino and Maria Rodriguez with Rick, 1932
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Rick and his dog, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Getting ready for a Hayride at the OLD RED BARN - 1938.
On the hay wagon at the Allen Ranch, 1938: Rick, Mary Ware (Allen) (Sherman) Butler, and Eleanor Sherman
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Butler Etter Ward, Rick's stepfather, Bonita, California, 1962
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Sam's death must have been an incredible blow to Mary, although she seldom talked about it to us children. She had three small children, one only six months old. Fortunately, the family was able to rally around, and she had the invaluable help of Maria Rodriguez, who was for almost a generation more a family member than an employee. Maria really helped to raise us kids, and I well remember the day, when I had returned from college to tower over her, she turned to me and said "You may be bigger than me, but I'm still the boss!"

Fortunately for all of us, Mary remarried, on 4 March 1938. Our stepfather, Butler Etter Ward, was an old family friend. When Mary came to Ellie and me, before the wedding, to ask whether we liked Butler, we had just one question, which really showed how we had been raised. "Is he a Republican?" Being assured that he was, we happily welcomed him to the family!

Mary and Butler loved to travel, especially to Mexico, but also to Hawaii, Europe and the Andes. They had several close friends with whom they shared this love, along with a passion for the game of bridge. When he first joined us, Butler was a city slicker, but we soon taught him to take off his coat

and tie, and to enjoy camping trips. Mary and he, with perhaps two or three other couples, would lay in supplies of food and drink, pack up their folding chairs and card tables, and set off into Baja California over terrible roads, eventually reaching some seldom visited destination where they would camp, play a bridge tournament, swim and mix with the local population.

Since our home was so close to the Mexican border, we all had learned Spanish to some extent. Mary's Spanish was not so fluent as Sam's had been, but it served her well both on the camping trips and in the days of World War II, during which almost all our farm laborers were Mexican "braceros." The Sweetwater Fruit Company had a big red barn, which had once been a fruit packing house. During the war it was converted into a camp for the braceros. Mary was sort of the "house mother" of the camp, helping the young men to learn the ropes of life in the U.S., nursing them when they got sick, helping them to get along with the U.S. authorities, and shopping in Tijuana for some of their favorite foods. I vividly remember walking with her through the streets of Tijuana with a huge cow stomach on my shoulder. Tripe was the sovereign cure for a Monday morning hangover.

Mary never practiced nursing professionally, but she may have had some idea of doing so, because she obtained, on 21 June 1944, her certificate as a Registered Nurse in the State of California. For decades after that, she served as a sort of first line of medical defense in the Sweetwater Valley, always available to help her friends and neighbors with the administration of shots, etc. She was a strong supporter of the Visiting Nurses Association.

Following her mother's strong interest in child welfare, Mary was for many years active in the Boys and Girls Aid Society of San Diego County. Socially, she had many friends throughout San Diego County, being especially involved in the Sweetwater Women's Club and in the Wednesday Club of San Diego.

CHAPTER TWO

& Grandparents



Portrait of Frederick Sterling Sherman (1853–1935), undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Frederick Sterling Sherman, our paternal grandfather for whom I was named, was born in LaGrange, Troup County, Georgia, on 21 October 1853; he died at Coronado, California, on 8 December 1935. (His birth in the South is a fact I often mention to Southern acquaintances who look askance at my surname.) In 1853, his father was principal of the Brownwood School, just outside of LaGrange. Fred's father spent two decades in Alabama and Georgia, in educational enterprises that will be detailed later.

In 1859, his family moved back North, settling in Milwaukee, where Fred grew up and got his start in business. He was taught mostly at home by his parents, who were both professional educators. In 1879, still a bachelor, he accompanied his parents, his brother Henry and his sister Eliza in a move down to Chicago. By then that city had recovered from its great fire and was showing great promise as a place of business. There the father and two sons established the firm of Sherman Bros. & Company, purveyors of coffee, tea, spices, mustard, toilet soaps, etc.

Fred lived with his parents until his marriage, on 13 May 1894, to Evelyn Johnson Hardin. By that time he had accumulated a comfortable fortune, and moved his bride into a handsome house at 547 North State Street, next door to the equally handsome home of his parents. These homes can be seen today on a section of State Street which is being preserved as a historical landmark.

His marriage to Evelyn took place in Fort Hamilton, Long Island, where the Hardins were then living. It is believed that Fred and Evelyn met at the 1893 Chicago World's Fair. Possibly Fred had known Evelyn's uncle, Gen. Martin D. Hardin, who was practicing law in Chicago for some years before the fair.

By 1903, Fred retired from business, Sherman Bros. & Company having been sold to English and Scottish interests by 1898. His father, then nearly ninety, was still alive and active and had no intention of leaving Chicago, but Fred began to think of moving to California. In January or February of 1905, the family moved tentatively to La Jolla, believing that it would be good for Betty's health. By Easter 1906, they had selected Coronado as a promising permanent home, but still retained their Chicago home.

Frederick Sterling Sherman standing, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Frederick S. Sherman and Evelyn Johnson (Hardin) Sherman on a bench, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

During this first stay in Coronado, Evelyn's father, Lemuel Hardin, came to stay with the Shermans. He died in 1909, in which year Fred sold their Chicago home, clinching his intention to settle permanently in Coronado. Plans were made to build a new home there. So that the architect could have a respite from Evelyn's frequent suggestions of changes, Fred took the whole family on a European tour in the summer of 1911. We have a nice snapshot of them playing golf at St. Moritz, and a record from Ellis Island of their return to the United States on the *SS Oceanic*, on 11 October 1911. After this trip, it seems likely that the family returned to Chicago for about three years, to help care for Fred's father, who died in November 1914, aged ninety-nine.

Although Fred and his brother Henry were named as co-executors of their father's will, Henry was then living in Pasadena and Fred declined to serve, so that he could return to California. The family was back in Coronado in 1915. After a trip to San Francisco and Yosemite in 1915, they moved into their new home at 708 A Avenue in Coronado. This was a fine large house with a tennis court and extensive gardens.

In his many years of retirement, Fred was an enthusiastic golfer, fisherman and gardener. He was undoubtedly a Republican, and we have a photo of him playing golf with President Taft. Fred and Evelyn were active members of Christ Church, Episcopal, in Coronado, often serving as delegates to the Diocesan Convention.

Fred Sherman died in Coronado on 7 December 1935, leaving a will with bequests to his wife, his daughters Annie and Elizabeth, the heirs of his deceased son Samuel, his sister Elizabeth and his nephew Henry Lancey Sherman. His estate was valued at \$407,000, which was quite a lot in the depths of the Great Depression. His inventory included twelve hundred books, attesting to his love of reading.





Frederick S. Sherman golfing with President William Howard Taft, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Evelyn Johnson Hardin (1870–1957), circa 1870s
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Evelyn Johnson Hardin in ball gown, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Portrait of Evelyn Johnson Hardin, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Evelyn Johnson Hardin, circa 1890s
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Ellen (Hardin) Walworth (Aunt Nellie), undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Evelyn Johnson Hardin, “Grammé,” our paternal grandmother, was born at Cozy Lodge near Louisville, Kentucky, on 10 June 1870, and died at the Hotel del Coronado, in Coronado, California, on 11 March 1957. The home of her birth has been replaced by the lovely grounds of the Southern Baptist Theological Seminary. However we have a photo of the original house, and of “Bird’s Nest,” an adjoining Hardin property, thanks to research done by Carol Ann Lumia of the Historical Society of Saratoga Springs, New York.

When she was about nine, Evelyn’s parents moved to Fort Hamilton, on Long Island, New York. Later on she attended school in Saratoga Springs at a school run by her aunt Ellen Hardin Walworth in the old Walworth mansion. Photographs of her as a child and young lady give the impression that she had been somewhat spoiled by doting parents. Her father kept a scrapbook with newspaper stories of her achievements in swimming, poetry, art and the social graces. On one occasion he wrote, undoubtedly about her:

Her peculiar weakness is to be a belle, as her mother was before her, and she is mistress of the feminine arts that make men adore her. In adversity her pioneer spirit rises to the sublime, and she meets the reverses of fortune with a religious cheerfulness that marks the summit of human grandeur.

When she married grandfather, she guaranteed that she would be spoiled for the rest of her life. He was seventeen years older than she, and obviously smitten by her charm and beauty. I suspect that she and grandfather met in 1893 at the Chicago World’s Fair, where her Aunt Nellie (Ellen Hardin Walworth) was to give an address that was influential in launching the National Archives of the United States.



*Russell Carpenter Allen, age
(original at Harvard Divinity School Lib.)*

Russell Carpenter Allen, circa 1879
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Russell Carpenter Allen, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Grammé was intensely proud of her Hardin heritage. She was the favorite niece of her Aunt Nellie, one of the founders of the DAR, who had doubtless filled her with stories of ancestral heroism, and who had bequeathed to her handsome family portraits and other memorabilia. Unfortunately, I was not yet interested in genealogy during her lifetime, so the ancestral tales were not passed down to me.

Grammé shared her husband's love of golf, and I used to play pitch-and-putt courses with her. Considering that she was then in her seventies, she was pretty good at it, and set us all a good example of perseverance by making her first hole-in-one when she was eighty-one !

Russell Carpenter Allen, our maternal grandfather, was born in Jamaica Plain, Massachusetts, on 27 January 1859, the sixth child and third son of Joseph Henry Allen and Anna Minot Weld. He died in Bonita, California on 11 June 1927.

We know something about his childhood and young manhood, because he wrote occasionally to one of his father's friends in England, Rev. Russell Lant Carpenter, for whom he was named. Fortunately for us, Reverend Carpenter kept those letters, and when he died, the letters found their way to the Unitarian Association, which kindly passed them on to the Andover-Harvard Theological Library, where I examined them in 1990. These letters began in 1867 and continued until 1888.

As a small child, he spent three years in Northboro, Massachusetts, while his father was ministering to the Unitarian church there and his mother was helping to provide care for his aging and infirm paternal grandmother.

Most of Russell's youth was spent in Cambridge, Massachusetts. His letters give a good impression of his life and schooling there and of the exciting times he enjoyed at the family's vacation home on Nantucket Island. He attended Harvard, graduating in 1880, while his father was Lecturer in Ecclesiastical History in the Divinity School. After graduation, he read law for a year in the New York City office of his brother-in-law Charles Sibley Gage, but soon turned aside from a career that would require so



Russell Carpenter Allen leaning on wagon, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

much reading. In his letters to Reverend Carpenter, he had mentioned problems with his eyesight as a young teenager.

In 1881, when his father was a delegate of American and English Unitarians to the Consistory of the Unitarian Church in Koloszar, Transylvania, Russell traveled to Europe. Inadvertent delays in their trip home gave him a chance to become impressed by Mediterranean agriculture. He decided that agriculture would be a suitable profession for a gentleman vulnerable to eyestrain, and in 1882 he made his way to California by way of Panama, while the French were unsuccessfully trying to dig a sea-level canal.

Together with a Cambridge friend, George C. Deane, he explored California extensively before settling on a picturesque bend in the Sweetwater River in San Diego County, at a place now called Dehesa. He had been attracted to the Napa Valley in Northern California, but was advised by his minister father that prohibition was just around the corner, and that it would be unwise to invest in the production of wine. In March 1883, Russell and Deane bought a quarter section of land in Dehesa, about twenty-five miles southeast of San Diego, and developed a ranch on the rich river-bottom lands that are now occupied by the Singing Hills Golf Course.

Allen Ranch, Dehesa, California, circa 1883
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



This first ranching venture was devoted to olives and raisins. The ranch was quite isolated, but the boys had one near neighbor, Joseph Weddle, from New York. Joseph's son, Henry Headley Weddle, married Sybil Gage, a daughter of Russell's eldest sister. The ranch in Dehesa was close to an Indian settlement, which was described in a letter to *The Christian Advocate*, written by Russell's father when he, his wife and Russell's sister Mary Ware Allen visited Russell in the winter of 1884–85.

Russell returned to Cambridge for Christmas in 1886, and "met his fate" in the person of Ella Bradford Copeland, of whom much will be said in the next section. Although the ranch home at Dehesa would be somewhat rugged and isolated by Cambridge standards, Ella was a great lover of the outdoors and she and Russell became engaged before he returned to California in the spring.

Russell returned to Cambridge in the winter of 1887 and he and Ella were wed there on 28 February 1888, with Russell's father as the officiating minister. They honeymooned at the Copeland summer home in West Castleton, Vermont, and then returned to Dehesa, where they promptly turned their attention to the raising of a family.

The first three children, all born at Dehesa, were our uncles Morris Copeland Allen, born on 11 January 1889, and Richard Minot Allen, born on 24 April 1890, and our aunt Eleanor Bradford Allen, born on 27 October 1891.

These were hard years for the ranch, as the grapevines all fell prey to a devastating plague of phylloxera. However, the olives did well, and the trees are still producing excellent crops today.

Due at least in part to family connections, Russell was invited in 1890 to move down the Sweetwater River about fifteen miles, to take charge of a newly planted citrus ranch in Bonita. There he purchased the Henry Cooper place and in gradual stages moved the family to this new permanent home. The Dehesa ranch stayed in the family until 1945.

Our mother said that her father was very shy around his children, and that she consequently knew little about him. He was, however, an active and well known pioneer of San Diego County, choosing to live in the country, but active in the affairs of the city of San Diego: He was the founding president of both the University Club of San Diego (1909) and the Harvard Club of San Diego (1915). He

Railroad cars at the ranch, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



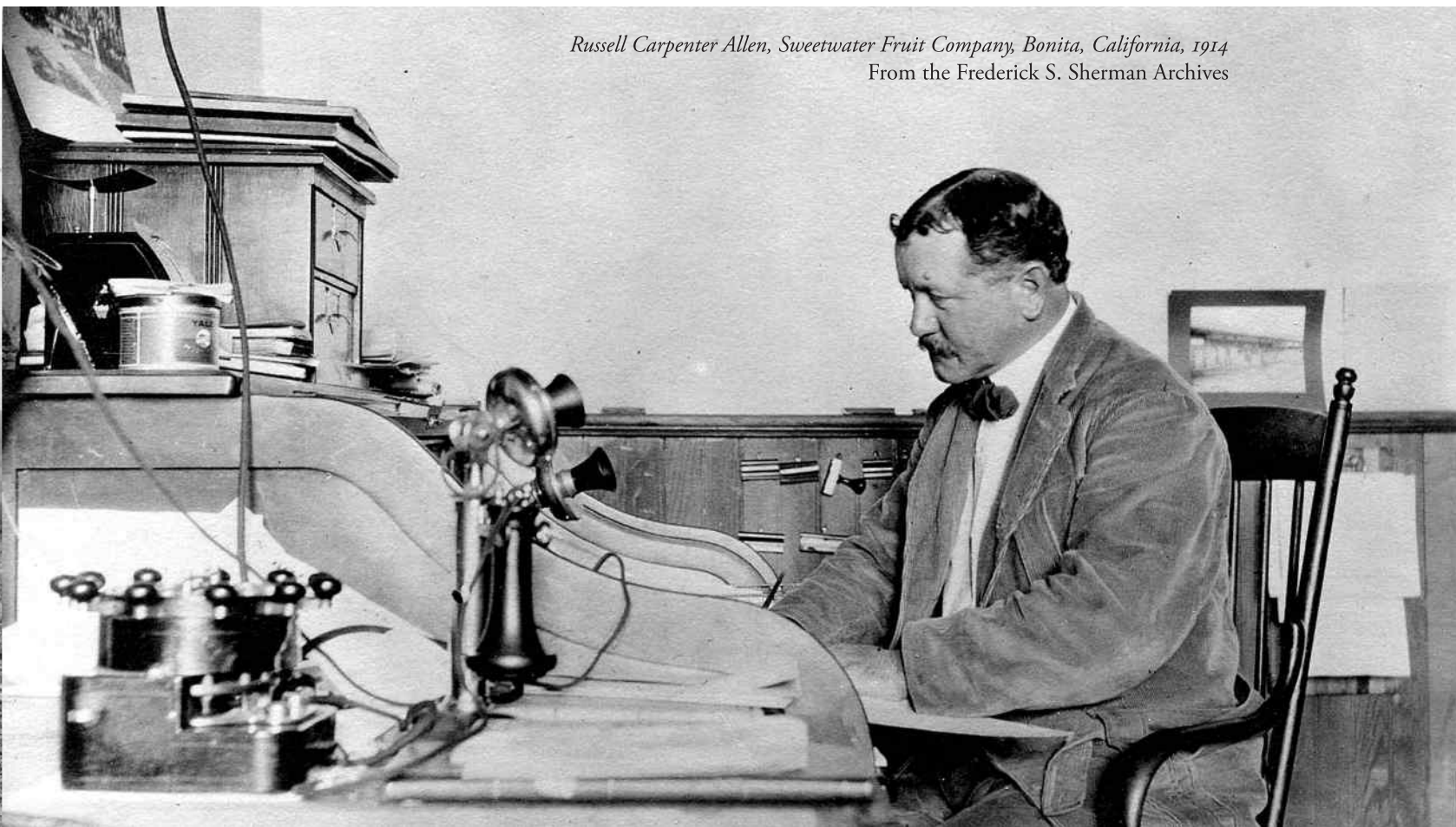
Sweetwater Fruit Company, Bonita, California, 1896
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



was postmaster at Bonita from 1910 to 1917, a trustee of the small local school in Bonita and of the Sweetwater High School in nearby National City, Chairman of the Board of Exemptions (draft board) of San Diego in 1918–1919, a director of the Panama-California Exhibition of 1915 in San Diego and a commissioner for the construction of the California Building which graces Balboa Park to this day. His most exotic civic duty was as a commissioner appointed by the U.S. Department of the Interior in 1907, to relocate the Pala Indian tribe that had been pushed out of Warner Hot Springs.

Russell was also active in the banking affairs of the young community, serving for years as a director of the Southern Trust and Commerce Bank until it merged into the Bank of Italy (now the Bank of America). His principal contribution to economic life was, however, in the development of citriculture. He contributed to the development of both agricultural and marketing methods, and was credited by his colleagues in the California Fruit Growers Exchange with being the man whose steady encouragement kept many growers from giving up in the face of the devastating freeze of 1913 and the spectacular flood of 1916.

Russell Carpenter Allen, Sweetwater Fruit Company, Bonita, California, 1914
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Because Russell died about nine months before I was born, I never knew him. I have, however, read much about him, his father and his grandfather, Joseph Allen, and it seems to me that much of the emotional makeup of these ancestors was passed down to him. Listen, for example, to these extracts from his obituaries. The first is from the trade journal of the California Fruit Growers Exchange:

A man of sound judgment, of poise, sincere, forceful and gracious, he will be deeply missed both in our business and social circles. It is not given to all to reach the hearts of men, but this Mr. Allen was able to do without effort because of his great simplicity and a kindness which responded to every call for assistance.

The second is from George W. Marston, pioneer San Diego merchant, to whom Russell had first presented a letter of introduction when he arrived in San Diego in 1882, and who had been a close friend for forty-five years:

In my lifetime I have met no man who worked out the ideal of his youth more completely than Mr. Allen. But Mr. Allen was also a great citizen. Indeed, we reckoned on him in all the important affairs of the town as well as the country. In the fields of education, politics, social service, arts and civic development he was an active and competent participant. His cooperation in public service was always welcomed by others because of his pleasant spirit of cooperation. His personality was agreeable even in opposition and his judgment was very highly regarded.



Ella Bradford Copeland, 1868
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Ella Bradford Copeland was born on 30 November 1858 in Waverly, Massachusetts, the third child and first daughter of Robert Morris Copeland and Josephine Gannet Kent. The house in which she was born still stands, serving as the headquarters of a small park at Beaver Brook Falls, on the line between Belmont and Waltham. (Waverly no longer exists as a political entity.)

Soon after her birth, the family moved to West Castleton, in rural Vermont, where her father hoped to exploit deposits of slate. However, the Civil War soon interrupted these plans, and Ella spent most of her childhood in the shadow of this event, first while her father was in service, and then while he



Ella Bradford Copeland, circa 1880s
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Ella Bradford (Copeland) Allen, Castleton, Vermont, 1880s
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

struggled for years to recover from a blow to his personal honor, to be described in more detail in the next chapter. When Ella was only three, she was taken by her mother to Frederick, Maryland, to visit her father while he was a major with the Massachusetts troops in the Shenandoah Valley.

Ella was only sixteen when her father died in 1874, leaving the family practically penniless because all his savings had been wiped out by the failure of two insurance companies during the crash of 1873. Helped by an uncle who was a dean at Harvard, and by family friends who later were in on the founding of Bonita, her mother struggled to make ends meet by running a school and summer camp at their home in Vermont. Ella, as the oldest of the three children then at home, was a key helper, and was just about to start medical training in 1886, when she became engaged to Russell.

Probably no bride was ever more happily accepted and justly appreciated by her father-in-law, than was Ella. Writing in May 1888 to Russell Carpenter, Rev. Joseph Henry Allen had this to say:

Russell's marriage has been, of course, the conspicuous event. It all went off as pleasantly as might be; he arrived here on the 10th of February ... the wedding was on the 28th, and they left, for an easy three weeks' journey & series of visits on their way to California, just a week later. Our new daughter has found everything delightful in the circle she has ventured into, and in the home among the vines and olives. I believe you know that she was a great favorite with our cousins the Winsors, who fairly cried for joy (some of them) when the engagement was announced ... partly, I may suppose, because her circumstances had been stratenend & her prospect in life looked sober, or twenty-eight is an age when to take up a new course of professional study (as she had fixed on medicine), implies more anxiety than hope; while her great intelligence, buoyancy & courage make her the ideal helpmate in creating a new home in a new land. We have nothing but absolute happiness & content in this chapter of our family history ...

Ella's fiancée added to the picture, in another letter to Reverend Carpenter, as follows:

She is very fond of country life, has considerable knowledge of botany & great love of flowers, so that she does not feel daunted at the prospect of leaving Cambridge & her friends there to join me in our life here.... Her father was a well-known landscape gardener.... From him Miss Copeland acquired a strong taste for the beauties of nature.

Everything I have heard and seen of the ranch at Dehesa convinces me that Ella enjoyed her home and life there, but it was far out in the country and had its primitive side. A family legend from those days emphasizes the point: One night, Ella had put the children to bed, and was reading in the adjacent room when she heard a polite, but low-pitched, cough from the direction of the children's room. She looked up, and saw a mountain lion standing in the doorway! She threw her kerosene lamp at the beast, which rapidly left the house, and then had to rush to extinguish the flames, so as not to burn down the house!

The Henry Cooper house in Bonita, our grandparents' first home there, was a handsome wooden structure that burned down in 1907. (No mountain lion that time.) They built a more fire-resistant house on the same spot, from which they commanded a fine view of San Miguel Mountain, over a foreground of young lemon trees. They would have had a fine view of the Ella B. Allen School, had it been there in those days.

In a paper our mother presented to the Wednesday Club of San Diego in 1951, she said this about Dambo (as our grandmother was known throughout the family and most of the Sweetwater Valley):

I have always felt that mother was a pioneer in the field of real democracy. Coming as she did, from the background of New England intellectual and old family snobbery, she had an amazing feeling for the dignity of the individual, regardless of his economic status, race or creed. People were human beings to her, and if they were in trouble they did not become to her merely "objects of charity." She was very intolerant of certain human failings, particularly laziness, and she was equally intolerant, whether the individual be poor or rich. Particularly she had a deep conviction

*First Russell Carpenter Allen family home
Formerly the Henry Cooper House, Bonita, California, burned 1907
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives*





Children of Russell Carpenter Allen and Ella Bradford (Copeland) Allen, circa 1899: Richard Minot Allen, Eleanor Bradford Allen, Morris Copeland Allen, Mary Ware Allen
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

that everyone had a real right to "the pursuit of happiness," a tenet to which most of us pay only lip service. Her specialty was "fun" and so far as she was able, she saw to it that everyone had a chance to have a good time.

Two well-documented events provide good illustrations of this specialty. In July and August of 1906, Dambo took her three older children and two other teenagers down the coast of Baja California to the little port of San Quintin. There they acquired the services of two Mexican guides and with a motley assortment of horses and burros set off eastward for San Pedro Martir, the highest mountain in Baja. Sons Morris and Dick were seventeen and sixteen and had just taken their entrance exams for Harvard. Eleanor was nearly fifteen. Our mother, only nine at the time, never quite forgave the fate that made her too young to go along, but made up for it by going there for her honeymoon in 1924.

Dambo kept a journal of the trip, with accompanying snapshots. Friends of her own age thought she was crazy to plan such a thing, as indicated by this quote from her journal:

Some of the drawbacks held out to us were, rattlesnakes galore, almost enough for one behind every bush; mountain lions at night, who were very fond of young and tender things like colts and my daughter; heat to the point of dissolution and desiccation; thirst to the point of desperation; and endless bad Mexicans, very, very bad Mexicans; with most of the parties' legs broken, and an occasional case of pneumonia. Still, as it seemed to be the last chance for us to do something a little out of the ordinary before the boys left the home roost, and as rattlesnakes had always proved to be more afraid of us than we of them, as we could not hear of any very well authenticated case of a daughter being eaten by a lion; and as we knew from experience that Mexicans were the kindest hearted, most accommodating race imaginable, we stuck to it that we wanted to go.

They went all right, and being folks who liked the rugged life, had a marvelous time. Lots of rattlesnakes and endless acres of poison oak, but no broken legs, no devoured maidens, and only very, very, *nice* Mexicans!

Another document that gives evidence of Dambo's interest in fun for youngsters was published as a letter to a local newspaper in 1909. It was apparently written to protest a prohibition of dancing at public school entertainments in National City, which was advocated by one of the religious sects. In this letter, subtitled "Is it not about time that a Few stop trying to tyrannize over our school children?" Dambo stands up for the youngsters' right to dance. As you read part of it, you will certainly recognize the voice of a woman who grew up in New England!

To the patrons of the public schools of National City: The subject of dancing or not dancing at school entertainments may seem a trivial one to make an issue about, but as I do not consider it so, I now appeal to the patrons of the school to take a stand on the question. In this country where there is no skating or coasting, no woods or lakes, the legitimate amusements for the school children are limited; but they have a right to be legitimately amused. We expect them to work diligently, intelligently and honestly at their studies during the week, and should take an equal interest in their reward on occasional Friday or Saturday nights, by helping them to wholesome relaxation and social intercourse. That there is no amusement more easily provided and superintended than dancing, is agreed by everyone trying to provide it.

After some cogent analysis and argument, Dambo wrote:

I wish to conclude with a cordial invitation, or let us call it challenge, to any minister or parent to come and attend any dance given by our school children, to see what they can point at as in any way more dangerous than any collection of light-hearted, innocent children. Please parents, take interest in this issue to show the courage of your convictions, so that it may be known what the majority of Public Opinion is on the subject.



Allen Family, undated: Back Row: Morris C. Allen, wife Dorothea (White) Allen, Colis Mitchum, Mary Ware Allen, Richard M. Allen, wife Alfreda (Beatty) Allen, Eleanor (Allen) Mitchum. Front Row: Morris Allen's three sons: Charles, David and baby Ernest; Ella Bradford (Copeland) Allen, Russell Carpenter Allen, Richard Allen's daughter, Eleanor Winsor Allen.

From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

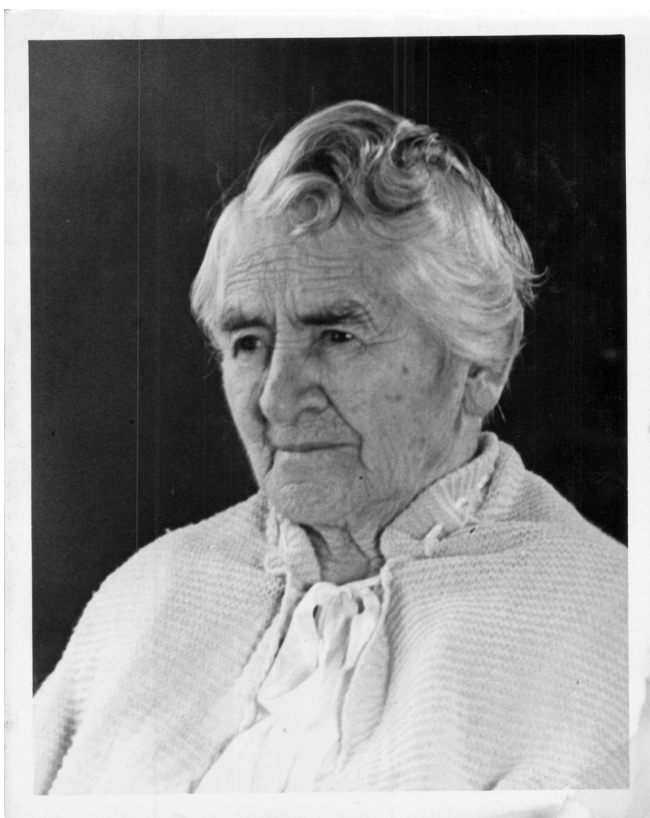
Dambo was an active participant in the family fruit business. Although our main crop was lemons, we also raised some figs, guavas and olives. I remember the gorgeous and delicious guava jelly she made, and the little kegs of hand-cured olives that she would pack and send to her children and grandchildren when they were away at college.

Irene Phillips, in her fascinating little book, *El Rancho de la Nacion*, tells us:

Mrs. R. C. Allen, better known as Ella B. Allen, became well known in educational and philanthropic work. She assisted in organizing the Sweetwater Women's Club and was an active worker in the "Casa de Salud," a well-baby clinic which was a boon to young mothers; the National City Library Board and, in San Diego, Mrs. Allen assisted in organizing the "Boys and Girls Aid" and the "Door of Hope."

The "Ella B. Allen" school is fittingly named for this wonderful little woman who carried on with the best traditions of her colonial ancestors." In her Wednesday Club talk, our mother described many more of Dambo's community activities, including her ardent support for woman's suffrage.

After Russell died in 1927, Dambo left the old family home for a smaller house that she had built on the eastern edge of Bonita Mesa. There, from a huge window in the living room, she could look east over her beloved Sweetwater Valley.



Ella Bradford (Copeland) Allen (1858–1949), undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

In later life, she spent many hours doing just that, having lost most of her ability to get out and around due to an auto accident in 1932, and to increasingly crippling arthritis. Nevertheless, she remained a major force in family and community for many more years. She died on 20 September 1949 and is buried with many other family members in Glen Abbey Cemetery, across the valley.

CHAPTER THREE

✂ *Great-Grandparents*

Samuel Sterling Sherman was born on 24 November 1815 in West Rupert, Vermont, the first of ten children of Sterling Sherman and Jane Noble. He lived to great age, and in his ninety-fifth year, while still in full possession of mind and memory, dictated an autobiography, to which he made a small addendum four years later. Having in my possession a copy of this autobiography, and of the manuscript notebook from which it was extracted, I shall frequently quote from it.

“Professor” Sherman, as he came to be known for most of his life, started out as a helper on his father’s prosperous farm, on which many sheep were kept. In his words,

The winter after I was fifteen, it was my lot to board with the farm tenant and look after and feed the sheep. I also attended the district school. The following spring I attended the academy in Salem [New York] one term. In the fall of this year my cousin, Enoch S. Sherman, was going to New Hampton, New Hampshire, to school and urged me to accompany him. My health was never robust, and my father, fearing that I would not make a good “farm hand,” gave me the choice of remaining on the farm or going to college. I chose the latter alternative...

In September, 1834, at the age of nineteen, I entered Middlebury College.... When I entered, the accommodations were still meager, but there was a competent Faculty and good undergraduate work was done; that is, good work for the times. As in other colleges of the period, Latin and Greek and Mathematics were the principal studies of the Freshman and Sophomore years, and most of the instruction was given by “tutors.” In the Junior and Senior years we came mostly under the professors, while the venerable President had charge of the class in Mental and Moral Philosophy.... There was a chemical laboratory and lecture room adjoining; but lectures were few and no student ever saw the inside of the laboratory, except the one who sometimes assisted the professor in preparing his experiments. In Astronomy the only piece of apparatus I ever heard of was a small telescope, which no one ever looked through, and if he did he could not see anything.

Like many other students, I reduced expenses and earned a little money by teaching a district school in winter during my Freshman and Sophomore years. I still have pleasant memories of a snug little schoolhouse that nestled beside a small lake among the hills of Sudbury, some eighteen



Samuel Sterling Sherman (1815–1914), undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

miles from Middlebury, where I taught, as I then thought, a model school, at the munificent salary of twelve dollars a month the first winter and fifteen dollars a month the second winter.

In the fall of my Junior year I obtained leave of absence for some months that I might serve as assistant principal of the Academy in Hancock, New Hampshire; but I was soon taken very sick with typhoid fever. My recovery being considered doubtful my parents were sent for, but skillful physicians, with one of whom I boarded, and the careful nursing of my mother and others, preserved my life.

Early in my Sophomore year I made a profession of religion. This occurred during a protracted meeting held at the Congregational Church and conducted by Mr. Burchard, a noted evangelist of that period. I united with the Baptist Church in Rupert during the following summer.

Health prompted me to seek a warm climate. On mentioning my wishes to Professor Fowler, who had recently spent a winter in South Carolina, he said that he had some acquaintance with the Rev. Dr. Manly, an eminent Baptist minister of Charlestown.

Prof. Fowler wrote to Dr. Manly, by then president of the University of Alabama, who quickly replied that a competent teacher could do well at Tuscaloosa. Great-grandfather went immediately, and after an adventurous trip via Savannah and Macon, Georgia, Montgomery and Selma, Alabama, was given a very friendly reception. His early days at the University of Alabama, where he was tutor in Latin and Greek, were also adventurous and humorous and gave him a good taste of the difficulty of imposing discipline on the sons of wealthy planters.

After three years as a tutor at the University of Alabama, Samuel Sherman made a risky, but ultimately very successful career move. He left the university to undertake, at the urging of the Baptists of Alabama, the founding of a college in the village of Marion. Actually, he judged, with a sound business sense that was to characterize his long career, that the proposed project was overly ambitious. In his words, speaking of the enthusiastic projections of the Baptist organizers,

I did not attach much importance to all this, but I had put my hand to the plow and resolved not to look back, so I went to the printing office and substituted, for the flaming advertisement I found in type, a modest notice of the Howard English and Classical School, which I began with nine small boys.

Thus, at the age of twenty-six, our great-grandfather became the founding president of what became Howard College, and what is today Samford University, an extremely attractive and academically well ranked institution just outside of Birmingham, Alabama.

After ten years, during which he got Howard College firmly on its feet, Professor Sherman resigned the presidency in June, 1851, having purchased "The Brownwood," a school property just outside of LaGrange, Georgia. The kind folk of Marion gave him a handsome sendoff, and after a brief visit at the chemistry laboratories at Harvard, he commenced his private school at Brownwood. Success came slowly, but things were going well in spring of 1855 when Professor Milo Jewett, one of his best friends in Marion, decided to retire from the presidency of the Judson Female Institute there. The trustees of the Judson and the citizens of Marion urged Sherman to return. He accepted the presidency, and in the few years he spent there, the Judson prospered conspicuously, as it does today. My wife and I paid it an unannounced visit in 1956, just a bit more than a century after Great-grandfather started his work there, and the enthusiasm and kindness with which we were greeted, we shall never forget. Their memory of their old friend and champion was as fresh as though he had just walked out the door!

There is no way in a few paragraphs, to do justice to Professor Sherman's long career in the enterprise of higher education. His autobiography does that. But two aspects of his life in the South deserve special mention. The first indicates how he made ends meet. In his own words,

During all my connection with Howard, both as a preparatory school and college, I never had any fixed salary, but I employed all teachers and professors, except the Professor of Theology, and paid them from the proceeds of the tuition, appropriating to my own use what might be left. In financial matters one principle always governed me; that was to keep the Institution (and myself as far as possible) out of debt.

The second indicates how this Vermonter adjusted to social conditions in the South. He made many very close friends, and lived as a Southerner, at least to the extent of owning slaves. Nevertheless, as prospects for a Civil War loomed, he decided to return to the North. For someone who by that time had sunk deep roots in the South, this was not a simple business. A quote from his unpublished notes illustrates this point.

I never had much tact at saving money and consequently, never had much success in accumulating it. Until I entered the Judson Institute in 1855, my annual income did not much exceed the outgo and my accumulations were small, but on retiring from the Judson I had saved about \$40,000. Some of this I had invested in negroes (then considered about the safest and most productive investment). I owned ten, three men, two women and five children....

Why did a man who had been so successful and comfortable in the South decide to leave it, resigning the presidency of the Judson Institute in July 1859? He wrote:

Among the causes that contributed to my desire to leave the South, at this time, were the following:

- 1) My health was bad. The last year had been unusually trying: I felt discouraged and needed rest.*
- 2) We had buried four children in Marion and in our anxiety for the others had often looked forward to a change of climate. One year before I had placed our oldest son, Henry, a lad of eleven years, in a private school in the family of a brother in Vermont, and my wife was then spending the summer in the North with the other children.*
- 3) Just then I found an opportunity to transfer my interest in the Institute to parties acceptable to the trustees.*

Without recalling my wife and children, and with the aid of my sister and other friends, I packed up such articles as I wished to bring North, and left Alabama in August, 1859.... Believing war inevitable, I determined to seek a home as far from the seat of trouble as possible, where I could settle down quietly and educate my children.

He soon settled on Milwaukee.

On leaving, I sold the negroes (except one family) for cash; the furniture of the boarding department I sold to my steward, Mr. J. H. Lide; the books, stationery, music and art materials, all of which I furnished the school, and of which there was on hand a good supply, I sold to my successor, Prof. N.K. Davis. In payment I took the notes of Messrs. Lide and Davis, payable in three and sixteen months. The three months notes were paid promptly from the advance payments of pupils; the others could have been paid just as promptly, from the same source. But secession movements had begun and both men refused to pay their notes, alleging that it would be unpatriotic to pay northern debts. After the war, both gentlemen promptly canceled their obligations to me by proceedings in bankruptcy.



Samuel Sterling Sherman, Chicago, circa 1914
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Having devoted thirty years of his life to education, Professor Sherman was to have one more brief fling in that field, at the Milwaukee Female College, where he ran afoul of the noted feminist, Catherine Beecher. Miss Beecher's initial efforts to found this college had proved financially unsuccessful, and in 1863 Professor Sherman, then a member of the college's board of trustees, proposed a solution which culminated in his taking charge of the institution. Within three years, he had it solvent and had repaid its debts. However, Miss Beecher found it intolerable that her women's college was being run by a *man*, and caused such a fuss that Professor Sherman found a way to extricate himself. He was subsequently offered the presidency of the University of Wisconsin, but declined, having become interested in a more general business career.

While living in Milwaukee, he invested in real estate, including hotels, in banks, in Southern cotton fields and in Canadian oil. He had good business judgment, was a very attentive manager and prospered. In about 1867, he and associates, including Rev. Milo Jewett, the first President of the Judson Institute in Alabama, got into the tea, coffee and spice business, which Professor Sherman pursued for the rest of his business career. Their company was profitable, in part due to a novel baking powder formulated by Great-grandfather, who had always been especially interested in chemistry. However, there was dissension among the partners and managers, and in 1879, after the great Chicago fire, Prof. Sherman decided to move to Chicago and start a new tea and spice business there, with



Eliza (Dewey) Sherman (1817–1900), undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

only his sons as partners. He would never have guessed it, but he still had thirty-five years to live, so Chicago became his most permanent home.

One of the outstanding aspects of his long life was the way in which he retained the affection and respect of his Southern friends during and after the Civil War. He had made large efforts to ease the plight of Confederate prisoners at Camp Douglas near Chicago and at Johnson's Island in Lake Erie. Some of these soldiers had been his students in Alabama. When he returned to Marion for a visit in January 1866, he was greeted with great warmth and hospitality. These sentiments were echoed over the years, as he maintained his interest in the progress of Howard College and the Judson Institute.

Various physical disabilities kept him at home in last years of his long life, but he remained mentally bright to the end. He died on 22 November 1914 and is buried under a fine granite monument in Rose Hill Cemetery in Chicago.



*Homes of Samuel S. & son Frederick S. Sherman,
North State Street, Chicago, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives*

Eliza Dewey was born on 16 August 1817 in Augusta, Maine, the first child of William Dewey and Hannah Bond. At the age of ten, she completed a handsome sampler, which hangs in our dining room.

When Eliza was about seventeen, she was sent to school at the Ipswich Female Seminary in Massachusetts. This was much more than a girl's finishing school. To quote Thomas Franklin Waters, in his *Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony*,

The course of study included the common English branches, Botany, Chemistry, Astronomy, and in the Senior year, Ecclesiastical History, Logic, Paley's Natural Theology, Wayland's Moral Philosophy, Butler's Analogy and Alexander's Evidences of Christianity. There was no Latin, French or piano instruction.

There was, however, impressive instruction in art, as evidenced by a small workbook of Eliza's, containing pencil exercises in perspective, and shaded still life drawings so skillfully done that the fruit looks positively edible.

We find no record of her graduating from the Ipswich Seminary, although there is a surviving record of her sister Louise being admitted to the Junior year in 1837, after the family had moved to Philadelphia. Shortly after their arrival in Philadelphia, she, her stepmother and her paternal grandmother all joined the Spruce Street Baptist Church, and she was an active supporter of the Baptist Church during all her remaining days.

Philadelphia city directories show that the home of the Dewey family was being used for a school in the very early 1840s. It seems likely that this school was run by Eliza and Louisa, both of whom were later teachers at the Judson Female Institute in Alabama.

It was in 1843 that Eliza started teaching at the Judson, while Samuel was building up the foundations of Howard College. Thus they must have met and courted in Marion, Alabama, returning to Philadelphia to be married on 19 August 1845.

We are not so lucky as to have a single letter written by Eliza, so don't know how she expressed herself. We have to be content with Samuel's words:

My beloved wife died on November 14, 1900. She is buried in Rosehill Cemetery, near Chicago. She was a noble Christian woman. In all the vicissitudes of our married life no harsh or unkind word ever escaped her lips. She was the light of our household, the fountain of all its joys, and she never failed to bear her full share of all its burdens and sorrows.

Of her seven children, four died in early childhood in Marion. We have seen their graves.



Certificate of Marriage for Samuel S. Sherman and Eliza Dewey
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Lemuel Smith Hardin was born on 12 August 1840 in Jacksonville, Illinois, the third child and second son of Gen. John J. Hardin and Sarah Ellen Smith. He was named for a brother of Sarah, who died just before Lem's birth. Lem's career provides a most engaging genealogical puzzle, because he served on the Confederate side in the Civil War, while his brother was becoming a Union general. It has proved very difficult to ascertain just what military service Lem gave, or just why he gave it. But we get ahead of our story.

Until he was about eight, Lem lived in Jacksonville, making one trip with his mother and siblings in January 1847, to visit his uncle Abram Smith in Princeton, Mississippi. This trip may have been an effort to delay farewells to Lem's father, who was on his way to Texas and Mexico, as commander of

the First Illinois Volunteers. A month later, in the Battle of Buena Vista, his father was killed. A letter from his mother to his father in January 1847 says, "Lem and Alf are inseparable companions." Alf was his cousin, Alfred Cox Smith.

Shortly after his father's death, his baby sister, Elizabeth, died. Their mother decided to move the family back to Harrodsburg, Kentucky, where she had grown up. There they lived for about two and a half years, when their mother married Chancellor Reuben Hyde Walworth of Saratoga Springs, New York.

From the age of eleven through twenty-one, Lem lived in New York, spending most of his time away from home, at school at the Ballston Spa Institute, then at Charlier's French Academy in New York City. Quite a bit of information about Lem, including letters he wrote from Ballston Spa, survives at the Historical Society of Saratoga Springs. Finally, Lem attended Albany Law School, where he graduated in the spring of 1861.

Almost immediately, Lem set out with his brother-in-law (his sister Ellen's husband, Mansfield Tracy Walworth) to set up a law practice somewhere in the West. They first aimed for St. Louis, but before they arrived, pre-Civil War fighting broke out there and they decided it would be safer to settle in Louisville. By 1862, Lem, Ellen and their mother jointly purchased property a few miles east of Louisville. Ellen soon wrote to her mother that Lem had become a great favorite with the young gay folk of Louisville. (In those days, to be "gay" just meant that you enjoyed partying and dancing as much or more than going to church.)

The summer and fall of 1862 were traumatic times for Lem and his siblings. Lem was in Saratoga Springs on business, having taken Ellen's son Johnnie, who was ailing, with him. On 30 August 1862, Lem's older brother, Martin D. Hardin, an officer in the Union army, was terribly wounded in the Second Battle of Bull Run. He was sent home to Saratoga Springs, where Lem helped to nurse him back to health. Just one day before this, Confederate forces under Kirby Smith demolished Union "raw recruits" in a battle at Richmond, Kentucky, thus removing any serious obstacle to a Confederate move against Louisville, which was under Union control.

Kirby Smith decided not to attack Louisville, but the area where Lem and Ellen lived was flooded with defeated Union troops, and a regiment from Ohio camped right on their property. Ellen helped to care for the sick and wounded in her home, and her mother, who knew the Union commander at Louisville, William "Bull" Nelson, got him to promise to send a guard to Ellen's home, to protect it and her. His assurance that he would do so reached Saratoga Springs at the same time as news of his murder by one of his own generals, whom he had grossly insulted.

Before his death, General Nelson had conscripted the local populace to dig trenches around Louisville, and had announced plans, if he could not successfully defend the city, to burn it, and to level it with artillery from the opposite bank of the Ohio River. None of this can have been welcome news to many residents, of whom a sizeable fraction had Southern sympathies.

By October, Union reinforcements had reached Louisville and had moved out to confront the Confederates at Perryville. This was a costly battle for both sides, and Confederate prisoners soon arrived in Louisville, where Ellen, her cousins and young friends made clothes and meals for their relief. By mid-October, Ellen's mother had come to Louisville to help out, but Lem was still at Saratoga Springs, where Martin D. had recovered sufficiently to leave for Washington, D.C., with Lem accompanying him. Writing to Chancellor Walworth from Louisville, Lem's mother opined that it would be perfectly safe for Lem to come home—the threat of being impressed to dig trenches, etc., had passed. By December, he was home again.



Lemuel Smith Hardin (center) and unidentified family members, circa 1865
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Although he was not personally present during these troubled days at Louisville, Lem must have worried for the safety of his mother, sister and property. Non-combatants were expected to be materially helpful to occupying troops, out of loyalty to the cause if they were Union sympathizers, or by fortunes of war if they were known or suspected to have Confederate sympathies. Writing long after the war, Ellen described how she hid Lem's favorite horse, "Pet," in the basement of her house to prevent its seizure by their Union "guests."

By summer of 1863, things had calmed down a bit at Louisville. Lem's mother was again there to help out, and in a letter to Chancellor Walworth she described a humorous event in which Ellen was trying to get a photo made of the entire family together—she and her son Frank on horseback, Lem in his buggy with "Pet," when the photographer fell off the platform he was using and broke his equipment. The date of this letter, 16 June 1863, is significant for Lem's military history, because it shows him in a civilian role at the very time that John Hunt Morgan's guerrillas were passing Louisville on their way to cross the Ohio River at Brandenburg, and to commence their raid into Ohio.

This finally brings us back to the riddle of Lem's military service for the Confederacy. Family historians often lament the paucity of sources from which to draw essential facts. The problem in Lem's case is that there are plentiful sources, but no two of them agree. We have one primary source—Lem's own handwritten letter to President Andrew Johnson, asking for a pardon so that he can practice law in Kentucky after the war. He said,

On or about the first day of January 1864, I left the State of Kentucky and joined as private Co. B, 2d Ky Confederate Volunteers—Never served in any other capacity and was surrendered under Gen. Johnston.

Almost all sources agree that Lem served with John Hunt Morgan's cavalry. There was a 2nd Special Cavalry Battalion of Kentucky Confederate Volunteers, organized in 1864 from members of John Hunt Morgan's old command (and presumably from any available new volunteers, such as Lem). There is also a substantial record of Morgan's first battle with his reconstituted command, at Crockett's Cove, near Wytheville, Virginia, on 10 May 1864. Family tradition, substantiated by one contemporary letter and a photograph of Lem on crutches, states that he was shot in the leg in the Battle of Crockett's Cove. The letter just mentioned was from Lt. Martin Holbrook, a Confederate prisoner at Johnson's Island, to Ellen, with whom he had exchanged letters earlier. He said, "You spoke of having a Brother in the Hospital at Withville (sic), Va." That brother could only have been Lem.

The photo of Lem on crutches, and a letter from him to his mother on 3 February 1865, suggest that Lem, in stating to President Johnson that he (Lem) had been surrendered under General [Joseph] Johnston, had not felt it necessary to tell the whole truth. Both the photo and Lem's letter to his mother are clearly marked as coming from Montreal, Canada. In the letter, Lem said that he could get around his room with a cane, but that his wound was still open. General Johnston surrendered to Gen. W. T. Sherman in the second week of April, 1865, and it is hard to imagine how Lem could have got to North Carolina in time for the surrender.

The truth of how Lem ended his wartime service is deeply buried by now, but the version published in 1947 by the town historian of Saratoga Springs seems plausible. She said, probably on the basis of notes left by Ellen Hardin Walworth, or perhaps from conversations with Grammé, whom she knew personally, the following:

When Lemuel was recovered sufficiently to travel [presumably at Wytheville, Virginia], he was sent to the home of his sister, Mrs. Ellen Hardin (Mrs. Mansfield Tracy) Walworth, then at Bird's Nest, Kentucky. That state was a border state, and soldiers of the North and South were constantly milling about the streets and the home of Mrs. Walworth. That was the time also, that the grandfather of Miss Clara Grant Walworth, Thomas Eliot Bramlette, was chief executive of Kentucky.

Hearing also that her brother, Martin D., was soon to visit her also to recuperate from his wounds, and knowing that her brother, the General, would be forced to arrest his own brother for treason should they meet, Mrs. Walworth was instrumental in getting Lemuel, dressed as a woman, through the blockade into Canada, hiding his Confederate uniform in the folds of her gown.

Lemuel made the escape to Canada, where he recovered from his wounds, but never enough to return to battle.

If this account is true, it would explain Lem's prevarication in his application for a pardon. To have told the true story would have implicated his sister in what the Union authorities would surely have considered treasonable behavior. It would also explain the fact that Ellen Hardin Walworth, in all the lectures she gave and articles she wrote, frequently mentioning the heroics of her brother Martin D., had virtually nothing to say about her brother Lem.

From items collected by Lem from New York publications (in a scrapbook in my possession), it seems likely that he enjoyed telling this story himself, but I have never been able to find a published account in his own words.

There is also some question about Lem's rank while in the Confederate army. The same Saratoga historian says, "Lemuel, too was wounded in action and breveted Colonel for his bravery in action." This is probably fanciful. I have a photo of Lem in a Confederate colonel's uniform, but the uniform is a perfect fit for a stout man in his sixties, not a young soldier in his twenties. Having moved

back from Fort Hamilton to Kentucky about 1895, Lem was there in time to assume a major role in Louisville's hospitality to an Annual Reunion of the Confederate Veterans Association in 1900. I believe that he acquired the honorary rank of colonel, as Assistant Adjutant General of the Kentucky Division of CVA, although he was never more than a private during the War.

It was reported that both Chancellor Walworth (Lem's stepfather) and President Lincoln (a close personal friend of Lem's father) were saddened by Lem's decision to join the Confederate forces, but that they respected him for acting on his convictions. However doubtful we may be about the reasons for Lem's action, one thing stands out unmistakably—the experiences of the war did nothing to weaken the bonds of family affection.

After the war, Lem returned to Louisville and resumed practice of the law in partnership with Thomas W. Bullitt, who was one of the Confederate officers who was imprisoned with John S. Morgan in July of 1863, and was one of the founders of the Filson Historical Society in Louisville.

On 30 January 1866, Lem married Annie Overton Jacob at "Lynnford," the elegant Jacob family home. The ceremony was performed by Rev. James Craik, a near neighbor and close friend of Lem and Nellie. On 24 October 1866, Lem was officially pardoned for "leaving a loyal state" in the Civil War, on the recommendation of Gov. Thomas Bramlette, who was the father-in-law of Nellie's son Frank Walworth. Lem continued to practice law, not very successfully, and gradually became more and more interested in journalism and in the breeding and care of dairy cattle.

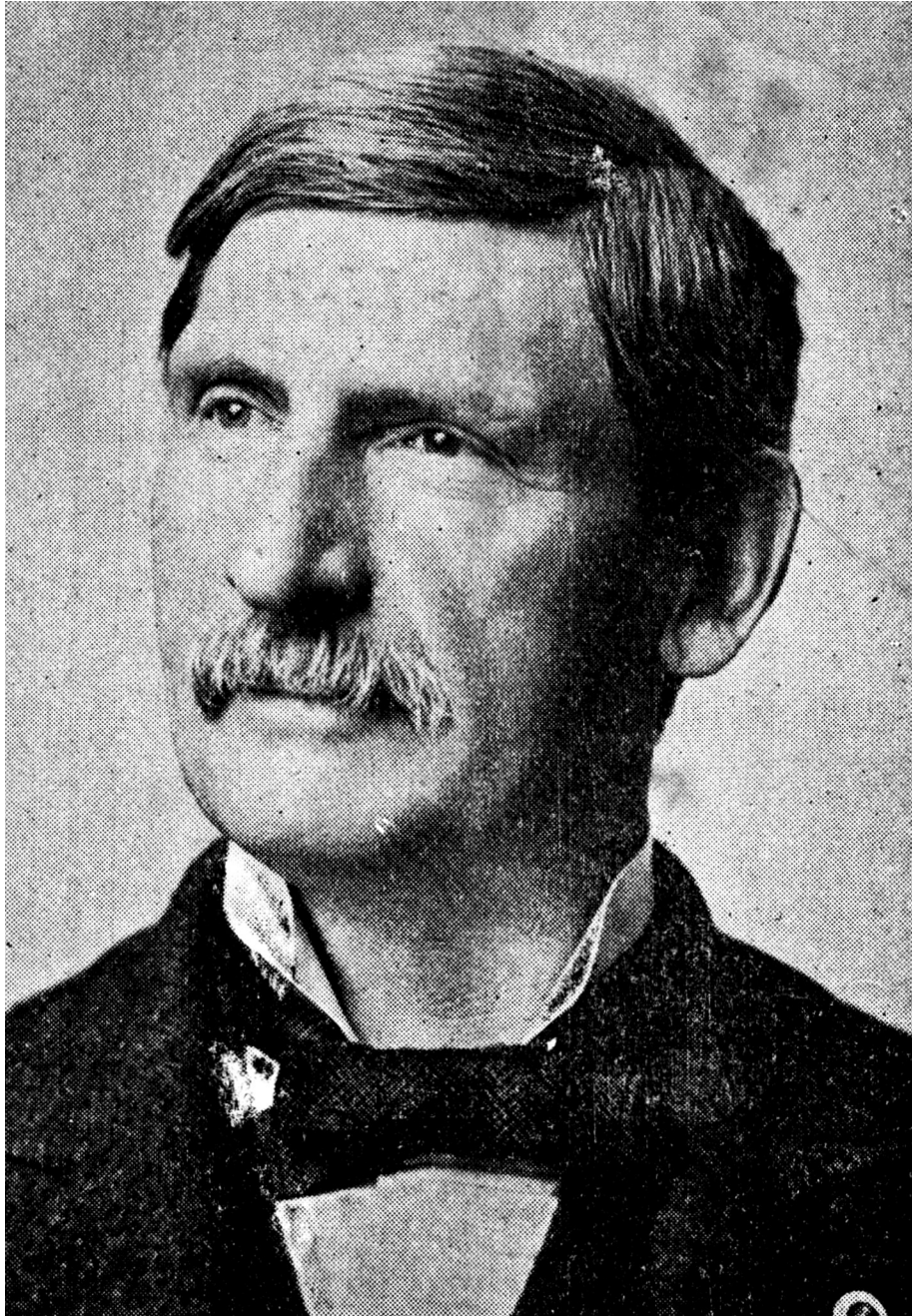
In 1879, he moved his family to Fort Hamilton, New York, working as the Secretary of the American Jersey Cattle Club. In 1885, he authored *The Jersey Cow*, which was published by the Club. In 1886, he was editor of *Tobacco: Sole Organ of the Wholesale and Retail Trade*. Somehow these occupations must have been remunerative, or perhaps he received a generous bequest from his father-in-law, one of the richest men in Louisville, because we find this modest newspaper notice in his scrapbook:

Colonel L. S. Hardin, who came from the South, resides at Fort Hamilton, L.I., where he has a yacht and enjoys sailing six months in the year. During the war he was a dashing Confederate cavalry officer under Colonel John S. Mosby. He is a man of great energy and determination and is popular. His hospitality has no limit to it and the result is he is always entertaining friends at Fort Hamilton.

This makes it look as though the notion of his having been a colonel arose in New York, although in the 1890 census of Union Veterans his service is described more modestly and accurately, as that of a private under Col. John H. Morgan. (Why this Confederate veteran was listed in the census of Union veterans, is only one of many puzzles involving Lem.)

Back in Louisville, Lem was most often described as a journalist, writing about dairy cattle. His pamphlet, *The Dairy Calf*, was copyrighted in 1897. It gives detailed instructions about breeding, feeding, sheltering and exercising the calf. His writings on dairy subjects evidently stirred some controversy, as is humorously expressed in the following quotes from two publications, unidentified but probably in dairy magazines circa 1901 and 1905. Under a reproduction of the photo that first appeared in the program of the Confederate veterans 1900 reunion in Louisville, we find:

The accompanying portrait of L. S. Hardin is the picture of a much better looking man than he is. He is a pretty sharp sort of fellow but of course he is nothing like as smart as he thinks he is. The Holstein people are charitable enough to think he is a little off, while Governor Hoard says he is feeble minded, hence both have agreed to let him alone. Words cannot describe what Jennings thinks of him, providing Jennings thinks at all. One half of the Jersey people say he slanders the dear little cow and the outside dairymen call him a Jersey crank, so there you are.



Lemuel Smith Hardin (1840–1909), undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

While Mr. Hardin was not a “charter” member of the American Jersey Cattle Club, he was close up to the front and dealt largely with imported Jerseys early in the 1870s making him now a member of the “Old Guard.”

*Mr. Hardin lives in Louisville, Kentucky, and is quite a busy man, doing much writing on agricultural subjects for several papers, among them the **Jersey Bulletin**. He is editor of the dairy department of “Farm and Home.”*

Under another reproduction of the same photo appears this little jewel:

COLONEL HARDIN OF ILLINOIS: Shoots straight at frauds in dairying, just as he shot at the enemy in battle to earn his title. Sometimes he goes at it Gatling style, mowing them down in heaps; at others just pecking at a vital spot in some bad practice.

As this last item suggests, Lem moved to Chicago circa 1904, to live with his daughter's family, the Shermans, and to be close to his brother, Martin D. Hardin. He was a widower by then, and when the Shermans moved to Coronado, Lem came for an extended visit. He died at St. Joseph's Sanatorium in San Diego, on 23 May 1909, after an attack of apoplexy.

Lem and his wife Annie are buried under modest stones in Cave Hill Cemetery in Louisville, in a large Jacob family plot.



Annie Overton Jacob (1846–1901), undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Annie Overton Jacob was born on 5 September 1846 in Jefferson County, Kentucky, the first of four daughters of John Jeremiah Jacob Jr. and Evelyn Johnson. Throughout her life she remained close to her sisters Evelyn (Lena), Matilda (Tillie) and Edwina.

We know virtually nothing of her childhood, save that her father had a magnificent house, Lynnford, built on his farm in 1853–1854, so that she grew up there from the age of seven or eight. This house, now a central building of the Hurstbourne Country Club, was then quite far out in the countryside, about nine miles due east from the Hardin homes.

We get just a glimpse of this childhood from a joint obituary notice for Annie and her mother, who died within five weeks of each other, in late 1901. It said,

Within a month past death has claimed two of Louisville's most precious citizens, Mrs. Evelyn Jacob and Mrs. Annie Hardin, mother and daughter, so alike in spirit and character that death itself could not part them. From the time when Louisville was only a good-sized town to the present day, Mrs. Jacob has been the central figure of a social circle, where all hearts paid homage to her genial and magnetic character and enjoyed the wealth of her boundless hospitality. With daughters and granddaughters representing every type of female loveliness, she kept them always with her until surrendered to the husbands of their choice, and even then they clung to her with a rich affection so characteristic of our grand old Kentucky families.

With this clue, we can imagine Annie, her sisters and her mother taking frequent carriage rides into Louisville, to parties and other social activities, at one of which Annie and Lem must have met.

When she was married, she wrote frequently to Lem's stepfather, Chancellor Walworth, calling him "Dear Father." A few months after their marriage, she wrote from "*Bird's Nest*," telling the Chancellor how comfortable and delightful she found her new home and informing him that her parents are thinking of selling her childhood home.

We learn something of Annie's education from her account of French lessons which she was giving to Lem's sister Nellie. As a proper Victorian wife, she referred to Lem as "Mr. Hardin." In a letter dated 13 March 1867, Annie sent the Chancellor a photo of her two-month-old son, John J. Hardin, named for his grandfather. She enclosed another for Dolly Smith. Her letter, and another that followed shortly, express all a new mother's delight in her child and give a humorous account of the excitement of Nellie's children on the arrival of their new little cousin. From that time on for about thirty years, we have almost no record of Annie. Then, on 20 February 1899, she made her will, leaving everything to Lem during his life, and then providing for equal division between her two children.

While her parents probably were Union sympathizers during the Civil War, Annie shared her husband's sentimental attachment to the Confederate cause, and became a member of the Albert Sydney Johnston Chapter of the Daughters of the Confederacy. In the minutes of the Sixth Annual Convention of the Kentucky Division of that organization, there was an obituary notice for her. Annie died on 24 November 1901 at the Chicago home of her daughter, Evelyn Sherman. She had suffered for about three months from the effects of a brain tumor. She is buried next to Lem in the Jacob family plot at Cave Hill.

Joseph Henry Allen was born on 21 August 1820 at Northborough, Massachusetts, the second child and first son of Rev. Joseph Allen and Lucy Clarke Ware. In writing about him, we have access to several extended obituaries written by highly literate friends and colleagues, and to a scholarly biographical essay written by Katherine Myrick Mulhern, a great-granddaughter of Joseph Henry's brother Thomas Prentice Allen. Joseph Henry was himself a prolific author, many of whose formal works and informal letters survive in libraries such as that of the Harvard Divinity School.

Let me start by quoting from an obituary memoir by Charles Carrol Everett of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts:

In his infancy, it seemed as if Dr. Allen's rich spiritual inheritance was to be counterbalanced by a feeble constitution. He was a puny infant, and one leg was so drawn up that it was feared that he would never be able to walk. He was carried from Northborough to Boston by an aunt, on a pillow, that he might have the advantage of the surgical skill of Dr. James Jackson. He also had a weakness of the eyes that was overcome only by the greatest care. It is interesting to recall this unpromising beginning in connection with the long walks in which he took such delight all his life, and his splendid service as a scholar.

I continue with selected quotes from this same source:

Of course he [Joseph Henry] must go to college. The chief, if not the only, help that his father could offer him toward this end, was the gift of his time and a little teaching. He mainly fitted himself for college, and certainly he had a good teacher.

He had a room in the house of Henry Ware, junior, and his meals in that of his grandfather, Henry Ware, senior. These arrangements not only brought him under the best influences, but relieved him very largely of the expenses incident to a college life. The expenses that remained he met largely by teaching. The long winter vacation was designed to enable students to do this. He taught in Walpole, New Hampshire, and, possibly, in Bellows Falls, Vermont. He graduated from college in 1840 at the age of twenty, his rank entitling him to the honors of the Phi Beta Kappa. He at once entered the Harvard Divinity School, from which he graduated in 1843.

Joseph Henry's career as a parish minister of the Unitarian church was relatively brief (1843–1857), and not thoroughly successful. He served parishes in Jamaica Plain, Massachusetts (1843–1847), Washington, D.C. (1847–1850) and Bangor, Maine (1850–1857). Upon his resignation from the Bangor parish, he brought his family back to Jamaica Plain, and never again secured a permanent job in the ministry, although he served as interim pastor at times in Newton, Massachusetts; Ithaca, New York; Ann Arbor, Michigan and San Diego, California.

Katherine Mulhern has described and analyzed this professional history at some length, and concludes that Joseph Henry was perhaps too open-minded about controversial subjects to have been a popular leader. His preaching days were virtually over before the onset of the Civil War; but slavery in general and the Fugitive Slave Law and Congressional acts affecting the westward spread of slavery were already burning issues. Joseph Henry was certainly opposed to slavery, but he thought that Northerners knew too little about its actual practice in the South to tell their Southern neighbors how to behave. Most of all, he was too fond of his church and the fellowship of the Unitarian clergy, to allow himself to ostracize a fellow minister whose views of any particular social issue differed from his own. Unfortunately, that willingness to love your friend while rejecting his opinion is rare in all times of great social stress, and led in Joseph Henry's case to unjust suspicions that he was only feebly attached to the cause of "virtue."

It is past time to mention Joseph Henry's marriage, on 22 May 1845, to Anna Minot Weld of Roxbury, Massachusetts. This united two old Puritan families, both of which were in Massachusetts Bay by the late 1630s but had enjoyed rather different economic fortunes, the Allens having been farmers, teachers and ministers, while the Welds had become wealthy sea captains, ship owners and merchants. The willingness of Hannah's brothers to help out financially made it possible for the Allens to make a fresh start in Jamaica Plain, where Joseph Henry occupied himself with teaching and editing.

The family had not been many years in Jamaica Plain, when they were called back to Northborough, to help nurse Joseph Henry's ailing mother through the last three years of her life (1863–1866). During this time he took charge of his father's parish, which the elder Allen had already served for forty-seven years.

At the end of this time, the family made a final home, at 5 Garden Street in Cambridge, on what is now a corner of the Radcliffe campus. Fortunately for us and other descendants, Radcliffe made a diorama of this neighborhood, as it appeared just before it was cleared away. This, which we have seen and photographed, shows an elderly gentleman in front of the house, as though waiting for the horse drawn streetcar. One could easily imagine that it represented our ancestor, except that he would almost certainly have been walking to his destination, for he was a famous walker. John White Chadwick, a twenty years younger man, said of him,



Joseph Henry Allen (1820–1898), undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

How brisk his step, which seemed to spurn the earth, for which, in fact, he had the warmest possible affection. 'After forty, count the steps,' an old practitioner advised, but after seventy-five Dr. Allen went up the long flight in my own house on the run....

His inability to secure a parish did not weaken Joseph Henry's attachment to the Unitarian cause. His editing work was for Unitarian journals, to which he frequently contributed articles and columns. His teaching was mostly to prepare boys for Harvard.

By this time, Joseph Henry had earned a distinguished reputation as a scholar of church history and theology, a voracious reader in both modern and ancient languages. It was his mastery of Latin that finally put his family on a firm financial footing. In 1869, after the family had moved to Cambridge, Joseph Henry, together with his brother William Francis Allen and Prof. James Bradstreet Greenough of Harvard, began to bring forth a series of textbooks and monographs called the Allen and Greenough Classical Series. The most popular of these was Allen and Greenough's Latin Grammar, which appeared originally in 1872, and appeared in new editions in 1903 and 1930, and still is available online today.



Joseph Henry Allen reading, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Joseph Henry apparently thought of the work he put into the Classical Series books as just a sort of intellectual janitorial service, pretty dull stuff compared to his work on theology and history, but he was ever ready to turn his hand to anything honest, in order to support his family. At any rate, the Latin Grammar evidently sold like hotcakes, and the added income plus a generous gift from one of Anna's brothers made it possible for the family to purchase a vacation home on Nantucket Island.

The happiest years of Joseph Henry's life came between 1878 and 1882, when he held a temporary Lectureship in Ecclesiastical History in the Harvard Divinity School. He had in essence been preparing for this for years, reading and analyzing ancient texts and preparing notes. After this term of lecturing and teaching, he pulled these notes together in a three-volume set on Christian history.

In a twelve-page obituary notice in *The New World* of June 1898, John White Chadwick gave an extensive and appreciative review of Joseph Henry's books and other publications. A single quote can't do justice to all he said, but I chose one.

We have not yet touched what is most central to Dr. Allen's "History," something which runs through every part of it, as it does through all the manifestations of his personality.... It is that which he has himself named for us in the happiest manner as "the ethical passion." In this, and not in any dogma or speculation or sacrament, he finds the central norm of Christian History. By this he tests individuals and special intellectual developments.

Joseph Henry was very disappointed when Harvard decided not to give him a permanent appointment, but that did not dim his scholarly enthusiasm or his enjoyment of life. One of his friends remarked, “He was a younger man at seventy than he had been at thirty.” Through his writing and editorial services he probably became better known and more welcome among his Unitarian colleagues than had he been a successful minister in some distant parish. He was a frequent lecturer to audiences who were eager to hear what he had to say.

One of the exciting things that happened to Joseph Henry during his stay at Harvard was an 1881 trip to Koloszar, Transylvania, to attend, as delegate of the American, British and Foreign Unitarian Associations, the session of the supreme consistory of the Unitarian churches of Hungary. He continued correspondence with Hungarian church officials for years and was made an Honorary Consistor of the Hungarian Church.

Other honors came to him late in life. He was sent to London in 1890 to a Universal Peace Congress, and in 1891 Harvard awarded him an honorary doctorate of theology (S.T.D.), which explains why he was called Dr. Allen in obituary notices.

Joseph Henry Allen left a will, signed on 27 November 1896, leaving everything to his wife Anna during her lifetime, “and that at her death it shall be equitably divided among our children or the survivors of them.” If Joseph Henry should survive Anna, he wanted “The Cliff” in Nantucket to be jointly held and owned by daughters Lucy and Mary (but if sold, the proceeds to be divided equally among all the children). Finally, all else was to go into a trust to be administered by daughter Mary (should she consent to assume this charge) until her death or marriage (to watch over income from copyrights). If she declines, then he trusts his son Gardner (the only son living nearby) to do it.

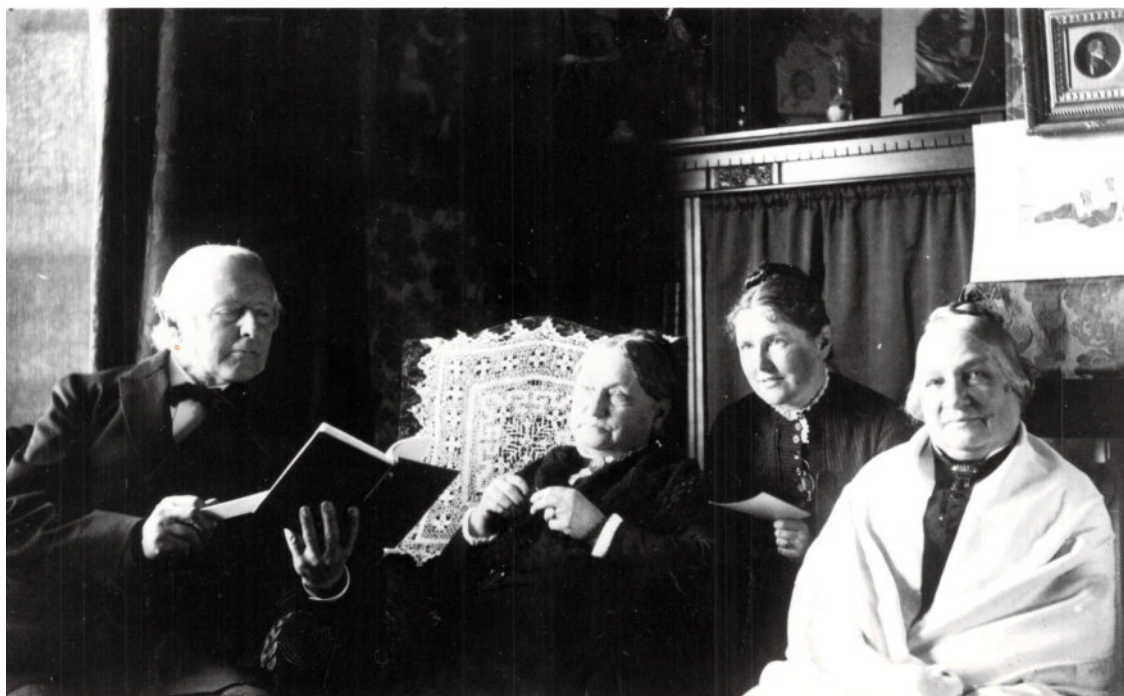
He died in Cambridge on 20 March 1898, after a brief illness. His death certificate says that he was buried at Forest Hills Cemetery in West Roxbury, but there is a memorial marker for him in the cemetery behind the Unitarian Church at Northborough, in an impressive family plot.

Hannah/Anna Minot Weld was born on 19 March 1820 at Lancaster, Massachusetts, the eleventh and last child of Capt. William Gordon Weld and Hannah Minot. In almost all records found for her, her given name Hannah is shortened to Anna.

Like so many women of the Victorian period, Anna lived in her husband’s shadow, as far as public notice was concerned. A couple of her letters are preserved at the Harvard Divinity School, and she left an estate, to which the heirs at law were:

Mary W. Allen of Cambridge, Massachusetts, daughter
Richard M. Allen of Mexico City, son
Russell C. Allen of Bonita, California, son
Gardner W. Allen of Boston, Massachusetts, son
Margaret W. Gage of Cambridge, Massachusetts, granddaughter
Anna M. Gage of Cambridge, Massachusetts, granddaughter
Sybil Gage of Cambridge, Massachusetts, granddaughter
Miriam Gage of Cambridge, Massachusetts, granddaughter

We have just a couple of photos of her, taken when she was in her seventies. A set of silver serving spoons, evidently a wedding gift to her, came down to us, and we have passed it on to one of her great-great-granddaughters, Electra Huggins, as a wedding present.



Joseph Henry and Anna Allen and daughters, Cambridge, circa 1897: (L-R) Joseph Henry Allen, wife Anna Minot (Weld) Allen, daughters Mary Ware Allen and Lucy Clark (Allen) Gage
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Joseph Henry and Anna Allen with family, Cooper House, Bonita, circa 1893: (L-R) Mary Ware Allen, Anna Minot (Weld) Allen, Joseph Henry Allen with grandson Richard Minot Allen, Ella Bradford (Copeland) Allen and Russell Carpenter Allen with son Morris Copeland Allen.
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Robert Morris Copeland (1830–1874) as a young man
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Robert Morris Copeland was born on 11 December 1830 at Roxbury, Massachusetts, the third child and second son of Benjamin Franklin Copeland and Julia Fellows Ruggles. Within the family, he was almost always called just “Morris.” He attended Roxbury Latin School, graduating in 1847, with his lifelong friend, Dr. Frederick Winsor. He and Winsor were also classmates at Harvard, getting their A.B. degrees with the class of 1851.

Morris’s career at Harvard was briefly interrupted in 1850, when he was “rusticated” for part of his junior year, for an alleged lack of respect for the faculty. However, he graduated on time and put his education promptly to work. By 1854, he was established in business as a landscape gardener, as a junior partner to Horace William Shaler Cleveland. One of their early projects was the design of “Sleepy Hollow” Cemetery in Concord, Massachusetts, at the dedication of which Ralph Waldo Emerson was the principal speaker. It is clear from Emerson’s remarks on that occasion, and from the philosophy of landscape design expressed by Morris throughout his career, that they shared a common “romantic” esthetic, characterized by respect for the natural order of topography and vegetation.

On 29 June 1854, Morris married Josephine Gannett Kent, daughter of Rev. Benjamin Kent and Eleanor Bradford of Roxbury. There is a family tradition that he and Frederick Winsor, both of whom must have known Josie as teenagers and college students, competed for her hand. The closeness of the two families in later years, and the fact that Morris and Josie named their first son Frederick, lend support to this tradition.

By the time he was twenty-nine, Morris had authored and published a massive tome called *Country Life*, which was a learned, philosophically interesting but very practical book of advice on how to lay out and care for the grounds and plantings of the hundred-acre estate, which he assumed to lie in the near future for most American families. This book is still interesting and useful today.

Even before he launched his professional career, Morris had joined his father, other family members and friends, in efforts to find valuable deposits of slate, and to develop facilities for the manufacture of slate for building construction. In the early 1850s, he traveled to northern Maine and western Massachusetts in the search for slate deposits, finally settling on the area of West Castleton, Vermont. There he and a partner, William Hughes, bought land in April 1853, and started to develop quarries and slate mills. Throughout his entire adult life, Morris pursued these two careers, landscape gardening and slate manufacture, in parallel, living at some times with his family in West Castleton, and at others, camping in his office in Boston or at the sites of various landscaping projects.

The Civil War had barely begun when Copeland volunteered for the Union army. Because of his education, family connections and gentlemanly upbringing, perfect age, and possibly because of his enthusiasm and incredibly handsome appearance in military uniform, he immediately secured a lieutenant's commission, as quartermaster of the 2nd Massachusetts Volunteer Regiment. In relatively short order, he was promoted to major, to serve as Asst. Adjutant General to Maj. Gen. Nathaniel Banks, Commander of the 2nd Massachusetts. This regiment was sent to Harpers Ferry, and on into the Shenandoah Valley, where it was opposed by Gen. Stonewall Jackson.

We are extremely lucky to possess a substantial collection of Civil War letters between Morris and Josie. From these, and from Morris's published "statement" about the unhappy events sketched below, we get an unusually vivid picture of the effect of the Civil War on this branch of our family. The letters, especially Josie's, are extremely moving.

One interesting episode, about which the letters tantalize, but do not satisfy us, was a visit by Josie and her two surviving children, Fred and Ella, to see Morris in Frederick, Maryland, where the 2nd Mass



Robert Morris Copeland, 1861
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Robert Morris Copeland in military uniform
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Major Robert Morris Copeland and fellow officers, circa March 1862: (L–R) Lt. James Savage, Lt. Robert Gould Shaw, Maj. Robert Morris Copeland (seated), and Lt. Henry S. Russell
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

was encamped during November 1861. Another letter, in which Morris described the scenic beauty of the Shenandoah Valley, has struck me as an especially poignant signpost of that tragic war. The reason is that I have recently read in the book, *Defense of the Valley*, a letter from a young Confederate soldier, describing that same view in much the same words, and with much the same feeling. It seems to me that under happier circumstances the two young soldiers might have become lifelong friends.

In the spring of 1862, it seemed (at least to Copeland) that the Union forces under Banks had a wonderful opportunity to combine with those under John C. Fremont to rout Jackson's forces and to start a sweep upon Richmond. However, orders came from Washington, directing Fremont to stay where he was, and directing Banks to fall back and to send roughly half his forces to Fredericksburg. Banks was distressed by these orders, but was prepared to obey them. Copeland, however, was so agitated that he ultimately persuaded Banks to send him to Washington, to explain the situation to Secretary Stanton. Thus began a series of actions by Copeland, including a request for permission to raise a regiment of Negro troops, trips back to Massachusetts to encourage enlistments there with words that strongly implied that the Union forces were in desperate trouble, and the sending of a message in a self-invented code to his brother-in-law in Boston, that so enraged Stanton that he personally ordered that Copeland be "dismissed the service," i.e., kicked out of the army. This happened on 6 August 1862.

Col. Shaw in John Brown's Cell

To the Editor of the Transcript :

Last September I made my second pilgrimage to John Brown's grave, and spent the night under the roof of the same house from which it was permitted me to see all that was mortal of the old hero committed to the dust.

I passed the evening largely in looking over the several registers to be seen there, in which visitors (and they are many) have recorded their names, some of them with comments and reflections.

At that time I copied into my notebook what is hereto appended. As a bit of history it is not without interest. I think the several names mentioned are all of Boston, and perhaps sons of Harvard.

"The first Sunday in March, 1862, while the Army of the Shenandoah was encamped at Charlestown, Va., General Banks requested me to arrange a plan of receiving and aiding the colored people who should come within our lines, as we advanced South.

"Soon after leaving General Banks I met Lieutenant James Savage of the Colored Massachusetts Volunteers, who was afterwards mortally wounded at Cedar Mountain, Lieutenant R. G. Shaw, afterwards killed at Wagner, colonel of the Fifty-fourth Massachusetts Colored Volunteers, and Lieutenant Russell of the Second Massachusetts Regiment, afterwards colonel of the Massachusetts Colored Cavalry.

"With these officers I went to the jail where John Brown was confined, and up in to his cell. The old cot was there on which he lay during his imprisonment. We sat down on the cot, and after talking of other matters, I told them of General Banks' request; we discussed the subject and then and there arranged the final details of the plan and policy in the Department of the Shenandoah by which the colored people were recognized as free as soon as they entered our lines, and set at work for the Government.

"Thus, within three years John Brown's work was completed on the very spot where he died to testify his belief in the principles of human equality and justice.

"[Signed] ROBERT MORRIS COPELAND."

Aug. 10, 1867.

Yours respectfully,

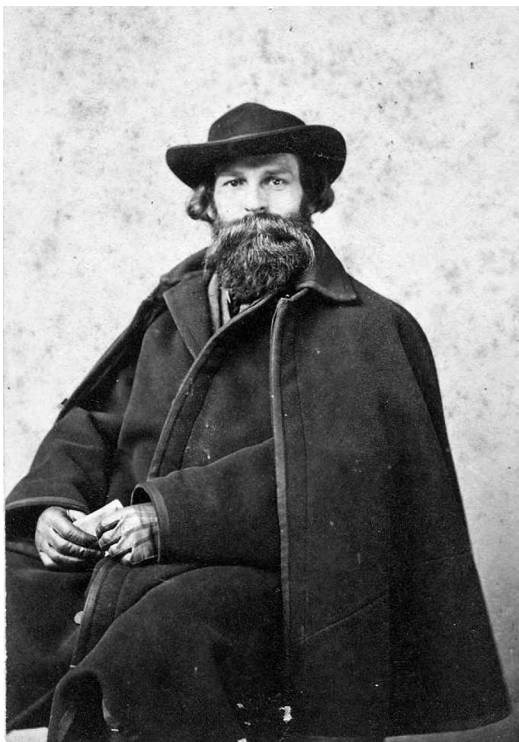
JOSHUA YOUNG,

Groton, Mass.

This is not the place to retell this story in detail. Suffice it to say that Copeland was stunned by this action and that he spent much of the next eight years of his life trying to clear his name. Nothing that he could do, or that was done by his friends or those who believed in him, seemed to have any positive effect. He got letters of support, directed to Senator Sumner and to President Lincoln, signed by twenty-one of Massachusetts' most luminary intellectuals, including Longfellow and Emerson, presidents of Harvard and MIT and mayors of Boston. He even got a personal interview with Lincoln, who essentially told him that if he took time to worry about all the grievances of individual officers, he would have none left to run the country. (Probably a very fair and accurate statement, but much resented by the Copeland family for generations to come.) Ultimately, when Gen. U. S. Grant became President, the powers on high became more sympathetic, and a new order was issued, declaring that Major Copeland was honorably discharged.

As a civilian after his involuntary separation from the army, Morris resumed family life, mostly in the beautiful surroundings of West Castleton, Vermont. He and Josie had three more children. He resumed his career as a landscape gardener (today we would call him a landscape architect), and completed many worthwhile projects in New England and Pennsylvania. Many of these were designs for individual homes, such as that of William Barton Rogers, first President of MIT, for whom Morris and Josie named their youngest son. Other projects were on a grander scale, such as at Oak Bluffs on Martha's Vineyard and Ridley Park, just south of Philadelphia. The latter was an entire planned community. He was a charismatic and popular man, and the news that President Grant had justified him in 1870 inspired his neighbors to celebrate by building bonfires on all the hilltops around West Castleton.

Morris's ambitions for his professional career were somewhat hampered by competition with Frederick Law Olmstead, one of the giants of American landscape architecture. Thus, Morris's design for New York's Central Park came in second, behind that of Olmstead. Many plans for the beautification of



Robert Morris Copeland wearing hat and cape
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Robert Morris Copeland in Philadelphia
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Robert Morris Copeland Home in Castleton, Vermont
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Robert Morris Copeland Home in Beaver Brook Falls, Waltham, Massachusetts
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Boston were never realized, but who knows what Morris might have accomplished had he not have been cut off by cancer in the prime of life. He died on 28 March 1874 at the home of his brother-in-law Charles F. Dunbar in Cambridge while still working on Ridley Park. Dunbar, then a dean at Harvard, served as guardian for the children of Morris and Josie who had been left virtually penniless because Morris had all his savings in two insurance companies that had collapsed during the nationwide financial crisis of 1873.

Morris was buried, without a grave marker, next to a pine tree in Mt. Feake Cemetery in Waltham, Massachusetts. This lovely cemetery, which Morris had designed early in his career, borders the Charles River, not far from Beaver Brook Falls, where he had lived in 1858 when our grandmother Ella was born. The old home at Beaver Brook may still be seen, as the headquarters building of a small regional park.



Josephine Gannett Kent as a young girl
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Josephine Gannett Kent was born on 7 June 1833 in Duxbury, Massachusetts, the third of four daughters of Rev. Benjamin Kent and Eleanor Bradford. In the family she was always called "Josie." Her middle name comes from her father's fondness for Rev. Ezra Stiles Gannett. Three days after Josie's birth her father resigned the pastorate of the Duxbury church, and soon thereafter moved the family to Roxbury, Massachusetts, where Josie grew up.

In Roxbury, her father ran a school for girls, in which his daughters became teachers, so Josie received an excellent education. In her letters she occasionally expressed a sense of intellectual inferiority which, in my judgment, was entirely unwarranted.

Whereas our other three great-grandmothers all appeared to be the expected Victorian silent companions of their husbands, perhaps just because we have not found many of their letters, Josie's voice shines out in her Civil War letters with a clever sense of humor, and with a passion and tenderness that still brings tears to my eyes. I cannot do better than to include quotations from letters written to Morris in the spring of 1862:



*Josephine Gannett (Kent) Copeland with son Fred and daughter Ella, undated,
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives*

Colonel of the 1st Vt. Cavalry!! That sounds loud _ doesn't it _ I am willing, Morris, though you don't appear to have waited for me to say so _ I have given you up to the great cause long ago _ you that are more than life to me _ my friend, & (?ther)& lover, & better part of me _ my counsellor, my hero, my all _ If I had more faith, I could believe that it makes no difference _ as to danger, where you were _ whether in the front or rear _ that God would protect you _ & this I do believe _ but I confess just now that I dread to have you take such a position for fear of the danger _ I know you would do things we should be proud of _ have entire faith in your ability to make a splendid regiment, & were I anyone but Josie, your own wife, my blood would leap to think of the possibility of your getting such a splendid position _

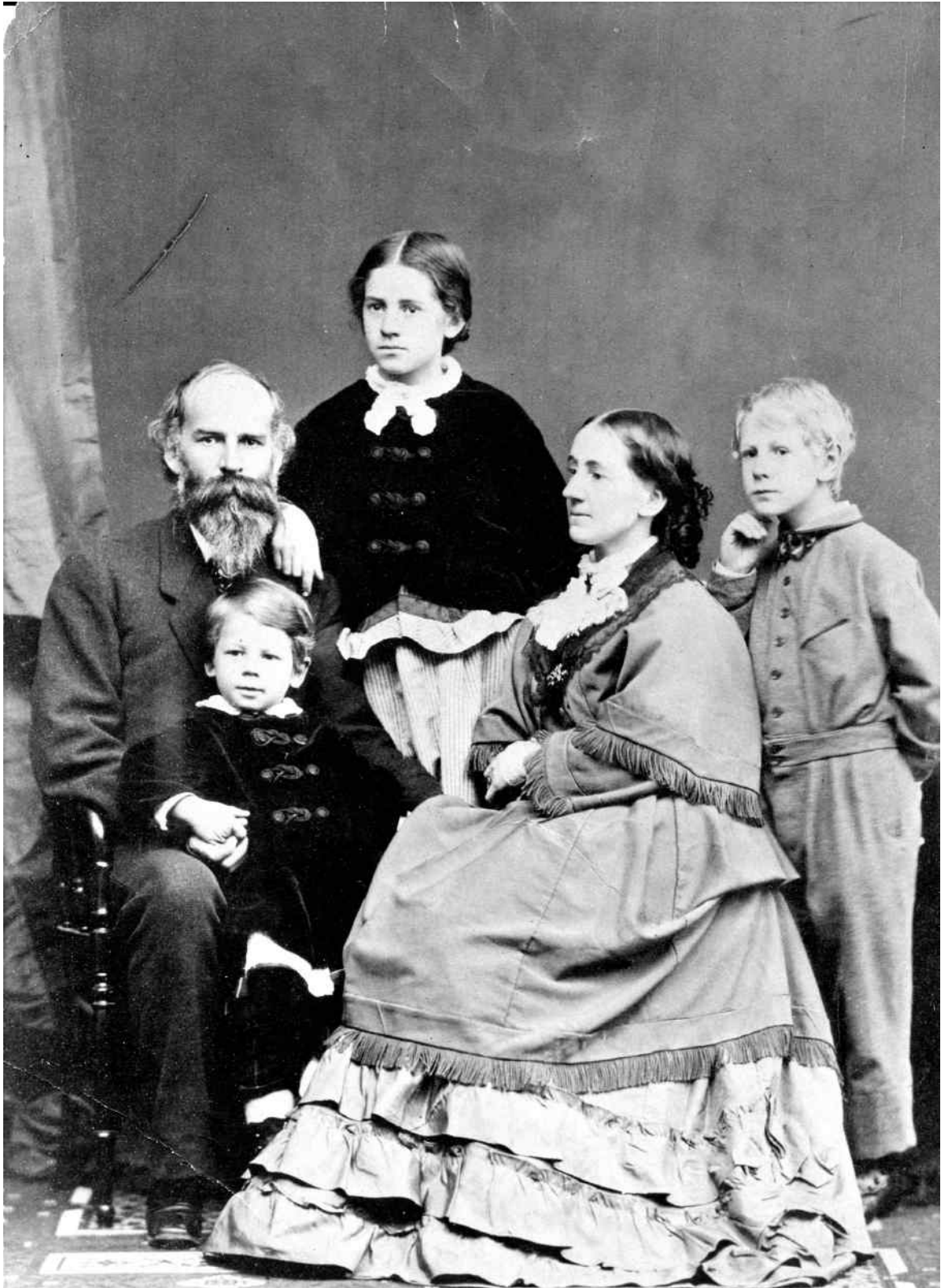
I had two letters from you today, darling, remailed from Roxbury _ of the 24 & 25 of April, & telling that Hodgkins had just brought you mine of the 11th, fourteen days old _ If they were only like wine which gets more body & sparkle with age it might be as well _ I have written volumes to you since & how poor it will be when you get it. When I sit down to write you I seem very near to you, so near that I am apt not to want to say much _ but sit watching your face _ listening to hear how you sit in your chair, whether you are a long time quiet, showing that you are at rest, or whether you move uneasily, showing that there is a disturbing element somewhere _ I look into the windows of your soul to see whether you are quite ready for me there, & dreading a little to see written on the panes 'not just now, wait a little;' & then I see the blank paper & know that I have wasted my time over it. _ I wish I were with you tonight _ you have had a disappointment _ I saw in yesterday's paper that someone else was appointed Colonel instead of you _

Now to come to you _ take hold of my hand, Morris _ draw me close to you _ & feel the outpouring of love there is for you _ This world is a rough place _ but if we did not love each other it would seem rougher.

Darling _ good night _ your little ones love you very dearly _ your wife perhaps too much _ as ever,

Josie

I send violets with my blessing, & hope they will scent its pages



*Robert and Josephine Copeland with children, undated:
Robert Morris Copeland with William, Ella (in back), Josephine Gannett (Kent) Copeland and Fred
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives*



Josephine Gannett (Kent) Copeland (1833–1907). undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

After the untimely death of Morris, Josie managed to keep her little family afloat by hard work and ingenuity. Until 1884, they lived in the home in West Castleton, where they attempted to run a home school and summer resort and to keep up the work of the farm and slate quarries. A newspaper article of 14 April 1880 gives us a peek at this:

Miss [Ella] Copeland, of West Castleton, will be at the graded school rooms, after school hours on April 16th, to meet any who are interested in studying Botany, to make arrangements for meeting a class regularly.

Another article, of 21 July 1880 reports,

Mrs. [Josephine] Copeland of West Castleton has about fifteen summer guests stopping with her, mostly of Boston or vicinity; Miss Isabel Kent, Mr. Martin Bradford, Miss Mary Bradford, Mr. Geo. Bradford, Miss M. Sears, Mr. H. Hubbard, Mr. E.S. Abbott, Mr. Leonard Metcalf, Mr. Charles Van Brunt and Mr. Henry Hooker.

Several of these were either relatives or close family friends, all rallying around to help the widow and her children make ends meet.



Josephine Gannett (Kent) Copeland later in life, undated

From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

By 1884, Josie had moved down to Cambridge, probably to be closer to the Dunbars and Winsors. She was still living there in 1898, by which time the eldest three of her children had married (Fred in 1884, Jim in 1886 and Ella in 1888) and had moved west. The last surviving child, Will, married in 1899, and by 1900 Josie had also gone west, to live with Ella and her family in Bonita. There she died on 14 June 1907. Her ashes were carried back to Waltham, to be buried next to Morris in Mt. Feake Cemetery.

CHAPTER FOUR

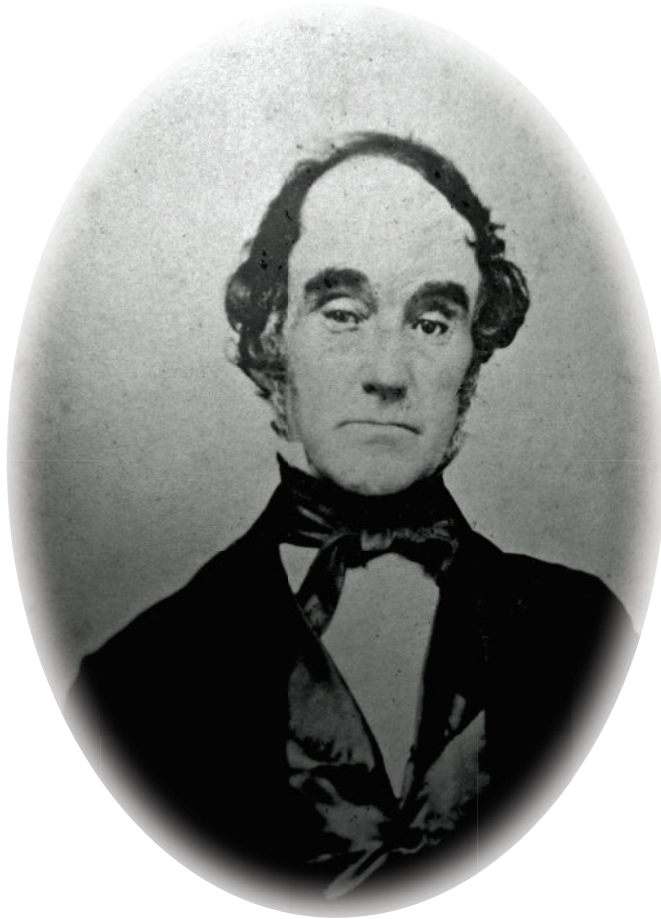
❧ *Second Great-Grandparents*

Sterling Sherman was born on 17 August 1794 in Sandgate, Vermont, the third son and fourth child of Enoch Sherman and Catharine Jane Seeley. Sandgate is today a tiny village in the mountains of Bennington County; it was settled just after the Revolution by families mostly from Connecticut. When Sterling was about thirteen his father moved the family over the ridge to the north of Sandgate, to West Rupert, on the waters of White Creek. West Rupert is only a few miles from the border between Vermont and New York.

Sterling was the first of the Sherman family to be given that name, which has subsequently been carried down in the family as a middle name for six generations. We have no Sterling blood, but the name was given in honor of Sterling's step-grandfather, Ephraim Sterling. Ephraim was the second husband of Sterling Sherman's grandmother, whose first husband was killed in the Revolution. Reputedly, he was so kind to the orphaned children, even before marrying their mother, that Sterling's mother, one of those orphans, named a son for him.

Very late in life our grandfather, Samuel Sterling Sherman, wrote, or more likely dictated, a delightful little pamphlet, *Early Memories of West Rupert, Vt.*, containing a vivid description of Sterling's farm. I quote from that source:

Sterling, the third son, was our father. A brief record of his activities will form the real life story of a successful New England farmer from seventy-five to a hundred years ago [1812–1837]. Our father's house was situated on the north side of Main Street, a short distance from the state line. It was a plain frame structure of good size, nearly square, two stories and a roomy garret in height, with an extension on the north-west corner giving it the shape of an L. It had been painted white, but had become a dull leaden color from age, and our father had it painted a brilliant red. In front of it were four tall Lombardy poplar trees and a square yard, in each corner of which, next to the street, was an aromatic handsome Balm of Gilead tree. From the front door to the gate was a gravel walk, on each side of which were cultivated various old-fashioned flowers, of which memory recalls the purple lilac, red rose, variegated poppy, tall holly-hock and the broad-faced sunflower.



Sterling Sherman (1794–1865), circa 1850s
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Nearby was also a cider-mill in which our father manufactured cider from his own apples and those of his neighbors, taking his pay in a portion of the product. In it was ample room for the storing of apples, grinding them by horse power and expressing the juice from the pomace. In the fall his own cellar was well filled with hogsheads and barrels of cider. As the cider procured in this way exceeded the demands of the family, the excess was taken to a distillery in Rupert Centre and converted into cider brandy. In our father's cellar, both cider and brandy were always on tap, yet no member of the family, which consisted, besides father and mother, of seven sons, three daughters and both male and female help, ever became intoxicated, to my knowledge.

East of the house and facing the street was a large kitchen garden which afforded much food for the family, and beyond this the barns and yards for the cows and other animals. This garden contained many hives of bees; the extracting the honey and swarming of the bees afforded us children much amusement."

From this account of mother and ten children, it is obvious that Sterling married. This happened in West Rupert on 14 March 1815, the bride being Jane Noble, daughter of Luke Noble and Mary McCleary. I have an album containing photos of Sterling and Jane, taken circa 1855, and of all ten children, taken circa 1874. The children were by then quite adult, and the men exhibited a virtual encyclopedia of beard styles!



Jane (Noble) Sherman (1788–1852), early 1850s
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

One final quote from *Early Memories* sheds light on their religious affiliation.

Not far south of the blacksmith shop, on the west side of the road to Sandgate, was the two story frame structure of the Baptist denomination with large square pews below stairs and above. My parents worshiped in this building...

Sterling Sherman died in West Rupert on 27 September 1865, a half year after the end of the Civil War. He is buried in a large community cemetery next to the Congregational Church in Rupert, a few miles east of his home. Whether the association of his burial place with the Congregational church indicates a late change of his denominational affiliation, or just a quirk of local history, I don't know.

Jane Noble was born in West Rupert, Vermont, on 24 May 1788, the third daughter and fourth child of Luke Noble and Mary McCleary. Her family was established in nearby New York before the Revolution and were among the very early settlers of Rupert. I know virtually nothing of her personal life. In the one photo we have of her, taken probably just a few years before her death, she looks like a down to earth, rather cheerful woman. She bore ten children in eighteen years, and had the satisfaction of seeing them all alive and healthy when she died in West Rupert on 22 April 1852. She is buried next to her husband in the Congregational churchyard at Rupert.

William Dewey was born on 23 March 1793 (per his genealogist brother-in-law Dr. Henry Bond) in Middleborough, Massachusetts. Dr. Bond should have known this accurately, because he lived with William and his mother for several years in Philadelphia. However, there is no confirmation of this in Middleborough town records, and the surname Dewey was never common in Plymouth County. In the 1880 census, William stated that both his father and mother were born in Massachusetts.

We have no record of William's childhood or education, but can safely infer that he was respectably raised and had a good education. The earliest records of his existence, from Augusta, Maine, show that he married the sister of a doctor and daughter of a schoolmaster. His earliest business involved the running of a lending library, and he seemed to appear in Augusta with sufficient capital to get off to a running start in business. Within a few years, he was playing a significant role in town affairs and was called "gentleman" in a land deed. He was town treasurer of Augusta from 1824 to 1835 and selectman for 1834–35. His interest in education extended significantly to his daughters Eliza and Louisa, both of whom were sent to an important female seminary in Ipswich, Massachusetts.

His first marriage, and the first event recorded for him in Augusta, on 25 Sept 1816, was to Hannah Bond of Livermore, Maine, orphaned daughter of Dea. Henry Bond and Hannah Stearns. Hannah died in 1827, leaving him with three young children. He hastened to remarry, on 18 May 1828, to Louisa Heywood who died very shortly thereafter in 1829. Finally, William married, on 21 September 1830, Susan Bond of Boston, Massachusetts, daughter of Charles Bond and Susanna Stearns. Hannah (Bond) Dewey and Susan (Bond) Dewey were unusually close first cousins. Their fathers were brothers, and their mothers were sisters!

To emphasize further the closeness of William Dewey to the Bond family, there are two court records in Augusta, both dated 13 April 1835, in which William Dewey was appointed guardian, first of his own children by Hannah Bond, and then of Henry Bond, a son of Hannah's uncle Jonathan Bond. All these children were descendants of Col. William Bond, who died during the Revolution, and entitled to a share in his estate.

William moved his family from Augusta to Philadelphia in 1835, and lived there for the remaining forty-five years of his life. In Philadelphia, he became a coal merchant, and the public records are mostly silent about him. In 1845 he went together with William Bond, Susan's brother, to buy a lot in Laurel Hill cemetery in Philadelphia. In the 1850 census we find an extraordinary family group in Philadelphia. William Dewey was living with his mother Rebecca, his wife Susan, two brothers-in-law, Henry and William Bond, and several of his children.

In trying to discover the identity of William Dewey's father, we note that he never named a child for his mother, and all his children except son George Francis Dewey and daughters Sarah Comstock Dewey and Ellen Lord Dewey were named for easily recognized Bond relatives.

William Dewey died in Philadelphia on 4 October 1880. He was buried in the family plot at Laurel Hill Cemetery, along with his mother, wife Susan, both brothers-in-law and several children.

Hannah Bond was born in Liverpool, Maine, on 15 April 1794, the only daughter and second child of Dea. Henry Bond and Hannah Stearns. Her father died when she was only two, and her mother when she was only nine, so she was raised in the family of Zebedee Rose, her mother's second husband, who lived long enough to be counted in the 1850 census. We do not know how she met William Dewey, but they were married in Augusta, Maine, on 25 Sept 1816. There they had three children, all of whom lived to adulthood, but Hannah died quite young on 24 November 1827. She is buried, along with William's second wife, and two of his children by his third wife, in a large hillside cemetery overlooking the town of Augusta.

John J. Hardin was born near Frankfort, Kentucky, on 6 January 1810, the first child of Martin D. Hardin and Elizabeth Logan. We know a lot about him, not only because his career was socially, politically and militarily noteworthy, but because a large collection of his letters, including fifty-nine love letters exchanged between him and his (supposedly secret) fiancée, Sarah Ellen Smith, are preserved at the Chicago Historical Society. They are a large part of a great collection of Hardin Family letters and documents, brought together by John and Sarah's children in the 1880s. All were deposited with CHS, of which his son, Gen. Martin D. Hardin, was a member. Annotated transcriptions of those letters, for the period 1823–1843, have been made by myself, working as a volunteer for CHS.

When John was only thirteen, his father died, forcing him into the role of “man of the family” at an early age. Even in those early days, a high class formal education was available in Kentucky. A letter from John's cousin Lydia Ann McHenry to her brother John H. McHenry tells that John Hardin was at school in Jessamine County in August, 1824. Another letter, to John from his mother on 22 November 1825, addressed him in Woodford County where he attended Dr. Louis Marshall's well-known Buckpond Academy. This letter counsels John seriously about his responsibilities to himself and to his younger siblings.

Family letters to John begin to appear in the CHS collection in late fall 1825 when John was not quite sixteen. One from his cousin Martin D. McHenry, to whom John was close all his life, gives John advice about a real estate transaction, and then advises him, “Don't fall in love, for it is a foolish business, as well knows your Cousin.” Other indications that John was growing up fast include an undated speech he gave, probably to the Debating Society in Frankfort, when he may have been not much older than fourteen. In it, he shows a great gift for expression, and an imposing classical education.

John's middle initial, “J,” has been an object of speculation. It seems to have been an afterthought, assigned approximately when he turned eighteen. The Hardin family was very numerous in Kentucky in those days, and our John had many cousins named John Hardin, with whom he associated. Some of these already had middle initials, but confusion was still possible. Nothing that I have found indicates that our John's “J” was the first letter of any name.

John graduated from Transylvania University in Lexington, Kentucky, at the age of seventeen! He then went to Bardstown, Kentucky, to study French in May and June of 1827. By late fall of 1827, he began the study of law under Judge John Boyle and received his license to practice law in Kentucky by the age of nineteen! During this time, on his eighteenth birthday, John became executor of his father's will. This sounds extraordinarily precocious, and there is no doubt that John was very bright and mature for his years, but clever young men often got off to a running start in those days, perhaps in anticipation of the many hazards that might deprive them of a long life.

The success of this running start on life is beautifully exhibited by this letter of recommendation, written when John was preparing for a trip to the West.

To Whom it may Concern: I have been intimately acquainted with Mr. John J. Hardin from his infancy to the present day, & for the integrity of his principles & the purity of his moral character I know no young gentleman who is entitled to more implicit confidence or who stands higher in the estimation of society.

Mr. Hardin having finished his literary education, more than two years past commenced reading law under my direction & having continued until he completed the course of study usually prescribed by me to students of law, applied for & obtained license to practice. He has since attended a course of instruction delivered by myself as professor of law in Transylvania University,



Portrait of John J. Hardin as a young man
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

& of the excellent young men who composed the school, some of whom had been practicing lawyers for years Mr. Hardin was in my estimation amongst the first of the first class in point of legal attainment.

John Boyle

The Hardin letters at CHS show that John grew up in the company of a lively set of young cousins, who frequently wrote him gossip letters and took a great interest in his love life. He also got impressively serious letters of advice and encouragement from a somewhat older and more distant cousin, Felix Huston. From the way John grew up and behaved in later life, I would say that he took Felix's advice to heart.

John's love life took a serious turn in the late fall of 1827 when he moved into the Smith household at Locust Grove, a farm a few miles from Harrodsburg, and reasonably close to the home of Judge Boyle. Mrs. Horace Smith was a widow with four teenage children, and to help make ends meet, she offered room and board to young law students. There John fell in love with Sarah Ellen Smith, and made lifelong friends with her sister, Elizabeth, and her two brothers, Abraham and Lemuel Smith.

In March 1829 a remarkable series of love letters began between John and Sarah, preserved in the collection at CHS. These letters have a distinctly religious flavor—in his first to Sarah, having told her the disappointing news that he would be unable to return for further study with Judge Boyle that summer, John said:

This is the greatest cross I ever met with, I know it is the most heartfelt. But Sarah we should endeavour to bear it with firmness. My whole heart, my whole soul was set upon it, but the indissoluble bonds of necessity, and duty have nearly annihilated the hope, and I would feel as a wreck cast on the mighty waters, were it not that I have a leading star to direct me in my progress, my duty to my god, and next to him to you. So inseparably are you joined in my thoughts that the thought of one never comes without the other, and I hope and believe that it never will be otherwise as long as life endures.

Anticipating this letter and its unhappy message, Sarah wrote:

I cannot help feeling a diffidence in writing even to you, but you know I have not been in the habit of writing much and can look over all my deficiencies. You say it is a beacon to light us to endless happiness or misery. I do not see why it should not be to happiness if we conduct ourselves as Christians and act the part which was assigned us by Our Heavenly Father. We must take him John for our guide for we have no earthly father to lead us in the path of duty but thank heaven we have that which can comfort the Fatherless and the Orphan, we have that glorious hope of immortality which nothing can take away from us. I am very much disappointed in your not coming to Judge Boyle's this summer, but I would not have you neglect your duty on my account. Therefore we must try and content ourselves, but not so well as to prevent your visiting us as often as possible. You can have no idea how much I miss you. When I take our favorite seat at the window and glance my eye at the vacant chair, I can hardly realize it that we are separated and all our pleasant conversations broken up, but we must learn to moderate our wishes and not expect too much happiness in this world. Our resources must be principally within ourselves, our own thoughts and reflections are always present with us. Those we can govern and make pleasant or painful as we please, but we should always endeavor to make them as pleasant as possible.

Again, after John had been telling Sarah that she never need doubt his loyalty to her, she replied:

Think not my Hardin I can ever have a suspicion of you, it would be unworthy of us and of our Maker. I am not so vain as to place my confidence in my own powers of pleasing, for I know they are few indeed, but it is in your honour in our religion and in that God who has sealed our vows

of eternal constancy with His divine presence. Ours is no common affection, it has been sealed at the Altar of high Heaven. It needs not the common protestations of a common affection, and it would be unworthy of you to make them.

As these excerpts suggest, and as is confirmed by numerous letters from their young friends, John and Sarah lived at a time and in a social circle that was fascinated by spoken and written eloquence. It was also a time and place in which religious enthusiasm ran high, and health could not be taken for granted. Many letters carried news of the premature deaths of young friends, and almost every letter was shadowed by apprehension that the intended recipient might not be well.

Unfortunately, John's mother disapproved of John and Sarah's engagement. John wrote to Sarah,

Oh Sarah you know not what it is to suffer misery's keenest pangs, when you hear your mother tell you, you have ruined her hopes blasted her expectations, and that you have given her a wound from which she would never recover...

I suppose she felt a mother's natural concern that her son was growing too independent, too fast, and perhaps she feared to lose John's help in handling the family affairs. In any event, John promised not to marry before his twenty-first birthday, and he lived up to that promise, marrying Sarah just one week after that date.

For a variety of reasons, probably including the need to get away from his mother's dominance, John decided to make a home away from Kentucky. For a while he considered an offer to move to Natchez, to become a law partner with Felix Huston, but was more attracted by the prospects offered by Illinois, or perhaps Missouri. In March of 1830 he made a trip of exploration, passing through Jacksonville, Illinois where he was so pleased that he stopped to get a license to practice law in Illinois. That was before travelling on to Missouri where many of his Kentucky friends had recently settled.

He was charmed by the hospitality he received in Missouri, but concluded that Jacksonville offered greater opportunities for the combined occupation of lawyer and farmer (a combination practiced by his father and by many other prominent men of Kentucky). By 27 May, he was back in Jacksonville, and by 27 June, he was practicing law there.

On the receipt of letters from John, both his mother and his fiancée wrote letters of support for his settlement in Jacksonville. Both were pleased to learn that there was a Presbyterian minister in that place. John began at once to build a law office, rental space being unavailable in a suddenly overcrowded town, and to attend the local circuit court.

After a fall spent industriously preparing a business and a home in Jacksonville, John returned to Kentucky in November 1830. There he and Sarah made plans for their long anticipated wedding, which took place on 13 January 1831. As it turned out, Sarah's sister Elizabeth married John's cousin Martin D. McHenry on that same day. I do not know for certain that there was a joint ceremony. By the end of January, John and Sarah were back in Jacksonville, to begin their life together.

While this move left much of the business of his father's estate unsettled, John got frequent assistance in this work from relatives in Kentucky, and from the family lawyer in Frankfort, Jacob Swigert, and from his stepfather, Porter Clay. He also made occasional trips back to Kentucky and received frequent visits by his Kentucky family, all of whom except for his youngest sister, Martinette, soon settled in Jacksonville.

John began his military career when he was appointed inspector of a brigade of [Illinois] Mounted Volunteers in June of 1831, with the rank of brigade major. This was in the Black Hawk War. His unit was not involved in any action, and John was honorably discharged on 14 July 1831. His commander



Portrait of Sarah Ellen (Smith) Hardin (1811–1874)
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



John J. Hardin (1810–1847)
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

for this service was Gen. Joseph Duncan of Jacksonville, who subsequently served as governor of Illinois and became a fast friend and political ally of John. In February of 1832, General Duncan, then serving in the U.S. House of Representatives, addressed John as "Col. J. J. Hardin."

After an initial miscarriage, John and Sarah got a start on their family, with birth of daughter Ellen on 20 October 1832.

The practices of law and of politics were always closely bound in the frontier society. John started modestly, being elected Trustee of the Town of Jacksonville on 13 April 1832. Almost immediately thereafter, he learned that politics and military rank are also closely bound, losing his rank as brigade major when he got a new commanding general of the opposing political party. John was a lifelong Whig. John wrote his successor a nice face-saving letter, hoping "that you may have more pleasure and less labour than has fallen to me since my attendance on its duties." General Duncan continued to call John "Col. Hardin," suggesting that his use of this title was complimentary rather than official. Not wishing to be left out of the second campaign of the Black Hawk War, John reenlisted as a private.

John's legal, political, military and social career blossomed in memorable fashion, so that it is easy to find biographical sketches of him. He was, I suppose, our most famous ancestor. I give only a brief sketch here. By 1834, he was so well rooted in Jacksonville that he began to acquire land for a farm, purchasing eighteen parcels from the federal land office. In 1836, 1838 and 1840, he was elected to represent Morgan County in the Illinois General Assembly. As a Whig he belonged to the minority party, as did Stephen T. Logan, Edward D. Baker and Abraham Lincoln, all of whom became his close friends and political allies. In the Assembly he took the lead in arguing against the internal improvement schemes, under which the state would borrow extensively to build canals and railways, expecting to recoup their costs by selling land belonging to the state along the rights of way. The collapse of the economy in 1837, when too few people were able to buy these lands at the prices needed to cover the debt, showed that he had been wise in his dissent.

In December 1842 John suffered a serious and somewhat mysterious accident which for a time seemed likely to cause the loss of sight in one eye. I suspect, without definitive evidence, that it happened on a hunting trip, when his rifle or shotgun misfired.

In August of 1843, he was elected to the U.S. House of Representatives. Although he served only one term, he made a number of memorable speeches. In one of these, a masterly analysis of the needs and national benefits of river and harbor improvements on the Mississippi and other Western rivers, he showed that he was not against publicly funded infrastructure improvements in principle, but discriminated carefully between schemes, depending on their rational prospects for success. He also spoke against the annexation of Texas, addressing both the problematic proposal that the federal government should assume the debts owed by Texas, and speaking prophetically about the main issue, that annexation was sought by the Southern slave owners to extend the region in which slavery would be legal. He warned that this move would aggravate North-South conflicts, and threaten an eventual dissolution of the Union. Unfortunately, he was expressing a minority view, so the logic of his arguments fell on deaf ears, although it earned him respect for the consistency and integrity of his principles.

His days in Congress brought him to the attention of Whig leaders nationwide, and his legal career got a boost when Daniel Webster sponsored his entry into the group of lawyers authorized to practice before the U.S. Supreme Court.

I have reviewed much of the correspondence he received as a congressman, and I must say that it was, by and large, pretty dull stuff. Whether that played a role in his decision not to run for re-election, or whether he just missed Illinois, I can't say, but he was soon home again, this time to fill an important

military role. He had remained active in the Illinois militia, and by 1844 held the rank of brigadier general. It was the time of the Mormon troubles around Nauvoo, and John returned just in time to take charge of the Illinois militia who tried to maintain law and order there. Eventually, he was a major player in the safe evacuation of Nauvoo by those Mormons who traveled to Salt Lake under Brigham Young.

In what might seem like an abandonment of his principled opposition to the annexation of Texas, John J. Hardin was the first Illinois man to volunteer for service in the war with Mexico, once that war was the announced policy of the U.S. He was quickly elected to be colonel of the 1st Regiment, Illinois Volunteers, and was one of the most effective recruiters for their effort. Much has been written about his role in that war, which cost him his life in the Battle of Buena Vista on 23 February 1847.



Gravestone for John J. Hardin
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

His body, pierced by seven Mexican lances, was returned to Jacksonville for burial, and on 14 July 1847 there was a great memorial service in Jacksonville to honor him and the other local men who had died in that battle. It was an outdoor ceremony, with parade and speeches, attended by an immense crowd, estimated to be between ten and fifteen thousand friends and admirers. The main address, of which I have a copy, was given by Richard Yates, a fellow Whig lawyer from Jacksonville, several times representative in the Illinois Assembly, and at a later date U.S. Representative and Governor of Illinois. Like John, he was Kentucky born, and received his law education from Transylvania University. Even when one makes allowance for the verbal overkill expected on such an occasion, Yates's remarks are moving and informative—I quote one short section of this:

He was never unsuccessful before the people for any office for which he was a candidate. His great success in public life was owing to his discernment of the character of men, to the energies and ardor of his temperament, to the firmness of his opinions and his straightforward frankness in their expression; these added to his great ability, his plain and agreeable manners, and an unblemished life and spotless name gave him a strong grasp upon the affections of his countrymen.—As a

political opponent he was firm, noble, manly, never disguising his sentiments or the true issue; and when fighting with determined energy for every inch of contested ground, yet bearing no malice toward his political opponents.

As a speaker, he was always forcible—often eloquent—not in elegant and showy diction [John was a lifelong stammerer] but in the power of original, native thought, and of bold, sublime conception, and in the simple, soul-inspiring eloquence which rouses the hidden soul of sympathy, and forces the unbidden tear into the eye of sturdy manhood—

Col. Hardin was a man of exalted purity of moral character; he had not a single vicious habit; he was the victim of no base appetite; he was incorruptible as an honest man; exemplary as a devoted and sincere Christian.

From all I have read of John's letters and business transactions, and of the many things written about him, I would judge that Richard Yates's comments were fair and accurate.

Sarah Ellen Smith was born on 4 July 1811 at "Locust Grove" near Harrodsburg, Kentucky, the fifth child and second daughter of Horace and Eleanor (Fulkerson) Smith. Sarah never knew her father who died six months before she was born. Her uncle, Henry Speed, served as guardian for the children while they grew up.

When we try to understand why John's mother was so opposed to their engagement, it is natural to suspect some social snobbery, based on the fact that John's ancestors had played a much more distinguished role in the early history of Kentucky than had Sarah's. Certainly the Hardins and their friends were wealthier than the Smiths. Since the two families had not known each other before John and Sarah's romance, it was really up to John to discern that Sarah had individual merits that outshone those of the young ladies who might have seemed a more equal match.

As shown by her letters, Sarah was deeply religious, though not denominationally narrow minded. Her favorite church was Presbyterian, as was John's, but she would gladly go to hear a good preacher from the Methodist, Episcopal or Campbellite persuasions. She was fiercely loyal to John. Although she presumably had less formal education than John, she was highly literate and devoted to intellectual exploration. She was a good match in sense of humor, and easily held her own in the bantering that frequently characterized their correspondence.

The move to Illinois impacted Sarah (and all wives of that time and place) in ways that their husbands could hardly feel. Although, like many Presbyterians of her time, Sarah frequently derided the institution of slavery and spoke of the move to a free state as a sort of liberation from the guilt of association with that institution, she had been raised in a home well supplied with Negro servants. It was a palpable shock to find that she had to do her own cooking and house cleaning in Illinois.

Her feelings about slavery did not entirely change, however. She revisited Kentucky in 1833, traveling with her mother, her brother Abram, her infant daughter Ellen and one of the Hardin slaves from Kentucky. All of them had visited Jacksonville to help her after Ellen's birth, which had left Sarah weak and unwell. After about five weeks in Kentucky, she wrote to John about the prospects that some of her relations might join them in Jacksonville...

They have not determined to go to that country yet. I do not persuade any of them, Martin and Lemuel [her brother-in law and brother] are both going very well here, they think, and live easy, but I could not be tied to live in Kentucky with the negroes. I am more and more disgusted with a slave state every day when I see how people live with their slaves.



Sarah Ellen (Smith) Hardin Walworth, circa 1851
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

On the other hand, she wrote in 1836, on another trip to Kentucky,

Let me know how our house progresses. I think I can go to work again with fresh energy when I go back. Illinois, like an absent friend appears to my imagination arrayed in all her blessings without any spot or blemish, her natural charms are incomparable, but when I think of the old log house and the cooking and washing I think I can stand it right well two or three months not to look on her charms.

On the same trip, she wrote ...

I have not forgotten I was not brought up in a fine house but still I have never been accustomed to perform the drudgery of a servant, but if our circumstances made it necessary for me to do it, I could do it cheerfully.

Of course, it was also not easy to be married to a politician, and Sarah expressed some concern about that when she received the news that John had just been elected to the Illinois Legislature...

I am glad to hear the election is over, as you would be a candidate I am glad you are elected, as I know you would have been mortified if you had been left out. I feel very much opposed to your entering into political life although I would like to see you stand high in the estimation of the world. I do not feel willing to see you made the sport of party feeling as all politicians are but I do not feel disposed to give you a lecture on the subject. I feel gratified that you have such a proof of your popularity in the county as their selecting you in opposition to the Van Buren party.

The history of Sarah's religious affiliations is quite fascinating. She started out as a Presbyterian and was married by her favorite Presbyterian minister, Rev. Thomas Cleland. The Presbyterian faith of her day was heavily dominated by John Calvin's belief in the doctrine of predestination, which included a rather harsh prescription for those who suffered seemingly senseless losses through disease, accident or fighting:

Don't feel sorry for yourself. What happened was God's inscrutable will, and your duty is to submit gracefully to it. Through this submission you will attain whatever happiness he has ordained for you. [Scholarly Calvinists, pray forgive me, if I have missed the point.]

When Sarah had been hit by terrible personal losses [her sister Elizabeth died in 1837, her brother Lemuel in 1840, both as young and promising adults; her husband was killed in 1847; their promising baby daughter Elizabeth died in 1848] she may have felt that the God who preordained all this tragedy was not the strength and support she had counted on. Possibly she just yearned for the religious company of a childhood friend. For one reason or another, she joined the Episcopal Church in Jacksonville, of which the Rector was Rev. John Tolley Worthington, formerly of Harrodsburg.

Shortly after the death of Elizabeth, Sarah decided to leave Jacksonville, and to return to old friends in Harrodsburg. There, at the famous Harrodsburg Springs resort, run by Dr. Christopher Columbus Graham, a cousin by marriage, she met Reuben Hyde Walworth, former chancellor of the New York court system. He was a Presbyterian, and in their courtship correspondence he asked Sarah to explain her leaving the church. That explanation and other considerations proving satisfactory, Sarah and Reuben were married in Harrodsburg, again by Rev. Thomas Cleland, on 16 April 1851.

That, however, did not return Sarah securely to the Presbyterian fold, because in her new home at Saratoga Springs, New York, she met the chancellor's charming son, Father Clarence Walworth, a devoted Roman Catholic. Out of affection for him, and admiration for his evident devotion, Sarah did what would have been unthinkable in her youth, and joined the Catholic Church.

During her years at Saratoga Springs, Sarah saw her daughter Ellen marry a son of the Chancellor by his first marriage, and saw her two sons grow up to fight on opposite sides in the Civil War. She participated actively in settling Ellen and Lem down in Louisville. She lived in one of the most sophisticated homes in America, the gracious and admired hostess, once again proving that strength of intellect and character outranked distinguished lineage when the chips were down.

She died in Saratoga Springs on 15 July 1874 and is buried in the Catholic section of Greenridge Cemetery there. Because Chancellor Walworth, although one of the least religiously bigoted men of his era, died a Presbyterian, they are buried about a hundred yards apart, the Chancellor on the slope of a slight hill, the Catholics in the flat below. Buried right next to Sarah is Dolly Smith, born a slave to Sarah's Kentucky family, but faithful helper and companion to Sarah, wherever she went.

There are fine paintings of John and Sarah at the Filson Historical Society in Louisville, and many artifacts and papers from Sarah's long stay in New York at the Historical Society of Saratoga Springs.

John Jeremiah Jacob Jr. was born on 10 January 1819 in Louisville, Kentucky, the third child and only son of John Jeremiah Jacob and Anne Overton Fontaine. His mother died when he was only about eight months old and his father remarried and had eight more children with his second wife, Lucy Donald Robertson. Thus, John Jeremiah Jr. grew up in a large and healthy family.

We know very little about him. A John Jeremiah Jacob is on a list of A.B. graduates from Harvard in the class of 1838, but there were several men of that name in Kentucky and West Virginia at that time.

Research by Mary Jane Kinsman of the Jefferson County Office of Historic Preservation has shown that it was John J. Jacob Jr. who built the impressive Gothic Revival home, Lynnford. This happened in 1853–4 just after John J. Jr. had inherited the farm from his father. This building, somewhat modified, survives today as the clubhouse of the Hurstbourne Country Club. The land on which it was built was purchased by John J. Sr. in 1842, from Col. Richard Clough Anderson, when it was a working farm.

John J. Jacob Jr. was listed in the 1850 and 1860 censuses as a wealthy farmer, owning twenty-six Negro slaves in both years. In 1868, he sold the farm, and by 1870 he had moved to Louisville, still very wealthy and retired, although only fifty-one. His family was attended by five Negroes, possibly remnants of the slave population of the farm, but free in 1870.

John J. Jr. made his will on 26 June 1858, but it was not presented in court until 3 February 1873. It said:

I, John J. Jacob of Lynnford in the County of Jefferson and State of Kentucky—In consideration of the love and affection I bear toward my wife Evelyn Jacob, and the confidence which I repose in her judgment and discretion,

1st I appoint her executrix of my will and guardian of my children, & direct and request that no security bond shall be required of her.

2nd: I devise and bequeath unto my said wife in fee simple all the estate real & personal which I may be possessed of.

Witnesses were Matilda Pope and Curran Pope.

There is no evidence that John J. Jacob Jr. fought in the Civil War, although it seems likely that he, then a substantial slave holder, must have favored the Confederacy.

There is a great collection of Jacob family papers at the Filson Historical Society in Louisville, but they are virtually devoid of family correspondence, being mostly just business papers of his father.

He married Evelyn Johnson of Lexington on 11 March 1845. James B. Clay, husband of John J.'s half-sister, Susan Maria, and son of Senator Henry Clay, was his bondsman. Darwin Johnson gave permission for Evelyn, who was only seventeen at the time, to marry.

John J. Jacob Jr. died in Louisville on 21 January 1873. He is buried next to Evelyn in Cave Hill Cemetery, in a large family plot purchased by Evelyn that lies just behind the enormous family plot of John J. Jacob Sr.



Evelyn Johnson (1828–1901) as a young woman, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Evelyn Johnson was born on 13 January 1828 near Lexington, Kentucky, the only surviving child of Darwin Johnson and Edward Anne Payne. Census records for 1850 and 1860 suggest that she had a middle name, probably Jane. As noted above, she married when very young. Her mother died shortly after that marriage, and her father was living with the Jacobs in 1850.

It is interesting that in the 1870 census, Evelyn (recorded as Eveline J.) had a personal estate of ten thousand dollars in her own name. Evidently, the Jacob family's fortunes had not been so devastated by the aftermath of the Civil War, as had those of many other slave owners.

We know little of Evelyn's personal life, other than that she was a renowned hostess in Louisville, and that in 1886 she purchased a large lot in Cave Hill Cemetery, in which sixteen relatives are buried.



Four-Generation Photo: (Above) Daughter Annie Overton (Jacob) Hardin and Granddaughter Evelyn (Hardin) Sherman. (Below) Great-granddaughter, Annie Hardin Sherman and Great-grandmother, Evelyn (Johnson) Jacob.
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Evelyn (Johnson) Jacob later in life, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Evelyn made her will 6 December 1901 (proved in Jefferson County Court 4 January 1902). In it she gave an oil painting portrait of herself, and all her household furniture, bric-a-brac, etc., to daughter Tillie J. Hill (with whose family Evelyn was living in 1900). She gave her diamond marquis ring to daughter Lena J. Clark. Other major bequests were made to Tillie and Lena, and one-quarter share of the value of all real estate and improvements was to go to the children of her deceased daughter, Annie J. Hardin

I have a wonderful four-generation photograph, taken circa 1898, showing Evelyn with her daughter Annie Overton (Jacob) Hardin, granddaughter Evelyn Johnson (Hardin) Sherman and great-granddaughter Annie Hardin Sherman. In a strong family tradition, all the younger women were named for a grandmother.

Evelyn died on 31 December 1901 in Louisville and is buried amidst her family in Cave Hill Cemetery.

Rev. Joseph Allen was born on 15 August 1790 in Medfield, Massachusetts, the first of the six sons of Dea. Phineas Allen and Ruth Smith. He had one sister who died at the age of seven. His five brothers and other sister all lived beyond the age of eighty!

He was raised on the family's prosperous farm in Medfield, and was encouraged, as were all his siblings, to improve his mind by study. Finding this much to his taste, he was soon studying Latin and Greek, first in a school in nearby Walpole, and then under the direction of the minister of Medfield, Mr. Prentiss. At the age of seventeen, he passed his entrance exam for Harvard, and began studies that lasted until he had his A.B. in 1811, and his A.M. in theological studies in 1814.

We are blessed with copious sources of information about Reverend Joseph and his family. In 1891 his children published *Memorial: Joseph and Lucy Clark Allen*, a project initiated in 1890 on the hundredth anniversary of his birth. The most extensive and detailed source is *Allen-Johnson Family, Papers, 1759–1992* at the American Antiquarian Society in Worcester, Massachusetts. Much of what I present here is abstracted from the Joseph and Lucy Clark Allen book.

When Reverend Joseph completed his work at Harvard, the United States was involved in the War of 1812, and Joseph had so neglected his health that his family insisted that he take a long vacation trip on horseback to rebuild his strength. (He did not share in the inheritance of massive physique and Herculean strength that had characterized his family for generations.) He kept a detailed journal throughout this trip (and throughout his life) so we learn his impressions of Northampton, Massachusetts; Albany and Ballston Spa, New York; and of the various British soldiers and sailors, captive during the war, whom he met along the way. The trip had its intended effect on his health, which he thereafter maintained well into old age.

On 30 October 1816, Joseph Allen was ordained Minister of the Congregational Church of Northborough, Massachusetts, the ordination sermon being given by his future father-in-law, Rev. Henry Ware Sr. In those days, there was just one church in town, so Reverend Joseph was the town minister, concerned with the spiritual, intellectual and material welfare of every member of the town. This condition of things was done away by a change in the state constitution in 1833, after which he continued until his death as minister of the first parish. This parish was Unitarian in its thinking, but Reverend Joseph was saddened to lose the “orthodox” (Trinitarian) Congregationalists and Baptists from his congregation.

On 7 February 1818, Reverend Joseph was married to Lucy Clark Ware, the ceremony being performed by the father of the bride, in Cambridge. The connection between the Allen and Ware families remained close for generations, although Reverend Joseph's granddaughter, our grandmother “Dambo,” was occasionally heard to say, “You're being just like a Ware!” when frustrated by some member of her family.

The town built a large house for Joseph and Lucy, through which we wandered in 1990, when the Allen family held a reunion on the two hundredth anniversary of Joseph's birth. By 1830, it was full of seven little Allens, and for years it housed the famous Allen Home School, in which young men were prepared for college, and in some cases the ministry.

Among the many descriptions of Reverend Joseph and his effect on the town of Northborough, my favorite is *Northborough History* by Dr. Josiah M. Stanley, published in 1921. Here are a few quotes:

Dr. Allen entered his pastoral duties with an enthusiasm natural to a young man. He was immensely interested in education. And it was not long after his settlement that he embarked upon an educational crusade that was destined to make the schools of Northborough take rank with the best in the state. In after years he prided himself upon the large number of teachers the schools turned out. Edward Everett Hale once asked him “what proportion of teachers do your Northborough schools send out?” “All of them,” he answered, “All of them.”

Dr. Allen was elected a member of the first school committee [in 1826], and he was re-elected every year for fifty years, all of which time he was its chairman. During those fifty years he spent two solid years of his life in the schoolhouses of Northborough.

In years gone by, Northborough enjoyed a reputation all her own, for education, culture and breadth of view. That sort of thing does not spring up of itself; it is not indigenous to the soil of any community. It must have some underlying inspiration, some guiding force. And it cannot be gainsaid that so far as Northborough is concerned that inspiration and guiding force was the personality of Dr. Allen."

Dr. Stanley goes on to describe Reverend Joseph's interest in libraries, in all sorts of scientific subjects and even in the famous shade trees of Northborough, many of which he planted with his own hands.

You will note that Dr. Stanley called Reverend Joseph "Dr. Allen." This acknowledges his receipt of an honorary Doctorate of Divinity from Harvard in 1848.

A final quote from Dr. Stanley,

The author was speaking with a highly cultivated woman from Providence, a few years ago; and happening to mention Dr. Allen's name she burst forth as follows: "Dr. Allen! Dr. Allen! Why, he taught the people botany and horticulture and Christian charity!"

This last remark sets the stage for my favorite story about Reverend Joseph. Charity is much better inculcated by example, than by words. Reverend Joseph, in the summer and fall of 1849, was enabled to attend the Congress of Peace in Paris by the generosity of one of his parishioners. Europe had just been torn by wars of liberal reform in 1848. These reform efforts were successfully put down by ruling powers, which then staged the Congress of Peace, for motives which I am not competent to judge. For Dr. Allen, it was an amazing adventure, replete with all sorts of touristic highlights in England, Belgium, Switzerland and France. The red carpet of welcome was really rolled out.

The story about charity revolves around the voyage home, an incredibly stormy passage on a ship laden with Irish emigrants escaping from the potato famine. Illness and death, especially of Irish children, haunted the vessel. With his special fondness for children, Dr. Allen assisted all he could, praying with the grieving parents, and holding funeral services as needed. Never mind that he was Unitarian and they were Roman Catholic. Such differences melted away under the requirements of the occasion.

They reached Boston, where, in Dr. Allen's own words,

In about half an hour we went on shore, and stood once more on solid ground and were walking through the streets of our own metropolis, which seemed to us, however, quite Lilliputian after leaving the great cities of the Old World ... After calling at Dr. Ware's, I went out to Cambridge, where I passed the night.

Thursday October 18—This morning I hastened back to Boston to obtain my trunks, and found that the ship was still at anchor ... I now found unexpected hindrances in my endeavors to assist some of the poor women who had no friends to help them, which made me too late for the four o'clock train. Reached the depot just two minutes late, quite tired and out of breath. Called on the superintendent, Mr. Twitchell, who kindly allowed me to go in the steamboat train, which he ordered to stop at Westborough for my accommodation. Hired a buggy and wagon, with two men to drive, to bring us (Edward and myself, with two Irishwomen who had been my fellow passengers) to Northborough, reaching home in safety after nearly four months' absence.

The narrative is continued in the words of his children,

The day our father was to arrive at home, the family were gathered to receive him. The time for the arrival of the railroad stage passed, and reluctantly we sat down at the table which had been kept waiting for him; but mother said 'Oh, he will come yet, and bring an emigrant in each hand!' Just then the sound of wheels was heard, then father's cheery voice; and there he was, truly, with the emigrant in each hand in the shape of two goodly young Irishwomen, who had failed to meet the friends on their arrival as they expected, and so he had brought them home with him—not an unwelcome addition to the family joy.

Rev. Joseph Allen made his will on 1 May 1866, with a codicil on 5 January 1871, which I have seen in the original at the Worcester County courthouse. He bequeathed to his daughter Mary, wife of Joshua J. Johnson, his land in Northborough, with the parsonage, but with the stipulation that his daughter Elizabeth was not to be put out of her home. To each child, and to grandson and namesake Joseph Allen Powers, "as a remembrance," he left fifty dollars. To "the children of my son Edward, whose education cost less than that of my other sons, \$1,200, to be divided equally among them for their education and placement in life." The remainder, about two thousand dollars, to daughter Elizabeth, "in consideration of her faithful and considerate attendance on her mother." His two eldest sons, Joseph Henry Allen and Thomas Prentiss Allen, were to be executors. A petition for probate, presented on 27 February 1873, bears the signatures of all the surviving children.

Rev. Joseph Allen died in Northborough on 23 February 1873. He is buried with many of his family in a large family plot in the cemetery behind the First Parish Church.

Lucy Clark Ware was born on 6 June 1791 in Hingham, Massachusetts, the first surviving child of Rev. Henry Ware Sr. and Mary Clark. Twin sisters, the first fruit of their marriage, had died within three days of their birth. Lucy had seven other siblings by this marriage and eight half siblings by her father's third marriage.

Again we are fortunate to know quite a lot about Lucy, whose reminiscences of childhood are preserved in the Joseph and Lucy Clark Allen book. We are reminded that she was born during the French Revolution, by her mention of refugees from the attendant massacres. She was a highly literate child, and her parents had taught her French, so she was enabled to read to the refugees in their own language.

As Lucy described it,

I never entered a school after I left the Academy, at eleven years old. We were instructed at home by my father. He had an uncommon degree of practical wisdom, and perhaps owing to my mother's illness, took upon himself more of the care of our domestic manners and morals than most fathers do; and I remember many and many a piece of homely advice he would give us, as opportunity offered.... if he noticed anything in our behavior unbecoming, he would call us into his study and tell us of it in the kindest way; and we generally left his presence full of greater love and veneration than ever, and with tears streaming down our faces. He would tell us at such times that it was not because he thought us so very faulty, but because he wished to see us more perfect.

In 1805, Reverend Henry was appointed Hollis Professor of Divinity at Harvard. The family traveled to Cambridge by one of the Hingham packets. Lucy then describes a great family tragedy, "The children, on arrival, were divided between Menotomy [now Arlington] and Lexington [where Mary Clark grew up.]

My poor mother's health had been failing for some months; and it was one of the greatest inducements to my father to move to Cambridge, that she might be near her friends. But it was too late: she only came to die among them. I went to Menotomy with my mother and the younger ones; and after about a fortnight the house at Cambridge was ready, and we went there. We had been there but three weeks when our dear mother died, and left six little children among entire strangers. I was just fourteen, old enough, one would think, almost to have taken the charge of the family; but I was heedless, wild and untamed and needed a long course of discipline to bring me to realize my own situation and the irreparable loss I had met with.

The Joseph and Lucy Clark Allen book contains several of Lucy's letters, describing family and parish life in the period 1818–1856. They show that she lived a busy, contented and cheerful life, usually in fine health until about 1858, when she suffered the first of a series of what now sound like strokes, which weakened her muscular control but left her mind unimpaired. These were repeated at long intervals, until she was essentially helpless and barely able to speak. After a final attack, she passed away peacefully on 10 February 1866. On the tablet erected to the memory of Joseph and Lucy by their children, in the family plot behind the church in Northborough appear the following lines:

IN MEMORY OF
JOSEPH ALLEN
1790–1873
ORDAINED AS MINISTER OF THIS TOWN
OCTOBER 30, 1816
FOR FIFTY-SIX YEARS PASTOR OF THIS CHURCH
A FAITHFUL COUNSELLOR, A WISE INSTRUCTOR
A LEADER IN THE WORK OF PUBLIC EDUCATION
A HELPER TO MANY IN TIMES OF NEED
A LOVER OF FLOWERS AND OF LITTLE CHILDREN
ALSO
IN TENDER MEMORY OF
LUCY CLARK ALLEN
1791–1866
OF SERENE, PATIENT, AND CHEERFUL SPIRIT
IN DAILY LIFE HUMBLE, SCRUPULOUS, SELF-DENYING
OF DEEP CONVICTION IN MATTERS OF PUBLIC RIGHT
OF THOUGHTFUL LOVING-KINDNESS TO THE POOR AND SUFFERING
THIS TABLET
IS ERECTED BY THEIR CHILDREN
*They that be wise shall shine as the brightness
of the firmament, and they that turn many to
righteousness as the stars for ever and ever.*
October 30, 1887



William Gordon Weld (1775–1825), undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Hannah (Minot) Weld ((1780–1860), undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Capt. William Gordon Weld was born on 8 May 1775 in Dedham, Massachusetts, the ninth of the fourteen children of Lt. Col. Eleazar Weld and Hannah Minot. His birth came about five weeks before the Battle of Bunker Hill. His father had sent Mrs. Weld and children to Dedham for refuge during the English military occupation of Boston. Having been brought back to the family home in Roxbury for baptism in July, after it seemed that the English were safely bottled up in Boston, he was named for Rev. William Gordon, who baptized him.

His title, “Captain,” was that of a mariner. He had started out to study law, but at age sixteen was dismissed from these studies for misbehavior. Shortly thereafter he shipped as a cabin boy on a vessel belonging to his uncle, Crowell Hatch. By the age of nineteen, he had command of the London Packet, sailing between Boston and London.

On 2 August 1798, he married Hannah Minot, and in 1799 built a home in Roxbury adjacent to that part of the old Weld lands that is now the Bussey Arboretum of Harvard. Soon thereafter, they started their large family with a son who was to become rich and famous, William Fletcher Weld.

In 1802, when only twenty-seven, he had a most notable adventure, sailing from Boston to the Mediterranean in the ship *Jason*, which he had armed as a precaution against the Barbary pirates. Just after leaving Gibraltar, he was attacked by pirates from Algiers, but fought them off so successfully that he was able to liberate two American vessels that the pirates had previously captured.

His maritime career prospered until another, disastrous, adventure. He was returning to Boston from Spain, with a valuable cargo which, together with his ship, was worth the major portion of his entire fortune. Not having heard that the War of 1812 had broken out between the U.S. and England, he was caught off guard by an English privateer, almost in sight of Boston. He was captured, but allowed to escape by the privateer captain, who was an old friend. However, he lost almost everything but



Painting of Hannah (Minot) Weld by Chester Harding, undated
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Probably a portrait of Hannah (Minot) Weld later in life
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

his life. When he eventually struggled home, he discovered that his family had again fled inland, to Lancaster, fearing an English attack on Boston and environs.

The final result of this is that he stayed thereafter in Lancaster, where he died on 14 September 1825, leaving a widow and ten children, the youngest only five years old.

Hannah Minot was born on 16 April 1780 in Boston, eldest of the six daughters of Jonas Clarke Minot and Hannah Speakman.

Hannah was quite pretty as a young woman. There are portraits of her and Capt. William Gordon Weld in the book, *Under the Black Horse Flag*.

We know little of Hannah, other than she bore eight sons and three daughters in twenty years. Only one of these children died in infancy. With her husband frequently away at sea, she must have been a busy lady. She must certainly have had household help, and it is known that she and her husband were helped financially by their eldest son, and by her mother.

Hannah made her will on 17 November 1856, bequeathing to her sister Sarah Minot, to the children of her deceased son Thomas Swan Weld and to her daughter Margaret M. Weld all her household furniture. All the residue was to be divided equally between Margaret (with whom she lived after Capt. William Gordon Weld's death) and her daughter Hannah M. Allen. Hannah Allen's portion was to be specifically free from the control or interference of her husband, Rev. Joseph Henry Allen. The will notes that her surviving sons were all well set up financially, and did not need bequests from her.

When I was in Boston in October 2006, I saw at the New England Historic Genealogical Society (NEHGS) library that they have a relatively new book about her seven sons.

Benjamin Franklin Copeland was born on 25 November 1798 in Roxbury, Massachusetts, the fifth child and fourth son of Nathaniel Copeland and Mary Page. He was just five years old when his father died. Since his mother never remarried, he grew up without much fatherly guidance.

He entered into business as a commission merchant at an early age, as indicated by numerous advertisements in Boston newspapers. The earliest of these, dated 11 March 1820, shows Benjamin bringing in fifteen casks of molasses, presumably from the Caribbean. This same advertisement, and an 1834 register of ships at Newport, Rhode Island, show him to have been in business with a Charles Copeland, who if not his younger brother, may have been an older cousin.

He tried his hand at other business ventures, being a director of the Bank of Norfolk in Roxbury in 1826, and an original incorporator of the Roxbury Mutual Fire Insurance Company in 1827, both of these before he had reached age thirty.

He married on 19 November 1823, at the First Church of Roxbury, Massachusetts, Julia Fellows Ruggles, daughter of Hon. Nathaniel Ruggles and Sally Fellows.

He and Julia were active in the First Church of Roxbury. In an act which indicates an early connection between the Copeland and Ware families, he and Julia made their home available for celebration of the marriage between Rev. George Putnam of the Roxbury First Church, and Elizabeth Anne Ware, daughter of Rev. Henry Ware Sr. and half-sister of Lucy Clark (Ware) Allen.

He was a Whig in political preference. In the latter context, he was a backer of Horace Mann (U.S. Representative) and of Daniel Webster (U.S. Senator). He backed Webster's try for the presidency in 1851, and made an unsuccessful run for the state senate himself in that year. He had run successfully for the same office in 1844. He received a political patronage job as Deputy Collector of Customs at Boston, and was elected Justice of the Peace for Norfolk County in 1839, serving for seven years.

Benjamin kept a fine Family Bible record, in an impeccable handwriting. The record shows that three of his children got sick during the terrible scarlet fever epidemic of the mid-1830s, but all survived.

He showed his interest in national affairs by naming his sons Robert Morris, William Ellery and Charles Carroll, all signers of the Declaration of Independence and prominent financial backers of the Revolution. Of course, this tendency to salute our national heroes was started by his parents, who named him Benjamin Franklin and named a brother Thomas Jefferson.

Benjamin Franklin Copeland died on 22 December 1863 in Roxbury and is buried in a family plot, #49 on Cherry Avenue, which he purchased in Forest Hills Cemetery, Roxbury. This plot is easy to find, being marked with a large standing stone prominently displaying the names Copeland and Dunbar.

Julia Fellows Ruggles was born on 27 June 1803 in Roxbury, the eighth of eleven children of Hon. Nathaniel Ruggles (U.S. Representative), and Sarah Fellows. Almost all of her siblings died in infancy, suggesting a possible parental mismatch of RH factors.

We know little about Julia, but have an extremely unflattering photograph of her, taken in middle age.

Our only record of her thoughts is in a letter to her son Morris on his twenty-first birthday, an expression of sober and wise sentiments. She suffered through all the years of Morris's fight to regain his honorable name, but died before he was finally justified.

She outlived her husband by just a few years, dying in Cohasset, Massachusetts, on 27 June 1867. She must have been there just on a vacation, since we have no record of any member of the family living there.



Julia Fellows (Ruggles) Copeland (1803–1867)
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Rev. Benjamin Kent was born on 25 May 1794 in Somerville, Massachusetts, the fifth of eight children of Samuel Kent and Rhoda Hill.

There is quite a bit of published history about him. He graduated from Harvard in 1820, and from the Divinity School in 1824. His first efforts in the ministry were in Washington, D.C., where he supplied the pulpit for three months. Then he went to Duxbury, Massachusetts, where, on 7 June 1826 he was ordained as Colleague Pastor to Dr. John Allyn. Dr. Allyn was not in robust health, and most of the public duties of their joint ministry fell onto Reverend Benjamin.

A brief excursus about Dr. John Allyn may be interesting, as it shows how closely our Massachusetts ancestors were linked together, through ties to the Unitarian ministry. Dr. Allyn was a Harvard classmate of our Rev. Henry Ware Sr. In her recollections of childhood, our Lucy Clark (Ware) Allen, mentions how excited she and her siblings would be when Dr. Allyn dropped by their home on a trip from Duxbury to Boston. (He would let the kids ride on his back while he played horse for them.) Dr. Allyn married Abigail Bradford, an aunt of our Eleanor Bradford, about to be introduced as the bride of Rev. Benjamin Kent. So, Eleanor must have seen much of her aunt while they lived in Duxbury, as wives of colleague pastors.

In spite of all these happy connections, Reverend Benjamin's days as colleague pastor were "trying and very laborious." The parish did not see fit to pay him as a full-time minister, although he was doing most of the minister's work. This was emotionally and physically exhausting for him, and he was obliged to ask for a dismissal from his duties, which was granted on 7 June 1833, the very day on which our Josie Kent was born.

Although not a success as a minister, Reverend Benjamin had great intellectual gifts, which he expressed as a teacher and antiquarian. He apparently also had a way with words, as suggested by the following oft-repeated story, which I quote from a history of the First Church of Roxbury, Massachusetts.

R. W. Emerson in answer to an invitation to be the Phi Beta Kappa poet thus speaks of him, "May I take the liberty to ask whether Mr. Kent of Duxbury has ever been requested to write a poem for the Society? He was much the most successful poet who appeared on the college stage for many years."

Reverend Benjamin was also lucky in love. When he became engaged to Eleanor Bradford, a friend congratulated him on capturing the most outstanding girl of their acquaintance. He married on 25 September 1827, at Duxbury, Massachusetts, Eleanor Bradford, daughter of Joseph Nash Bradford and Ann Tufts.

Although his stint in the ministry at Duxbury, was not personally rewarding, and dissuaded him from further efforts in that field, he was gratefully remembered by the folks of Duxbury for his successful effort to establish a high school in the town. This school was first put in the charge of Rev. George Putnam who later became the pastor of the First Church in Roxbury. This was where Reverend Benjamin served as deacon from 1841 until his death, and in which church Reverend Putnam married a daughter of Henry Ware Sr. This was also where in 1854 he performed the marriage ceremony for our Maj. Robert Morris Copeland and Josephine Gannett Kent. (Did I mention that the Unitarian ministers formed a sort of extended family?)

Reverend Benjamin was also an antiquary of note, collecting relics of the Pilgrim days while in Duxbury. He was particularly interested in the Miles Standish house. L. Vernon Briggs, in his genealogy of the Kent family, presents this tantalizing quote,

About twenty years ago Mr. Kent, then pastor of the church in the town, first opened the ground around the site. Many curiosities were found, a buccaneer gunlock, a sickle, a hammer, a whetstone, a scythe wedge, a sword buckle, other buckles, etc. .. Many of these curiosities are in the cabinet of the Rev. Benjamin Kent, whose museum, at the close of his labors in Duxbury, contained upwards of four thousand specimens...

Leaving Duxbury, he moved in late 1833 to Roxbury, where he ran a private academy for young ladies, with the help of his wife and daughters. He became a well known citizen of Roxbury; was a librarian for many years of the Roxbury Athenaeum; trustee of the Roxbury Latin School; and a member, late in life, of the Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society.

While ordinarily his intellectual interests were focused on efforts to rediscover and understand the past by the collection of documents, artifacts, mineral deposits, etc., he did not limit his curiosity to such mundane things. I have just run across a long letter he wrote in 1836, to report, in minute detail, his witnessing of a demonstration of somnambulist clairvoyance. In this, the subject, in a room in Providence, Rhode Island, was put to sleep and directed, among other things, to visit and describe the Kent home in Roxbury, which she had never seen. She gave a minute and amazingly accurate description. However she did it, we can thank her for a vivid description of the home, furnished with many objects from China, with a schoolroom on the second floor, and Reverend Kent's museum on a garret floor above that. If accurate, this at least tells us that he did not leave his collections in Duxbury when he moved to Roxbury.

His health was never robust, and in later years he suffered from such terribly intense headaches, that he would have fits of insanity, requiring that he be sent to the Insane Hospital at Taunton. He could feel these fits coming on, and gave instructions as to how to deal with them. One such attack was finally fatal, and he died in the hospital at Taunton.

Rev. Benjamin Kent died on 5 August 1859. He is buried in Forest Hills cemetery, Roxbury, in Lot #363, Pyrola Path, along with his wife, his sister Sarah, his married daughter Laura Hooper, and two unmarried daughters, Elouisa and Isabel Kent.

Eleanor Bradford was born on 6 March 1802 in Boston, the second of six children of Joseph Nash Bradford and Ann Tufts.

We know little about her, beyond the flattering evaluation expressed to Rev. Benjamin Kent upon the news of his engagement to her. She outlived her husband by twenty-six years, and kept his school for young ladies going with the help of her daughters. In 1880, she, Elouisa, and Isabel were still at fifty Rockland Avenue in Roxbury, which had by then become part of Boston.

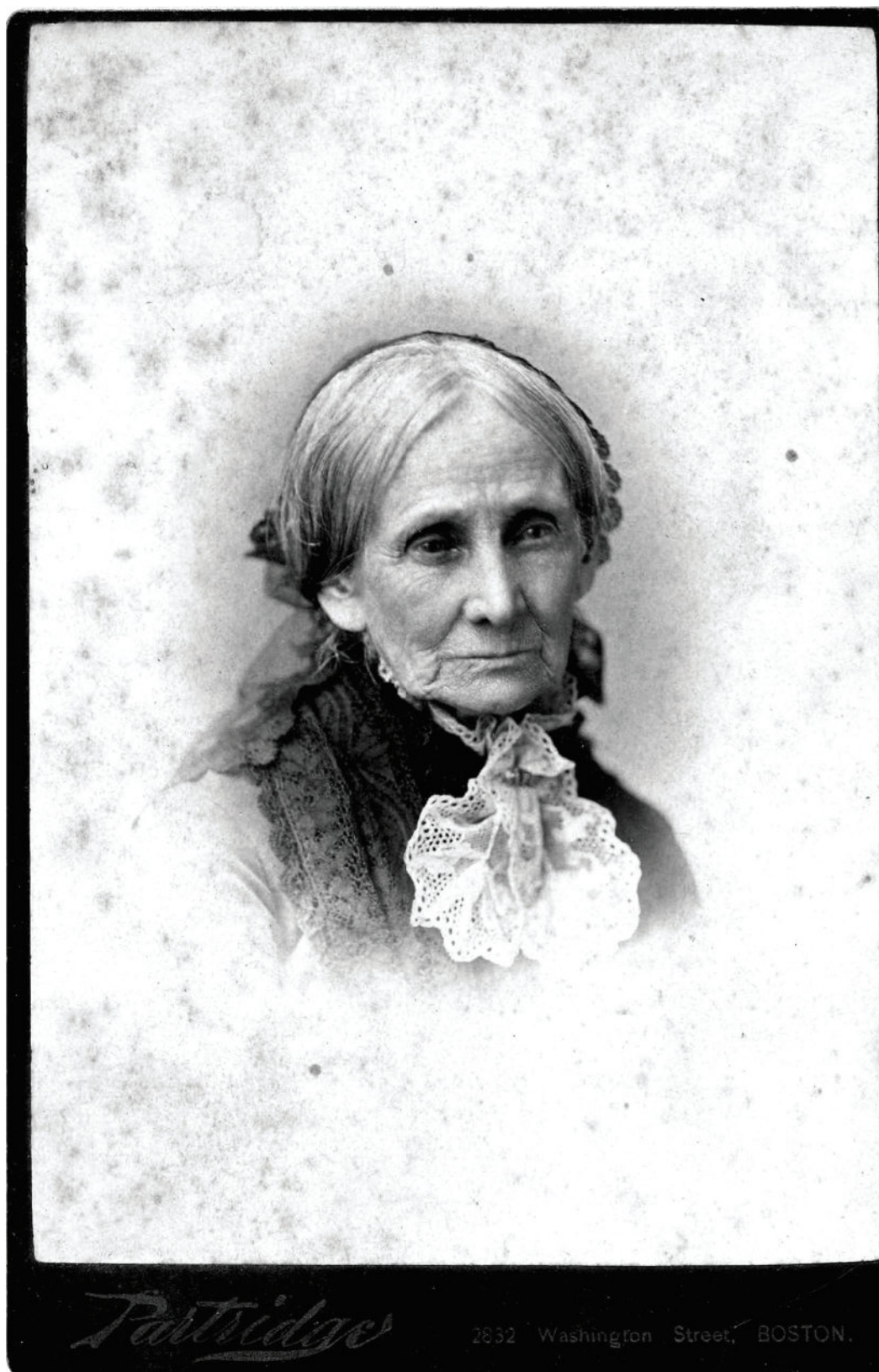
We have two photographs of her, one a rather famous group photo showing Rev. Benjamin Kent surrounded by his harem (Eleanor, his sister Sarah and his four daughters) taken about 1850; the other a frontal portrait taken, I would guess, when she was at least seventy. According to family tradition, the group photo was one of the first of that type ever taken, and was exhibited at the exposition at the Crystal Palace in London in 1851. Unfortunately, it only gives a profile view of Eleanor, but it has the unique feature of showing a "ghost" woman, at the right edge. Apparently she stepped into the picture for about half the long exposure time.



Kent family, circa 1850: (L–R) Sarah Kent, Benjamin Kent’s sister, daughters Elouisa and Josephine, Benjamin Kent, daughter Laura, wife Eleanor (Bradford) Kent and daughter Isabel
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

The later portrait of Eleanor shows a woman who had smiled more than she had frowned, although her life must have brought her plenty of worries. Her eyes convey a calm, “I’ve seen it all” expression, and her features are still strikingly handsome.

Eleanor (Bradford) Kent died in Cambridge, Massachusetts, on 17 August 1885. I don’t know whether the family had moved there during her last few years, or whether she had just been visiting, probably with her daughter Josie. She is buried next to Rev. Benjamin Kent in Forest Hills Cemetery.



Eleanor (Bradford) Kent (1802–1885), 1880
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

CHAPTER FIVE

✂ *Third Great-Grandparents*

Enoch Sherman was born on 5 September 1762 in Stratford, Connecticut, probably the third of eight children of Josiah Sherman and Miriam Gregory. (Reliable birthdates are known for only a few of their children.) Enoch was christened in Stratford on 3 October 1762.

He was still residing in Stratford in June 1780, when he enlisted in the Continental Army for six months as a substitute for his brother Walker. He served initially in Col. Isaac Sherman's Regiment of the Connecticut line. (Colonel Isaac was a very distant cousin, a son of Hon. Roger Sherman, signer of the Declaration of Independence.)

During his six-months term, Enoch was temporarily assigned to a light infantry regiment under the command of General Lafayette. After marching around New York and New Jersey, without any fighting, he was returned to Colonel Isaac's regiment and discharged in December.

In June 1781, he enlisted for another six months, again was assigned to Colonel Isaac's regiment of Connecticut Line, and had a similar experience, broken only by an abortive rush towards New London, Connecticut, when that city was burned by Benedict Arnold. Realizing that they would be too late to do any good, they turned back to New York. Again, he was discharged in December, without having been in any fighting.

About a year after this final discharge, Enoch married, 12 December 1782 in North Fairfield, Connecticut, Catharine Jane Seeley. Presumably, Enoch's father, Josiah, had moved his family slightly west from Stratford by this time, in order for Enoch to have met Catharine. The marriage ceremony was performed by Rev. James Johnson, pastor of the North Fairfield Parish, in the home built by Catharine's father. (Pat and I believe we have seen this house, which stands today, in good condition, on Seeley Street in Trumbull, Connecticut. Unfortunately, it was guarded by a large dog with a menacing bark, so we did not approach to ask for a tour of the premises.)

After their marriage, Enoch and Catharine lived for about a year in the Seeley home, helping to farm the surrounding land. Then they moved to the place of Enoch's father, where they lived for about another year. This place was in Weston, Connecticut, just across a little valley to the west of the Seeley place. Today that valley is filled with a slender reservoir.

Late in 1784, Enoch, together with his brothers Abijah and Isaac, moved to Sandgate, Bennington County, Vermont, where they all lived for at least twenty-five years. It was apparently prime farming land in those days, well watered and well timbered. Today there is little evidence of farming, and the hillsides are choked with dense undergrowth.

In about 1807, Enoch moved his family over the ridge north of Sandgate, to a new home in Rupert, Vermont, in the lovely White Creek Meadows, just a few miles from the line between Vermont and New York.

In 1832, Enoch went to the Court of Common Pleas in Washington County, New York, and applied for a Revolutionary soldier's pension. It is from his pension papers, and those of Catharine, who applied for a widow's pension in 1849, that we learn many of the details cited above.

Enoch Sherman died in West Rupert on 30 March 1849, full of years and the satisfaction of seeing his children prosperously settled around him. He is buried in the cemetery of the Rupert Congregational Church.

Catharine Jane Seeley was born on 16 September 1765, a few miles northwest from Stratford, in an area that became Trumbull, Connecticut, when the latter town was incorporated in 1797. She was the first of six children of Lt. Samuel Seeley and Sarah Silliman, born when her mother was only seventeen.

When she was six months shy of twelve years old, she was helping her father with the ploughing when the call came to assemble the militia (of which he was a lieutenant). A few days before her death, at the great age of ninety-four, she told this story, "Without waiting to unloose the oxen, he ran to the house; she followed as fast as she could and met him at the door equipped with uniform and sword. He gave her a parting kiss and was gone. The next day he was brought home a corpse."

For the next five years and nine months, Catharine must have been her mother's main helper in raising her young siblings. She then married in the family home, and continued to live there for a year, as set forth above. She had her first child, son Seeley Sherman, before she was eighteen, only about seven months after her marriage.

She had five more children, all born in Sandgate.

In December 1849, Catharine applied for a Revolutionary War widow's pension, going to great lengths to document her marriage to Enoch. In 1850, she was living with her grandson, Charles Austen Sherman, son of her son Sterling.

Catharine died on 2 October 1859 in West Rupert. She is buried in Rupert, next to Enoch.

Luke Noble was born on 21 February 1761 at Southwick, Massachusetts, the third of nine children of Reuben Noble and Ann Ferguson. He was christened in the Church of Christ in Westfield, Massachusetts, on 21 June 1761.

Sometime between 26 July 1772, when Luke's youngest sibling was christened in Westfield, and July 1776, when Luke first enlisted in the army from Rupert, Reuben must have moved his family from western Massachusetts to Vermont. There are virtually no surviving town records from that period, the story being that the town clerk was a Tory, who took them when he fled, or simply destroyed them.

Luke enlisted in the army frequently, for short periods between 1776 and 1779. He served usually in the company of his uncle, Capt. Tahan Noble, and the regiment of Col. Seth Warner. He was frequently at Mt. Independence and Ticonderoga, and fought in the battle of Hubbardton (a rear

guard action when the Americans abandoned Ticonderoga in July, 1777, when Burgoyne advanced down Lake Champlain with overwhelming force) and the battle of Bennington (August 16, 1777, when American militia gave Burgoyne's troops a foretaste of what awaited them at Saratoga).

From a payroll of Capt. Tahan Noble's company, which seems to agree with Luke's description of this enlistment, we find that he was serving with his father, Reuben, his uncle Ephraim and his future brother-in-law, William McCleary during this campaign. In between enlistments and after his final discharge, Luke was active around Rupert, harassing Tories, who had burned his father's mill in 1778. One such raid, to bring in cattle belonging to Tories, presumably to feed Capt. Tahan Noble's militia company, took place only a week after the Battle of Hubbardton, which took place only about thirty miles north of Rupert.

In his *Early Memories of West Rupert, Vt.*, Great-grandfather Sherman says, "At a point higher up on White Creek and across the road to Hebron, our grandfather Luke Noble is said to have had a gristmill; this must have been at an early day, for I do not remember seeing the building, though traces of the dam were long visible."

In the waning days of the Revolution, circa 1781, Luke married Mary McCleary, who was nearly twice his age. There must have been an interesting story behind that, but I have never learned it.

Sometime between 1820, when the census found him at Rupert, and 1830, when he was found at Greenwich, Washington County, New York, he moved downstream, past the point where White Creek joins the main Battenkill River, to what was then called Centre Falls within a few miles of the Saratoga battlefield. [I believe this place is now called Middle Falls.] At this place he is reported to have run a tavern, and it was here that his wife died in 1827. He was still there for the 1840 census and for an 1841 listing of Revolutionary pensioners living in New York.

He applied successfully for a Revolutionary soldier's pension on 28 August 1832, on the same day and in the same court as did Enoch Sherman. For some reason, he added a couple of years to his age for that application, but he was back to his actual age for the 1841 census of pensioners. [I suspect that he knew that he was underage (only sixteen) when he first enlisted, and feared that his service before reaching the age of eighteen might not be given credit toward his pension.]

Luke died on 9 August 1848 in West Rupert, according to the autobiography of his grandson, Samuel Sherman. If this is accurate, he must have moved back there from Greenwich in his old age, perhaps to live with his daughter's family. He had been a widower for twenty-one years.

(Note: In looking for records of the Noble family, look also under Nobles.)

Mary McCleary was born in Methuen, Massachusetts, on 24 November 1746, the fourth of ten children of Daniel McCleary and Mary Mulliken.

The children of Daniel and Mary moved early, in 1768 or 1769, to Salem, New York, only a mile or two from West Rupert. There seems to be no record of when Mary went out to join them, but I would guess that she may have come out with her brother William, who, like Luke Noble, was in the Battle of Bennington in August 1777, but had still been in Massachusetts for the Battle of Bunker Hill.

It seems possible that it was during the campaign leading up to the Battle of Bennington that the Noble and McCleary families became well acquainted, since a payroll for Capt. Tahan Noble's company, which is undated but seems likely to have been for this campaign, includes the names, besides that of Luke Noble, of his father Reuben, his uncle Ephraim Noble and William McCleary. (If I have this right, Reuben and Ephraim were both brothers of Capt. Tahan Noble.)

Why Mary McCleary was still single at the age of thirty-five, and then married a nineteen-year-old boy, remains a mystery. Possibly she was helping her parents in Methuen until William persuaded her to join him in going west to be with her other brothers.

Mary died at Centre Falls, just downstream from Greenwich, New York, on 9 November 1827. We have not discovered where she and Luke are buried, but we have not investigated graves at Centre Falls.

Unknown Dewey and Rebecca Unknown. We come now to our first brick wall, the parents of our William Dewey. All we know for sure is the given name, Rebecca, of William's mother. The 1850 census reports that Rebecca was born in Massachusetts in 1766. The record of her death in Philadelphia says that she died on 11 October 1855. We know that she was buried at Laurel Hill Cemetery in Philadelphia.

The irony of this situation is that all the facts we wish to know were certainly known to a famous genealogist, Dr. Henry Bond, who lived for years with William and Rebecca Dewey. He gave, in his *History and Genealogies of Watertown*, birth date and place for William, but because it was outside the scope of his book, he did not name William's parents. As was mentioned before, no birth record for William can be found in the town where he was supposed to have been born, nor can any record of his birth anywhere in Massachusetts be found. The only other things that we know about Rebecca, are that she joined the Spruce Street Baptist Church in Philadelphia, almost as soon as the family arrived there from Augusta, Maine, and that she seems to have lived with William and his family in Augusta.

Dea. Henry Bond was born in Watertown, Massachusetts, on 14 January 1762, the fourth of six children of Lt. Col. William Bond and Lucy Brown. He was the second child to be named Henry, the first having died in 1758.

As a remarkably young boy, only a bit over fourteen, he accompanied his father with the 25th Regiment on the unsuccessful campaign up Lake Champlain in 1776. They went first to New York City, where they were on 26 April. They then sailed up the Hudson to Albany, marched overland to the foot of Lake Champlain. After sailing up Champlain and down the Richelieu River, they got as far as Isle aux Noix on the St. Lawrence River by 18 June.

The expedition then petered out, and the 25th Regiment, much depleted by illness, was back at Crown Point on 11 July, at Ticonderoga by 10 August and Mt. Independence by 18 August. At Mt. Independence, on 30 August 1776, Henry and his first cousin Leonard Bond were at the death bed of Col. William Bond. After that we hear nothing of him until his marriage.

On 21 May 1789, in Watertown, Massachusetts, he married Hannah Stearns, daughter of Capt. Phineas Stearns and Hannah Bemis. Shortly after the birth of their first child, who was to become the famous genealogist, Dr. Henry Bond, Henry and Hannah moved to Livermore, Maine. There Henry bought half interest in the first grist- and sawmills in the town, and soon became a schoolmaster and a deacon in the First Church.

I had always assumed that the First Church was Congregational, but recently learned that, after the Baptist church was settled in Livermore in 1793, Henry was "approbated" as a minister in that church. He also served as the second schoolmaster of Livermore.

After he and Hannah had a second child, Henry died in Livermore, Maine, on 27 March 1796, quite a young man.

His son, Dr. Henry Bond, in a letter to William Willis Esq., the author of a brief history of Livermore, Maine, said that after his parents died, he lived for a while with Dea. Elijah Livermore, the founder of the town, for whom it was named.

Hannah Stearns was born on 28 April 1768, in Watertown, Massachusetts, the first of four children of Capt. Phineas Stearns and Hannah Bemis.

After the death of Henry Bond, she married in Livermore, Maine, on 17 May 1798, Zebedee Rose. Hannah and Zebedee had two sons, Zebedee Rose and George Stearns Rose. In his will, Dr. Henry Bond made a bequest to his half-brother, Zebedee Rose.

Hannah then died, also young, on 12 August 1803, and Zebedee Rose took a second wife. I assume, without specific evidence, that our Hannah Bond must have grown up in the family of Zebedee Rose Sr., before moving to Augusta, Maine, which is about twenty-five miles east of Livermore.

Martin D. Hardin was born at George's Creek, in what was then Westmoreland County (now Fayette County), Pennsylvania, on 21 June 1780, the second of seven children of Col. John Hardin and Jane Davies. He had an older sister, Sarah, who was born just before the Revolution. He was the first child born after Colonel John (then a lieutenant) retired from the army.

Martin was only six when their family moved to Nelson County (now Washington County), Kentucky. He was just twelve when his father was killed by Indians in Ohio.

Fortunately for his education, Martin had a very intellectual brother-in-law, the Rev. Barnabas McHenry, who was thirteen years older than him, a close neighbor who could help to start him in the right direction. His father also was survived by siblings who embodied a strong sense of family pride.

Martin was a man devoted to serious principles of behavior, personal and professional. Apparently, this characteristic showed even in his boyhood, according to Robert B. McAfee, a young school chum who later published an autobiography. He said,

There was one trait in M.D. Hardin, which I deem it my duty to relate, he was a youth of remarkable sober and regular habits, and with all very pleasant and agreeable, he was universally known & called by the boys 'The Priest' and would always answer to that name without taking offense, our amusements were playing marbles and Ball against the north end of the lot, and of course we would have frequent disputes & wrangles about our play which were uniformly referred To the 'Priest'. Hardin would hear the stories on both sides and then gravely decide it and such were the equity & Justice of his decisions that I never knew an appeal taken from his opinion, but all instantly acquiesced, until he seemed at length really our rightful judge. [I think Martin was about fifteen or sixteen at the time.]

Martin was a favorite name among the Hardins, and our Martin got a middle initial "D" to distinguish him from his uncle and cousins of the same name. Various authors have assumed that the D stood for his mother's maiden name, Davies, but I have found no corroboration of that in any family papers.

Opportunities for formal schooling were just appearing in Kentucky in Martin's day, and he was able to attend Transylvania Seminary in Lexington as a teenager. This was a school originally organized by Presbyterians, who were very upset when a liberal majority of their trustees hired a Unitarian to run it, even though the man brought recommendations from Thomas Jefferson and James Madison. One of Martin's classmates at Transylvania Seminary was his future brother-in-law, William Logan, and it may have been through this contact that Martin met Elizabeth Logan.

An interesting document, authored by Martin D., dated 3 April 1799, gives a wonderful snapshot of the interrelated Hardin families of Kentucky of that time, and provides a precise description of the land owned by Col. John Hardin on Pleasant Run, Washington County, when he died. It starts off as follows,

On the third of October 1797, Josiah Wilson and Philip Clealand commissioners for processing of land, Martin Hardin, Sr., Barnabas McHenry, Charles Springer, Martin John and Stull Hardin of Hardin's Creek, Benjamin Hardin, Jr., Martin Hardin, Jr., Mark Hardin of Pleasant Run, myself, and others, run as follows, the Processioners marking divers of the old line trees ...

It continues with a detailed narration of their procession around the boundaries of the land. The "processioning" of land seems to have had two functions: 1) it refreshed the marks, usually cut on trees, by which survey corners were identified, and 2) it refreshed or instilled a memory of boundaries in the minds of neighbors and family members, so that they could testify to these matters in court, if necessary at some later time. Thus, seven of the Hardins assembled for this event were teenagers between twelve and seventeen. (As a side benefit for us, it demonstrates clearly why it was prudent for our Martin D. Hardin to adopt a middle initial, although he was not given one at birth.)

After his classical schooling, Martin read law with George Nicholas, the first attorney general of Kentucky. He was licensed to practice law in 1801, and started his practice in Richmond, Madison County, Kentucky, to which place his widowed mother had moved when she remarried in 1799. He had an active career in Kentucky politics and military affairs, starting with election to represent Madison County in the Kentucky House of Representatives from 1805 to 1807. Shortly after this term, he moved to Frankfort, where he married Elizabeth Logan, daughter of Gen. Benjamin Logan, on 20 January 1809. The fact that he waited to become so well established before marrying may have influenced Elizabeth's strong opposition to the engagement of their son John at a much earlier age.

An active and responsible life then developed rapidly for Martin. He was elected to the Kentucky House of Representatives from Franklin County in 1812, but was appointed Kentucky's Secretary of State in that same year by Gov. Isaac Shelby. His service in that job was briefly interrupted in early 1813, but was continuous from 13 March 1813 to 4 September 1816.

In 1816, he was appointed by Gov. Gabriel Slaughter (and subsequently elected by the Kentucky Legislature) to serve out a term in the U.S. Senate, vacated by the resignation of William T. Barry. Martin served only until 4 March 1817, when he returned to Kentucky to attend to his law practice and to local politics. Shortly thereafter, he was re-elected to the Kentucky House of Representatives, from Franklin County and served as Speaker of the House in 1819–1820.

As a lawyer, he acquired great reputation, both for scholarship and for integrity. In 1810, still quite new to the practice, he published *Reports of Cases Argued and Adjudged in the Court of Appeals of Kentucky, 1805–1808*. His philosophy of practice was admirably stated in a letter he wrote for his nephew, John McHenry, who was one of many subsequently prominent Kentuckians to study law under Martin. It went as follows:

Dr John _ There are a few principles for governing a man's actions in life, that are worth more than ordinary fortunes _ especially to professional men _ I will give you a few _

1st What you have to do _ do at the first time at which it can be done _ This embraces many old proverbs _ "take time by the forlock" etc _ it requires industry to beget leisure

2nd Do but one thing at a time _ In other words "finish what you begin"—By this rule everything will be done better _ and in less time _



Martin D. Hardin (1780–1823)
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

3rd "Never use your client's money" _ But inform him of its receipt by the first mail & remit by the first opportunity _ A character for punctuality is thus acquired _ a man is never ashamed nor afraid to meet a client _ and he is relieved from remorse which always should attend the using of another's money and not replacing it when wanted _ and I am sure no man can habitually use his client's money, & yet always have it ready when it ought to be paid, let his wealth & credit be what they may _ I have said nothing about strict moral integrity _ this is indispensable _ but I trust you stand not in need of any monitions on that head _

I have attempted to make the above three rules the leading ones in my business _ I never have departed from either but I have felt the effects of it _ you must not think that as you have got license you are a lawyer & have nothing to do but get suits _ Occasionally mixing in company _ going to publick places & becoming acquainted with the people and with human nature is necessary _ but habitual reading and attention (that is remaining in your office) is indispensable _

If you are closely & perseveringly industrious you will succeed _ if you are not you will fail in your hopes _

Yours _M.D. Hardin"

Martin also had a conspicuous military career, such that he was called "General Hardin" in later years. His rank was in the Kentucky militia. Like many leading men in Kentucky society, he could hardly be an active politician without being active in the militia. We know from accounts of the War of 1812, that he was a major, leading a battalion in the regiment of his brother-in-law Col. John Allen, at the time of the Battle of the River Raisin, on 22 January 1813. Colonel Allen died heroically in that battle, but Martin's battalion seems not to have been involved in the fighting.

It seems that, after this one disastrous campaign, Martin was dissuaded from further active service in the War of 1812, by arguments that he was needed more urgently at home, attending to his duties as Secretary of State. If I understand the organization of Kentucky politics at this time, his was the position through which all requests for political patronage were funnelled, and it was terribly important to his political friends to have him on the job. When the Kentuckians gained their revenge at the Battle of the Thames on 5 October 1813, Martin was safely back in Frankfort. Nevertheless, his military competence was well enough proved so that he was appointed lieutenant colonel on 1 February 1814, and brigadier general on 19 January 1816.

During his relatively brief but very active life, Martin accumulated a considerable estate, consisting mostly of lands throughout Kentucky and in the military district of Ohio, and promissory notes, owed to him by people all over the state. Like many Americans of the period, especially Kentuckians, his financial affairs were greatly complicated by a scarcity of cash. Most transactions were based on credit, so that it was often difficult to know whether a man was wealthy or poor. So much of his fortune depended on how lucky he was in collecting what was owed to him, or how unlucky he was in having guaranteed the payment of loans by friends who became insolvent. When Martin died rather suddenly of a mysterious fever, friends of his widow, including Henry Clay, actually advised her that it was hopeless to straighten out his affairs, and that she should throw herself on the mercy of a bankruptcy court. Little did they know of the tenacity of that widow, and the helpful determination of her network of relatives!

Martin made his will on 26 June 1823, with a codicil written on 3 October 1823. He did not name his children except son John, but he did name his father in this introductory sentence, "I, Martin D. Hardin counsellor at law of Franklin County in the State of Kentucky, son of the late Gen. John Hardin of Pleasant Run, formerly Nelson, now Washington County, do hereby make and ordain this my last will and testament."

One asset of the estate is worth special mention, because it can be located today. This was Locust Hill, the family home and farm, a few miles east of Frankfort. This was bought by Martin on 29 April 1817, soon after he returned from Washington, D.C. He refers to it in the will as follows, “Locust Hill the farm I live on, the division line to be that which divided the land I bought from Giles Samuels heirs, and that I bought from Reuben Samuel & formerly owned by Edmond Ware dec’d.”

Martin D. Hardin’s will also named his brother Mark Hardin, brother-in-law John Logan and sister Sarah McHenry. The two codicils are concerned with the fact that he was dying before having settled the estate of Col. John Allen, of which he had been the administrator.

It was at Locust Hill that Martin D. died, on 8 October 1823, and was initially buried. He was subsequently reinterred in the State Cemetery in Frankfort. His passing was elaborately mourned in Frankfort. A lengthy and flowery obituary appeared in the *Commentator* of Frankfort. I quote just a tiny bit of what was said in that article:

As a LAWYER, it will be no disparagement of a distinguished class of gentlemen, exalted for their talents and jealous of their fame, who would adorn any bar, and do honor to any country, to say that he [Martin D.] was the very first, in the first rank. Strength and judgment were the distinguishing characteristics of his intellect. Without the benefit of a polished education, those great powers aided by an industry and perseverance that winked at no obstacle and yielded to no difficulty, conducted him to a professional elevation that the proudest might envy. Although for fifteen years he had enjoyed great celebrity, success never induced him to relax his efforts for a moment, and at the hour of his last illness, he was a student. His style was of the didactic and severe. He held no converse with the Muses, never ventured into the walks of the imagination or attempted to flourish by appeals to the passions, but on a question of PRINCIPLE involving the interests of his country or the fortunes of his client, he wielded the thunderbolt with the ability of a master.

Elizabeth Logan was born on 22 May 1784 in a frame house, close to Logan’s Fort, in Lincoln County, Kentucky. I mention the type of house, because it was reputedly the first to be built in Kentucky. She was the fifth of nine children of Gen. Benjamin Logan and Ann Montgomery.

When she was eleven, the family moved to Bullskin Creek, in Shelby County. We know little of her childhood and education. The spelling and punctuation of her many letters suggest a limited education, but this can be misleading. Throughout her life she was a strongly committed Presbyterian. Her father was not a church member, but he read the Bible and catechized his children at home, in the “old Scotch Irish Pennsylvania way” [to quote his son Dr. Benjamin Logan.]

Elizabeth seems, from her letters, to have had a rather gloomy personality, and to have been very critical of those around her, except for her husband, whom she deeply admired. On the other hand, she was utterly and successfully devoted to the welfare of her children (and didn’t mind telling you that). To be fair, she had good reason for a gloomy outlook on life, having lost infant children in 1815 and 1816, brothers in 1813, 1816, 1822 and 1826, her husband in 1823, a sister in 1821 and her mother in 1825.

When Martin D. Hardin was serving in the U.S. Senate, Elizabeth wrote to him frequently from Frankfort, with news of the neighborhood and the family. During the times when he was away, Elizabeth was helped around the house and kept company by her niece, Lydia Ann McHenry.

When her husband died on 8 October 1823, Elizabeth was close to delivering her last child, and was also the mother of two other children, five and three. She was faced with the job of raising them, and with trying to settle her husband’s extensive but scattered estate. Fortunately, she had several slaves, a competent family lawyer, a farm manager and lots of young nieces to keep her company.

In 1828, there was a great religious revival in Kentucky, and Elizabeth was pleased, though sometimes skeptical, to see family members and friends joining the church.

She wrote often to her son John in that year, urging him to seek religion and to walk a straight and narrow path of moral and discreet behavior. John was studying law with Judge Boyle at that time, and in his first year as executor of his father's estate. It is interesting to see how fully Elizabeth accepted him as an adult in that role.

On 2 April 1830, at the age of forty-six, and just two weeks before her son John left for his tour of exploration of the West, Elizabeth married Porter Clay, a brother of the famous Senator Henry Clay. We have little or no idea of why she made that choice. Porter was certainly a religious man, but not a Presbyterian. In fact, he was, off and on, a Baptist minister. We have virtually no evidence of what Elizabeth's children thought of him. He, for his part, made every effort to be an affectionate stepfather, as can be judged from his letters to John.

While, as mentioned above, Elizabeth was strongly opposed to the engagement of John and Sarah, she seemed at least reconciled to their marriage and their move to Illinois. In a letter to John written when John and Sarah had arrived safely at Jacksonville after their wedding, she wrote, "Tell Sarah the little girls often talk of visiting her _ Mr Clay says he became more attached to her every day he was with her _"

John and Sarah's move to Illinois soon acted as a magnet for the family remaining in Kentucky. Almost immediately, Porter began to ask John about business prospects and property prices. By late 1831, Elizabeth writes things to John, hinting that she might want to move, while at the same time she is buying land to add to the holdings at Locust Hill.

By January 1833, Elizabeth had lost another son to Illinois. Charles, born in 1818, was attending Illinois College in Jacksonville. By 28 February 1833, Porter Clay wrote John that he, Elizabeth, Lucy Jane and Martinette (Elizabeth's daughters) were planning to leave Frankfort the next day, to visit John, Sarah and Charles. While they were in Jacksonville, on 23 March 1833, Elizabeth bought a six-acre lot from Samuel D. Lockwood. Today, that lot fills a large block between State and College Streets, and between Park and Prospect Streets. By 9 May 1833, they were back in Kentucky, just at the time of the terrible cholera epidemic, which had wiped out ten percent of the population of Lexington, and had killed Rev. Barnabas McHenry, his wife, Sarah (Hardin) McHenry, and their two youngest daughters, at the old place on Pleasant Run. Porter Clay's letters of this period make it quite clear that he and Elizabeth had decided by this time to move to Jacksonville. These letters also show that Porter played an increasingly active and useful role in the many business transactions required to make this move possible.

In September, 1833, Sarah, with her daughter Ellen, her mother and her brother Abram left Jacksonville together, reaching Locust Hill by 9 November. On 10 November 1833, Porter Clay wrote to John that Locust Hill had been sold at a good price to John's old friend Robert W. Scott. The same letter makes it clear that Elizabeth and Porter had employed the well-known Kentucky architect Gideon Shryock to plan a home for them, to be built in Jacksonville, and that the building was underway. An order to purchase a fine piano for their Jacksonville home indicates that Elizabeth expected to live in civilized style in her new home. On 25 February 1834, Elizabeth and Porter Clay, together with Sarah and Ellen, started the final move of the family back to Jacksonville. By April, they had arrived in what would be their final home.

Bills for building materials and furnishings give evidence of work on the new home throughout 1834. We next hear from Elizabeth on 4 February 1837, when she complained to John, who was serving in the Illinois legislature in Vandalia, that Lucy Jane, just turning seventeen, was behaving badly while on a visit to Vandalia. She didn't have long to worry, because Lucy Jane married Marcus Aurelius Chinn, a fine young civil engineer, on 22 February 1838.



Elizabeth (Logan) Hardin (1784–1861)
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

On 12 May 1839, Elizabeth wrote to John from Bardstown, Kentucky, where she was depositing Martinette in the Bardstown Academy, a school for young ladies which Elizabeth preferred to anything available in Jacksonville. Martinette was to live with her aunt Mary (Logan) Smith, Elizabeth's sister. Lucy Jane was with them, with her first child. Porter Clay was in Lexington, so it was quite a family expedition. Elizabeth asked John to keep an eye on her home, and to sell it if he could, saying that she could easily find a place to rent if she came home in the summer. I find this indication that Elizabeth no longer cared to live in a home which had so recently been built, with care and presumably high hopes for the future, somewhat puzzling. We have a newspaper ad, dated 13 July 1836, showing that Porter Clay had set up himself and his son (by his first marriage, F. P. Clay) as a real estate agency in Jacksonville. He was hoping to take advantage of a land rush which was very active at that time. However, this rush came to a screeching halt in 1837, when local economies collapsed all over the West as the bubble of speculation burst. It is possible that Elizabeth and Porter then found that they could not afford their fine new home. There is evidence that John had been paying many of their bills with local merchants. At any rate, John did not sell the mansion in 1839, for it was not until 6 November 1849, after John and Lucy were dead, and Sarah had moved back to Kentucky, that Elizabeth sold the place, and moved to a smaller house, adjacent to that of her son Charles.

The last twenty years of Elizabeth's life are shrouded in comparative silence. It seems that her relationship to Porter Clay was not close after about 1845, when he served for a year and a half as supply pastor to a Baptist church in Carrollton, Illinois, while Elizabeth stayed in Jacksonville. This was followed, in 1848, by supply ministry in Quincy, Illinois, and in the fall of 1849, by Porter's departure for a winter in the South, from which he never returned. He died in Camden, Arkansas, in February 1850.

Elizabeth was listed in Jacksonville for both the 1850 and 1860 censuses, along with her orphaned Chinn granddaughters (Betty, eleven, and Martinette, five, in 1850; and just Martha in 1860).

Elizabeth (Logan) (Hardin) Clay died in Jacksonville on 21 April 1861 having outlived Porter Clay by eleven years. She made a will on 7 July 1858, bequeathing household effects to her granddaughter Martinette McKee Chinn, and providing funds in trust for her and for granddaughter Bettie Solomon, such funds to be outside the control of any husband, should the girls marry. The remnants of her estate went to son Charles. By this time her son John, and daughter Lucy Jane had died, and her daughter Martinette and daughter-in-law Sarah Ellen were well provided for by their husbands.

Horace Smith was born circa 1773, perhaps in Virginia, probably the first of five children of Thomas Smith and Mary. We have no family Bible record for Thomas and Mary, but we have gravestone inscriptions for Horace's two brothers and 1850 and 1860 census records for one of his sisters.

Horace and his father Thomas were defendants in a chancery suit in Mercer County, Kentucky, in 1809. Jacob Bowman, the plaintiff, claimed that the land Thomas Smith and others had bought in 1787, had already been granted to his family, and duly surveyed. The neighbors of the Smiths at this time were almost all from Somerset County, New Jersey, or nearby. Bowman won his suit, and Thomas Smith had to pay again for that part of his land which overlapped Bowman's grant. By the time the suit was finally settled, Horace had died, and his heirs were all named.

On 20 July 1801, he married Eleanor Fulkerson, daughter of Abram Fulkerson and Elizabeth Black. On 18 June 1806, Horace showed that he was more than an ordinary farmer by buying the exclusive right to manufacture and sell in Mercer County a newly patented washing machine. Unfortunately, we hear no more about this venture.

On 9 October 1809, Horace bought 160 acres on Indian Creek in Franklin County, Kentucky. He and his heirs were taxed for this land through 1834, but I cannot discover what they ever did with it.

Horace made his will on 28 January 1811, very shortly before he died. He wanted his wife and his brother-in-law Henry Speed to be executors, and basically left everything to Eleanor, with directions to hang onto the family farm until his youngest child was of age. He did make an extra gift to his daughter Betsy. A peculiar closing statement in his will allows us to estimate his date of birth. It reads, "A Meshiense with Vibration—for cogs & Round was quite too strong in 38 years ceasing to Perform—are now Resigned unto their Makers Call." There is also a mysterious reference to his preferred place of burial, "My Bones I wish to be Deposited Somewhere Near J. Coopers old house where my Mother would wish to be laid herself." I have never been able to discover where "J. Cooper" lived.

Several documents say that he died in February 1811, but don't specify the day. One sister and a brother-in-law named sons after him. Horace left four minor children and a pregnant wife. His brother-in-law, Abraham Fulkerson, served as guardian of his children.

Eleanor Fulkerson was born circa 1778 in Caswell County, North Carolina, the third of six children of Abram Fulkerson and Elizabeth Black. Both the date and place of her birth are guessed here. Caswell County was at that time being harassed by the English General Cornwallis, and few county records survived the revolutionary period. Her parents were definitely established in Caswell County in 1778 and for a number of years thereafter. Three of her siblings survived until the 1850 census, so we have data with which to bracket her probable birthdate.

She was brought to Kentucky by her father in 1791, and they settled in Jessamine County on the Kentucky River. Their land was just upstream of the modern bridge connecting Nicholasville to the Shaker village in Mercer County.

On 20 July 1801, she married Horace Smith of Mercer County. For this marriage and those of her sisters Dinah, Sarah and Elizabeth, her father signed permission slips which survive today in the Mercer and Jessamine county marriage records. It was by matching his signatures on these slips to his signature on his mother's will in North Carolina, that I was assured that Eleanor and her family came from North Carolina.

After less than ten years of marriage, Horace died, leaving Eleanor to raise four youngsters under the age of seven, and carrying a fifth child that was due in five months. Somehow she managed without marrying again. She had slaves to work the fields and to help with the housework, and she got significant support from her brother Abraham, and from the families of her sisters Sarah and Elizabeth. Abraham served as guardian for the children, and did a good job defending their interest in legal disputes with Horace's siblings. Horace's brother George was, with some justification, convinced that the terms of his father's will showed undue favoritism to the heirs of Horace.

Eleanor herself seems to have been a competent business woman, enlarging the family's land holdings, and taking in boarders to stretch the income from the farm. Eventually she left her surviving four children a decent estate. Late in life, after her daughters were both married, she went to live with her daughter Elizabeth McHenry in Springfield, Washington County.

We have no letters from her, by which to estimate her personality. We know that she opposed Sarah's engagement to John J. Hardin, perhaps just on the grounds that Sarah was too young for such a commitment, or perhaps because Sarah's older sister, Elizabeth, had not yet settled on a beau. Just like Elizabeth Hardin, she seems to have become completely supportive of the marriage once it had happened, especially because both her daughters were married on the same day.

We don't know exactly when or where she died. We last hear of her alive, with the McHenrys in Springfield, on 7 April 1835, but that letter, from Martin D. McHenry to his brother John, said, "On last Wednesday Mrs. Smith had a violent attack of congestive fever which for about five days we seriously apprehended would be fatal, but the disease seems gradually and reluctantly to have released its prey and she is in a fair way to recover." By 15 June 1835, Martin wrote again, this time to John J. Hardin, to say that he has moved to Shelbyville, and to indicate indirectly, that Eleanor was dead. We do not know where she is buried.

John Jeremiah Jacob Sr. was born on 20 October 1778 in Baltimore, Maryland, the third and last child of Lt. William Jacob and Mary Monk. His mother died in Baltimore when he was just an infant, after which he moved with his father to Hampshire County, Virginia. There his father died in 1792, in Romney (present-day West Virginia). He lived there with his uncle, also named John Jeremiah Jacob, until about 1800, when he moved to Louisville, Kentucky.

In Louisville, he was taken under the wing of Thomas Prather, a prominent businessman, and proceeded to amass a great fortune through real estate speculation. He was also a bank president, and when railroads arrived in the area, a railroad president. He became the wealthiest man in Louisville, a prominent civic leader and philanthropist. He was not active in any church, but contributed generously to many.

On 16 June 1811, he married Anne Overton Fontaine in Louisville, with whom he had two daughters and a son. Anne died quite young on 13 August 1819, and John then married second on 5 February 1822, Lucy Donald Robertson, with whom he had eight more children.

Throughout his life in Louisville, he was always called John I. Jacob. Perhaps he affected this to avoid confusion with his uncle and cousin in Virginia, both called John Jeremiah Jacob. John I. left an impressively long will on 13 March 1852, with a codicil made on 16 March 1852.

John I. Jacob died in Louisville on 1 April 1852 and is buried in a magnificently decorated family plot in Cave Hill Cemetery.

Anne Overton Fontaine was born on 19 April 1796 in Louisa County, Virginia, the last of twelve children of Capt. Aaron Fontaine and Barbara Terrell. When she was just a babe in arms her father led his family to Kentucky. It must have been a trying journey for her mother who died soon after the family reached Louisville. Her father soon remarried and started another large family, so Anne grew up more as a middle child, rather than as the youngest.

Anne was only fifteen when she married John I. Jacob, and after the birth of three children, she died at the young age of twenty-three in 1819. She and her children and their spouses are all buried in the Jacob plot at Cave Hill Cemetery in Louisville.

Darwin Johnson was born on 11 January 1803 in Scott County, Kentucky, the first of eleven children of James Johnson and Nancy Payne. As a young man, he moved to Fayette County, Kentucky, where he married Edward-Anne Payne on 18 May 1825. They lived in the Town Fork settlement near Lexington, where many of the Payne families resided.

I have often wondered how Darwin came by his given name, which seems never to have been used in the family before. There was a notable English poet, naturalist and intellectual, Erasmus Darwin, the grandfather of Charles Darwin, who died just a few months before Darwin Johnson was born. I suppose one or both of his parents may have admired this man. Although in 1803 Kentucky society was still close to its frontier days, the Johnsons and Paynes had been relatively prosperous back in Virginia, and may well have had intellectual interests.

Unlike most of their contemporaries, Darwin and Edward-Anne had only two children.

After his daughter Evelyn married John J. Jacob, Jr. and especially after his wife Edward-Ann died, Darwin lived with the Jacobs. He died in Louisville on 21 May 1870 and is buried in the Jacob family plot at Cave Hill.

Edward-Anne Payne was born on 4 July 1806 in Fayette County, Kentucky, the first of three children of James Orlando Payne and Tabitha Price. She was named, in this curious way, for both of her paternal grandparents, of whom her father had been very fond, and who had both died a few months before Edward-Anne was born.

She grew up in a relatively prosperous slave-owning home, but her father was an erratic man, and home life may have been frightening as she approached the age of nine. Her father, according to a witness at his trial for murder of his wife, said that he had often talked of killing his children.

Both her parents died in 1815, and she was placed in the care of her cousin Hugh Payne, son of her father's brother, Sanford Payne. Hugh had moved to Jemmy's farm to care for him in his illness.

In an account of the settlement of her father's estate, we get a peek at Edward-Anne's childhood as an orphan. Two major expenditures on her behalf stand out, to wit: 1) A payment of \$208 on 5 June 1816 to John Lockwood for one quarter of Edward-Anne's tuition, and 2) on 15 January 1818, \$350 paid for a piano for Edward-Anne. So it appears that her teen years were relatively comfortable and pleasant, and that she was being prepared to take her place in genteel society.

As noted above, Edward-Anne married Darwin Johnson on 18 May 1825, and had two children, George Ann (this time a boy), who died young, and Evelyn. Edward-Anne died when she was only forty-one, on 24 June 1847, and is buried next to Darwin at Cave Hill. We have snapshots of their gravestones.

Phineas Allen was born on 24 April 1764, in Medfield, Massachusetts, the second and last child of Noah Allen Jr. and Abigail Ellis. He had five half-brothers from Noah's earlier marriage to Miriam Fisher. His mother died when he was a three-month-old baby. Fortunately, his grandmother was a tower of strength and lived to be ninety, by which time Phineas was off serving in the Continental army.

Unlike his father, who was a giant of a man, Phineas was small. At the age of seventeen, his military records said that he was five feet, three and a half inches tall, light complexioned, light haired and blue eyed. He enlisted in the army when only sixteen, served several terms of about three months, marched a great deal to New York and the Jerseys, and was never in any battles. His service record was much like that of Enoch Sherman. (My cousin, once removed, Marion Kent Allen, has his Revolutionary War powder horn, intending to give it to her son, Daniel Mulkey.)

On 27 September 1787, Phineas married Ruth Smith, daughter of Asa Smith and Miriam Kingsbury of Walpole. They had eight children, and by hard work and careful thrift, managed to put three sons through Harvard. His grandchildren described him as "a prosperous farmer, open-hearted, quick-tempered, hospitable, kindly in his dealings with his fellow-men." He was a selectman of Medfield in 1810 and 1822, and was chosen deacon of the Unitarian church in 1828. He inherited the family farm from his father, representing the fifth generation of Allens to have lived on the place.

He died in Medfield on 13 August 1836. There is a handsome memorial monument in the Medfield town cemetery, honoring the memory of Phineas and Ruth on one side, and noting that all their eight children with the exception of the first, Abigail, survived them. On the opposite face of the



Revolutionary War powder horn of Phineas Allen (1764–1836)
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

monument is sketched the descent of Phineas, back to the immigrant James Allen. This monument memorializes the family tradition that James Allen came from Scotland, which is almost certainly false.

Rev. Joseph Allen, son of Phineas and Ruth, had this to say of his parents,

We take a melancholy pleasure in recalling and recounting the pains taken by our honoured parents to instill into our youthful minds good principles—the love of truth, reverence for things sacred; to bring us up in habits of industry and sobriety; to encourage us in our desire to gain knowledge.

Ruth Smith was born on 17 February 1769 in Walpole, the second of eight children of Asa Smith and Miriam Kingsbury. On 27 September 1787, at age eighteen, Ruth married Phineas Allen and moved to Medfield, where her ancestors had lived for several generations.

Her son Joseph observed,

We must not forget the sacrifices they [the parents] made, the hardships they underwent, to gain the means for supporting three sons through a college course; the mother, especially, laboring beyond her strength, at unseasonable hours, and without much help except from the older children—filling the place of mother and nurse, of seamstress and cook, and maid-of-all-work; often weary, but never disheartened; never thinking she had done enough, while any duty remained unfulfilled.

Her grandson, Joseph Henry, reinforced this as follows,

Their mother, Ruth Smith, —quiet, frugal, industrious and benevolent less from warm impulse, like her husband, than from high principle—was a true helpmeet, never questioning the duty that lay before her. The children were brought up in habits of self-respect, helpfulness and religious reverence. The boys were taught to shield their mother and sister from hard or exposing work, such as often falls to the lot of women in a new country. This habit went far to develop the affection which bound them together through their long lives.

Ruth died of dropsy on 25 July 1832 in Medfield. She is memorialized on the monument in the Medfield town cemetery.

Rev. Henry Ware Sr. was born on 1 April 1764 at Sherborn, Massachusetts, the ninth of ten children of John Ware and Martha Prentice. He was a feeble child, and had limited opportunities for early formal education, but was determined to attend college. With the help of his older brothers, he was enabled to prepare for Harvard, under the instruction of Rev. Elijah Brown.

He entered Harvard in 1781, and graduated with honors in 1785, chosen to deliver the Latin Valedictory oration. (It is interesting to see that Harvard was able to operate normally during the later years of the Revolution, in the town that was headquarters for General Washington only a half dozen years earlier.)

Upon graduation, Henry was employed to take charge of the town school at Cambridge, and prepared for the ministry. He began to preach in 1787 and was ordained as pastor of the First Church at Hingham on 24 October 1787.

On 31 March 1789, he married Mary Clark, daughter of Rev. Jonas Clarke and Lucy Bowes. Whatever the problem that made him a feeble child, it was evidently not a lack of testosterone, for he and Mary had ten children during the next fifteen years! After Mary's death, Henry married twice again. His second wife, Mary (Otis) Lincoln, died after only eight days of marriage. With his third wife, Elizabeth Bowes, he had nine more children in seventeen years.

The death of his first wife occurred only months after Reverend Henry had accepted, in 1805, the Hollis Professorship of Divinity at Harvard, and had moved to Cambridge hoping that she would enjoy being closer to her family and childhood friends in Lexington.

His appointment caused much controversy, for Reverend Henry was a Unitarian, and Harvard had ever before been aligned with Trinitarian Calvinism in the form of the "orthodox" Congregational church. However, by his actions and his personality, Henry won over his initial opponents. So trusted was his integrity and judgment, that on two occasions, he was selected acting president of Harvard, and served in a very satisfactory manner. Nevertheless, when he led the formation of the Harvard Divinity School in 1816, and it became clear that the new school would have a Unitarian flavor, the orthodox Congregationalists were moved to found the Andover Newton Seminary.

In 1840, Reverend Henry underwent an unsuccessful operation for cataracts in his eyes. The subsequent impairment of his vision forced his retirement from the Hollis Professorship, but he improved this unfortunate opportunity by drawing together a four-year series of his weekly sermons, and publishing, in 1842, a two volume *Inquiry into the Foundation, Evidences, and Truths of Religion*.

He died in Cambridge on 12 July 1845 and is buried under an almost invisibly modest marker in Mt. Auburn Cemetery there. Fortunately for us, his descendants have included several skilled and dedicated genealogists, and one of my prized possessions is a series of large printed charts, three giving the ancestry of Rev. Henry Ware Sr. and the wives who bore his children, and one giving his descendants. The latter, published circa 1895, catches our maternal aunt and uncles, but just misses our mother.

So great was Reverend Henry's influence in Harvard and in the New England ministry, that learned articles still refer to him today. There is an excellent entry for him in the *Dictionary of American Biography*. Two of his sons, Henry Jr. and William, became eminent Unitarian ministers, the former being a mainstay of the Harvard Divinity School during its formative years. The following quote, from the *Bulletin* of the Divinity School, Vol. 21, 1991–1992, under a portrait of Rev. Henry Ware Sr., seems to provide a fitting close to this section, "I have known few minds so sagacious," wrote Rev. John Gorman Palfrey, second dean of the Divinity School, "more firm, more calmly balanced, more candid, or more just. The purity and rectitude of his character seem to have impressed all who knew him."

Mary Clark was born on 4 May 1762 in Lexington, Massachusetts, the fourth child and first daughter of Rev. Jonas Clark and Lucy Bowes. We have no letters from her, but here are some observations from her daughter Lucy,

From all that has been told me of her, and from what I can recollect and infer from the way she was spoken of and regarded by those who knew her, I think she must have been more than common woman. The few letters of hers that are preserved show a fine mind and heart, and deep religious principles... We must have been wild and flighty, like other children; but instead of yielding to us, as so many mothers would have done, and so allowing us to form idle and irregular habits, she would give us a "stent" of knitting or sewing, and if we were uneasy or running away from our work, she would sometimes pin our gown to hers, or tell us to look at the clock and see how many stitches we could take in a given time ... She was always very unwilling to have us associate with other children, and we attended school very little. We were instructed at home, and were very well drilled in French by our father ... My mother never would have been able to accomplish the sewing of her family, had she not been surrounded by the best of friends, who, being many of them ladies of leisure, were able to assist her much ...

Mary married Rev. Henry Ware on 31 March 1789, but her mother was taken with a fatal illness the night of the wedding, so Mary did not join Henry in Hingham until two weeks later, when her mother died.

She died in Cambridge on 5 July 1805, just three months after the death of her youngest, one-year-old child, and only three weeks after moving into her new home. I suppose she may be buried in Cambridge, but have not found her grave.

Eleazar Weld was born on 19 February 1737 in Roxbury, Massachusetts, the fourth of five children of Capt. Joseph Weld and Martha Child. Eleazar also had six half siblings from his father's first marriage.

He received his A.B. from Harvard in 1756. Sibley's *Harvard Graduates* has this to say, "After a notably undistinguished undergraduate career, he turned to keeping school, and presided in the Clapboard Trees Parish of Dedham during the winter of 1756–57."

There is some question as to what he did for the next few years. In 1780, his friend Rev. William Gordon, wrote a letter of introduction to General Washington, saying that Eleazar "was out on the Lakes the last war, and has done more military duty than many of the militia." This presumably referred to the French and Indian War activities on Lake Champlain. On the other hand, a history of Plymouth, New Hampshire, where many of Eleazar's children moved after the war, says that he was doing business in Albany, New York, during the late 1750s. In any event, he was back at Harvard to receive his A.M. there in 1761. Most students who took an A.M. in those days were preparing for the ministry, but there is no indication that Eleazar ever tried that profession. His father died just before he got his degree, leaving him a comfortable estate, and he married in the spring of 1761. These events may have decided him to become a country squire and community leader in civil and military affairs.

He was one of those colonists who tried his best through petitions to the colonial governor to get the Parliament to repeal the Stamp Act, and, later on, to withdraw British troops from Boston. He also served to organize his neighbors "to encourage the produce and manufactures of this Province, and to lessen the use of superfluities imported from abroad" (everything from loaf sugar to fire engines). This all occurred between 1765 and 1775.

On 14 February 1776 Eleazar was commissioned lieutenant colonel of the 1st Suffolk Regiment of Massachusetts militia, and took his soldiers into a backup role at the crucial arming of Dorchester Heights on 4 March 1776, which forced the British to abandon Boston. In 1780, he was detailed to reinforce the Continental Army, occasioning the letter from Reverend Gordon.

On 23 April, 1761, he married Mary Hatch, daughter of Jabez Hatch and Mary Fisher. They proceeded to have fourteen children over the next twenty-four years. After the Revolution, many of his children moved to Plymouth, New Hampshire.

Eleazer, like some others of our colonial New England ancestors, owned at least one negro servant, Prince, who ran off at age nineteen. Thanks to an advertisement in the *Boston Post Boy* of 1 February 1769, we have a detailed description of Prince and all the clothing he carried off. Eleazer offered a reward of four dollars and all necessary charges for his return.

Colonel Eleazer stayed in Roxbury until the end of his life. He became justice of the peace in the 1780s. While still a relatively young man, he was trustee of the Jamaica Plain school and selectman of Roxbury. He took the title of "Judge" during his later years.

He died, of asthma, on 19 May 1800, in Jamaica Plain. His real estate was considerable, consisting of ninety-one acres of land in Roxbury. Shortly after he died, in 1805, this was sold to Benjamin Bussey, who gave it to Harvard, where it is now part of the Harvard Arboretum.

Mary Hatch was born in Boston, on 15 October 1742, the fifth of fifteen children of Jabez Hatch and Mary Fisher. You may see in many publications that her mother was Mary Crocker of Barnstable, but I have convinced myself, after intensive research, that this assertion is *not* true. (My article providing evidence and arguments appeared in *New England Historic & Genealogical Register*, Vol. 155, published Jan. 2001.)

Mary must have grown up near the Windmill Point in Boston. Her father was a prosperous wharfinger. When she married Eleazer Weld, she would have moved out to Roxbury, and during the times when the British seemed likely to break out of Boston, she and her children moved for a short time out to Dedham.

During the Revolution, her family was of divided mind. Some Hatches and Fishers were Loyalists who left Boston in 1776, and wound up in New Brunswick, and it is interesting to see that the Hatches got together again after the war, at least briefly, to settle the final division of Mary's father's estate.

Mary had fourteen children in twenty-three years. We don't know with whom she lived after the death of Eleazer and the sale of the estate in Roxbury. She died, in Roxbury or Boston, on 21 December 1810.

Jonas Clarke Minot was born in Boston on 20 August 1738, the first of nine children of Steven Minot and Sarah Clarke. He was named for his maternal grandfather, who was a brazier of Boston, not the minister of Lexington.

He had a most interesting career during the British blockade of Boston. On 10 January 1774, he was in Montreal, being one of about 160 signers of a petition to King George III, asking that he instruct his Governor or Commander-in-Chief (of Canada) to call a general assembly to make laws, etc. In September, 1774, he was in Quebec, whether just on a business trip or as a long-term resident, I do not know. He organized a small shipment of Canadian wheat to Boston, writing a brief letter to



Bas-relief of Jonas Clarke Minot (1738–1808)
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives



Bas-relief of Hannah (Speakman) Minot (1749–1825)
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Arnold Welles Esq. of that place. A Boston committee, unnamed, wrote a gracious letter of thanks, quite frankly expressing the hope that Canada might stand with the American colonies against the policies of England.

Minot wrote again, on 11 February 1775, from La Chiniey, to the committee, acknowledging receipt of their letter, and expressing his whole-hearted support of the cause of his fellow Bostonians. Thus we may assume that J. C. Minot, although a member of the Episcopal Church and closely associated with the wealthy merchant class in Boston, was not a declared Loyalist during the Revolution.

It is not clear how long J. C. Minot stayed in Canada, but he was back in Massachusetts by 23 June 1777, for his marriage to Hannah Speakman, at her mother's home in Marlborough.

By 1786, Jonas Clarke was a member of the Honorable and Ancient Artillery Company of Massachusetts and was appointed as inspector of customs at Boston. On 8 February 1788, he purchased from his mother-in-law, Mary Speakman, all her right in four tenements with land on Spring Lane, a store and warehouse on Long Wharf and State Street in Boston. On 16 January 1792, he and Hannah deeded two-sevenths of the Spring Lane property and the store on Long Wharf, plus some other property, to his brother George Richards Minot.

It seems likely that he suffered a considerable loss of business assets to the English in Canada, because in 1802 he was granted 750 acres in the "Refugee Tract" in Ohio, as compensation for his loss. You can find records of these grants on the General Land Office website, and see the original documents signed by Thomas Jefferson and Albert Gallatin. In granting power of attorney to Jonathan Mason of Boston, to select his lands for him, J. C. wrote, "I Jonas Clarke Minot of Boston in the County of Suffolk and State of Massachusetts, formerly of Quebec in the British Province of Canada."

Being more or less a proper Bostonian, Jonas Clarke Minot was not interested in settling out in the wilds of Ohio, and could not have known that his parcel of land would one day support the campus of Ohio State University! By the time of the land grant, he was comfortably established. None of his children seem to have cared for Ohio.

A very important deed disposing of part of these Ohio lands comes from Fairfield County, Ohio. In it, William G. Weld of Roxbury, mariner, Hannah, wife of the said William in her right, Sarah Minot (?), Margaret M. Minot, Mary Minot, spinsters all of Boston, sold two of the three granted lots, first for 320 acres and 54 perches, and another for 319 acres and 85 perches, to Jabez Delano of Windsor, Vermont. This was dated 7 January 1815.

Jonas Clarke Minot died in Boston on 22 June 1808.

Hannah Speakman was born on 1 November 1749 in Boston, fourth of the six children of Capt. Thomas Speakman and Mary Warner. Her parents and grandparents were members of Trinity Church (Episcopal.) Both her grandfathers were fairly wealthy, and very generous to Hannah's parents. However, her father was a poor businessman, often in debt, and spent several years away from home in the army.

Hannah was only about eight years old when her father was killed in the French and Indian War. By that time, the family was living in Marlborough, and her father's estate was insolvent. Indeed, in about March 1756, when her father was serving with Rogers Rangers, Hannah was, with her mother and siblings "warned out" of Marlborough, the selectmen of which must have suspected that the family might become a charge on the town.

Nevertheless, in 1774, Hannah was engaged to marry Francis Minot, a well-to-do Boston merchant. Francis died, however, before the wedding, and when his older brother, Jonas Clark Minot, returned from Quebec after the British evacuation of Boston, he and Hannah were married.

Hannah died in Boston on 26 November 1825 and is buried in tomb twenty-two, Granary Burying Ground.

Nathaniel Copeland was born in Liverpool, Nova Scotia, on 28 December 1765, the second of five children of Capt. Abraham Copeland and Elizabeth Tupper. Several authors, evidently unaware of the Copelands' residence in Liverpool, have incorrectly said that he was born in Boston.

His family left Liverpool when Nathaniel was about nine, and resided for a while in Sandwich, Massachusetts, from whence his mother had come. They were there for the birth of Nathaniel's youngest sister, Sarah, in June 1775. For the next fifteen years, we have no record of Nathaniel's whereabouts. There is no indication that he was with his father when the rest of the family settled in Waterville, Maine, in 1788.

Nathaniel apparently did not follow his father at sea, but became a cordwainer (shoemaker) in Boston. The first reference to him in Boston records is of his marriage to Polly (Mary) Page, by Rev. Dr. John Lathrop, on 16 November 1790. We really have no idea of how he met Polly Page.

There are nice newspaper advertisements for his business, at 68 Ann Street, Boston, in 1793 and 1795, and records that show that he lived with his brother-in-law, Benjamin Page Jr. on Fish Street. There he had a squabble with Benjamin Page Jr. and his father-in-law, Benjamin Page Sr. over repairs to the Fish Street building. He was mentioned several times in the Boston selectmen's minutes for 1797 and was chosen a sealer of leather in that year.

Nathaniel Copeland died in Boston at a relatively early age, on 28 November 1803. We do not know where he was buried.

Mary Page was born in Boston on 5 November 1771, the first of five children of Benjamin Page and Abigail Warner. Thus, she was an infant during the perilous days of the British blockade of Boston and the American siege of that city. Her father's family had been in Boston since the 1640s, and in the 1730s belonged to the Second Church there.

It is perhaps interesting to note that Nathaniel and Mary named a son Thomas Jefferson Copeland at a time, 1801, when Jefferson was not popular in Boston. This suggests that the Copelands were not part of the political mainstream of Boston, which was strongly Federalist at this time.

Mary outlived her husband by forty-four years, but did not remarry, in spite of the fact that her children were very young (the youngest only two months old) when Nathaniel died. Nathaniel left only a small estate. Her parents lived until 1812 and 1821, and may have been able to help. She was still in Boston with her children for the 1810 census, but was up in Hallowell, Maine, in 1820 and 1830. By the latter date, she was alone. I find no record for the 1840 census.

Mary died on 25 March 1847, in Hallowell. We learned this when we accidentally came across her rather handsome gravestone in the Hallowell Town Cemetery. There were many Pages living in Hallowell at the time, but I have not discovered their connection to the Page family of Boston.

Hon. Nathaniel Ruggles was born in Roxbury, Massachusetts, on 11 November 1761, the fifth of six children of Capt. Joseph Ruggles and Rebeckah Curtis. He came from a prosperous and long established Roxbury family, pursued preparatory studies; was graduated from Harvard in 1781; studied law under Judge Increase Sumner, who was subsequently governor of Massachusetts; was admitted to the bar and practiced law in Roxbury Massachusetts.

In 1804, he was appointed a notary public in Roxbury, and I possess an original copy of one of his notarial documents, written in his beautiful hand. In 1807 he was appointed Associate Justice of the Court of Sessions, resigning that post in February of 1813, after being elected to the U.S. House of Representatives.

The History of the First Church in Roxbury asserts that Nathaniel gave up the practice of law and became a merchant.

The *Biographical Directory* of the U.S. Congress says that he was elected as a Federalist to the thirteenth, fourteenth and fifteenth congresses (4 March 1813–3 March 1819). Massachusetts newspapers of 1812 make it clear that he was nominated as a Republican, actually as a “Friend of Peace and Commerce.” At this time, Massachusetts merchants were prospering from trade with Britain, and were unenthusiastic about the impending War of 1812.

On 26 October 1786 he was married to Sarah Fellows in the First Church of Boston by the Rev. Mr. Clark. In the published vital records of Roxbury, the date is given as 10 September 1786—the date given here comes from the history of the First Church, Boston, and from the *Columbian Centinel* of that date.

Nathaniel Ruggles died in Roxbury, Massachusetts, at about eight o'clock in the evening on 19 December 1819, aged fifty-eight. Newspapers all over the East carried a notice of his death. The *New Hampshire Sentinel* called him “a worthy and upright man, for the last six years a representative in Congress.”

Sarah Fellows was born in Gloucester, Massachusetts, on 22 June 1766, the second of thirteen children of Capt. Cornelius Fellows and Sarah Williams. Her family stayed in Gloucester at least through 1773, and had moved to Boston by 1778, where they became active in the First Church. Her father was a mariner who, at least before his wedding, had made trans-Atlantic trips. He must have made shorter trips after that, judging from the great number of Sarah's siblings.

We know very little about Sarah's life before her marriage, and not much after that. She had eleven children in twenty-two years, all born while her husband was a respected lawyer and judge in Roxbury, and before his entry into politics. Their Roxbury home was described as a mansion in one of Nathaniel's death notices, so we can probably assume that her life was comfortable, in between pregnancies.

Sarah outlived Nathaniel by at least thirty-one years. We find her living with her son-in-law David A. Simmons in Roxbury for the 1850 census. An Internet site asserts that she died in 1853 in Roxbury, but I have been unable, as yet, to verify that. I inquired whether she and/or Nathaniel were buried at Forest Hills Cemetery in Roxbury, and learned that they were not.

Samuel Kent was born in Charlestown, Massachusetts, on 21 November 1760, the last of seven children of Lt. Samuel Kent and Rebecca Adams. He was the second child named Samuel, the first having died as an infant in 1741.

His father was keeping the school in Charlestown in 1768, so it seems safe to assume that Samuel got his elementary education there. He was certainly literate, as shown by book plates for him and Rhoda, surviving in the American Antiquarian Society collection.

When their father died in 1771, Samuel Kent and his sister Sarah were assigned a guardian, Peter Tufts Jr. On behalf of Samuel and Sarah, Peter joined with Jonas Prentice and his wife Rachel (Kent), and with the spinstress Rebecca Kent (Rachel and Rebecca being sisters of Samuel and Sarah) to rent their share of their deceased father's estate to Joseph Adams of Cambridge. Excepted from this rental was the Kents' share of the family pew in the Cambridge meeting house.

A Samuel Kent of Cambridge was a private in Capt. Stephen Dana's company, Colonel McIntosh's regiment, between March and April 1776, serving in the lines around Boston. Our Samuel would then have been sixteen, so this might well have been him. He served only eighteen days.

Samuel and Rhoda lived in Arlington and Somerville, and maintained an active presence in Charlestown, where he was constable in 1789. He was admitted to West Cambridge (Arlington) Church 9 March 1783 (shortly after his marriage).

From about 1808 to 1813, Samuel served as guardian to his brother-in-law, Thomas Hill, who was *non compos mentis*. The Benjamin Kent papers at the American Antiquarian Society (AAS) contain many documents from his career. One of these reports payments he made to his young sons for work, of an unspecified nature circa 1807. Samuel, Jr. got one dollar per day, Reverend Benjamin, then only thirteen, got fifty cents a day.

He seems to have been a responsible, but not socially prominent, citizen. He was a trustee of Public School, Ward Three, in 1811, presumably in Charlestown. He was sufficiently well off to employ a lawyer to help with the guardianship of Thomas Hill, and to send his son, Reverend Benjamin, to Harvard. In 1808, he paid for the building of a house, and in 1817, he paid for a bellows-top chaise. The only surviving record of his occupation calls him "yeoman."

Samuel died in Cambridge on 4 April 1835. I have not discovered where he was buried.

Rhoda Hill was born in Arlington, Massachusetts, on 5 January 1764 (*Arlington Vital Records*) or on 2 January 1763 (Benjamin Kent papers, American Antiquarian Society). She was the third of six children of Abraham Hill and Susannah Wellington.

Her father's family were longtime residents of Arlington, Cambridge, Charlestown and vicinity, who lived until 1812 (Abraham) and 1817 (Susannah), so that they had ample opportunity to know the grandchildren she gave them. Her eight children were spaced out over twenty-four years.

She and Samuel transferred their church membership from Menotomy (Arlington) to First Church Cambridge on 11 December 1803.

Rhoda died in Cambridge circa 15 January 1841 and was buried there on 17 January 1841.

Joseph Nash Bradford was born in Boston on 29 September 1770, the last of nine children of Capt. Job Bradford and Elizabeth Parkman. He was baptized the next day at the New North Church. He was named for his father's brother-in-law, Joseph Nash of Providence, Rhode Island, who married Hopestill Bradford. Many published sources erroneously attribute the place of birth of Joseph and his siblings to Duxbury, because their father's family Bible was found in Duxbury circa 1911. My guess is that the Bible went to Duxbury with Joseph's sister Abigail, who married Rev. John Allyn, pastor of the First Church there.

We know little of Joseph Nash's youth, except that it was presumably spent in Boston as the son of a sea captain. He was old enough to have accompanied his father on one of his last voyages, but we have no evidence that he did so. Throughout his life, he was close to his brother, William Bowes Bradford. William married Mary Tufts in 1785, and on 20 April 1800 Joseph Nash married Mary's widowed sister, Ann (Tufts) Merchant.

In Boston city directories, from 1805 thru 1816, Joseph Nash was called a merchant or a grocer, and had a house on Nassau Street (or, in 1807, on Hancock Street). Having married rather late in life (Joseph Nash was thirty, Ann was thirty-five), they hurried to have a family, and by 5 March 1806, with the birth of twins, they had six children.

Joseph Nash Bradford had an episode of mental illness, sufficiently severe so that, on 26 May 1808, his brother William B. Bradford petitioned the Probate Court of Suffolk County (Case No. 23276) to hold an "inquisition" into the facts and to appoint a guardian. He represented that Joseph Nash Bradford was, *non compos mentis* and unable to manage his own affairs. A report of the court's confirmation of this was published in the Boston Selectmens' Minutes, for the meeting of 28 December 1808.

On 9 January 1809, William Bowes Bradford was appointed his brother's guardian, and on 13 March 1809, Samuel Parkman petitioned that Joseph Nash Bradford be removed from his position as co-executor of the will of John Cushing; he was told by the Probate Court to proceed with the business (he was the other co-executor) "as though Joseph Nash were actually dead."

This sounds pretty desperate, but on 11 December 1809 Joseph Nash petitioned, with his guardian's concurrence, that there was no further need for a guardianship, and that he was "perfectly able to transact his own business and his friends are of the opinion that he is." This petition was immediately granted.

There lingers in family tradition some suspicion that Joseph Nash was not permanently cured, as he died by drowning in Boston Harbor on 19 September 1818, when he was only forty-eight. No detailed account of the event has survived. He is buried in tomb 118 of the Central Burial Ground in Boston, that tomb being co-owned by his brother William Bowes Bradford and D. Sanger.



Silhouette of Ann (Tufts) Bradford (1765–1826)
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

Ann Tufts is the “mystery woman” of our ancestry. For well over a century, family genealogists have been trying, without success, to learn the identity of her parents and the place and date of her birth. On the record of her death, it is said that she was sixty in 1825 and born in Boston.

I believe that I have gathered more contemporary data for Ann, than has ever been assembled and analyzed before, and I shall present it here in the hope that some day, someone will make sense of it all, and discover the elusive ancestors. What I have tried to do is to collect every record that names Ann or any of four other Tufts women who seem very likely to have been her sisters, or perhaps even her mother. Then I have spread the net to include records of every person who participated in some joint recorded action. For example, when Ann’s first husband, John Merchant, died, leaving Ann with a small daughter, the daughter was assigned a guardian, Daniel Bates. It turns out that Daniel Bates married a Mildred Tufts, about seven years before John Merchant married Ann Tufts. When Ann was appointed administratrix of John’s estate, William Foster and Simeon Mayo went bond with her, and Betsey Tufts and John DuBallet witnessed their bond. Doing this for all vital records, probate records, land and property records, court records and newspaper accounts that I could find, I have identified a network of closely connected people who seem to constitute a group of four sisters with their husbands, a spinster sister and a few friends or associates who were closely interested in the affairs of the family. Surrounding this core are a few more loosely connected persons who might have been siblings.

The core people are:

- Mildred Tufts, who married Daniel Bates in Boston on 18 December 1777;
- Abigail Tufts, who married Ebed Sprague in Boston on 22 November 1781;
- Ann Tufts, who married John Merchant in Boston on 11 February 1784, and then, as Ann Merchant, widow, married Joseph Nash Bradford in Boston on 11 May 1800 and
- Mary Tufts, who married William Bowes Bradford (brother of Joseph Nash Bradford) in Boston on 7 June 1785.

Very frequently appearing in connection with these is a Betsey or Eliza Tufts, who seems likely to have been an elder spinster sister. More tenuously connected are a John Tufts Jr., a Hannah Tufts and a Lydia Tufts. Although we have no contemporary birth data for any of these Tufts people, estimates can be made from published age at death, or assumed age when married. When this is done, they almost all seem to have been born between circa 1752 and circa 1767, so that they could easily have been children of a single mother. The exceptions are Betsey and Hannah, for whom we have no defining dates. For Betsey, I guess the earliest date of birth, because she seemed most frequently and responsibly involved in legal transactions of the rest of the group. We know that Hannah died, unmarried, in 1804, her funeral proceeding from the home of William Bowes Bradford. Herb Adams, the Tufts family genealogist, thinks that Hannah was then seventeen, but on what evidence he doesn't say.

It is easily proven that William Bowes Bradford and Joseph Nash Bradford were brothers, and it has always been believed in the family that they married Tufts sisters. That belief is reinforced by the fact that Mary and Ann were buried together. There is a marriage record in Boston, where Tufts marriages were relatively rare, that may point to the parents of these Tufts siblings. John Tufts married Abigail Peck on 31 January 1750. The suspicion that these may be the correct parents is reinforced by the facts that one of our sisters was named Abigail, and the marriage date for John Tufts and Abigail Peck seems just right for the estimated birthdates of the younger generation.

The paucity of surviving Boston birth records for the last decades of the colonial period may be somewhat explained by the partial collapse of respect for civil authority during that period, and the substantial loss of that part of the population that was most attuned to the keeping of public records during the blockade (by the English) and siege (by the Americans), and eventual evacuation of Boston (by English and Loyalists), all in about 1774–1776. Some Boston churches, such as the West Church of Rev. Simeon Howard, where Ann Tufts and John Merchant were married soon after the Revolution, were used as barracks for English troops during the siege, and the congregation dispersed, many to Nova Scotia, until it was deemed safe to return. I don't think any history of the loss of records during this period has ever been written, but it would probably reveal many reasons why there are no surviving birth records for the children of John Tufts and Abigail Peck, and, of course, for many other families.

It is doubly frustrating to discover that all the families that descend from this group of siblings (Bradfords, Bateses and Spragues) seem equally ignorant of the ancestry of the Tufts sisters. The one substantial clue, pointed out in 1897 by Harry Frederick Nichols, is that he, a great-great-grandson of Mary Tufts and William Bowes Bradford, possessed a funeral ring inscribed "Abigail Tufts died October 8th 1798, AE 72." Mr. Nichols asked whether this Abigail Tufts may not have been the mother of Mary and Ann, and what was her maiden name. As far as I know, no one has ever answered his question, but Abigail of the ring would have been of a very suitable age to have been the Abigail Peck who married John Tufts in 1750.

Let us return to Ann Tufts herself. The earliest record I have found is that of her marriage to John Merchant, on 11 February 1784. The ceremony was performed by the Rev. Simeon Howard, who had just reassembled a small congregation after the Revolution.

On 8 December 1784, Ann and John had a baby daughter, Nancy. Nancy was baptized at the West Church on 26 December 1784, and on that same day John, but not Ann, owned the covenant of that church. Tragically, John died shortly thereafter, on 11 July 1785, and Nancy died soon after that. On 19 July 1785, between these two deaths, Ann, together with William Foster and Simeon Mayo, put up five thousand pounds bond for her administration on John's estate. This bond was witnessed by Betsey Tufts and John DuBallet. I have a copy showing the autographs of all the participants.

Just a week later on 26 July 1785, Dea. Daniel Bates was appointed guardian for Nancy. We do not know how long Nancy lived, but know that she was dead by 28 January 1791, when Ann, after several unsuccessful attempts to collect monies owed to John Merchant, was finally forced to sell to William Foster virtually everything John had owned, in order to pay off debts that John had owed to Foster. At the end of this deed, after a description of John's principal properties, comes the statement—"Also all the Lands, tenements and hereditaments of every kind, wheresoever the same are or may be found, of which said John Merchant died seized, or whereof I [Ann] am seized or possessed, or to which I may be entitled as administratrix of said John Merchant, or as Heir to Nancy Merchant, the daughter of said John Merchant, deceased."

It appears from this that Ann was rather quickly plunged from the happy situation of a young mother, bride of a prosperous merchant, to that of a childless and nearly penniless widow. We don't know where or how she lived during the nine years before she remarried, although I suspect that she was taken into the family of her sister Mary and her husband William Bowes Bradford. At this point, it may be appropriate to refer to a piece of family memorabilia, which was inserted into the family Bible of Ann's granddaughter, Josephine (Kent) Copeland. It is a piece of satin, accompanied by a note in the hand of Josie's sister Isabella Kent. The note may have been addressed to Will Copeland, Josie's son. It says, "Piece of the wedding dress of Ann Tufts Bradford, who was a widow (Mrs. Merchant) when she married your great grandfather Joseph Nash Bradford supposedly in 1798 or 99, as Claudius their oldest child, was born in 1800 and mother [Eleanor Bradford] in 1802. Mr. Merchant lived only a year, and their child a boy [actually a girl] died young. A trusted friend then lost all or almost all of her large property. She lived on Pleasant St. & had her carriages and horses." This note nicely illustrates the mix of accuracy and error typical of lots of family tradition. Isabel did not know her grandmother Ann, who died before Isabel was born. However, she knew her mother well, and doubtless got the story from her.

It is interesting to speculate on the identity of the "trusted friend" of Isabel's note. William Foster helped post bond with Ann so she could become administratrix of John Merchant's estate. That might make him seem like a friend, but he may have done that as one of John's largest creditors, wanting to expedite the settlement of John's estate, so he could get paid. In the end, he did acquire most of John's estate, rather than losing it, as indicated in the note. Of course, the estate was lost to Ann. Foster belonged to the same church as did John, and may well have seemed a family friend during John's life. Simeon Mayo, the other bondsman, married John's sister, and so was a close family friend, but he does not seem to have been involved in the settlement of the estate.

There survives in the family a silhouette portrait of Ann, made, I would suppose, during her first marriage. Pat and I saw the original of this during a visit (in 1986?) to Elizabeth Bradford in Marshfield, Massachusetts. Elizabeth was a great-granddaughter of Ann and Joseph Nash, and sister of Robert Fiske Bradford, who was Governor of Massachusetts while I was at Harvard.

On 20 April 1800, Ann remarried. Her second husband, and our ancestor, was Joseph Nash Bradford, younger brother of William Bowes Bradford. Since Ann was already thirty-five by that time, she and Joseph Nash set about having a family without delay, having six children, including a set of twins, within the next six years. We know little about their married life, except that it must have been sufficiently comfortable for them to have attended to the education of their children, since two of their sons became well known scholars in adult life. Sadly for genealogically inclined descendants, they seem not to have named any of their children for any known relatives, although we can't be sure of this, because of Ann's unknown ancestry.

Ann outlived Joseph Nash by over seven years, dying in Boston on 24 February 1826, of typhus fever. She was said to have been sixty-one, and to have been born in Boston. Massachusetts death records can be found for four of her children. All of these records say that Ann was born in Boston. She was initially buried in a tomb purchased by William Bowes Bradford, at St. Paul's Episcopal Church, Boston. Evidently, it was permitted to buy a tomb under the church, even though you were not a member of the church. William Bowes Bradford and Mary (Tufts) Bradford, and several of their descendants were also buried in that tomb. In 1867, all the remains in that tomb were removed and transferred to Mt. Auburn Cemetery in Cambridge, where there is a memorial stone.

CHAPTER SIX

✂ Fourth Great-Grandparents

Josiah Sherman was born in Stratford, Connecticut, circa 1729, probably the second of four children of Enos Sherman and Abigail Walker.

Josiah grew up in Stratford, Connecticut, and moved to Weston by 28 May 1788, when his father sold him land in Weston, and called him “my True and Loving Son Josiah Sherman of said Weston.” In another deed, dated 2 July 1788, Josiah is called “of Stratford,” so his move from Stratford must have been gradual.

He married Miriam Gregory circa 1757, probably in Stratford, or in nearby Stratfield, Miriam’s hometown.

In November 1776 and again in 1784, Josiah was on the School Committee at Easton, and in 1784 he was on a committee to get subscriptions for the purpose of paying the salary of Rev. Mr. Johnson of the Easton church. This was an interesting church in which a Congregational congregation and an Episcopal congregation shared a church building, but were otherwise independent.

Josiah made his will on 1 February 1809 (LDS, Family History Library microfilm 1,018,779) naming his beloved wife Miriam, sons Walker, Enoch, Isaac, Abijah and Josiah Beach, and daughters Easter, Hulda and Miriam. I made a note that this was an interesting will, and need to look at it again. He was of Weston, Connecticut, when final distribution of his estate was made on 14 April 1817.

The distribution named the same nine people as the will, and provided the names of the husbands of the daughters: Samuel Thomas for Miriam; John Lusey for Esther and Ephraim Morehouse for Huldah.

Josiah was a farmer. We don’t have an exact date of death for him. He last appeared alive in Weston land records on 10 March 1814. On 10 June 1816, Miriam Sherman called herself “widow and relict of Josiah Sherman, late of said Weston, deceased.” Most authors seem to have settled on a compromise date of 1815 for his death.

Miriam Gregory was born in Stratfield, Connecticut, circa May 1734, the eighth of eleven children of Enoch Gregory and Esther Smith. She was baptized at Stratfield on 12 May 1734.

She was raised in a family with enslaved Negro servants, so we can assume she was accustomed to a relatively comfortable life. Her eight children were well spaced over twenty-two years.

She was mentioned in her father's 1764 will as Miriam Sherman. Aside from these few facts, all we know is that she died in Weston, circa 1825, after many of her sons had moved off to Vermont.

Lt. Samuel Seeley was born in Fairfield, Connecticut, in 1739, the fifth son and seventh of nine children of Capt. Nathaniel Seeley and Elizabeth Jackson.

By 1764, Samuel had moved with his parents to Easton, Connecticut, just north of Fairfield. This area was then known as the Parish of North Fairfield. There is a Seeley Road in Trumbull, Connecticut, running right into the line between Trumbull and Easton. (Actually, that line is now submerged beneath the Easton Reservoir.) In 1999, I saw a handsome old house on this road, which may have been Captain Nathaniel's home. Unfortunately, it was defended by a very impressive German Shepherd dog, so I did not go close to inquire.

On 7 November 1764, Samuel received a wedding present from his father, twenty acres in "ye township of Fairfield & lying in Seeley & Wheeler's long lott, bounded northerly by Silliman's long lott."

On 22 November 1764, Samuel married Sarah Silliman at the Easton church.

The Easton church records show that he was on the School Committee in 1771, and the Fairfield land records show that he frequently bought and sold land in the "Long Lotts" in North Fairfield between 1765 and 1774. (When land was sold or granted in a newly opened area, it was frequently distributed in long, narrow strips called "long lotts.")

The records of the Fairfield Probate District are full of references to Lieutenant Samuel and his family. The earliest such record shows that on 14 January 1774 he was appointed guardian to Ann Silliman, a younger sister of his wife, Sarah.

Records of Samuel's military service start in May 1774, when the Assembly of Connecticut Colony declared: "This Assembly do establish Samuel Seeley to be ensign of a company or trainband in the east parish of North Fairfield in the fourth regiment of this Colony." The same body declared in May 1775 that "Samuel Seeley to be Lieutenant of the 12th company or trainband in the 4th regiment in this colony."

On 15 January 1776, Samuel was listed as lieutenant of Capt. Samuel Wakeman's Company, and on March 1777, he was listed as a lieutenant in Col. Samuel Whiting's Regiment of Guards, "being the 4th Regiment of Militia in the State of Connecticut and Raised for the defense of Said State in March 1777 and Stationed at Fairfield & Stratford & By Order of Brigadier General Silliman."

Lieutenant Samuel was the only one of our ancestors to be killed in battle in the Revolutionary War. The most detailed and probably most reliable account of his death was given by his son Daniel Seeley in a deposition submitted in support of his sister Catharine's application for a Revolutionary War widow's pension. Daniel wrote,

My Father the said Samuel being a Lieutenant (as stated to me by my mother in part & part by other persons who said they was there & knowing too the facts) in a Company of Militia in said Parish of Northfairfield and being a staunch Whig and opposed to British tyranny was on the 27th day of April 1777 with General [Benedict] Arnold at the Town of Ridgefield with about 300 men in a Breastwork hastily made to obstruct the march of the British Troops under General Tryon &

Sir George Collier after they had destroyed the Continental stores at Danbury at which time an action commenced the said British troops coming up within about 40 Rods of said Breastwork the front ranks as they came up fired & from the Centre after firing (??) the right & left flanked the Breastwork before the Americans were aware of it and had to retreat under a galling fire of the British Troops in which engagement my Father being wounded in the hip and knee was not able to make good his retreat. Then the British & Tories came up and slew him piercing his body through with 14 Bayonet holes and blowing his brains out thus leaving my Mother a widow with 6 Children the oldest not 12 years old and the youngest not 11 weeks old.

Samuel's daughter Catharine, who was twelve at the time of these events, gave the following account when she was ninety-four. I quote from Great-grandfather Sherman's autobiography:

The messenger who brought him [Lt. Samuel] the news that the British had landed found him in the field plowing. She, herself, [Catharine] then some ten or twelve years old, and devotedly attached to her father, was with him, following in the furrow behind the plough. Without waiting to unloose the oxen, he ran to the house; she followed as fast as she could and met him at the door equipped with uniform and sword. He gave her a parting kiss and was gone. The next day he was brought home a corpse.

The probate of Lieutenant Samuel's estate was minutely recorded; his inventory goes on for pages. It shows that he, like many of our more prosperous New England ancestors, owned a Negro slave. This man, Titus, was assigned to the widow in the final distribution of Lieutenant Samuel's estate, and played an important role in the survival of the widow and orphans.

Sarah Silliman was born in Fairfield on 25 March 1748, the second of ten children of Dea. Daniel Silliman and Sarah Burr.

We know little of her before her marriage at age sixteen. She was certainly of a respectable family, her father being one of the first deacons of the Easton church.

Our account of her really comes to life after the death of her husband. Her son Daniel (who gave the gruesome account of his father's death) had this to say, in the same deposition:

My mother being a woman of great energy of character though bourne down with such heavy bereavement and the care of 6 Children mostly small did not despond but with extraordinary prudence directed the affairs out-doors as well as in the house and with the assistance of hired help and a Coloured man named Tite or Titus who as my Mother informed me my Father bought a few years before his death by which help my Mother farmed it considerable largely (??) and kept her children under her own care and roof till in the latter part of the fall or fore part of the winter of 1782 when my said sister Catharine was at the House of my Mother being the sd house my Father built as stated before was married to Enoch Sherman of said Northfairfield Parish by the Reverend James Johnson the settled Pastor of the Presbyterian or Congregation Church in said Northfairfield Parish.

As was mentioned above, Sarah was named, along with her father-in-law, co-administrator of Samuel's estate. When she made bond for this duty, she signed with her mark, indicating that she had had little or no schooling.

I am sure that she received help from her father-in-law during these troublesome times, and both he and her mother-in-law made bequests to her children in their wills. Her own parents had died in 1773, so they could not help.

It is noteworthy that she did not get any break from her church, for being a widow of a Revolutionary War soldier, as on 8 December 1785, the board of the Easton Church voted “that the rates of the widow Sarah Seeley shall not be abated,” and “that the collector proceed according to law to collect the rates of the widow Sarah Seeley.”

It was only on 16 January 1788, after she had shouldered the burdens of widowhood alone for nearly eleven years, that Sarah remarried. Her second husband, the widower Capt. Ephraim Sterling, made such a mark on our family that his surname has been carried down as a given name or a middle name in the Sherman family for seven generations. They were married in Stratford, which had been Captain Ephraim’s home, and had a son, David Sterling there. Soon thereafter they moved to Gaylordsville, on the Housatonic River near New Milford, accompanied by Sarah’s son, Samuel Seeley.

Capt. Ephraim died in Gaylordsville on 13 January 1811. Sarah outlived him by twenty-four years, dying there on 8 March 1835. They are both buried there, where Pat and I visited their graves in 1999.

Reuben Noble was born in Westfield, Massachusetts, on 9 June 1732, the first of ten children of Moses Noble and Mary Grant.

On 17 July 1755, he married Ann Ferguson of Blandford, Massachusetts. After Ann died in about 1809, Reuben married Mrs. ____ Scovett.

On 30 June 1761, Reuben bought twenty-nine acres from Samuel Fowler, in Westfield, on the west side of Simsbury Road.

According to Hampshire County land records at Springfield, Massachusetts, Reuben was still “of Westfield” on 5 May 1766, when he sold lands there to a Tahan Noble, who was probably his brother, Captain Tahan. He and Ann were still in Westfield with all their children when their youngest child, Reuben, was baptized in the Church of Christ there on 26 July 1772. He probably moved fairly shortly thereafter, to Rupert, Vermont.

He was in the Revolutionary War, in the Company of his brother, Capt. Tahan Noble, probably seeing action at Hubbardton and Bennington in 1777. There was much hard feeling between Whigs and Tories around Rupert and nearby Salem, New York. Reuben was actively involved in the sequestration of Tory property, and Tories, probably in retribution, burned his gristmill about 1778.

He was a farmer and miller, and was listed in the 1790 census of Rupert, Vermont, right next to his son Luke.

He died in Rupert, circa 1812. I have found no probate or burial records for him.

Ann Ferguson was born in Hopkinton, Massachusetts, on 20 July 1735, the second of three children of Samuel Ferguson and Eleanor. Both of her parents were in their second marriages, and her family was involved in the Scots-Irish search for a place to settle down, a search which led them (within two years of Ann’s birth) to Blandford, then called Glasgow.

Blandford today is a lovely rural town in the Berkshires, about eight miles northwest of Westfield, close to, but entirely out of sight of, the Massachusetts Turnpike. There Ann must have lived the rustic life of a pioneer, because her family was one of the first to settle the town. Her father died when she was only six.

On 17 July 1755, she married Reuben Noble of Westfield, and they started to raise their numerous offspring. Aside from the records of these births, and of the baptism of the children (at the church of Christ in Westfield usually about six months after their birth), we know little about Ann. She died in Rupert, Vermont, circa 1809.

Daniel McCleary was born circa 1707 in Londonderry, Ireland. We know nothing of his parents or siblings. He may have come to New England in the great Scots-Irish migration of 1718. An article in the genealogical column of the *Boston Transcript* of 3 July 1906 asserts, "The McClearys came to this country in 1718 with a colony of Scotch Irish Presbyterians, from the parish of Mahera, County Londonderry. They settled first in Londonderry, New Hampshire."

He was a linen wheelwright (maker of wheels for spinning flax) who lived most of his life in Methuen, Massachusetts. It was there on 10 February 1739 that he was married to Mary Mulliken by Rev. Mr. Christopher Sargent, the founding pastor of the First [Congregational] Church of Methuen.

Like many of his co-religionists, Daniel had to face this problem: how were Scots Presbyterians to fit into a Massachusetts society dominated by a state-supported Congregational Church? By 17 October 1754, the problem was so severe for him that he joined in signing a petition to Gov. William Shirley to get relief from taxation intended for the support of the Congregational church. On 18 March 1766, he joined many others from Methuen in petitioning to form a new parish. We don't know the cause of dissatisfaction shown by these petitions, but I recently read the following, excerpted from a short history of the early days of Methuen. The author has been writing of Sunday service at the meeting house, as follows: "It is said that there was a tavern in those days on the 'Frye place' to which the meeting goes usually resorted at noon, where they found a kettle of hot water ready, and plenty of spiritual comfort less ethereal than that which they received within the sacred edifice." I suppose this may have seemed a bit too frivolous to the Scots-Irish.

Daniel left a will in Methuen 1 December 1788, providing carefully for his wife Mary; naming sons Daniel and John; the children of deceased daughter Martha Long, who had already received part of her share, and stating, "5th, I give unto my beloved daughter Mary Noble, wife of Luke Noble, 7 pounds lawful money" to be paid three years after her mother's death, it being her full share with what she has already received. He went on to name sons William and Thomas, daughter Elizabeth Campbell, wife of Robert Campbell, and daughter Janne McCleary. Finally, all the residue of his estate went to son David McCleary "who is to be sole Executor." Daniel signed with his mark.

The will had a nearly conventional religious preamble, but included the following words, which I have not seen elsewhere: "... and my Body I recommend to the Earth to be buried in decent Christian Burial, at the discretion of my Executor hereafter named, **nothing doubting but at the general Resurrection I shall receive the same again by the mighty Power of God...**"

An interesting detail revealed by Daniel's will was that he owned a "fishing place" at Bodwell's Falls on the Merrimack River. The same little history that told us about the spiritual refreshment of the Methuen worshippers said that Bodwell's Falls had been a favorite fishing place for the Indians, and that salmon were so easily caught there that it had to be specified in local articles of indenture that the servant would not be fed salmon more than six days a week!

Daniel's sons Daniel, John and Thomas all were early settlers at Salem, Washington County, New York, being there by 1769. Son William had settled in nearby Rupert, Vermont, by 1780. His daughter Mary must have gone along to Salem with her brothers, and there met her husband-to-be, Luke Noble.

Daniel died in Methuen on 31 December 1788. He and Mary are buried side by side in the Old Burying Ground atop Meeting House Hill in Methuen. Their slate gravestones, which I have seen and photographed, are in excellent condition, close to the northeast corner of the burying ground.

Mary Mulliken was born circa 1714, probably in Ulster, Ireland, but possibly in New England. Her birth date is estimated from her gravestone record. There are birth records in Essex County for girls named Mary Mulliken, born a little before or after our Mary, but none seems to match our Mary perfectly. Thus, we do not know her parents.

To judge from the things mentioned in Daniel's will, Mary's life may have been relatively comfortable. All but two of her ten children outlived their parents, and one of those lived to be married and to give Mary grandchildren. Whereas some of her children moved away during her lifetime, others stayed home, so she would not have been unduly lonely.

Mary died in Methuen on 13 September 1800 and is buried next to Daniel in the Old Burying Ground atop Meeting House Hill.

Lt. Col. William Bond was born in Watertown, Massachusetts, on 7 February 1733/34, the seventh of ten children of Jonas Bond Esq. and Hannah Bright.

He married Lucy Brown of Watertown on 17 February 1756.

William was a lieutenant colonel under Col. Thomas Gardner, who was mortally wounded at the Battle of Bunker Hill. Gardner died on 1 July 1775, after which Colonel Bond assumed command of the regiment, which soon became the 25th Regt. of the Continental Army, part of Gen. Nathaniel Greene's brigade. In April 1776 the regiment was sent to Canada via Lake Champlain, in a disastrous campaign beset by a huge outbreak of smallpox and other diseases. Retreating along the lake in the late summer of 1776, the regiment got as far as Mt. Independence, overlooking Fort Ticonderoga, when Colonel Bond died of disease.

I have copies of several papers from Colonel Bond, the originals having been donated to the libraries of the University of California, San Diego, and NEHGS. In particular, I have a photocopy of the last letter Colonel Bond wrote to his wife, Lucy. Here is a transcription of that letter, showing the peculiarities of Colonel William's spelling, and the calmness of his mind, only twelve days before he died:

Mrs Bond,

Mount Independence

August 18, 1776

I hope These lines Will find you and the Children Well as They leave me, Henry has been porely about a fortnight, but has got better, the army are Very Sickly yet; they begin to have the fever and ague Which they are very subject to hear; by the return of the Regt yesterday I find that Near one half of the officers are unfit for Deauty Some of them are Very ill. Of 42 Rank & file 25 have died at fort George since the 10th of July ____ the New Troops are coming in every Day Colo Brown and Capt Harrington have not arived yet, We hear they are on their march from No 4 to Skeenesborough. __I have Recd but one letter from you Sience I Came to Ticonderoga, Which I think very Straing of, this is the Third I have rote to you Sience I Recd yours I shall Rite to you every Week if I can & Desire you to do the Same to me and Send my Newspaper Sealed up in it __ I Should be glad to hear how bisness goes on at home as I have not heard one Word Sience I left home

Remember me to all our friends ____

Henry Remembers his Deauty to you & love to his Brothers & Sisters _____

This from you affectinate and loveing Husband

William Bond ____

To Mrs Lucy Bond, at Watertown

Turn over

PS about one hour after I had finished the Within letter Capt Harrington and frank Brown arrived With about half his Company they are Well I have Recd a letter from you Dated august 14 Just this moment by Which I understand you and the Children are Well Which I am glad to hear

Monday morning 6 o'clock august 19-1776

William Bond

The letter of condolence to Lucy Bond seems also worth transcribing in part, as follows:

It is natural that you should want to know the Particulars. _ You have been informed that he had the Fever & Ague; While his disorder appeared thus simple, we were not apprehensive of Danger, & he had obtained a furlough for going home: But was detained several days by rain; In the mean time the Jaundice discovered themselves, & he shortly became very Billious & Putrid, but was not thought dangerous till yesterday Morning. _ A few Hours before Night, He sent for me to converse with Him about Spirituals. He was sensible of his approaching Dissolution, yet entirely calm _ Told me he was sensible of his being a sinner against GOD, That His Hope was fully in GOD's Mercy—that he had been much engaged in Prayer etc _ We joined in Prayer: After which when divers Scriptures were mentioned, He said he remembered them very well. _ In the Evening a little before his departure, he called Henry, & charged him to fear & serve GOD while young, blessed him & bid him farewell, saying that he was just about to Close his Eyes in Death _ He then took leave of Major Fuller, with whom he had conversed freely about his secular affairs in the afternoon. _ After which he ordered Leonard Bond to be called in, told him to take hold of his hand _ which done he said _ do you Remember that I appoint Capt. Jonathan Brown, & Major Nathan Fuller Joint Executors of my Estate, & order that my effects here in Camp be disposed of by Major Fuller in Camp, etc, after which he charged Leonard to walk in GOD's Commandments all the days of his Life, & to let his Works praise him; I give you his own Words.. _

When he had let go of Leonard's hand, he mentioned his Family & Children & said that Capt. Browne was their near Relation, & an honest man & would do right. _ In particular, he mentioned his aged Mother, who he said was turned of 80, & said he hoped that when gathered In she would be found like a Shock of Corn fully ripe,

Having expressed himself to this effect, lifting up his hands & leting them fall down again he said, "There now I have done all, & shall Die in a few minutes." _ This he spake with great composure, _ After this I conversed with him concerning the way of salvation, _

He was not only in his senses; But his Mental powers, if anything different appeared stronger than when well _ His speech remained good within half an hour of his Departure. _ Henry is well & bears up under the Affliction beyond all that could be expected from a Child of his years, I told him I was writing to you, & asked him what he would have me say as for him. _ He said he would be remembered, & desired I would write what else I thought proper. _

Maj. Fuller has had the Fever & Ague but has no dangerous symptoms, but every other day appears quite well. _ I have been as minute as my time would any wise admit, as the bearer was waiting with great anxiety. _

That the Widow's GOD, & Orphan's Father, may abundantly bless you & yours, is the ardent desire Of Him who ever desires to Sympathise with the Afflicted. _

*Ebenezer David, Chaplain of the 25th Regiment
lately Commanded by Col. William Bond*

[Note: Henry was Col. William Bond's son, aged fifteen years and eight months when his father died. He had accompanied his father, in what capacity I cannot imagine, on the abortive invasion of Canada. Leonard Bond was a nephew of Colonel William, son of William's elder brother, Jonas Bond.]

Lucy Brown was born in Watertown, Massachusetts, on 8 June 1734, the sixth of seven children of Jonathan Brown and Elizabeth Simonds.

Lucy had been married twenty years, and had had nine children by the time her husband died. Likely after the marriage of her youngest child, Lucy moved to Gilsum, New Hampshire, and lived out her last days in the family of her son William. She died in Gilsum in January 1815.

Capt. Phineas Stearns was born in Watertown, Massachusetts, on 5 February 1735/36, the fourth of five children of Josiah Stearns and Susannah Ball. His mother died when he was just an infant, and his father married twice again before Phineas was a teenager.

Phineas married Hannah Bemis in Watertown on 22 October 1767. Her death in 1775 (or 1776) left him with infant children, which provoked his attempt in 1777 to resign his commission in the Massachusetts militia. This attempt was unsuccessful and he continued to serve off and on until 7 April 1780 when his resignation was finally accepted.

With military service behind him, Phineas married again, on 23 November 1780, to Esther Sanderson. They had a son named George Washington Stearns. Phineas was a farmer and blacksmith. He was a soldier at Lake George in 1756. He commanded a company at the fortification of Dorchester Heights in 1776. He was supposedly of the "Boston Tea Party."

Phineas died in Watertown on 27 March 1798.

Hannah Bemis was born in Watertown, Massachusetts, on 22 June 1748, the first of eight children of Capt. Jonathan Bemis and Huldah Livermore.

She married Capt. Phineas Stearns on 22 October 1767, had a daughter six months later, followed that with a second daughter and two sons, one of whom died as an infant, and then died herself in either 1775 or 1776, during or just after the ultimately successful American siege of Boston.

Col. John Hardin was born in Prince William County, Virginia, on 1 October 1753, the fifth of seven children of Martin Hardin and Lydia Waters. He is perhaps the most legendary of our ancestors. A great deal has been written about him by authors who are taking their narratives from other authors, making it difficult to ascertain the original source of any particular story.

One source which is quoted by many others is an article published in the *Historical Magazine* in April 1869 by Mansfield Tracy Walworth, brother-in-law of our great-grandfather, Lemuel Smith Hardin. His primary source was Mark Hardin (1782–1875) of Shelbyville, Kentucky, a son of Colonel John who was ten years old when Colonel John died. Mark presumably heard some of these stories from his father's lips. Moreover, Mark was surrounded by relatives and neighbors who had been in action with Colonel John, and who outlived him by many years, so that he could have received plenty of firsthand information. Finally, Walworth reported that Mark had written down these stories when he was in the prime of life, so that we do not have to depend on the memories of a very old man.

Colonel John's father moved his family west to Georges Creek in what is now Fayette County, Pennsylvania in 1765. This was close to Redstone, on the Monongahela River, a place from which many parties embarked, a decade or so later, for the move down the Ohio River to Kentucky.

Let me now quote directly from Walworth's article.

John Hardin was born in Fauquier-county, Virginia, in October 1753. At twelve year of age, he had become skilled in the use of the rifle. He traversed the valleys, and climbed the wooded hills in pursuit of deer, elk and bears, until he became a thorough master of the back-woodsman's craft. He became famous for the rapidity and accuracy of his shots. He supplied three families with venison by means of his rifle. His hardy pioneer life qualified him for the positions of military trust which for so many years were confided to him. It would not be surprising if a lad in such circumstances should have remained illiterate, but John somehow learned to read and write. He also managed, probably in 1773, to marry Jane Davies. We have no record of this marriage, but authors who knew Jane well said that "she was a Presbyterian in Pennsylvania, of Welsh origins."

On 7 May 1774, John and Jane had their first daughter, Sarah, but then exploration for a new home, and military activities kept John frequently from home. In late 1779 he retired from the army and settled down to raise a family that he eventually transplanted to Kentucky. Let me continue with Walworth's account:

In 1774, Governor Dunmore led his famous expedition against the Indians. Young Hardin received the appointment of an Ensign in a Company, being at that time under twenty-one years of age. A few months later, under command of Captain Zack Morgan, he encountered the savages; and while on one knee, in the act of firing, received a ball which lodged near the groin, and was never extracted. That bullet clung to him through all his subsequent hazardous service—at Saratoga, Philadelphia, and, after the Revolution, in the Indian wars of the Wabash and the West. While still using his crutches from this wound he started with Governor Dunmore on the expedition against the Indians.

I have found no evidence that John was actually an ensign at this time. A payroll of Capt. Zacquil Morgan's company at Pittsburg (just before this expedition) lists him as a private, along with his brother Mark, his cousins Benjamin Hardin, Lewis Thomas and James Neal, and his future neighbor John Askins. This wounding of Colonel John occurred, as nearly as I can determine circa 1 August 1774 in Maj. Angus McDonald's expedition against the Indian towns on the Muskingum River, near modern Dresden, Ohio. Contrary to some published accounts, it seems that Colonel John did not take part in the Battle of Point Pleasant, which occurred on 11 October 1774.

In 1775 and 1776, Colonel John spent much time exploring and locating lands in Kentucky and Ohio, intending to settle there when it seemed safe to do so. Specifically, he was in Kentucky (still then part of Virginia) in 1775 to mark and improve the thousand-acre preemption on Pleasant Run, where he would take his family to live eleven years later. He also located a thousand acres for his brother Mark, and in 1776, he seems to have returned there with John Askin to mark out lands for his Wickliffe cousins. On 2 July 1776, he was in Ohio with Robert O'Bannion and Evan Shelby to select lands he had been granted for military service in Dunmore's War.

I return now to Walworth's narrative:

After this war was finished, and he was about to leave Virginia for a new home in the midst of the warlike savages who ranged the untamed wilderness of Kentucky, he ascertained that Congress were about to raise troops for a contest with the English Crown. He raised a Company of recruits, and received a Commission as Second Lieutenant. He afterwards joined General [Daniel] Morgan's famous Rifle-corps, which gave him ample opportunity for the display of his peculiar gifts as a scout and skirmisher; and he soon gained the confidence of that General, who lead him to the battle-fields of Saratoga, and entrusted him with many enterprises, where skill and intrepidity were demanded. He was ever spoken of as a man of gentle manners but of a wonderful firmness and tenacity of purpose; and when delivering the deadly fire of his rifle, as cool and calm as when on parade.

Colonel James Knox, who served a part of the time with Hardin, in Morgan's Rifle-corps, described the terrible execution the young Lieutenant's rifle inflicted upon the British officers. Often on their scouting parties, when retreating before a superior foe, Hardin would halt behind a stump or tree; await the approach of the enemy within striking distance: pick off an officer with his rifle; and retreat under the smoke of his own fire. These scenes, his sons never heard him (Col. John) relate; but his widow remarked to them, when speaking of Col. Knox's statements, that Hardin, when looking back on the scenes of this protracted and vindictive civil war, said to her that it looked to him so much like murder that he did not choose to detail these events and familiarize his children with them.

(Col. James Knox was well known to Mark Hardin, as they both lived in Shelbyville during the last seventeen years of Colonel Knox's life.)

Colonel John's greatest achievement during the Revolutionary War occurred just before and during the Battle of Saratoga, which resulted in the surrender of British general, John Burgoyne, and his large force of English and Hessians in October 1777. Daniel Morgan's riflemen were to play a key role in that battle. And before the battle, Colonel John, then a lieutenant under Morgan, was often used as a scout, to go behind the British lines to gather information and prisoners. One famous story from that activity was told both by Gen. James Wilkinson in his memoirs, and independently told to Mark Hardin by Col. John Walworth. I quote here only the one version received from Mark Hardin.

Lieutenant Hardin and his men reached the war-path, and took their position at a place just suited to such an enterprise—From their position they saw a Mohawk Indian and two British officers, in Indian file, the British a few paces to the rear. Hardin whispered his men to follow, and crept lightly to the war path, and when he chose to discover himself, presented his gun and demanded a surrender. They grounded arms, the breech of the Indian's gun on the ground, the barrel clinched in his hand. Hardin's men not having crept up as fast as he did, were not immediately with him. He turned his head, and at that instant he heard the Indian cock his gun; his own was held at arm's length, his arms hanging by his sides, but being cocked and his finger on the trigger. His head was no sooner turned and his eye on his adversary than he fired. The Indian fired almost at the same instant and burnt off one of Hardin's whiskers, but himself received a ball from Hardin's rifle through his body, and after having run about fifty yards, fell. This was the only Indian of the many he killed that he scalped.

During the Battle of Saratoga itself, Morgan's riflemen did terrible destruction on the British and Hessians. Mark Hardin told Walworth,

I recollect well my father's saying that at the taking of Burgoyne his gun became so hot he had to cool her in water three times; and that unless some of his balls dropped out of his shot pouch, he had fired about forty-nine times, as there were that many balls missing; that each time he took deliberate aim, and was so protected himself that he felt no fear of danger; and that his enemy, in each case, was in full view and wholly unprotected, and as near as he wished an object to be to be sure of hitting it.

A final story from Walworth's article gives an idea of what Colonel John did after the Battle of Saratoga. Although he does not date this story, the circumstances imply that it happened sometime in 1778, when the British occupied Philadelphia, and General Washington was trying to keep them closely confined to the city.

Lieutenant Hardin was on the lines with his command; and, on a particular occasion, he was officer of a guard to prevent supplies being sent in to the enemy. Three wagons, loaded with flour, forced the guard, and at a rapid rate, were pushing on. Hardin sprang on a horse, and alone

pursued, rifle in hand. He passed the first and second wagon, and on reaching the head horses of the third wagon, he drew his tomahawk, and struck it into the head of one of them. The horse fell, and, of course, halted the teams. At this moment the owner of the wagons presented his gun from the inside of the hindmost, or third, wagon; but, before he could fire, he received the contents of Hardin's rifle. This partisan officer was quick as the lightning. Thus, alone, and a mile away from his men, he captured three teams and their drivers, and forced them to drive back into the American Camp.

I confess that I find some of these tales of derring-do a bit hard to swallow. Admitting that he was a dead shot with his rifle, he would seem to have been terribly vulnerable while reloading. If the British officers in the warpath incident had not been so honorable as to stand passively by while he pursued the Mohawk (reputedly, they were) or had any of the wagon drivers been armed, even with a pistol, he would seem to have been done for. Maybe it's as good to be lucky as skillful!

In 1779, Colonel John was through with the army and resigned his commission. He had served under Col. Daniel Broadhead in the latter's campaign against the Indians in western Pennsylvania and southwest New York on his last tour of duty. From this time until 1786, he seems to have been busy raising and caring for his family, and making further trips to Kentucky to mark out lands for his relatives. In 1786 he took his family to Kentucky to make a home on the lands on Pleasant Run that he had marked and improved in 1775.

Although the war with England was over by that time, troubles with the Indians (who not unreasonably resented this intrusion into their ancestral hunting grounds) carried on, and required Colonel John to keep up his military activities from time to time. On 4 May 1788 he was recommended to become Colonel, 2nd Battalion, Nelson County militia; on 13 July 1790 he was commissioned Company Lieutenant of Nelson Company.

Realizing that his was a perilous existence, Colonel John made his will on 22 July 1788. By this time he had added an adjoining fifteen hundred acres to his thousand-acre preemption on Pleasant Run, and his will divided that land between his wife and six children (one of whom was still in the womb). It also named and devised slaves, whose names frequently recur in future correspondence of the family. He also gave 250 acres to John McMahan, in part as exchange for a slave. He didn't say what other reason he may have had for including John McMahan, but he had a brother-in-law by that name.

It was a time of raid and counter-raid, between Indian and settler. According to Lewis Collins' *History of Kentucky*: "After his settlement in Kentucky, there was not a single expedition into the Indian country in which he was not engaged, except that of General St. Clair, from which he was prevented by an accidental wound, received while using a carpenter's adze."

As befitted his role as colonel of militia, John Hardin was called on to command much larger groups of men, who were necessarily less select and experienced than those with whom he had fought during his days under Gen. Daniel Morgan and Col. Daniel Broadhead. This was most dramatically and tragically shown during the 1790 campaign of Gen. Josiah Harmar in which inexperienced militia, placed under Colonel John because their own elected leader could not control them, were easily decoyed away to enable the Indians to ambush and slaughter the unsupported regular troops that were a small part of Hardin's command. The expedition turned out so badly that both Harmar and Hardin faced a court martial, in which they were exonerated.

Colonel John's last, and fatal, trip into Indian country was intended as a peaceful one. In 1792, President Washington, finding that the people of the Eastern states were unwilling to pay for another military campaign against the Ohio Indians, decided to try arbitration once more. Accordingly, he directed Gen. Anthony Wayne, Commander of the Western Division, to select two envoys to deal

with the Shawnee. Wayne asked Gen. James Wilkinson to pick one, and Wilkinson picked Colonel John. In *Kentucky, 1750–1800* he tells it this way: "... the mission was a desperate and dangerous one, as the destination would be the Indian villages in Northern Ohio, on the Sandusky River. And the selection of Colonel Hardin was an improper choice, because, of all the families of Kentucky, the Shawnee probably hated that of Hardin more than any other." (This last needs a little explanation, for Colonel John was not the only formidable Indian fighter in the family. His cousin, "Indian Bill" Hardin, was perhaps even more notorious among the Shawnee.)

In the early days of his mission, Colonel John wrote three letters home to his wife from Fort Washington (now Cincinnati), the point from which he started into the Indian country on 21 May 1792. These letters have been printed and published in an article by Robert Stuart Sanders, in the *Filson Club History Quarterly*, Vol. 39, No. 1. I quote just a brief excerpt from the third letter: "But oh, my dear love, as I meditate on myself to think I have left a peaceable home and so dear a family, and throw my life into the hands of a cruel and savage enemy. I cannot prevent the tears flowing from my eyes at present; and I do my love, implore your prayers daily at the throne of Grace for my protection from both spiritual and temporal enemies. My soul, at present, is fixed in God and my earnest prayer is for you and my dear little ones."

There are several stories of how Colonel John was murdered. This one comes from the notes of Col. John Johnston, Indian agent, as told to him by Blackhoof, Chief of the Shawnee, and others, soon after the peace of 1795. "The Hardin party headed north and were within three quarters of a mile of the current village of Hardin, Shelby County, near Turtle Creek, when they were waylaid by a party of three or four Shawnee Indians. The Indian party, learning of Hardin's mission, professed friendship and camped the night with the white men. During the night Col. Hardin and some of his companions were murdered by the Indians." Colonel Johnston records that Hardin was probably murdered for his fine clothes and the equipment the party carried. According to other recorded comments of that day, Hardin and [Maj. Alexander] Truman were both scalped.

As you can judge from his letter to his wife, Colonel John was quite religious in his Kentucky years. Redford's *History of Methodism in Kentucky* says: "The loss of Col. Hardin to the state of Kentucky was deeply felt. No man had contributed more than he to the protection and safety of the settlers. The cause of Christianity, too, lost one of its brightest ornaments. As early as 1787, he embraced religion, and joined the Methodist church [at Sandusky Station], and by his zeal, his influence and his piety, had contributed much to its growth and prosperity..."

Reverend Sanders's article, with Colonel John's last letters, contains a small reproduction of a painting of Jane (Davies) Hardin. On a visit to Shelbyville in 1983, Pat and I were shown through the home of Mark Hardin (Jane's son) and saw the original. There is no corresponding painting of Colonel John, who refused to have his portrait made, believing that it would violate the Second Commandment.

Jane Davies was born to Nathaniel Davies and possibly a Sarah Davie or David circa 1755, probably in Pennsylvania. This birth date is just a guess, since we have no contemporary record to confirm or correct it. It would make her nineteen when her first child was born. One source, quoted below, says that she was born in 1750.

We have positive identification of her father, but only a guess as to her mother's name. What we do know was told to Lyman Draper by Mark Hardin, a son of Jane, who went to Washington County, Tennessee, in 1800 to visit his maternal grandparents; he broke his leg in a fall from his horse and wound up living for a year with Nathaniel and his wife.

Unfortunately, Mark did not tell Draper the name of his grandmother, but he said that the "ancestor" of his grandfather was Owen David, and that of his grandmother was Nathaniel Davie. It is too bad that he did not use a more precise term than "ancestor."

We do know that Jane had a sister Mary Davies, who wed Lewis Thomas, and lived in Washington County, Kentucky, close to the Hardins and McHenry. In letters to her brother (Martin D. Hardin), Sarah (Hardin) McHenry often spoke of “Aunt Thomas.” Lewis and Mary Thomas witnessed the will of Maj. John Hardin in Nelson County, Kentucky, in 1788. Lewis was a grandson of Major John. Lewis left both a will and an early Revolutionary War pension application. Unfortunately the latter gave no family information. Jane seems also to have had a brother Philip Davies. He seems to have come to Kentucky circa 1788. He lived on Hardin’s Creek close to Lewis Thomas.

Jane got an extensive mention in *Methodism in Kentucky*. I quote most of that:

Another name that bore a conspicuous part in planting Methodism in Kentucky, and in watching its growth in the years of its infancy, is that of Mrs. Jane Hardin, the wife of Col. John Hardin, to whom we have made previous reference. She was the daughter of Nathanael Davies, was born in 1750, and brought up in Western Pennsylvania, on the Monongahela. Her grandparents were from Wales.... In Pennsylvania, Mr. Hardin had been a member of the Presbyterian Church.... Very soon after their settlement in Kentucky, Col. Hardin and his wife both joined the Methodist Episcopal Church at Sandusky Station, on Pleasant Run.

When at home, from the time he connected himself with the Church, until the hour of his departure on the mission which made his wife a widow and his children orphans, at morning and at night, he regularly called his family around the altar of prayer, and commended them to the care of Jehovah. In his absence, while living, and after his death Mrs. Hardin knelt, with her children, as had her husband, around the same altar, for worship. On all the public means of grace she faithfully attended. In the places of public worship, the prayer meeting, and the class, she was always found, unless providentially hindered. In her private devotions, she was accompanied by her children, where she invoked the blessings of Heaven upon them, while they listened to her soft, sweet voice, lifted in supplication, and beheld the tears that trickled down her cheeks, as she pleaded before God for those deprived of a father’s care, but now doubly entrusted to her own. About the year 1799, she was married to Capt. Christopher Irvine, of Madison County, near Richmond; and after his death, she resided with her youngest daughter, Mrs. Rosannah Field, adjoining Richmond, where, in 1829, she died in great peace.

The precise dates of her remarriage and death are 21 May 1799 and 31 May 1829. As mentioned in our section on Col. John Hardin, Jane’s son Mark and his descendants had a painted portrait of Jane. She looks stern in that portrait, and we were told that the children in the family called her (from her portrait) “the lady with the wooden arms.”

Benjamin Logan was born in Orange County, Virginia, circa April 1743, the fifth of nine children of David Logan and Jane McKinley. By the time his father died in 1757, he was the eldest surviving son. He became one of the famous early pioneers of Kentucky, about whom a great deal has been written, including a fine and meticulously documented 1962 biography by Charles Gano Talbert.

In 1772, Ben married Ann Montgomery, perhaps in that part of Augusta County that later became Rockingham County. Ann was the daughter of William Montgomery and Jane McKinley, and had previously been wooed by James Knox, who eventually got to marry her in 1805, after Ben Logan had died. By this time, Ben and the Montgomery family lived in the Holston region near Abingdon, Virginia. At that time, he was in Fincastle County, and Ben was frequently mentioned in the records of the Fincastle County Court and in connection with the Sinking Springs Presbyterian Church in Abingdon.

Ben's military experience had begun in 1764, when he had been a sergeant under Henry Bouquet in what became southwest Pennsylvania. In summer of 1774 he served as lieutenant in Capt. William Cocke's company, in Col. William Preston's regiment of Fincastle militia. A group of men from this regiment were drafted to join Governor Dunmore's forces, and placed under the command of Lt. Col. William Christian. Because of the distance from their home, and the speed with which Cornstalk brought his Indians to attack the colonial militia at Point Pleasant, it was about midnight of the day of battle and most of the fighting was over before Christian's men arrived. Ben returned home soon after the battle.

Interest in the lands of Kentucky was rapidly increasing. Ambitious land speculators, led by Col. Richard Henderson of North Carolina had hired Daniel Boone to cut a road from the Holston, over Cumberland Gap, to the Kentucky River. Boone's party lost two men to Indian hostilities, but he held on, and on 20 April 1775 his party of eighteen was joined on the bank of the Kentucky River, at the mouth of Otter Creek, by Henderson's follow-up party of thirty. The site of their meeting became Boonesborough. Closely following Henderson's party, another group of about thirty surveyors and adventurers left the Holston, under the leadership of John Floyd. They followed the path of Boone and Henderson well into Kentucky, but veered westward near the end, into the valley of Dick's River, where they made a settlement and named it St. Asaph's.

Ben Logan went to Kentucky at this time, but it is not completely clear, whether he went with Henderson or with Floyd. He settled at St. Asaph's, planted corn, had some land surveyed and returned to the Holston and his family. Soon thereafter, he made clear his intention to move to Kentucky by selling his farm on the Holston on 26 June 1775.

Ben was now a captain of the Fincastle militia, and his militia duties prevented his returning to St. Asaph's until late fall of 1775. It seems likely that he took cattle and hogs with him on that trip, and that he didn't stay long, probably being home again by Christmas. Late in February 1776, he and his family left again, arriving at St. Asaph's on 8 March.

For the next twenty-eight years, Ben's life was full of heroic deeds and effective public service. As early as 31 December 1776, when the Kentucky region was incorporated as a county of Virginia, he was appointed a captain of militia, sheriff and justice of the peace. After a successful British-Indian raid against Ruddell's and Martin's stations on Licking River in summer 1780, Col. Benjamin Logan was put in command of a settler army of retaliation. This army, split into two divisions commanded by George Rogers Clark and Ben Logan, crossed the Ohio at present-day Cincinnati, and marched toward the Shawnee town of Chillicothe. As often happened on these expeditions, the Indians were well warned of their approach. There was some fighting, but retaliation was mostly in the form of burning easily rebuilt structures and destroying crops and food stores. As the years went by, Ben was a co-leader of more of these expeditions.

Ben was certainly a rough-hewn frontiersman, but obviously a popular leader of men also. In the spring of 1781, he decided to seek a seat in the Virginia Assembly, and was easily elected. When Ben rose to speak in the Assembly, his years as a rough frontiersman made an impression. One contemporary called him "a plain blunt man, & not particularly nice in his choice of words." Another said that he reminded him of "an enraged and wounded buffalo." In spite of these impressions, his obvious sincerity and the justice of his requests made a favorable impression, and he gained significant benefits for his constituents, especially the poor ones.

As the 1780s wore on, Ben was kept extraordinarily busy with his military and civic duties. One of his most vexing problems was a perennial shortage of militia officers and civil magistrates because these community leaders were occasionally killed in the nearly constant warfare with the Indians. Considering his frequent personal exposure to great risk, it seems amazing that Ben himself suffered no more than a bullet-shattered left arm during all these years.

Probably none of our ancestors lived in a society whose way of life changed so much during his lifetime as did Benjamin Logan. When he came to Kentucky, no personal characteristics were more essential than the raw physical strength, courage, determination and knowledge of the wilderness environment, which he had in such abundance. Within a very few years, these had to be supplemented by an understanding of military organization and political process, and an ability to mix successfully with persons from more affluent and sophisticated backgrounds. These people poured into Kentucky once the roughest edges of wilderness and Indian hostility had been worn away.

The Revolution was hardly over, when work was begun to make Kentucky a separate state. Ben was a major figure in all this work, serving in all nine conventions to formulate Kentucky's petition for separation from Virginia. He was always vigilant to protect the rights and interests of those who had worked and fought to tame the wilderness. When statehood was approved, he served in the conventions that made up a new state constitution.

With the influx of more sophisticated segments of society came a push to establish the institutions of education and entertainment to which these folk had been accustomed in the eastern states. Though not a formally educated man himself, Ben was one of the founding trustees of the Transylvania Seminary, which subsequently evolved into Transylvania University. Nevertheless, as the years went by and the frequency of Indian attacks lessened, his accomplishments as a defender of his people in times of peril were appreciated by a smaller and smaller fraction of the population, and his lack of a polished education weighed more heavily against him.

He ran for governor of the new state, in 1796 and again in 1800, but was unsuccessful both times. His first loss occasioned great controversy. His second was perhaps just as well, since he died only about two years after he would have taken office. The Kentucky Assembly, of which he had been a member ever since he moved to Shelby County in 1794, was in session when he died on 11 December 1802. Hearing of his death, they passed a resolution in favor of the wearing of mourning "in token of that high regard and respect which the people of Kentucky entertain for the memory of the deceased General Benjamin Logan, the firm defender of his country."

Ben was buried on the farm on Bullskin Creek, in what has become an impressive pioneer cemetery. I have visited it twice, verified the published versions of the inscriptions, and taken numerous snapshots. He left an impressive estate in land, having been careful to have all his acquisitions properly recorded.

Ann Montgomery was born in Augusta County, Virginia, in 1752 or 1753, one of ten children of William Montgomery Sr. and Jane Patterson. We have no family records for her parents, so can only guess at the birthdates of her siblings, and the maiden name of her mother. Her own birth date is estimated from her gravestone inscription.

She must have lived a particularly rugged pioneer life, surviving the death by Indians of her father and two brothers, and caring for her growing family during her husband's frequent and unpredictable absences. Her daughter Mary described her as a faithful Presbyterian, whose husband read scripture to their children and catechized them but did not belong to any church.

Considering their hazardous environment, Ann was lucky that none of her nine children died before reaching the age of twenty-one. Robert was killed in 1813, in the Battle of Frenchtown; David died in 1816; Jane in 1821 and William in 1822, all before their mother.

In 1805, about two and a half years after the death of her first husband, Ann married again, to Col. James Knox, who had reputedly been her suitor many years before in Virginia. Colonel James had also acquired an impressive estate in land, which came to Ann when he predeceased her by a few

years. Colonel James died on 24 December 1822; Ann died on 10 October 1825. Both are buried in the Logan family cemetery on Bullskin Creek. Ann's gravestone carries this inscription: "Ann Montgomery, who nobly shared with him in the many perils of their wilderness home."

Thomas Smith is one of our mystery men. We have no birth data for him, but would guess from the ages of his children that he was born between 1745 and 1750. Near the end of his life, in 1816, everyone called him "old," and he seemed to be quite helpless.

He arrived in Mercer County, Virginia, by 14 August 1787, when he bought 203 3/4 acres of land from Azor and Dinah Rees. He had his deed properly registered with the county clerk, but like many persons who bought Kentucky lands at this period, he did not get sufficient proof that the person who sold it to him had a legal right to do so. Azor Rees said that his right was granted by patent on 6 April 1785, the land being part of a thousand-acre preemption granted to him on that date.

It turned out, through a chancery suit brought in 1809 by Jacob Bowman, that Azor Rees's preemption overlapped significantly with a patent obtained in 1780 by Jacob's father and uncles. The Bowmans had had their patent properly surveyed and recorded, so it took precedence over Rees's patent, and Thomas Smith had to buy 120 of his acres over again. Actually his son George paid for the land and got a deed from Jacob Bowman.

The records of this suit played a role in a second chancery case, brought in 1818 by the heirs of Horace Smith versus the other heirs of Thomas Smith (after Thomas and Mary Smith had died). This suit told a great deal about the Smith family, including who its members had been. The heirs of Horace, who had predeceased his parents, claimed that Thomas had made a will, formalizing his wish to split the 203 acres he had bought from Azor Rees equally between his son George and the heirs of Horace. Neither George nor the third brother, Turner, liked that idea. The heirs of Horace claimed that Turner, George and their sister Jane knew of the will, but had failed to have it recorded, and that they had simply taken what they wanted from Thomas's estate to the disadvantage of the heirs of Horace. Turner and Jane were present when their father died. They admitted that on that occasion they saw a "piece of writing," but that their limited ability to read made it impossible for them to know that it was Thomas's will. They said that they handed it to their mother, and asked her to take care of it. By the time of the chancery case, their mother had died, and the will was nowhere to be found. By the testimony of other witnesses, one of whom had written the will, and another had witnessed it, it was proven that Thomas had intended to split his land equally between George and the heirs of Horace.

The other main point established in this case was that Thomas had been poor, and for several years before his death was unable to support himself and Mary. He had no slaves to help with the work and had never owned any. For several years George, who lived in Tennessee, had placed some of his slaves on his father's land, and had also placed horses, cattle and hogs there. He had also supplied his parents with cash, and had paid the taxes on the land. Most of this happened after Horace's death, but it gave George good reason to expect generous treatment in his father's will, and he was understandably disappointed. Turner's grounds for disappointment were less substantial. During the year between the deaths of Thomas and Mary, he had supervised George's slaves in the making of crops of tobacco, corn and oats.

Some facts revealed by these chancery proceedings may possibly provide clues to the place from which Thomas had come to Kentucky. He brought no slaves, which could mean that he came from a state where slavery was prohibited, or just that he could not afford them. His neighbors at the time of Jacob Bowman's suit were Daniel Brewer, Albert Banta, John Smock, Evert Boice and Jacob Sortor. These men all came from New Jersey, and were of New Amsterdam stock.

Thomas's wife's name was Mary, and we can guess, again from children's data, that they were married circa 1772, but we have no idea of their place of marriage, or of Mary's maiden name. Thomas died in May 1816, surrounded by family and neighbors, in the small house that his son Horace had built on his half of the property. The court records speak of a burial ceremony, but do not say exactly where he was buried.

Mary Unknown. Mary, the wife of Thomas Smith, outlived him by a year, during which her son Turner Smith supervised the slaves. She was probably helped in the house by Jane Vannoy, who lived with Thomas and Mary during the last years of their lives. Jane seems also to have come from New Jersey, as did Cornelius Vanarsdalen, who witnessed Thomas's will.

Mary died in April 1817. Again, her place of burial is not known.

Abraham (Abram) Fulkerson was born circa 1740, probably in Hunterdon County, New Jersey, almost certainly the first of at least four children of Dirck (Richard) Fulkerson and Neeltje (Elenor). No record has been found for the marriage of Dirck and Neeltje, nor of the births of their children.

It is known that sometime in the 1750s, Abraham's parents moved to southern Virginia, right along the North Carolina line. Dirck's brother Frederick had acquired land in 1748 in what is today Halifax County, Virginia. There is no corresponding land record for Dirck, but he appears to have been living near Frederick in April 1758 when a Shawnee raiding party killed him and (perhaps) most of his children. It appears that Abram, then about eighteen, was away from home, probably hunting when the Indians came, and thereby escaped the massacre. Later records show that his mother, a sister, Mary, and a much younger brother, Frederick, who must have been a babe in arms, also escaped. We don't know where the family lived immediately after this tragedy.

Our first surviving record of Abram is dated 3 May 1763, when he was appointed to survey a road in Orange County, North Carolina. The earliest surviving land record is for 20 February 1765, when he bought land in Rowan County, North Carolina, from his uncle James Fulkerson.

He married Elizabeth Black circa 1765, probably in Orange County. This date estimate is based on the fact that Abram and Elizabeth jointly sold, in 1777, a piece of land that was purchased by Abram from his uncle James in 1765. Ordinarily, a wife only participated in a sale of land if she had a dower interest in it, which she would have if they were married at the time her husband bought it.

There are many records of Abram buying and selling land and slaves in Caswell County, North Carolina, during the years of the Revolution, but no record of his involvement in that fight. Caswell County was cruelly visited by the troops of General Cornwallis during 1780–1781.

Somehow, Abram learned to read and write, an accomplishment which distinguished him from many of his neighbors, particularly of the older generation. On 2 June 1781, he wrote his mother's will, and he was made an executor of that will and that of his father-in-law, made on 9 August 1780. In the latter, his wife received a thousand pounds from her father.

Soon after the Revolution, Abram began to assume more responsible roles in his community. In 1783 he was appointed to inspect an election poll, and to contract for building a courthouse, prison and stocks. On 17 January 1785, he was appointed a justice of the peace, and in July 1785, he qualified as a deputy sheriff—all these things in Caswell County. In 1783 and 1784, he looked like he might move to what became eastern Tennessee, entering lands in what became Green County. On 14 and 15 February 1785, he had these lands surveyed, but he seems never to have lived on them, selling them in 1789 to

his brother Frederick and brother-in-law Will Mount. I have the records of these surveys, which show that Abram, Frederick, Will and a half-brother Thomas Chambers, were all participating together in the surveying, which was done in winter, so that it was easier to see through the deciduous forests and to watch for Indians. One more Fulkerson, John, participated in this work. He doesn't appear in any family genealogies, and it occurs to me that he may have been an early son of Abram and Elizabeth, who had died before his father made his will in 1812.

While in Caswell County, Abram was closely associated with his brothers-in-law, George, Henry, Thomas and John Black. He witnessed Henry's will in January 1789. The last mention of Abram in Caswell County records names the firm of Fulkerson and Black in January 1791.

Very shortly thereafter, Abram showed that he had really had his eye on Kentucky instead of Tennessee. On 29 April 1791, he entered for land in Fayette County, still then in Virginia, on the Kentucky River. On 7 Sept 1791, he is mentioned in the records of Augusta County, Virginia, with the simple statement, seemingly apropos of nothing, "Abraham Fulkerson is in the Kentucky country." On 7 December 1793, he was mentioned in the *Kentucky Gazette*, as living on the Kentucky River by the canoe landing. On 6 January 1794, in Mercer County, Kentucky, he wrote a permission slip for the marriage of his daughter Dinah to David Sutton. In 1801, 1802 and 1806, he wrote from Jessamine County, Kentucky, similar permission slips for the marriages of his daughters Elenor, Sarah and Betsy. It was by matching his signatures on these permission slips with that on his mother's will back in Caswell County, North Carolina, that we get proof positive that we have found the same man in both places.

By 24 February 1807, Abram must have been a widower, for he then married the widow Ann Stonestreet in Jessamine County. He was then about sixty-seven, so it must have been a marriage designed to fend off loneliness in his last years. On 14 January 1809, Abram bought slaves from his stepson, James Stonestreet. On 6 April 1812, Abram wrote his will, which was produced at the February court, 1813, in Jessamine County. His sons Abram and William were to be executors. The will does not have a conventional religious preamble, suggesting that Abram was not a church man.

Abram's land on the Kentucky River lies today just upstream of the High Bridge on Highway 68 from Lexington to Harrodsburg. It consists mostly of bottom land, but extends to the top of the high cliffs bordering the river. Abram operated a ferry across the river there, and occasionally did business with the Shaker settlement that lies just across the river. He is presumably buried there somewhere, but no grave has been found.

Elizabeth Black was born circa 1747, probably in southwest Virginia, almost certainly the first of six children of Robert Black and his wife. We know that her mother's name was Elizabeth, but are uncertain of the surname Love.

We guess that she and Abram married circa 1765, probably in southwest Virginia or nearby North Carolina. In our account of her children, there seems to be a considerable gap between the births of John (circa 1766) and Dinah (circa 1774). This suggests that she had children who died young.

We don't know precisely when Elizabeth died. When her brother Thomas made his will on 25 November 1793, he named his sister Elizabeth Fulkerson, as though he knew that she was still alive. She presumably was dead when Abram remarried on 24 February 1807. These dates make it very likely that she died in Jessamine County, Kentucky, but we do not know where she was buried.

William Jacob was born in Anne Arundel County, Maryland, on 19 April 1752, the fifth of nine children of Zachariah Jacob and Susannah Jones (?). He was married on 19 July 1772 at "Rangers Forest," Baltimore County, to Mary Monk, daughter of Renaldo Monk.

During the early days of the Revolution, he made tents for the Maryland Council of Safety. On 15 July 1776, the Council ordered that all the tenting linen which was delivered into the magazine by Mr. Edward Parker of Cecil County be delivered to William. He charged seventeen shillings each for double-seamed tents, and twelve shillings each for single-seamed. On 26 August 1776, he was paid forty-three pounds, two shillings for the work done to date. (On 28 January 1777, William wrote to justify the price for his tents which was thought to be extravagant.)

On 6 February 1777, William was commissioned ensign of Captain Rutter's Company of Baltimore County militia. On 16 December 1779, he wrote to the governor of Maryland asking for a commission as captain. He didn't quite get that, but on 25 September 1780 was commissioned first lieutenant just before this his wife Mary died.

William is said to have remarried, to Mary Godfrey, in St. Paul's church, Baltimore, on 27 March 1781, but I have as yet no confirmation of that.

During Mary's lifetime, William and Mary had successfully sued Henry Riston, executor of the will of Mary's father, Renaldo Monk and Richard and Anthony Gott, his sureties, for monies due them under Renaldo's will. The last Maryland record we have found for William concerns a suit in chancery, brought against William by Henry Riston and the Gotts, aiming to block execution of the judgments won by William and Mary.

By 1788, William and his children had moved to Romney, in Hampshire County, Virginia, where his younger brother John Jeremiah Jacob lived. He is said to have died there in 1792, although no record of death or burial has been found. He is not buried with his brother and sister-in-law, whose graves in Romney we have seen.

Mary Monk was born circa 1753, probably in Baltimore County, Maryland, the first of two daughters of Renaldo Monk and Rachel, the widow of Edward Riston.

We know little about her, save what is told above about her husband. She had three children in five years and died in Baltimore on 29 June 1780, when she was only about twenty-seven. We do not know the cause of death, but the date suggests that she may have died in the birth of a stillborn fourth child.

Aaron Fontaine was born circa 30 November 1753 in Charles City County, Virginia, the fifth of six children of Rev. Peter Fontaine and Sarah Wade.

His father died when he was not quite four, and he was sent to live with the family of his half sister, who was thirty-five years older than he. She was Mary Ann, who had married Isaac Winston, a prominent and well-connected planter.

Before he was quite twenty, Aaron married Barbara Overton Terrell, who was only seventeen. This happened on 19 May 1773, permission for the marriage having been given by Barbara's guardian, Maj. Zachary Lewis on behalf of Barbara's mother.

Aaron and Barbara quickly set about the raising of a family, producing nine daughters and three sons over the next twenty-three years. During this time, Aaron was a grand juror in Louisa County on 9 November 1778, was appointed an ensign in the Louisa County militia on 10 May 1779, and took oath as a vestryman of Trinity Parish on 11 November 1782.

Very shortly after the birth of the last of these children (but at a date that is slightly vague because of contemporary records that appear to place Aaron in two widely separated places at about the same time), Aaron took his family and a sizeable group of slaves to Jefferson County, Kentucky. It is possible that Aaron made a preliminary scouting trip, perhaps with a few slaves, and then returned

for his family. Kentucky histories say that the family arrived in 1798, but entries in the family Bible suggest that they may have come a year earlier. In any event, they waited until the Indian troubles in Kentucky were well over, and the trip could be made in comparative safety. Unfortunately, their trip was too much for Barbara, who died soon after their arrival.

Probably few men were more heartily welcomed on their arrival in Kentucky than was Aaron Fontaine, with his family of nine beautiful, intelligent and highly cultivated daughters, only one of whom was already married. Predictably they married well, eventually being matriarchs of some of the most distinguished families of Kentucky.

After seven years as a widower, Aaron remarried in 1805, to Mrs. Elizabeth Whiting Thurston, spoken of as the handsomest woman in Kentucky, and mother of ten by her first marriage. It was said that at the wedding, the two groups of children were drawn up in line like two opposing armies! Not satisfied with twenty-two children, Aaron and Elizabeth proceeded to have four more together.

The family settled first on Harrods Creek in Jefferson County about eight miles east of Louisville. In 1814 Aaron moved to the other side of Louisville, buying three hundred acres of land along the Ohio River, and laying it out in orchards, lawns and grass lands. In the words of Mrs. Frances Merriman, who read a paper about the Fontaine family to the Filson Club: "Here Captain Fontaine lived the life of a country squire in the good old days of peace and plenty. He was a gentleman of the old school and was always courteous and polite to everyone, particularly his wife to whom he always doffed his hat before taking his morning toddy and insisted that she taste it first."

There was a ferry across the Ohio River which became known as Fontaine's Ferry, and in later years a part of Aaron's estate was developed into a popular entertainment park, known as Fontaine Ferry Park. Aaron died in April 1823, apparently in jovial good spirits to the end. Having outlived his second wife, he was reported to have said on his death bed, "Well, I think I'll go court the Widow Collins." He is buried next to Elizabeth and his youngest daughter, Mrs. Patrick Dillon, just back of Fontaine Ferry Park.

Sometime after 1784, Aaron and Barbara obtained a family Bible, which passed from them to their daughter Ann Overton Fontaine and her husband John J. Jacob, and eventually down to our grandmother, Evelyn Johnson (Hardin) Sherman. At her death, it came to me, full of fascinating family records. The bulk of these records are in Aaron's handwriting, but records of later generations (in other hands) abound. Seeing that the Bible was fragile, and feeling that we could not properly care for it, and feeling that it was a shame for us to keep all its genealogical information to ourselves, Pat and I donated it to the Filson Club in Louisville, an act which has paid handsome benefits in terms of contacts with genealogically interested cousins, whom we should never otherwise have discovered.

Barbara Terrill was born 3 September 1756 in Louisa County, Virginia, the seventh of ten children of Richmond Terrill IV and Ann Overton. Her family was extremely well connected in the prosperous planter society of Piedmont, Virginia. When her father died in 1771, Barbara chose a guardian, her brother-in-law, Maj. Zachary Lewis. Since her mother was still alive, this indicated that Barbara had inherited a significant amount of property.

She must have been a fine mother, to raise so many children in good health. It seems a shame that her life was cut off just as she might have expected happy years surrounded by her grandchildren. At least she lived to see the eldest of her daughters well married. The family Bible tells us that she died on 10 July 1798. Randy Curry, a valued cousin and serious genealogist, says that he has read that she died and is buried in Danville, Kentucky. Danville is a fair distance from Harrods Creek, where the family was living at the time, but was a significant town where Barbara may have gone for medical attention.

James Johnson was born on 1 January 1774 in Orange County, Virginia, the second of eleven children of Col. Robert Johnson and Jemima Suggett. When he was five, his father gathered his family to go to Kentucky, where the year before he had selected lands near the head of North Elkhorn, about six miles from Lexington. They traveled through Redstone on the Monongahela, intending to float down the Ohio River to Beargrass, but the water level was too low and then the river froze, so they were held up at Redstone until the spring of 1780. When they got to Kentucky, Colonel Robert judged that it was too perilous because of Indian raids to settle on their own land, and moved his family into Bryan's station. This had been built by the Bryan and Boone families from North Carolina, but then abandoned in 1779. Johnsons, Craigs, Suggetts, Tomlinsons and others from Virginia re-occupied and strengthened the stockade.

On 16 August, 1782, Bryan's Station was besieged by about three hundred Indians under Tory leaders Caldwell, McKee and Girty. Col. Robert Johnson, having been elected to the Virginia legislature, was away, but according to accepted legend, his family members played important roles in the successful defense of the stockade. In particular, young James, who was reportedly hoisted up onto a roof to pour water on flames set by Indian arrows. More of this romantic tale will be told in the next chapter, in the story of his mother.

In 12 January 1796, James married Nancy Payne, another Virginia native then living near Lexington, Kentucky, in a large family settlement. Shortly thereafter, on 1 September 1800, he united with the Baptist church at Great Crossings, near his father's place. James was largely responsible for the erection of the church building, supposedly the first brick building in Scott County, and was clerk of the church for twenty-five years.

We hear little of James again until the War of 1812, when he gained considerable fame as a lieutenant colonel of Kentucky militia, under the command of his younger brother, Col. Richard Mentor Johnson, in the Battle of the Thames. There, on 5 October 1813, he led an impetuous cavalry charge, completely shattering the 41st Regiment of British regulars. His brother Richard was equally or more brave in a successful parallel drive against Indians massed in a swamp. It was on this day that the great Indian chief Tecumseh was killed, and it was believed by some, but not all, that it was Richard Johnson who killed him. It is reported in the *Dictionary of American Biography* that James was accompanied on this campaign by two of his sons, then only seventeen and fifteen. Both James and Richard were exposed to galling fire from the British and Indians, but although Richard was hit several times and scarcely escaped with his life, James was uninjured.

After the war, James returned to Great Crossings to live the life of a private citizen. He and his brother Richard easily parlayed their military heroism into political office. Indeed, Richard had already been in Congress when the War of 1812 broke out. The family was wealthy and influential, and it was said, perhaps with envy, that during their heyday, no federal dollars ever came to Kentucky without first passing through the hands of the Johnsons. In 1815, James and Richard took a hand at government contracting, and successfully supplied food and other necessities to Gen. Andrew Jackson's troops in the war's final battle at New Orleans.

In 1815, James briefly announced his candidacy as Governor of Kentucky, but withdrew when he saw that his opponent was to be the overwhelmingly popular Gabriel Madison. Madison then won easily, but died after only about a year in office.

An effort to follow up on their success in government contracting, by supplying the Yellowstone Expedition of the U.S. Army in 1816–1818, ended in financial disaster for the Johnsons. It was a huge endeavor, for which the Johnsons had four steamboats built in Kentucky in order to carry supplies up the Missouri River to the Mandan Villages and the mouth of the Yellowstone, where forts were

to be built. They had to invest large sums of their own money, and borrow much more, in order to purchase supplies. Then they had to try to collect from a nearly bankrupt government in time to satisfy their own creditors.

They encountered immense difficulties in their efforts to deliver the supplies, and eventually the expedition was aborted. Their efforts to collect from the government were only partially successful, and they had to sell much of the family's extensive land holdings in order to pay their debts. One of the interesting sidelights of this unhappy series of events, shines on a series of personal letters written by the Johnsons to President Madison and General Jackson, reporting their difficulties and asking for help. These were published in October 1937 in the *Register of the Kentucky Historical Society*. Probably Richard Johnson knew James Madison through their contemporaneous government service, and also possible that the Johnson and Madison families were acquainted in Orange County, Virginia, before the Johnsons went to Kentucky.

James and Nancy raised seven sons and five daughters. He did get elected to the United States Congress in 1824, but served without distinction, and died in office on 13 August 1826, without much public notice.

He and Nancy are buried in a small walled cemetery behind the parking lot that surrounds the Great Crossings Baptist Church. Pat and I visited this cemetery in 1983, only to discover that cows had broken down the low wall and covered many of the stones with a thick layer of manure. A little excavation proved, however, that cow manure is an excellent preservative for marble monuments, so that James and Nancy's stones are still in excellent condition, as are those of James's parents, which I exhumed during a later visit with my sister Ellie. (Then the graveyard was overwhelmed with a thick growth of a weed which has stems like rhubarb, and a plethora of extremely sticky burrs. Never let it be said that a true genealogist is put off by such obstacles.)

Nancy Payne was born on 21 December 1778 in Loudon County, Virginia, the eldest of seven children of Henry Payne and Anne Lane. She was brought to the Town Fork settlement of the Payne family, near Lexington in 1785.

Nancy married James Johnson on 12 January 1796, and they had eleven children together. However, extraordinarily little is known about most of those children. Nancy stayed and died at Great Crossings, Scott County, and is buried in the churchyard there.

James Orlando Payne was born on 2 September 1774 in Fairfax County, Virginia, the seventh of nine children of Edward Payne and Ann Holland Conyers. He was an uncle of Nancy Payne just above, although only four years older than she. Like Nancy, he was brought to Kentucky in 1785, when the large Town Fork colony of Paynes was established.

Frequently known by the nickname "Jemmy," as I shall call him here, James Orlando has been a bit of a mystery man for genealogists, perhaps because he was a family black sheep, about whom the family was tight-mouthed. In his excellent book about the Payne family, Col. Brooke Payne said that not much was known about Jemmy, but that he was said to have been a free thinker and possessed a great sense of humor. That may have been true in his young days, and indeed I found an indictment of him for running an illegal "Wheel of Fortune" in Lexington in 1804. I suspect that Jemmy, as the son of an unusually wealthy planter, had lots of free time on his hands and probably got into a fair bit of mischief.

In spite of the gaming charge, Jemmy was called upon to do his part in community affairs, serving on a jury in September 1803, and as a witness in January 1804. He seems to have been mildly litigious, but not particularly successful in court. In 1804, he lost his court appeal in a dispute with Buckner Thruston, and in 1806 his petition to become co-administrator of his father's estate was denied.

In about September 1805 (no actual record survives), he married Tabitha Price, the widow of Andrew Holmes. Shortly thereafter, he inherited nearly four hundred acres of fine land from his father's estate, so that he and Tabitha were comfortably well off. He had also assumed the guardianship of Tabitha's two children by her first marriage, Nancy and William Holmes, and seems to have behaved perfectly honorably towards them.

Jemmy and all his relatives used slaves to work their land, and in his guardianship of the Holmes children, he became responsible for slaves who had been left to them by Tabitha's father, Robert Price. That turned out to be genealogically fortunate, because it was in circuit court records of a dispute over the renting of these slaves that I finally discovered, after fifteen years of searching, Tabitha's maiden name.

Between 1806 and about 1810, Jemmy and Tabitha had three children, and then had no more, although Tabitha was then only about thirty-two. Of course, it is possible that Tabitha miscarried, or had a child who died very soon, and never got recorded. There are numerous court records mentioning Jemmy in very normal ways, up through about 1812.

By 9 March 1815, something had changed terribly in Jemmy, for on that day he shot and killed Tabitha, and sat on the porch of his house while she bled to death in the yard. The resulting indictment for murder, with revealing statements of the first witnesses to reach the scene, still survive in original form at the Kentucky State Archives at Frankfort. One of the witnesses, Oliver Keen, said: "Myself, David Todd & Sanford Keen went in great haste to said Paynes as I had often heard said Payne stated a wish to kill his children and expected he was now at it." Fortunately, he was not.

Jemmy was duly arrested, tried and convicted, but won an appeal for a mistrial, on the reasonable grounds that some of the jurors had made no secret of their intent to convict, even before the trial commenced. However, he died of an undisclosed illness within two months, while awaiting the retrial.

Paradoxically, whereas his behavior and statements on the day of the shooting seem totally irrational, Jemmy made a very normal-sounding will on 11 April 1815, declaring himself to be "weak and low in health," leaving his estate to be equally divided between his three children, and arranging for them to be cared for by his nephew, Hugh Payne. He also asked that Hugh be compensated for moving to Jemmy's farm to care for him. He appointed his brothers Henry, William, Edward and Jilson to be his executors. Finally, in a nuncupative codicil (written by his brother Edward), he set aside one quarter acre of the family farm, where his parents are buried, to be kept as a family burial plot. Unfortunately, the surviving record does not state whether the will was written in jail or at his home, or by whom it was written, and gives no direct statement of his mental condition at the time. The will was presented for probate at May court, 1815, so Jemmy must have died shortly after writing it. Presumably, he was buried in the family burial plot. I have driven around the headwaters of the Town Fork, but have not successfully located this plot.

How to explain this family tragedy? I would speculate, and emphasize that it is only a speculation, that Jemmy contracted syphilis as a young man. It is often cited as a cause of otherwise unexplained insanity.

Tabitha Price, the widow of Andrew Holmes was born circa 1778 in Henrico County, Virginia, probably the youngest of five children of Robert and Mary Price. I would guess, from pretty indirect evidence, that her mother's maiden name was Lewis. Tabitha is mentioned in a deed of gift made by her father, in celebration of her wedding to Andrew Holmes, and her children by Andrew are mentioned in their grandfather's will. Her Price ancestors had been in Virginia since 1611, when John Price arrived at Jamestown, making this the first of our ancestral families to arrive in America.

Tabitha married first, probably in early January, 1797, Andrew Holmes, who is distinguished in early Kentucky history by having provided his home in Frankfort, to be the state's first capitol building. Andrew was residing in Lexington, Kentucky, at the time, but may have gone back to Virginia for the wedding. (Otherwise, we should have to explain how Tabitha got out to Kentucky on her own.) She and Andrew had children Nancy and William Holmes, before Andrew died, in Lexington in 1803.

In about September 1805, probably in Lexington, Tabitha married James Orlando Payne. They lived, probably in fair comfort, in the Town Fork community near Lexington, and had three children: our ancestress Edward-Anne and two sons. The first of these sons, Orlando F., had a large family, was mayor of Lexington in 1850, amassed a huge fortune in the hemp business, and then lost it all in some financial reverse. The younger son, George Rex, carried on the family tradition of assigning unusual given names, but then disappeared from the records. Presumably, he had no children.

As said above, Tabitha was killed by Jemmy on 9 March 1815. We have not discovered where she is buried. The story of how I finally learned Tabitha's maiden name and the date and circumstances of her death, seemed so interesting to me that I wrote a short article about it for *Kentucky Ancestors*, which appeared in the Winter, 2000, issue (Vol. 36, No. 2).

Noah Allen Jr. was born on 26 September 1719 at Medfield, Massachusetts, the third of seven children, and eldest son of Noah Allen and Sarah Gay. There is a wonderful description of him on page 2 of the Joseph and Lucy Clark Allen Memorial, which I shall quote verbatim.

His [Rev. Joseph Allen's] grandfather, Noah (1719–1804), whom he well remembered in his old age, was a man of mark in the town, having held a king's commission in the colonial militia, and the first of the family who was spoken of in public records by "the grand old name of gentleman." He was a man of large frame and extraordinary bodily strength, a stalwart wrestler and a formidable antagonist. He once offered to match himself in "tug of war" against a pair of farm horses, bracing himself against the barn sill, but the rope (a new cart rope) broke, and the contest was declared drawn. A later exploit was to vault over a cow, when past the age of eighty. In an inventory of his effects occurs the following item: "one Great Bible, 3.50 ; Sundry other Books, 50 cts"—which shows how little the fine qualities of that day were indebted to school learning.

Noah married three times, first, in about 1742, to Miriam Fisher, with whom he had five sons. She died on 23 June 1757; then on 23 December 1761 he married our ancestress, Abigail Ellis, with whom he had a daughter and a son. Abigail died in 1764 and on 26 January 1766 Noah married Sybil Hamant (or Hammond), the widow of Elisha Smith.

He was a farmer, and records show that he had lands not only in Medfield, but in the nearby towns of Medway and Dover. As mentioned above, he was a lieutenant in the French and Indian wars. Curiously, although he was fifty-eight by 1776, he was twice drafted for service in the Continental army, on 21 November 1776, and on 8 March 1777, paying for a substitute each time. He was, however, on a list of men who marched to Rhode Island on an alarm, 23 July 1777. His earlier service was mentioned on a pay list of 17 November 1776, in the following words: "turns done in the last wars in the days of Capt. Morse the 1st and Capt. Coolidge." Virtually the identical service record was reported for Eleazar Wheelock of Medfield, who was then the town clerk of Medfield.

He made his last will on 3 November 1800, and died on 23 March 1804. An interesting clause in the will makes the following provision for Sybil, who survived him by three years "... and it is my will that my son Phinus or his Heirs find her a horse to ride to meeting and also a liberty to sit in my Pew in the meeting house."

Abigail Ellis was born on 9 March 1735/6 in Medfield, the seventh of nine children of James Ellis and Tabitha Mason.

When she married Noah Allen, there were already five sons in the house, ranging from ten to sixteen, and no daughters to help her, so she must have been busy.

Unfortunately, she had few years in which to enjoy her new family, dying on 27 July 1764, when her newborn son was only three months old.

Asa Smith was born on 4 November 1740 in Medfield, Massachusetts, the third and last child of Henry Smith and his third wife, Ruth Barber. His father was sixty when Asa was born, and died when Asa was only three. His mother lived until Asa was twenty-one, and never remarried.

We know very little about Asa, except that he moved from Medfield to Walpole, probably with his brother Moses, about the time of his mother's death. He married Meriam Kingsbury there on 31 October 1765.

He was called a yeoman in the settlement of his estate, which was initiated on 4 June 1822, when his brother-in-law, Daniel Kingsbury, petitioned for appointment as his administrator. A brief inventory showed that he had a homestead farm in Walpole, of 110 acres, worth \$4,000, a piece of "Pond Land," with half a house and barn, worth \$790. His pew in the Walpole meeting house was worth \$75. In addition, he had a horse, cows, one steer, one swine and the usual collection of farm implements and household furnishings.

He was survived by his widow, four married daughters and the children of a deceased daughter. His three sons had all predeceased him. We do not have a precise death date, nor place of burial.

Meriam Kingsbury was born on 20 March 1747, in Walpole, Massachusetts, the third of ten children of Col. Seth Kingsbury and Meriam Holbrook. She grew up in the home of a fairly prominent Walpole family, and married Asa Smith at the age of eighteen.

She and Asa had three sons and five daughters. She survived Asa, and was last shown as alive in the final settlement of his estate on 3 June 1823, when she would have been seventy-six, so she probably did not live much longer. We have no record of her death or burial.

John Ware was born on 20 May 1717, in Sherborn, Massachusetts, the fourth of eight children of Capt. Joseph Ware and Hannah Wood.

He married Martha Prentice of Cambridge on 19 June 1743.

All we know of him is that he inherited half of the Sherborn plantation built up by his father, and that he was a selectman of Sherborn in 1758. He was too old to be a soldier in the Revolution, but his three eldest sons were officers in the Continental forces. He died in Sherborn on 18 September 1779 and is buried in the New South Cemetery of Sherborn.

Martha Prentice was born on 27 June 1724 in Cambridge, Massachusetts, the third of nine children of Dea. Henry Prentice and Elizabeth Rand. She and John had five sons and five daughters.

Martha died in Sherborn on 20 April 1805, having outlived her husband by twenty-six years. She is buried next to John in the New South Cemetery of Sherborn, where we have seen the gravestone that memorialized this couple. It is inscribed: "Blessed are the dead who are in the Lord. I will redeem them from the powers of the grave. I will redeem them from death."

Rev. Jonas Clark was born on 14 December 1730 in Newton, Massachusetts, the second of nine children of Capt. Thomas Clark and Mary Bowen. He graduated from Harvard in 1752, obtained his A.M. there, and was ordained pastor of the church at Lexington 5 November 1755. His initial call to the Lexington church was less than enthusiastic, but his parishioners soon grew to love him and to be strongly influenced by him, during the fifty years of his service to them. He was an extremely well-known man in his day, as can be gathered from a brief piece in the *Dictionary of American Biography*, and by a much longer biography in Sibley's *Harvard Graduates*.

He married on 21 September 1757, Lucy Bowes, daughter of Rev. Nicholas Bowes, and granddaughter of the Rev. John Hancock, who had preceded Clark in the Lexington parish for forty-five years!

It seems appropriate to quote directly from Sibley:

The minister was beloved in his parish and respected for his manners and appearance. He was extremely neat in person, and his immense and snowy wig was awe inspiring. His preaching had an emotional pitch more common in the days of Grandfather Hancock, whom he greatly admired and imitated. His voice was so powerful that when he preached in the meetinghouse he could be heard all over the common. The length of his sermons was notorious. They sometimes lasted for three hours, and his prayers for two, so that when he announced that he was going to add to the services readings from the Bible which John Hancock (A.B. 1754) had given him, a Deacon got up and said that the congregation simply couldn't take it.

In a church tradition which is notorious for its intolerance of theological variety, Reverend Jonas had two impressive statements of advice to beginning ministers, that have come down to us in his own words:

The right of private judgment, in matters of Faith and Conscience, ought ever to be held sacred. — Claiming it to yourself, and as cheerfully allowing it to others, to think and judge for themselves, you will not seek to have dominion over the Faith of your People.

They will use it [the authority of the clergy] not to lord it over the faith and consciences of men, but in all meekness and wisdom, for the glory of their Lord.... And so far from exercising, or even attempting to exercise, arbitrary or tyrannical power, which is so contrary to the genius of that gospel, which is ... The Perfect Law of Liberty,—so far from seeking to infringe on the privileges of the Brethren, the faithful Ministers of Christ will rule with a gentle sway, and like their Blessed Master, sweetly persuade to obedience of the truth.

Whatever his views on doctrine, or the power of his voice in the pulpit, Reverend Jonas would probably be forgotten today, were it not for his political views and associations. He was a close associate of Sam Adams and John Hancock (the signer), and it was to his parsonage, where the two were staying on 18 April 1775, that Paul Revere made his famous ride. Reverend Jonas was not known for the moderation with which he expressed his political sentiments. His account of the clash on the Lexington Green gives a fair sample. He spoke thusly of the British troops: "They approach with the morning's light; and more like murderers and cut-throats, than the troops of a Christian king, without provocation ... and with a cruelty and barbarity which would have made the most hardened savage blush, they shed INNOCENT BLOOD!"

Many of his sermons and other writings are preserved in the libraries of the Lexington Historical Society and the Harvard Divinity School. From 1766 until his death, he kept a diary. Except for the years 1779–1787, which are lost, the diary is at the Lexington Historical Society. The diary concerns mostly his farming activities. With a family of twelve children, and a salary from the church which was clearly insufficient for his needs, he became a very successful farmer on a plot of sixty acres.

The parsonage in Lexington, called the Hancock-Clarke House, is preserved as a historical landmark. Pat and I have visited it.

Reverend Jonas lived to a goodly age, but his health was not good in later years. A cancer was successfully removed from his side in 1784, and he died suddenly from dropsy (edema) on 15 November 1805. The term “dropsy” isn’t very specific, but the suddenness sounds like a heart attack or stroke.

Lucy Bowes was born on 20 June 1736 in Bedford, Massachusetts, the second of eight children of Rev. Nicholas Bowes and Lucy Handcock. She grew up in one parsonage, and raised a family of twelve and grew old in another.

We can only imagine how busy she must have been, having to be the hostess for a popular, sociable and politically active minister.

Lucy died in Lexington on 6 April 1789, when her youngest child was ten. We do not know where she was buried.

Capt. Joseph Weld was born in Roxbury, Massachusetts, on 12 July 1683. He married twice, firstly to Elizabeth Chamberlaine on 22 May 1711; secondly to our ancestress Martha Child on 4 June 1729 in Roxbury.

He made his will on 10 September 1760. The inventory of his estate, dated 1 May 1761, shows him to have been the owner of lots and varied real estate in Roxbury and in Woodstock, Connecticut. The description gives some idea of how rural West Roxbury still was in 1761:

The Mansion House, Barn and Mill house, including about nine thousand shingles, about six acres of orchard adjoining to the house, 9 acres of the Plane Eastward of the barn, about 8 acres of English and fresh mowing on the East side the Rhoad near Mr. Joseph Weld’s, about 13 acres on the Southerly side of the Way, about 10 acres of fresh mowing, & 3 of Woodland, about 8 acres of Meadow called Gore’s Meadow, about 8 acres of Salt Marsh or Meadow, about 44 acres of Pasture & Woodland, about 35 acres of Woodland & Pasture on the Road to Newton, The Land in Stoughton, Buildings, etc. A Quantity of Lands in Woodstock in Connecticut Colony, Rites in Number four, 276 acres of Land in Ryalsire.

The central part of this real estate descended to his son Eleazer, and eventually became part of the Harvard Arboretum.

He died on 10 January 1761 in Roxbury and is buried with both his wives in the old burying ground near the Spring Street Church in West Roxbury.

Martha Child was born in Roxbury, Massachusetts, on 5 January 1695, the seventh of twelve children of Benjamin Child and Grace Morris.

On 4 June 1729, she married Capt. Joseph Weld as his second wife, thereby inheriting a family of six children. However, these included daughters fifteen and eighteen, who must have been a great help, and the youngest child was already ten. She and Joseph had five children, the first of whom died at the age of five.

She was unusually old, thirty-four, when she married Captain Joseph. This might indicate that she had been kept at home to care for aging parents, but Benjamin and Grace Child both died in 1723. The marriage record calls her Mrs. Martha Child, and genealogists have said, correctly in general, that did not necessarily mean that she was a widow. That is confirmed by the fact that she was called “Martha Child Singlewoman” in the final distribution of her father’s real estate.

She died sometime after 22 July 1762 (when Captain Joseph's estate was divided). It is possible that her date of death can be found from her gravestone in the burying ground near Spring Street Church.

Jabez Hatch was born in Rochester, Massachusetts, on 21 May 1709, the fourth of seven children of Josiah Hatch and Desire Hawes. His father died when he was only five, and when Jabez was fifteen, he chose his uncle, Isaac Hatch, to be his guardian, in Scituate, Massachusetts. By order of the Plymouth County Probate Court, Isaac was instructed "& Him ye sd Jabesh Hatch during his minority to take into your care & Tuition & his Estate money goods & Chattels to take into your Hands & Possession for Him & to Improve ye Same in such manner as you shall judge best for Him."

This makes it virtually certain that Jabez grew up where Isaac was active in Scituate and nearby Hanover, then a shipbuilding center. He announced his intention to marry Mary Fisher, a Boston girl, in Scituate on 3 November 1733, and moved to Boston soon thereafter. Their first child, Sarah, was born in Boston 31 June 1734, suggesting that Mary had been pregnant before they were wed.

In Boston, Jabez was quickly established as a wharfinger (one who owns and operates a wharf). This must have required some capital, which he presumably inherited from his father, and which had been well managed by his Uncle Isaac.

He and Mary became members of Trinity Episcopal Church in Boston, and 22 March 1738/9 paid fifty pounds for Pew number five in that church. From 1742 onward their children were baptized there. Their membership in this church is significant, because it ties them to the family of Mary's parents and brother. The church was founded in 1733, so they may have been very nearly charter members. Jabez had a very successful career in Boston, acquiring property around Wheeler's Point, and quickly assuming the title of Gentleman. He and Mary suffered losses in the great Boston fire of 1760, and were among those who appealed to the town for aid after the fire.

Jabez and Mary were a prolific couple, having six sons and nine daughters. He died before the Revolution, but his children were very much involved, on both sides. Son Jabez and son-in-law Eleazar Weld were officers on the American side; sons Hawes and Christopher went to Halifax, Nova Scotia, when the British evacuated Boston in March 1776 and became captains in the Loyalist forces.

Jabez made his will on 17 February 1763, naming his wife Mary; sons Jabez, Harris, Haws, William and Christopher; daughters Sarah, Elizabeth, Desire, Lucretia, Lydia, Hannah, Lucy and Mary Weld; son-in-law Eleazar Weld; and daughter-in-law Deborah Hatch, wife of his son Jabez. He stipulated that his estate should remain together until the death of his wife, and then be divided equally among his children. We see that all but three of his children survived their father.

Jabez Hatch died on 17 April 1763, when he was only fifty-four; final division of his estate between his children was not made until after Mary's death in 1785. The record of this division is interesting in that it treated Patriot and Loyalist children alike; this suggests that the children got together after the war, if not in perfect harmony, at least well enough to do business with one another. The distribution, made on 28 July 1786, indicates that only nine children survived their mother: these being Jabez, Christopher, Hawes, Mary, Lucretia, Hannah, Lucy, Desire and Lydia.

Mary Fisher was surely born circa 1714. When I began searching, it had been believed, for over a hundred years, that the wife of Jabez Hatch was a Mary Crocker of Barnstable. Looking for proof of this, I convinced myself that it was NOT true, and wrote an article for the NEHGR (Vol. 155, January 2001, pp.105–110) detailing my evidence and setting forth everything, all of which pointed in favor of the identification of Mary Fisher.

We have no birth or baptismal record for Mary, but Trinity Church records set her age as seventy-one when she died in 1785, so we say she was born in 1714, probably in Boston, and almost certainly to John Fisher and Sarah (Harris ?) of that town. We know little of her siblings, except that she had a brother Wilfred, who was a Loyalist who went to Halifax with the British troops, and a sister Anne, who married Jabez's cousin Isaac Hatch.

It seems likely to me, though not yet proven, that Mary, and perhaps Anne, went to Scituate in connection with an Episcopal mission there, which led eventually to the founding of St. Andrews Church, in Scituate 1725–1811, then in Hanover 1811–1903. This mission was headed in 1732–1737 by the Rev. Addington Davenport, who returned to Boston in 1737 to be assistant minister of King's Chapel 1737–1740. He became Rector of Trinity Church in May 1740.

Mary had sixteen children, including one pair of twins, over a period of twenty-four and a half years! Her oldest daughter, Sarah, lived until 1771, and must have been a big help. The family was prosperous, and must have had a large house.

Mary died on 9 November 1785, at the age of seventy-one, so she must have been an outstandingly strong woman. She was buried from Trinity Church, but we have never located a gravestone.

Stephen Minot III was born in Boston on 21 September 1711, the only child of Stephen Minot II and Sarah Wainwright. His mother died when he was only one month old. His father soon remarried, and Stephen grew up midst numerous half siblings.

He graduated from Harvard in 1730, and took his M.A. there in 1733. Sibley's *Harvard Graduates* provides some detail, to wit:

At Harvard young Stephen participated normally in undergraduate life after obtaining a college room at the beginning of Sophomore year. Once he was fined 3 s for seconding Gibson in picking the lock on Tyler's door. Soon after graduation he entered the warehouse of the great Boston merchant, Samuel Waldo, to learn the business.

He was an active (but not terribly successful) merchant, mainly busy with the improvement of real estate. He married in Boston, on 10 June 1736, Sarah Clarke, daughter of the wealthy brazier, Jonas Clarke, from whom he and Sarah received an impressive gift of house and land on the southwest corner of Spring Lane and Devonshire Street, on 7 April 1756.

Again quoting from Sibley:

Although Stephen and Sarah Minot did not attain the top rung of the mercantile aristocracy, they were near enough to have the marriage of their daughter Salley to Gilbert Speakman an item of news throughout the Province, and to have the death of their son Francis, in 1774, widely noticed. When the Revolution came Stephen and Sarah retired to some family property in Marlborough where they lived comfortably on the rents from their real estate in besieged Boston which were collected for them by their Loyalist uncle, Christopher Minot (A.B. 1725).

Any stigma which might be attached to their Uncle Christopher's loyalism was offset by the flaming patriotism of their son, George Richards Minot (A.B. 1778).

He [Stephen] attended the church in Brattle Square, of which his grandfather was one of the founders, but did not take an active part in its affairs, although he was sufficiently interested in religion to subscribe for the Seasonable Thoughts of Charles Chauncy. Once he was elected town constable, but paid the fine rather than serve. He did serve as fire ward for ten years, and once, years later, he was invited to serve on the committee to inspect the town schools.

Stephen made his will on 10 September 1783, shortly after the death of his wife, and just one week after the signing of the Treaty of Paris ended the American Revolution. He named his four surviving sons, Jonas Clarke, James, Christopher and George Richards, his daughter Sarah (wife of Gilbert Warner Speakman), and his grandson Stephen Minot, only child of his deceased son, John.

Stephen Minot died on 14 January 1787 and was buried in the Granary Burial Ground. Although his estate was declared insolvent, having assets of only 225 pounds, versus debts of 1,974 pounds, the records of administration by sons Jonas Clarke and George Richards are long and interesting.

Sarah Clarke was born on 30 March 1719, in Boston, the only daughter of the wealthy brazier, Jonas Clarke Esq., and Grace Tilley. Her father is not to be confused with Rev. Jonas Clarke of Lexington.

For some reason, Jonas and Grace had only two children, so Sarah was a comparatively lonely child for that era. She had eight sons and a single daughter, all of whom lived to adulthood, although she outlived four of her sons. Her sons, fairly typical of the maritime merchant class of Boston in those days, scattered geographically. Jonas Clarke went to Canada, Stephen to Jamaica, John to the West Indies and Surinam (as a master mariner) and James to Camden, Maine.

For some reason that I have been unable to ascertain, her children were very fond of the children of Capt. Thomas Speakman. The two families were of the merchant class in Boston, but attended different churches. However, both Francis and Jonas Clarke Minot were enamored of Hannah Speakman, who was engaged to Francis when he died prematurely, and then married Jonas Clarke Minot. George Richards Minot married Mary Speakman, and Sarah Minot married Gilbert Warner Speakman.

Sarah died on 10 June 1783, probably in Boston. We have not discovered where she was buried.

Thomas Speakman was born in Boston on 3 January 1721/22, the second of five children of William Speakman and Hannah Hackerel. He was born into a prosperous family and married into another one, but never seemed to be very successful in either educational, business, or military enterprises. He attended Harvard, but did not earn a degree. At a meeting of the President and Fellows of Harvard on 10 May 1742 : “Thos. Speakman, Jr. of Boston who was admitted a member of this society in 1738, left the college before two years, petitioned for his 1st Degree with his Class at coming Commencement. Denied.” It may be that Thomas withdrew from college in order to get married.

Thomas married Mary Warner in Boston circa January 1740; she was the only daughter of the wealthy distiller Gilbert Warner. Curiously, we find no record of this marriage, although the Speakmans were active members of Trinity Church, of which Thomas’s father had been a principal founder. (Trinity Church was just about to get a new rector at that time—perhaps their recordkeeping suffered a temporary lapse.) What we know definitely is that Mary’s father gave them a substantial wedding present on 5 May 1740, saying, “Know ye that I the said Gilbert Warner in Consideration of the Marriage lately Consummated between Thomas Speakman of Boston aforesaid and Mary his wife my loving Daughter, and of my natural affection to my said Daughter, as also towards their advancement in the world, do hereby Give, Grant, Enfeoff ...” Gilbert’s use of the word “consummated” was well advised, because the first child of Thomas and Mary was born on 30 September 1740, and baptized at Trinity Church on 5 October 1740.

To complete the picture of the wealth and privilege with which Captain Thomas was surrounded, we should mention that he had two of the wealthiest men in Boston, John Rowe and Ralph Inman, as brothers-in-law, they having married his younger sisters, Hannah and Susannah Speakman.

On three dates between 9 March 1740/41 and 12 March 1742/43, Thomas was appointed a constable of Boston. He was excused on the first two occasions, and served on the third. Most of Thomas's business career followed that of his father-in-law, as a distiller. He was often sued successfully for debt or trespass. Frequently, he did not show up to defend himself. He had property in Marlborough, which is likely to be the place where he met the family of Steven Minot. He moved his family to this property at about the time when he abandoned his business career and became a soldier.

His military career was perhaps his best effort. In the summer and autumn of 1755, he was a captain in the expedition of Col. John Winslow, against Fort Beausejour in Nova Scotia. He was thus party to the expulsion of the Acadians in 1755. Returning to Boston from that campaign, he was placed in command of a company of Rangers, eventually becoming part of the famous Ranger battalion of Maj. Robert Rogers. However, Speakman's contribution to Rogers's force did not look especially promising. We quote from *Robert Rogers of the Tangers*, to wit: "Only two partially filled companies under Captains Hobbs and Speakman drifted into Albany in September [1756]: a nondescript lot largely from the Boston waterfront, 'the best of their men Irish Roman Catholics, and others mostly Sailors and Spaniards.' They did practically nothing in the fall of '56."

With very little time in which to turn his men into proper rangers, Captain Thomas joined Rogers in an ambitious raid on a French and Indian supply train, coming south along the ice on Lake Champlain, between Ticonderoga and Crown Point. The raid was only partially successful; some of the enemy escaped to carry a warning back to their main force. As Rogers's group was attempting to make its way back to its headquarters, it was ambushed on La Barbut Creek near Crown Point. In the resulting skirmish, Speakman was seriously wounded. He became separated from the main body of Rogers's troops, and was left behind when they made a nighttime escape. He was eventually discovered by Indians, who scalped him alive and beheaded him, carrying his head on a pole to their village. All this was witnessed by Pvt. Thomas Brown, who was also captured by Indians, but managed to survive to tell the tale. Private Brown said that Speakman had begged him for a tomahawk, so he could end his own life, and further asked that if Brown survived, he should tell Mrs. Speakman of the way her husband had died. From Brown's account, we know that Captain Thomas died on 21 January 1757, less than a year after his arrival home from Nova Scotia. Pat and I have visited Crown Point, and tried to locate the scene of his death, but without success.

An ironic commentary on the financial instability of Captain Thomas's life is that his family was "warned out" of Marlborough in 1756, while he was off soldiering. Presumably the Marlborough Selectmen reversed themselves when word was received of his horrific death, because the widow and her children continued to live in that town for at least twenty years.

Mary Warner was born in Boston on 3 May 1721, the only child of Gilbert Warner and Sarah Wass. Her father was a prosperous distiller, in the days when rum was one of Boston's principal export commodities.

She must have been raised in comfortable circumstances, as the apple of her father's eye. Her mother died just a few months before Mary's marriage. Mary and Thomas had six children, two of whom died in childhood. Of the remaining four, three married into the family of Steven Minot.

Mary did not remarry after the death of Thomas, but lived as a widow for fifty-two years. I have not been able to learn with whom she lived. She died in Boston on 20 January 1809. I do not know where she was buried.

Capt. Abraham Copeland was born in Braintree, Massachusetts, on 25 June 1736, the first of twelve children of Samuel Copeland Jr. and Mary Owen. He was baptized there.

We don't find him again until 16 June 1760, when he was listed among the original settlers of Liverpool, Nova Scotia, in an interesting letter from Gov. Charles Lawrence to the British Lord Commissioners of Trade. Lawrence gave a good description of the site, which Pat and I have visited, and said that the settlement then had seventy heads of family and thirteen sail of fishing schooners. It seems very likely that one of those schooners was captained by our Abraham. In an earlier letter to the Lords of Trade, Governor Lawrence had said "The people that take up the lands of La Have and Port Senior [later Liverpool] are Fishermen from Plymouth in New England and dealers in lumber from other parts of that Province. They are coming amongst us with views of entering immediately on these branches of business."

Liverpool was an interesting site for a settlement, with great close access to the fishing banks, and generous supplies of lumber, but with almost no arable land, so that the settlers were dependent on imports of food from the Minas Basin, where the dikes built by the Acadians had been breached by a great storm in 1759. The great influx of New Englanders just after 1759 was not accidental, but the result of a deliberate effort of the English authorities, to boost the English speaking population of Nova Scotia, to secure England's hold on the province after the forced evacuation of the French speaking Acadians in 1755.

It was in Liverpool that Abraham met and won the hand of Elizabeth Tupper, daughter of Israel Tupper and Mary Bourne. The Tupperes were an ancient and distinguished family of Sandwich on Cape Cod. Abraham and Elizabeth were married in Liverpool on 13 June 1762 and had their first four children there.

Captain Abraham is frequently mentioned in land records of Liverpool and in shipping news recorded in the diary of Simeon Perkins. The shipping news strongly implies that Abraham sailed mostly (perhaps exclusively) up and down the Atlantic coast from Newfoundland to the Caribbean.

Captain Abraham seems to have removed his family from Liverpool late in 1773 or early in 1774. There is a record of his selling his home there on 13 October 1773. They seem to have returned to New England, specifically to Sandwich, Massachusetts, where their last child, Sarah, was born on 18 June 1775.

I have tried exhaustively, but without much success, to discover where Captain Abraham's family lived throughout the Revolution, and what part, if any, he played in it. All I have found are the following two items:

1) On 21 May 1776, the sloop *Two Friends*, Abraham Copeland, Master, was captured by the Continental brig *Andrew Doria*, Nicholas Biddle, Master, off Rhode Island. The *Two Friends* was bound for Liverpool, Nova Scotia, loaded with sugar, rum, molasses and salt, from Tortola (in the British Virgin Islands, sixty miles east of Puerto Rico). The captors claimed that the *Two Friends* intended to supply the British Troops in Nova Scotia, and hence was fair game for an American privateer. The justice of that claim was to be determined by trial in Providence, but all my efforts to discover what the outcome was, have received no reply.

2) From *Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolution*, "Copeland, Abraham. Prize master, brigantine 'Hazard,' commanded by Capt. Simeon Samson; engaged March 29, 1778; discharged May 20, 1778; service, 1 mo. 21 days; roll dated Boston." This record seems to show him on the American side.

There is one more record, that shows he was still a mariner in 1787, as master of the sloop *Dolphin*, owned by Abiel Wood Jr.

Some years after the Revolution, Captain Abraham, presumably with his family, shows up in Winslow, Maine. On 3 July 1788, he bought land in Winslow from Micah Ellis. On 29 March 1790, he sold this to his son, Abraham Jr. Captain Abraham's wife Elizabeth did not participate in the latter deed, as she should have because she had dower rights in the property. This hints that she may have died by this time.

On 3 April 1789, Abraham and Elizabeth's daughter Elizabeth, of Winslow, married Barnabas Holway of Fairfield, Maine. This couple had thirteen children, including a son Abraham, born on 23 April 1799, and a daughter Elizabeth, born on 7 November 1803. I note these records because of the following passage from Warren Turner Copeland's 1937 genealogy of the Copeland family. He says:

Abraham Copeland was a sea captain and an extremely cross, crabbed, disagreeable person, so much so, that his family were glad when he went away, and sorry at his return. He was extremely partial to some of his children; always bringing something to Sally, while Betsey was allowed to go without. When sixty years of age, however [in 1796], he was converted and joined the Methodist Church, and was ever afterwards pleasant and agreeable.

They resided a long time in Waterville, Maine, until too old to live by themselves, when they moved to Starks, and lived with their daughter Betsey the remainder of their lives.

Both Capt. Abraham and his wife are buried at Starks, Maine.

Pat and I have been to Starks, and have examined all the obvious cemeteries there, but could not find markers for Abraham and Elizabeth, or any precise record of their deaths. Neither appears to have left an estate for probate. In the 1800 census of Fairfield, Maine, there is a listing for Barnabas Holley (sic) which seems to fit our Barnabas Holway, but which shows no presence of people of the age of Abraham or Elizabeth. The 1810 census shows the Holways still in Fairfield, so the statements about this couple in the Copeland genealogy probably should be taken with a grain of salt.

Elizabeth Tupper was born in Dartmouth, Bristol County, Massachusetts, on 2 June 1745, the last of five children of Israel Tupper Jr. and Mary Bourne. Her older siblings had been born in Sandwich, before the family moved to Dartmouth circa 1743. Her family is said to have lived for a while at Monument Ponds, near Plymouth, where her father was supposedly active in parish affairs. In about 1760, they moved to Liverpool, Nova Scotia, where both her father and her brother Nathan were prominent citizens.

There is a famous saying about Elizabeth, which I quote from Warren Turner Copeland, to wit: "Elizabeth (Tupper) his wife, was a very handsome, dignified, stately woman, and a fine dancer. She could dance a horn-pipe, with a glass of wine on her head, without spilling a drop. She was also very smart and capable."

I must confess that I doubt the bit about dancing the hornpipe, which is typically a very bouncy dance. Perhaps she waltzed with a glass of wine on her head (still a fine accomplishment). She married Capt. Abraham Copeland in Liverpool on 13 June 1762, when she was just seventeen. If what was said about her husband being so disagreeable was true, she must have had a rather trying marriage, with not much chance for dancing.

The latest record that mentions Elizabeth by name is that of the birth of Sarah, in Sandwich, Massachusetts, on 18 June 1775, when Elizabeth would have been only thirty. She could have had children for another fifteen years, but we find no record of such births. She is not mentioned in any official records in Maine, except that the 1790 census of Fairfield lists Abraham with two women in his family. One of these could have been Elizabeth. She did not surrender dower rights when Abraham sold property in 1790, which he had purchased in 1788. So, when Warren Turner Copeland says that both Abraham and Elizabeth are buried in Starks, Maine, I have to be skeptical.

Benjamin Page was born in Boston on 14 June 1730, the last of ten children of Edward Page and Ruth Jepson. He was baptized at the Second Church of Boston. He was a cabinet maker, whose shop and home were on Fish Street. He also had a license to sell strong drink.

He married Abigail Warner in Boston on 9 April 1757. He was of an age, though somewhat old, to have served in the Revolutionary War, but there is no record to show that he did so.

Benjamin made his will 17 December 1799, proved 16 November 1812. He bequeathed “one dollar each to sons William Wingfield Page and Benjamin Page, and to daughters Abigail Bell, Hannah McLane and Mary Copeland—all the rest & residue to beloved wife Abigail, to be divided at her death equally between the sons and daughters Abigail & Hannah, excepting one fifth part thereof which shall be divided between the children of my daughter Mary Copeland, to the said children and grandchildren, their heirs and assigns forever.” His widow Abigail was his executrix.

The name, William Wingfield Page, suggests a connection, by family or friendship, with a William Wingfield. There was a gentleman of this name living in Boston in July, 1769, whose Negro servant was suspected of having smallpox, but was released from hospital in a few days. A William Wingfield married Elizabeth Greenough in Boston on 30 September 1729. He appears to have died in Boston, 18 August 1774, called “Capt.” William Wingfield, and “merchant,” so he was probably a mariner.

Just when he was making this will, he and his son-in-law Nathaniel Copeland were involved in a dispute about the upkeep of the house that they shared. Benjamin actually outlived Nathaniel, dying in Boston on 4 November 1812.

Abigail Warner was born in Boston on 30 August 1737, the third of four children of Nathaniel Warner and Hannah Mountfort. She was baptized at the Second Church of Boston on 4 Sept 1737, called a daughter of Hannah, without mention of Nathaniel. This suggests that only her mother belonged to that church.

Her father died in England when Abigail was only nine. Her mother remarried when Abigail was thirteen, so Abigail had a stepfather, Thomas Gooding, during her teen years.

Abigail and Benjamin were married for fifty-five years, and Abigail lived another nine years as a widow. I have not been able to discover with whom she lived during her last years. She died in Boston on 20 October 1821.

Capt. Joseph Ruggles was born in Roxbury on 30 July 1725, the second of seven children of Joseph Ruggles and Joanna White. He married Rebeckah Curtis in Roxbury on 2 October 1748. He died in Roxbury on 9 June 1765.

Rebeckah Curtis was born in Roxbury on 29 May 1730. She was only thirty-five when her husband died. At that time her youngest child was only two. On 22 December 1772, again in Roxbury, she married Capt. Ezekiel How. I have no record of her death.

Cornelius Fellows was born in Ipswich, Massachusetts, on 19 November 1738, the third of eight children of Capt. Jonathan Fellows Jr. and Elizabeth Norwood. On 20 December 1763, he married Sarah Williams in Boston. They lived in Gloucester until about 1780, when they moved to Boston.

According to the Essex Institute, Cornelius Fellows brought the sloop *Abigail*, seventy-two tons, into Salem from Cadiz, 5 July 1763.

According to *Massachusetts Privateers* by Gardner Weld Allen (my great uncle), Cornelius Fellows commanded the Brigantine *Huntington*, four guns, fifteen men, on 20 May 1780, and the Brigantine *Constant*, four guns, twelve men, on 16 April 1782. He was one of the owners of the *Huntington*.

On 15 July 1783, Capt. Cornelius Fellows was elected one of the “standing committee” of First Church, Boston.

On 29 April 1795, Captain Cornelius made his will that was probated 8 Sept 1795. He named son Jonathan Fellows; daughter Sally Ruggles, wife of Nathaniel Ruggles; daughter Hannah Pierpont Fellows; sons Caleb and John Williams Fellows; daughters Elney Donnell Fellows, Nancy Fellows and Harriet Fellows; sons Cornelius and Nathaniel Fellows. These ten children were each to have one tenth of his estate. No division was to be made until the youngest child came of age. Until that time, the income from the estate was to be applied to the education and support of the children.

His brother Nathaniel Fellows was to be executor. Cornelius died, and Nathaniel Ruggles was appointed Administrator *de bonis non*, with will attached, on 22 July 1806. Captain Cornelius died in Guadeloupe, West Indies, in July 1795. Guadeloupe had been continuously in French hands during the Revolution, so was a popular Caribbean port for American mariners. A list of the surviving heirs, made in 1810, showed Sally Ruggles, Caleb Fellows, Jonathan Fellows, the heirs of Hannah Fellows deceased, Elery D. Davies, Harriet Davies, Nancy Hunt now Nancy Williams, and the estate of Cornelius Fellows Jr., deceased.

According to Boston marriage records, Capt. Cornelius Fellows married Hannah Parker just before he made this will, but she was not mentioned. Whether she died almost immediately after the marriage, or whether she and Captain Cornelius had made a prenuptial agreement excluding her from the benefits of his estate is not clear.

Sarah Williams was born in Roxbury on 8 December 1741, the third of five children of Capt. John Williams and his cousin Elizabeth Williams. Sarah was only five when her mother died and about fourteen when her father remarried. This second marriage gave her six little half siblings. Being the only daughter of the first marriage, Sarah was probably called upon to help with the raising of her half siblings.

Having given birth to thirteen children, including one pair of twins, Sarah died on 11 April 1789, when her youngest child was only five.

Lt. Samuel Kent Sr. was born in Charlestown, Massachusetts, on 18 July 1714, the fifth of nine children of Joseph Kent and Rebecca Chittenden. He married Rebecca Adams of Cambridge on 27 November 1740. He was a blacksmith, school teacher and soldier.

Samuel Kent was a taxpayer of Charlestown 1736–1737 and 1741–1770. He served as a private in Capt. John Codman's company in 1748, and was a teacher in West Cambridge in 1768. He appeared as a selectman of Charlestown in 1767–1771.

On 25 February 1764, Samuel made an agreement with all the other heirs of Joseph and Rebecca Kent, to buy their interests in their parents' estate. (This fascinating document is with the Benjamin Kent papers at the American Antiquarian Society [AAS] in Worcester, Massachusetts.)

When Samuel died, on 21 May 1771 in Somerville, Massachusetts, Peter Tufts Jr. became guardian for minor children Samuel and Sarah. His estate in Charlestown (now Somerville) was partly burned by the British during the Battle of Bunker Hill on 17 June 1775. A fascinating inventory of his estate is in the Benjamin Kent papers at AAS. On 6 April 1772, after Samuel had died, his children, through their guardian, their husband, or for themselves, rented their share of his estate for the benefit of their mother's father, Joseph Adams.

Rebecca Adams was born in Cambridge on 12 September 1720, the eldest of six children of Lt. Joseph Adams and Rachel Allen. She died in 1773, but we do not know the precise date or place.

The Kent papers at AAS include a transcription from Rebecca's gravestone. Unfortunately it is not dated. Here it is:

*Here also is interr'd the Body of Rebecca the wife of Samuel Kent, and daughter of Joseph Adams.
She was a faithful & diligent wife. She was prudent in all the Affairs of Her Household.
She was happy in her Consort, & he in her. Her natural disposition was kind, cheerful and good.
She was plain hearted, and her Religion was without Hypocrisy. Therefore on good grounds she
always depended on God.*

It seems as though this must have been a partial transcription of a double stone, but unfortunately we do not know its location.

Abraham Hill was born circa 1734, probably in Menotomy (now Arlington), Massachusetts, the eldest of nine children of Zechariah Hill and Rebecca Cutter. We have no record of his birth, but his gravestone says that he was seventy-eight when he died in 1812.

He married Susanna Wellington on 16 February 1758 in Cambridge. He was a private in the French and Indian wars, and again in the Revolution. I reproduce here an entry from *Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolution*, which illustrates how difficult it has been to trace this Hill line confidently. (The Hill family was extraordinarily fond of the given names Abraham and Zechariah, so that there were many men in the same town, at the same time, with the same name. Fortunately, there seems to have been no other Abraham of the same age as ours, at this place and time.)

Hill, Abraham, Cambridge. Private, Capt. Benjamin Lock's Co., Lieut. Col. William Bond's (late Col. Thomas Gardner's) 37th regt.; company return dated Prospect Hill, Oct. 6, 1775; age, 17 yrs.; stature, 5 ft. 8 in.; residence, Cambridge; enlisted May 4, 1775; also, company receipt for wages for Oct., 1775, dated Camp Prospect Hill; also, order for bounty coat or its equivalent in money dated Prospect Hill, Dec. 22, 1775; also, Private, Capt. William Adams's Co., Col. Thatcher's regt.; service, 5 days; company marched at request of Gen. Washington at the time of taking Dorchester Heights March 4, 1776; also, Capt. Benjamin Blaney's Co., Col. Eleazer Brooks's regt. of guards;

joined Jan. 12, 1778; service to April 3, 1778, 83 days, at Cambridge; also, list of men raised in Middlesex Co., agreeable to resolve of June 9, 1779, as returned by Joseph Hosmer, Superintendent for said county; also, descriptive list of men raised in 1779 to serve in the Continental Army; age, 44 yrs.; stature, 5 ft. 6? in.; complexion, light; engaged for town of Cambridge; delivered to Ensign T. Clarke; also, Major's Co.; entered service July 27, 1779; discharged April 27, 1780; term, 9 months.

Interestingly, both an Abraham Hill and a Zechariah Hill, neither a direct ancestor of ours, served in the regiment of our ancestor, Col. William Bond.

Abraham died on 16 December 1812, in Menotomy.

Susannah Wellington was born circa 1737, probably in Watertown, Massachusetts, the eldest of two children of Thomas Wellington and Cherry Adams. Both her parents had been married before, so she had four older half siblings, one of whom was also an ancestor of ours.

Susannah died on 14 September 1817, “aged 80,” according to her gravestone.

Capt. Job Bradford was born circa 1725, probably in Kingston, Massachusetts, the fourth of eight children of Capt. Gershom Bradford and Priscilla Wiswall.

Little is known of the birth and early life of Captain Job. It has been asserted, without documentation, that he was born in Kingston, Massachusetts, in 1726, son of Capt. Gershom Bradford and Priscilla Wiswall, but there is no confirmation of this in the published vital records of that town. This assertion, first published by Guy Fessenden in the *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register (NEHGR)* in 1850, probably came from Captain Job's grandson, William Bowes Bradford Jr. Since this grandson was only two years old when Captain Job died, he did not really know his grandfather, and must have received the information from his father or from some written source.

The earliest record of Captain Job which I have found is a newspaper account of his bringing the sloop *David* into New York from Boston on 8 January 1750. Thus, he was already a master mariner when only twenty-four. There are several more shipping records from 1755, 1756 and 1757. (I have made a timeline for him, including all that I could find.) His intention to marry Elizabeth Parkman was announced in Boston on 5 January 1758. He married her in the New North Church on 26 January 1758 and was admitted to membership in the church on 3 February 1760.

The descent of Captain Job from Captain Gershom and Priscilla Wiswall has only recently been proved by a land record (Plymouth County Land Records, Book 72, page 185), which says, on 23 September 1791:

Know all men by these presents that we, William Bowes Bradford. and Joseph Nash Bradford. of Boston in the County of Suffolk in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, in consideration of the sum of thirty-five Shillings lawful money paid us by John Faunce of Kingston in the County of Plymouth—hereby give grant sell and convey unto the said John Faunce his heirs and assigns the one Eight part of a certain piece of Meadow & Meadowish Land Lying in Plimton [Plympton] in the County of Plymouth afforesaid at a place called Jones river Meadow, which formerly belonged to Capt. Gershom Bradford late of Bristol in the State of Road Island Decd, which fell to us by our Father Job Bradford late of Boston Deceased.—

Earlier deeds record the sale of the other seven eighths part of this inheritance by the other surviving heirs of Captain Gershom.

Curiously, there is a complete absence of the names Gershom and Priscilla among the nine children of Captain Job and Elizabeth. Elizabeth's parents are honored by the naming of her children Samuel (twice) and Dorcas. None of Captain Job's siblings are honored by the naming of a child, although Joseph Nash Bradford was named for the husband of Job's sister Hopestill. Elizabeth's siblings William Bowes Parkman and Abigail Parkman were also so honored.

My hunch is that there was some estrangement between Captain Job and his parents, perhaps over his decision to go to sea. In adult life, Job is very close to his father-in-law, Samuel Parkman. (Admittedly, this was in the years after the death, on 4 April 1757, of Captain Gershom.) Also, the naming of the children may have fallen to Elizabeth, since Job was so frequently at sea.

Captain Job's maritime career was much more exciting than could be deduced from published genealogies. Among the items recorded in the "Early American Newspapers" series are accounts of his being captured twice by privateers, his being shipwrecked after colliding with a sunken ship in the Gulf Stream off the Carolina coast, and his being briefly confined on a prison ship (presumably English) in Newport harbor in late 1777. I suspect that the latter imprisonment resulted from an unsuccessful bit of privateering on his part. I found these adventures so interesting, that I had two short articles about them published in *New England Ancestors* in 2007.

Captain Job continued at sea at least through 12 August 1785, when he wrote to Caleb Davis from Wilmington, North Carolina, that he had sold Caleb's schooner *Betsey*, and had good prospects of getting a ride home to Boston.

Capt. Job Bradford died in Boston on 29 April 1789. Newspaper notices called him sixty-three at that time. He was probably born in the summer or fall of 1725.

Elizabeth Parkman was born in Boston on 30 April 1732, the second of seven children of Samuel Parkman and Dorcas Bowes. Her mother died when Elizabeth was fifteen and her youngest sister was only two. Her father did not remarry, so Elizabeth must have had a big share in the raising of her siblings.

We know little of her life, except that she and Job belonged to the New North Church, which was within easy walking distance of their home on Union Street. (If you are in Boston today, and should drop in to the Union Oyster House for dinner or a snack, you will be very close to her home.)

She, like the wife of any other master mariner, had to accommodate to the absences of her husband, and the apprehensions that he might come to harm, which he frequently did. However, she came from a long line of mariners, and probably had help in dealing with that. Neither she nor Job left wills, but there are probate files for the administration of their estates by their son William Bowes Bradford. These have the interesting feature that William Bowes proclaimed himself to be a Quaker, and was therefore excused from swearing an oath, in the usual form, for faithful administration.

Elizabeth died in Boston, on 8 May 1787. We have no record of her place of burial.

CHAPTER SEVEN

✂ *Fifth Great-Grandparents*

Enos Sherman was born in Stratford, Connecticut, on 16 April 1699, the ninth of fourteen children of Benjamin Sherman and Rebecca Phippen. He married Abigail Walker on 28 January 1725, in Stratford.

On 13 January 1739/40, he was bonded to administer the estate of his mother-in-law, Abigail Wright, who had remarried after the death of Enos's father-in-law, Samuel Walker. His report to the court is quite interesting.

The land records of Stratford are full of information about him. He lived on Snake Creek Hill, near the Pasquannack River. The deeds include two deeds of gift from his father, Benjamin Sherman, and several deeds that identify the grandfather, Jacob Walker, of his wife. In February 1756 he sold his farm in Stratford, and moved a bit southwest to the new town of Weston. On 13 December 1763, he signed a petition for the formation of a new church parish in North Fairfield, which became the Congregational Church of Easton.

On 28 May 1788, calling himself "Enos Sherman of Weston," he made a deed of gift to his son Josiah. I have found no will or death record for Enos, but Donald Jacobus thought that he died in 1793, presumably in Weston.

Abigail Walker was born in Wethersfield, Connecticut, on 11 April 1698, first of the five daughters (no sons) of Samuel Walker and Abigail Butler.

We don't know when Abigail died, except that it was after the birth of her last child, on 21 March 1735. She would then have been only thirty-seven, and could have had more children, of whom we find no record; so I guess she died during, or soon after, the birth of her last child.

Enoch Gregory was baptized in the Stratfield church on 28 December 1707, and was presumably born shortly before that, as the third of six children of Samuel Gregory II and Mary Silliman. Together with his elder brother Thaddeus, Enoch was executor of his father's will in February 1743. He inherited a portion of his father's homestead in Stratford, along with other lands. He married Esther Smith circa 1725.

Enoch was a slave owner who devised his Negro Tom to his wife Esther in a will made on 23 January 1764. He also stipulated, "It is my will that all the rest of my negros when they are sold shall have the privilege of chosing their masters if it can be without too much ___ to my executor." His wife Esther and son Samuel were to be executors, and Samuel gave bond on 19 March 1777.

The surviving children whom he named (in 1764) were sons Samuel, Enoch, Gilead and Ebenezer, and daughters Penina Jackson (and her children), Miriam Sherman, Esther Beach, Ann Hawley and Deborah Seeley. An early distribution of his estate identified his sons-in-law, as follows "Peninah, ye wife of Samuel Jackson; Meriam, ye wife of Josiah Sherman; Esther, ye widow of Thomas Beach; Anna, ye wife of Thomas Hawley; Deborah, ye wife of Nathan Seeley."

In 1791, another interesting list of his heirs was recorded, to wit: Samuel Gregory, Gilead Gregory, Daniel Gregory, Enoch Gregory, Ephraim Sterling (conservator of son Enoch Gregory's estate), Josiah Sherman, Miriam Sherman, Penina Jackson, Josiah Brinsmaid, Esther Brinsmaid, Thomas Hawley, Ann Hawley, Deborah Seeley, Ebenezer Gregory. The presence of Ephraim Sterling on this list is interesting, because he was then the husband of our ancestress Sarah (Silliman) Seeley, and the man in whose honor we adopted the middle name Sterling in our branch of the Sherman family.

Enoch died shortly before 23 December 1776.

Esther Smith was born circa 1707, probably in Fairfield, Connecticut, the fifth of six daughters of Samuel Smith Jr. and Deborah Jackson. Her father died when she was only about four. The court assigned her stepfather, Thomas Bailey, to be guardian to her and her sisters.

Esther's gravestone survives in the Old Stratfield Burying Ground, inscribed, "In memory of Esther Gregory, Wife of Mr. Enoch Gregory, Who departed this life July 16th, 1790, in the 83^d year of her age."

Capt. Nathaniel Seeley was baptized at Fairfield, Connecticut, on 22 June 1701; presumably he was born shortly before that, the only child of Nathaniel Seeley and Hannah Odell. His father died when he was not quite two, and his mother remarried to Jacob Sterling circa 1705 or 1706. By this second marriage, Captain Nathaniel acquired at least three younger brothers and a younger sister.

In about 1724, Captain Nathaniel married Elizabeth Jackson, daughter of Joseph Jackson and Elizabeth Sanford. Capt. Nathaniel Seeley was a founding member of the church at Easton, Connecticut. He was also on the Easton School Committee, as was his son Samuel and Samuel's son-in-law, Josiah Sherman. On 21 February 1775, Capt. Nathaniel Seeley was moderator of the Easton Church.

Captain Nathaniel made his will on 27 November 1784. It was presented in court on 1 August 1791, but was not proved. Nevertheless, it is genealogically interesting, naming granddaughter Rebecka Jennings, daughter Elizabeth Jennings, "Catee and Jemima the two daughters of my son Samuel Seeley deceased;" Tabatha Lacy, daughter of deceased daughter Sarah; Abigail, daughter of deceased son Ephraim; Ebenezer, Sarah, Catee and Abigail, all children of deceased daughter Ann Lord; beloved son Ezra Seeley to be sole executor.

Captain Nathaniel died at Stratfield, Connecticut, on 27 March 1786 and is buried in the Old Stratfield Burying Ground.

There is a Seeley Road in Trumbull, Connecticut, running right into the line between Trumbull and Easton. (Actually, that line is now submerged beneath the Easton Reservoir.) In 1999 I saw a handsome old house on this road, which may well have been Captain Nathaniel's home. Unfortunately, it was defended by a very impressive German Shepherd, so I did not go close to inquire.

Elizabeth Jackson was born on 15 November 1702, probably in Stratfield, the second of three children of Joseph Jackson and Elizabeth Sanford. Her father died when she was thirteen, and she later had a stepfather, Thomas Chambers.

Elizabeth died intestate, but she had an estate independent of her husband, which was distributed on 2 April 1787, as follows: "To eldest son Nathaniel a double share. To heirs of daughter Ann Lord. To daughter Elizabeth Jennings, wife of Nehemiah Jennings. To sons Ezra and Hezekiah Seeley. To heirs of daughter Sarah Hubbell. To heirs of son Ephraim Seeley. To heirs of son Samuel Seeley." This shows that she outlived four of her children.

She died at Stratfield on 9 December 1781 and was buried in the Old Stratfield Burying Ground.

Dea. Daniel Silliman was born at Fairfield on 31 December 1722, the third of six children of Robert Silliman Jr. and Ruth Treadwell.

He married in Fairfield on 13 March 1746 Sarah Burr, daughter of Capt. John Burr and Sarah Wakeman.

He was one of the founding members of the Easton Church, and was elected deacon there on 3 May 1764. It may seem that Deacon Daniel moved around a lot, but Fairfield, Stratfield and Easton are all within a few miles of one another. Pat and I explored all this territory very enjoyably in 1999.

He made his will on 7 January 1772, calling himself "Daniel Silliman of Fairfield Town and County." He named his beloved wife Sarah, sons Daniel (eldest), Isaac, Joseph and Justus; and daughters Mary, Sarah, Ruth, Catherine, Ann and Rhoda. His wife Sarah was to be the sole executor. Because Sarah predeceased him by three days, there was a last-minute codicil, naming son Daniel to be sole executor. The will was proved on 12 March 1773.

He died in Stratfield on 25 February 1773, and was reportedly buried in the Easton Cemetery, although there is a memorial stone to him in the Old Stratfield Burying Ground.

Sarah Burr was born in Fairfield on 7 February 1724/5, the second of twelve children of Capt. John Burr and Sarah Wakeman. Fortunately, the first three of this great brood were daughters, who could help their mother out.

Sarah was named in her father's will as "Daughter Sarah, wife of Danl Silliman. I gave her all she gets when she was married."

There is a memorial stone for Sarah in the Old Stratfield Burying Ground, inscribed, "In memory of Mrs. Sarah Silliman, Wife of Mr. Daniel Silliman, that departed this life Feb y^e 22^d, A.D. 1773, aged 48 years."

Moses Noble was born in Westfield, Massachusetts, on 2 April 1710, the second of nine children of Sgt. Luke Noble and Ruth Wright.

On 2 September 1731, Moses married Mary Grant, daughter of Sgt. Joseph Grant and Mary Warren. They were members of the Church of Christ at Westfield, where their children were baptized, but not immediately after birth. For example, their son Luke was born on 14 December 1747, and not baptized until 13 April 1749. (This may have been an exception, for reasons of poor health, because Luke died on 12 January 1750/1.)

Many of the children of this couple moved to Rupert, Vermont, but some then returned to Southwick. Among the Hampshire County land records at Springfield, Massachusetts, are several describing lands of Moses, his father Luke and his son Reuben. These lands were on both sides of Simsbury Road in the second and third tier of lots of Westfield. Moses was identified as a husbandman in some of these.

Moses died in Southwick, Massachusetts, just south of Westfield, on 13 January 1771. There is a fine, moss covered cemetery there, which Pat and I explored from end to end, without finding any stones for this family.

Mary Grant was born at Windsor, Connecticut, seemingly the third of four children of Sgt. Joseph Grant and Mary Warren. I say “seemingly,” because her recorded siblings were born at unusually long intervals for this period.

Shortly after Moses Noble died at quite an advanced age, Mary married Hezekiah Jones. We have no record of this, but it seems likely that it occurred in December 1772 in Pittsfield, Massachusetts. Hezekiah Jones was a settler of Pittsfield, its first town moderator and one of its first assessors. It seems that he had lived in Westfield in the 1740s.

Again, we have no primary record for Mary’s death, but Lucius Boltwood, in his genealogy of the Noble family, suggests that it occurred circa 1784 in Pittsfield.

Samuel Ferguson was born (probably) in Aghadewy, County Londonderry, Ireland, circa 1698. He was said to be forty-three when he died in 1741.

We have found no record of him in Ireland, but have fair grounds to speculate that he came to America in 1718, with a group of Scotch Presbyterians from Aghadewy, led by their minister, James McGregor. This group went first to Boston, but soon settled farther north, in what is now New Hampshire and southern Maine. It was from this region that we get the first record that may refer to our Samuel Ferguson. There was a “sentinel” of that name in Capt. Johnson Harmon’s company, raised to drive Indians away from the vicinity of York, Maine, in 1721–1722.

When the Scots-Irish came to New England, they were often shunted off to the outer ring of European habitation, to serve as a shield against Indian raids. This was in part a tribute to their relative ruggedness and tolerance for hardship and danger, and in part a result of their fondness for the forms of church government and ritual to which they were accustomed. They were for the most part Presbyterians, arriving in territory in which the Congregational church was deeply entrenched. Some of the Congregationalists, such as in Hopkinton, tried initially to welcome the Scots-Irish to join them, and Samuel Ferguson and his first wife accepted baptism into the Congregational Church in Westborough. However, after a few years, the efforts at mutual tolerance and understanding wore thin, and the Presbyterians preferred, or were forced, to form their own churches as soon as they could support them.

He married twice, first to Isabel ____ circa 1727, probably in Westborough, Massachusetts; secondly to Eleanor, the widow of Moses Mitchell, circa 1732, probably in Westborough or in Hopkinton, Massachusetts.

It was through the record of baptisms of Samuel, Isabel and their daughter Mary that we learned where they came from in Ireland. I have seen, on microfilm at the Congregational Library in Boston, the original handwritten record of those baptisms. Rev. Ebenezer Parkman evidently needed to save paper, writing in a tiny script, with one line almost on top of the next. I finally found this entry, dated 24 December 1727: “Mary y^e Daughter of Samuel & Isabel Ferguson (of whose certificate signed by

Jos Elder & John Given, Elders of y^e Congregation of Aghadewy in Ireland I [Rev. Parkman] had received at their hands I propounded y^e^{ir} Desire in y^e forenoon & Manifest their Willingness to Submit to y^e Discipline of our Church.”

With help from the Ulster Historical Society, I learned that there are no surviving baptismal or marriage records from the Presbyterian congregation at Aghadewy, but that surviving session books, which record matters of church discipline and business, from 1702 onward, frequently mention an elder John Gwen. It is entirely possible that the name I transcribed as “Given,” from Reverend Parkman’s handwriting, was really intended to be Gwen. The names Ferguson, Gwen, Elder and Mitchell all occur in the session book, and although there is no record of Samuel Ferguson himself, there seem little doubt that Aghadewy was the place from which he immigrated. My reference to Mitchell will be explained later.

A Samuel Ferguson owned the covenant of the Westborough church on the day, 20 July 1729, when his son Samuel was baptized. Reverend Parkman’s account of this event may be genealogically significant. He wrote: “July 20, 1729 Samuel Ferguson* own’d the Covenant, and at his and his Wife Desire (who was received from Sudbury West precinct) Samuel their son was Baptized.” I have always assumed that the Samuel baptized in Westborough on 20 Jul 1729 was the son of our Samuel and Isabel, who clearly had a son Samuel of about that age. However, Rev. Parkman raises doubts with his further notation, “A Second Samuel Ferguson from Ireland.” This interjects an element of mystery into our story.

While living in Westborough, as a husbandman, Samuel bought property in the north half part of Worcester, next to a James Ferguson, who has been presumed to be his brother. This deed was made 18 January 1730/31, and received and recorded on 7 September 1733. Also in Westborough, Samuel and Isabel had, besides Mary, son Samuel and daughter Isabel.

It seems likely that wife Isabel died in childbirth in Westborough, when her daughter Isabel was born on 6 December 1730, and that shortly thereafter Samuel married Eleanor, the widow of Moses Mitchell. Probably this occurred in 1732, either in Westborough or Hopkinton. On 27 October 1732, Samuel bought land in Hopkinton, while still living in Westborough. By 28 June 1733, Samuel was living with Eleanor in Hopkinton where a sizeable group of Scots-Irish had joined the Congregational church. There their children James and Ann were born.

Less than a month after the birth of Ann, Samuel bought town lots in Glasgow (which was soon renamed Blanford) and in June 1736 he sold his lands in Hopkinton. By 1 April 1737, he had moved to Glasgow and was buying more land there. By the time he was well settled in Glasgow, Samuel’s health must have been declining, for on 17 August 1739 he made his will. The original document survives in the probate office in Northampton, Massachusetts, where I was allowed to handle and photocopy it. He described himself “Samuel Ferguson of Glasgow in the County of Hampshire, Husbandman, being very sick and weak of body but in perfect mind and memory ...” He made careful provisions for his wife Eleanor, his son Samuel, his daughters Isabel and Ann, and for his “son-in-law” William Mitchell and daughter Catherine Mitchell. Late probate documents and vital records make it clear that “son-in-law” then meant what we should call “stepson,” and that William and Catherine were Eleanor’s children by her first husband, Moses Mitchell. Samuel died on 19 September 1741 and was buried in the town cemetery in Blandford. Pat and I have visited his grave, which is well marked with a stone inscribed: “In Memory of Mr. Samuel Ferguson, who died Sept^r 19 1741 in y^e 43rd year of his age. Death is a debt that’s nature’s due, which I have paid and so must you.”

Next to his stone, and leaning cozily against it, stands one inscribed: “In Memory of Mrs Eleanor, wife of James Baird, who died Jan 25 1792 in the 93 year of her age.”

Sure enough, the will of James Baird and the inventory of Samuel Ferguson's estate prove that this stone belongs to Eleanor, whose three husbands were Moses Mitchell, Samuel Ferguson and James Baird. The genealogical study of Samuel Ferguson, even though it leaves his parentage and origins unknown, has been one of the most satisfying I have undertaken. It is in honor of him that I occasionally wear the beautiful Ancient Ferguson kilt.

Eleanor Unknown. Eleanor was born circa 1699, probably in or near Aghadewy, in County Londonderry, Ireland.

Her first husband (who she possibly married in Ireland) was Moses Mitchell. With him she had at least two children, William and Catherine Mitchell. William was baptized in Marblehead in October 1822. In that same month, a Moses Mitchell was, with his family, warned out of the town of Concord. Since his name was not at all common in that time and place, I suspect that this was our Eleanor's family.

We have no death record for Moses, and no way as yet to know whether William or Catherine was the elder. I suspect, with no solid evidence, that Moses died circa 1728 somewhere in Middlesex or Worcester counties.

John Mulliken is a mystery man. It was claimed in the *Boston Transcript* [genealogy column] that our Daniel McCleary married Mary Mulliken, the daughter of John Mulliken and Mary Pore. It is true that John and Mary Mulliken had a daughter Mary, but she was born about ten years later than our ancestress, and she married someone other than our ancestor. Furthermore, the marriage record for Daniel McCleary and our Mary spells her name Mary Mullican, so I fear we are at a dead end here.

Jonas Bond Esq. was born in Watertown on 10 December 1691, the second of four children of Col. Jonas Bond and Grace Coolidge. His mother died when he was seven years old, and his father remarried.

Jonas Jr. married Hannah Bright, daughter of Nathaniel Bright and Mary Coolidge, in Watertown on 4 December 1718.

He was appointed Justice of the Peace by Governor Shirley, and represented Watertown in the General Assembly from 1738 to 1750, excepting a single year. Most of our information about him comes from Dr. Henry Bond's book about Watertown, in which he says, "During the frequent contests between the East and West Precincts [Watertown and Waltham] before and after the incorporation of the latter, he was the leader of the former."

He died in September 1768.

Hannah Bright was born in Watertown on 6 August 1694, the sixth of nine children of Nathaniel Bright and Mary Coolidge. We are also descended from her older sister, Mary Bright.

She married soon after the death of her mother, had nine children, and lived to the ripe old age of ninety-one, outliving at least four of her adult children, and dying in Watertown in 1786.

Jonathan Brown was born circa 1694 in Watertown, the second of eight children of Capt. Abraham Brown and Mary Hyde. For some reason, there is no record of his birth, although the births of all of his younger siblings were recorded.

He married Elizabeth Simonds, daughter of Joseph Simonds and Mary Tidd, circa 1718 probably in Watertown, or in Lexington, where Elizabeth was living. We have found no record of that marriage. Dr. Bond reports that he was a selectman of Watertown in 1739, 1740 and 1741.

His gravestone, in the Watertown Burying Ground in Waltham, bears this inscription:

*Here lyes Buried the Body of Mr. Jonathan Brown
Who Departed this Life July ye 25th 1758 in ye 65th Year
of His Age
He was a lover of Steady good men he
Remained Steady in ye
Christian duties through
his Life, & we trust
Died their Death.*

Elizabeth Simonds was baptized in Lexington, on 13 November 1698, and was presumably born earlier that month. She was the youngest of eight children of Joseph Simonds and Mary Tidd.

I suspect that she may have had more than the seven children credited to her. [In particular, she had no son named for her father, and there is a five-year gap between births, circa 1731, into which such a son would nicely fit.]

Her gravestone, in the Watertown Burying Ground in Waltham, now called Grove Hill Cemetery, reads:

*Spectator Remember Death
In Memory of Mrs. Elizabeth Brown Wife to Mr. Jonathan Brown, Dec.
she died August ye 6th AD 1765 in ye 68th Year of her Age.*

Josiah Stearns was born in Watertown on 14 October 1704, the second of fourteen children of John Stearns and Abigail Fiske.

Josiah was a farmer and blacksmith. He inherited his father's homestead. He married first, Susannah Ball, 31 December 1729 in Watertown. She died after giving him five children; he married second, circa 1741, Dorothy Prentice; and he married third, on 23 April 1753, Mary Bowman. He had five more children with Dorothy, and one with Mary. Our ancestress, Susannah, was the daughter of James Ball and Elizabeth Fiske.

He made a will leaving an estate valued at 3610 pounds for real estate, 1150 pounds personal estate.

He died in Watertown on 11 April 1756.

Susannah Ball was born in Watertown on 16 March 1707/8, the last of eight children of James Ball and Elizabeth Fiske.

She had five children with her husband Josiah Stearns, and died within two years of the birth of her last child. Neither the exact date of death nor the cause of death is known. The usual estimated date of death, following Henry Bond, is 1740.

Capt. Jonathan Bemis was born in Watertown on 24 January 1724/5, the second of six children of Jonathan Bemis Sr. and Anna Livermore. He married Huldah Livermore in Waltham on 4 May 1748. She was the daughter of Dea. Thomas Livermore and Mary Bright.

I haven't discovered how he got his military title, but he would have been of the right age to participate in John Winslow's expeditions to Nova Scotia.

We don't have a record of his death. [However an undocumented Internet source gives 1 January 1771. Also, a Jonathan Bemis of Watertown had an estate appraised in 1775. Bond says that Huldah died in 1803, "many years a widow," so these dates in the 1770s may refer to our man.]

Huldah Livermore was born in Watertown on 7 August 1722, the seventh of eight children of Dea. Thomas Livermore and Mary Bright.

She had eight children over a span of twenty one years, and then lived another thirty-three years, outliving our ancestress, her daughter Hannah, by twenty-eight years.

She died in Lunenburg, Massachusetts, in 1803, according to Henry Bond.

Martin Hardin, called "Ruffle Shirt Martin" by family genealogists to distinguish him from his many relatives of the same name, was born circa 1716, probably in Wicomico Parish of Northumberland County, Virginia. This was just when his father was acquiring land in nearby Richmond County. Unfortunately, there are no surviving birth records for Martin or any of his siblings, so birth dates are guessed from bits of indirect evidence. For example, Martin was designated as an executor of his father's will, made on 16 March 1734/5 and probated in May 1735, but he was not allowed to serve, presumably because he was not yet of age. The fact that his father thought he could serve suggests that he was nearly of age (twenty-one). On 15 May 1736, Martin was old enough to witness a deed in Prince William County I think the minimum age for doing that was seventeen, so I have guessed that he was about nineteen in 1735. This could easily be off by a year or two.

When an infant, Martin moved northwest several miles, into what was then Richmond County, where his father had taken up land that drained into the Rappahannock, but abutted the Potomac drainage. In about 1731, when Prince William County was formed, the family moved to adjacent land in the drainage of Elk Run, in the new county.

In 1735, Martin inherited from his father 210 acres of land in Prince William County, being the southwest portion of the 642-acre tract his father had acquired in 1723.

Martin was a man of substance and enterprise, frequently mentioned in the court and land records of the Northern Neck of Virginia and neighboring counties such as Culpeper. He ran an ordinary [tavern and inn] at the intersection of the Shenandoah Hunting Path and the old German Path, near Elk Run, in Prince William, where the family lived for several years. It is recorded that George Washington visited his ordinary, and quite likely that Ruffle Shirt Martin knew the future president.

He was one of the founders of the town of Dumfries in Prince William County, in the days when that place had an important harbor on the Potomac River, from which Virginia tobacco was shipped to Scotland and England. It is reported that for a while, the volume of shipping through Dumfries exceeded that through New York. That harbor has long since silted up, and Dumfries itself is being swallowed up by the growth of southern suburbs of Washington, D.C.

In about 1740, presumably in Prince William County, Martin married Lydia Waters. I used to be very skeptical of her identification, since there is no record of the marriage. There is a colorful story (tragic from our viewpoint) about the lack of surviving church records for the parish in which the

Hardins lived in those days. According to Fairfax Harrison, in *Landmarks of Old Prince William*, the old records of Hanover Parish, in which we might have found many Hardin entries, were being carelessly kept by the parish vestry, and were transferred to the care of the county clerk. This worthy, not impressed by the seriousness of his new duty, used the record sheets, one by one, to light his cigars! However, there are plenty of land and court records to show that the Hardin and Waters families lived only a few miles apart in Prince William, and there is quite strong evidence that Lydia had a brother Philemon, whose son of the same name went to Kentucky with the Hardins, and in at least one document, called them “cousin.”

Martin seems to have had a comfortable and prosperous life in Fauquier County, but in about 1768 he joined his older brother John in a major move, across the Appalachian mountains to the waters of the Monongahela River, not far from present day Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania. There they settled on Georges Creek in an area which then belonged either to Virginia or Pennsylvania, the question being hotly disputed until 1793, by which time the Hardins had moved on to Kentucky.

At first the Hardins and other Virginians may not have cared greatly, in which state their new home lay, and we find them recording their land purchases and surveys in Pennsylvania courts, and serving in Pennsylvania military units during the Revolution. However, they had brought their Negro slaves with them, and when Pennsylvania law made it clear that gradual emancipation of the slaves would be required, the Hardins and others subscribed to the theory that Georges Creek and surrounding Springhill Township were really part of West Augusta, and then Monongalia County, Virginia, so they would not be subject to Pennsylvania law.

Thus it happened that when Martin made his will, on 20 November 1779, he called himself “*Martin Hardin of Monongahala County, Colony of Virginia*” and had the will proved and recorded in Monongalia County Court. At that time the court met on the plantation of Theophilus Phillips, “Phillips’s Choice,” in Springhill Township, the same township in which Martin lived. [It may be only a coincidence, but the grandfather of this Theophilus Phillips was a brother-in-law of that Martin Hardin who lived in Hopewell, New Jersey. They both married daughters of Samuel Hunt, and served together to appraise Samuel’s estate on 26 November 1719.]

We have no precise death date for “Ruffle Shirt” Martin, but can bracket it between the date of his will, 20 November 1779, and the date of a Fauquier County court record in July 1780, which noted that he was dead. The contents of Martin’s will are worth some description. He did not name his wife Lydia, presumably because she had recently died. He gave his son Mark all his lands in Fauquier and Culpeper Counties. He gave son John lands on Sandy Creek in Monongalia County, and two hundred acres on Peters Creek in Yohogania County[now part of West Virginia]. He gave son Martin the land on Georges Creek in Monongalia County on which he was living. He named his daughters Mary Wickliffe, Lydia Wickliffe and Rosannah McMahan, and their husbands Robert, Charles and John, and made complicated provisions for their use of the family slaves. He named his grandsons, Charles Wickliffe and Martin Hardin Wickliffe, children of Charles and Lydia. He distributed cash, twenty pounds apiece, to all his daughters, including Sarah Hardin, who was still single.

That was all Sarah received. Several genealogists say that Martin and Lydia had a fifth daughter, Hannah, who married James Neal, a neighbor in Springhill Township. Nor was Hannah on a record of the births of Martin and Lydia’s children which came down through the family of Col. John Hardin. Hannah and her husband were still alive when Martin wrote his will, so it seems to me that we must have some convincing evidence, of which I have not yet heard, before we can accept her as a member of this family group.

We don’t know where Martin was buried. The area where he lived has been extensively strip-mined for coal, so any family cemeteries are probably long gone.

Lydia Waters was born circa 1720, probably in Stafford or King George County, Virginia. Family tradition holds that she was a daughter of Thomas Waters and Rosa Wickliffe.

There are no surviving contemporary records of her birth or marriage, but there is quite a lot of circumstantial evidence to support the claim that her maiden name was Waters. In particular, it seems very likely that she had a brother Philemon Waters, and a nephew of that same distinctive name. In a 1723 quit rent roll for Overwharton Parish of Stafford County, both Thomas and Philemon Waters were listed as tenders of tobacco. On 30 July 1760, Martin Hardin and Philemon Waters were together on a jury in Prince William County. Both Philemon Waters and Philemon Jr. were frequently mentioned in the court minute books of Prince William County. In 1737, Thomas Waters was named in the estate papers of Thomas Osborne in Prince William County. In the 1741 election of Burgesses for Prince William County, Martin Hardin voted for William Fairfax and Thomas Harrison, while Philemon Waters voted for Valentine Peyton and Major Blackburn.

We are told that this Waters family lived near the junction of Cedar Run and the Ocoquan River, near the planned (but never executed) settlement of French Huguenots at Brenttown. Elk Run empties into Cedar Run, and the total distance between the Hardin and Waters homes was only a few miles, over level country; so Lydia and Martin were certainly within “kissing distance” when they met and courted.

We do not have a death date for Lydia, but suppose that she probably died in 1779, while her sons were either in Kentucky or still in military service during the Revolution.

Nathaniel Davies is another mystery man, genealogically speaking. We know from Lyman Draper’s interviews with his grandson, Mark Hardin of Shelbyville, Kentucky, that Nathaniel and his wife were living in Washington County, Tennessee, in 1800, when Mark spent almost a year with them. Draper reported: “In the fall of 1800 he [Mark Hardin] went to East Tennessee, Washington County, to visit his grandfather and grandmother the parents of his mother, whom he had never met. Whilst there on the 2d October 1800, a horse threw him and fractured badly his leg—more than a year he was confined, and was brought to Ky in a carriage in Nov 1801.” Draper then quotes Mark as follows: “My grandfather’s name was Nathaniel Davies from some almanacs in his possession (1708.) I find that Owen David and Nathaniel Davie were the ancestors of my grandfather and grandmother, one family named David, the other Davie, originally from Wales.”

I have made extensive search of probate and land records of Washington County, and Pat and I have visited the county in hopes of discovering more about Nathaniel and his wife, but we have found nothing decisive.

David Logan was probably born circa 1710 in Northern Ireland. We know nothing of his antecedents, but assume that they came to Ireland from Scotland, since David showed himself to be loyal to the Presbyterian Church in Virginia.

David was in Orange County, Virginia, by 22 June 1738, when he and others were sued for libel by the Presbyterian minister, William Williams. On 26 October 1738, he received the bounty for a wolf’s head.

On 22 May 1740, in court in Orange County, Virginia, David took oath and said that he had brought himself, wife and oldest two children from Ireland to Philadelphia and on to Virginia, at his own expense. Family tradition says that he and his wife Jane McKinley were married in Lurgan, County Armagh. This must have occurred circa 1735.

He moved south fairly quickly, into the Shenandoah Valley of Virginia, and had his children baptized at the old stone Augusta church.

He died in Augusta County early in 1757. We do not have an exact date, but there was a court record that said a suit was abated because of his death.

Jane McKinley was born circa 1706, we think, in Ireland, perhaps in Lurgan, County Armagh. I have guessed her birth date by assuming that she was forty-five when her last child was born. Her granddaughter, Mary (Logan) Smith, said that she had been brought to this country at age nine, but this conflicts with a 1740 court record in Orange County, which shows that she was already married, with two children, when brought over. (I need to look for the original of that court record, to see whether her given name was specified or whether it was added in transcription by some helpful genealogist.)

We have no record of her death, but granddaughter Mary said that she came to Kentucky after the Revolution. Presumably, she died there soon thereafter. If my guess at a birth date is close, she would have been well into her seventies.

William Montgomery Sr. was born circa 1727, either in Virginia, Pennsylvania or Northern Ireland. No one seems to know for sure who his parents were.

He married, almost certainly in Virginia, circa 1750, Jane/Jean Patterson? There is no surviving marriage record, but a land deed on 15 August 1759 gives her name as Jean, whereas her appointment as administratrix of her husband's estate on 21 February 1781 names her Jane.

In the fall of 1779, William, with his wife and younger children, joined their son-in-law Benjamin Logan at St. Asaph's in Kentucky, where they had been preceded by some of their older sons. Their son Alexander had already been killed by Indians in 1778, on an abortive raid across the Ohio River to steal horses from the Indians at Chillicothe.

The Indian threat seemed minimal in 1779, and the Montgomery family and another son-in-law, Joseph Russell, built four cabins on the headwaters of Green River about twelve miles from Logan's fort. This was in late fall 1780. They moved into the new cabins about Christmas.

On 27 February 1781, their optimism about the Indians was shattered. William Sr. and a Negro man stepped out of their cabin to collect wood, and were immediately shot and killed. Their son John was killed as he rose from bed. Son William Jr. put up a good defense, killing one Indian and shattering the thigh of a second. Daughter Betsy managed to run to a neighboring settlement and raise the alarm. Joseph Russell also managed to escape. Mother Jane/Jean and youngest daughter Flora happened to be staying at Logan's Fort and were safe.

The Indians had captured Russell's wife and children, John Montgomery's wife and a Negro girl. The rescue party from Logan's Fort soon overtook the Indians and released all the captives except little Flora Russell, who was tomahawked just after she had exclaimed, "Here comes Uncle Ben!"

Jean Patterson was born circa 1730, probably in Virginia or Pennsylvania. We have no contemporary record of her birth. The DAR pedigree of Mrs. Ruth Hamilton Everingham seems to have given the earliest suggestion of this maiden name, and asserts that her parents were Robert Patterson and Elenor Porter.

We know that she survived the Indian attack which killed her husband in 1781, and might be able to get some later information about her from Lincoln County records.

Dirck Volkertsen (aka Richard Fulkerson) was baptized 22 March 1718 at the First Reformed Church of Raritan, Somerset County, New Jersey. He was the eldest of ten children of Volkert Derrickson and Dinah Van Leuen.

In 1736 or 37, Dirck's father moved his family a few miles west, to Readington in Hunterdon County. It was probably there that Dirck married, circa 1738, Neeltje (Elenor). We know Elenor's given name from her will, but have never found a clue to her maiden name. We know that Dirck and the next oldest son, Frederick, were still in New Jersey in September 1745, when they paid bail for their father, who was a frequently delinquent debtor. They had him released into their care.

It seems likely that Dirck and Frederick left New Jersey in early 1748, or even a bit earlier, to seek new lands along the border between Virginia and North Carolina. They were part of a great migration of people from New Jersey and Pennsylvania who followed the Great Wagon Road south. It seems that the Fulkersons' lands were near, or even straddling, the road where it crossed the colony line. We have a record of the survey of six hundred acres on both sides of Marrowbone Creek for Frederick, dated 18 March 1748.

Tragedy struck the family of Dirck and probably of his neighbor Thomas Bledsoe in March or early April 1758. The first inkling of this is found in the *Records of the Moravians in North Carolina* (page 188 of Vol. 1) where it says, under the date 6 April 1758: "Two families, coming to us for protection, brought confirmation of the rumor that the Shawnee Indians have murdered several people about 40 miles from here, in Halifax County, between the Mayo and Irvine Rivers, on the No. Carolina line. Billy Hall said he helped bury one of the men who had been shot."

I believe that our Dirck was one of the men killed on that occasion, and that Thomas Bledsoe was another. Thomas was a nephew, by marriage, of Dirck, having married Frederick's daughter Susannah. On 21 July 1758, Susannah, widow of Thomas Bledsoe, was appointed in Rowan County, North Carolina, to administer Thomas's estate. One of her bondsmen was her father, Frederick Fulkerson.

A more detailed account of the Shawnee raid was given in a letter written to *The Pioneer* on 2 March 1843, by a very old gentleman, Benjamin Sharp of Warren County, Missouri. He wrote: "In an early day, at the first settling of Mayo river, now Patrick county in Virginia, the Indians made a horrid breach in that settlement, but I am unable to name the year or month in which it happened. Several families were destroyed and a number of prisoners carried off. Richard Fulkerson, an uncle of my wife, and his family, with the exception of his wife and two small children, were killed; and although I have seen both their children after they grew up, yet I cannot say by what means they escaped from the massacre. Peter Fulkerson, another of her uncles and his wife and child, were taken prisoners."

Benjamin Sharp's information and recollection were imperfect, but in many respects ring true. He did indeed marry Hannah Fulkerson, daughter of Dirck's brother James. It is a pity that Sharp did not name the children he had met in later life.

Neeltje (aka Elenor) Unknown. Neeltje is a mystery woman, for whom I have never found a maiden name or birth date.

She married Dirck Volkertsen circa 1738, presumably in New Jersey. We don't know how many children she had by him—only that four, two sons and two daughters seem to have escaped the massacre by Shawnees. She then married a Mr. Chambers (given name unknown, but quite possibly William) and had two more children, a son and a daughter.

We don't know how she survived the Shawnee raid. Perhaps their cabin was too strong to be forced, perhaps she was away visiting neighbors or relatives.

We are saved from complete ignorance by the fact that she made a will, which I have seen in the original at the North Carolina Archives in Raleigh. The will was made on 2 June 1781, when General Cornwallis was still ravaging North Carolina, and camped with his troops on the grounds of the Red House Church in Semora, Caswell County. This was very close to where the Fulkersons then lived.

Neeltje called herself “Elnear Chambers of Gilford County” and signed with her mark, a backward N. Neeltje was the old Dutch nickname for Elenor, which became Nelly in later generations. Her will provided:

Item I give to my daughter Sarah Stuart a pattern of Cotton Cloth for a gown one Quilted Petticoat one fine apron one white handkerchief—

Item I give to my Daughter Elenor Mount the half of a thirty gallin Still—

Item I give to my son Thomas Chambers the Other Half of the above manchand Still—

Item All Residue of my Property I give to Be Equally Devide Between my son Frederick Fulkerson and my Daughter Mary Fulkerson—

I Constitute and Ordain my son Abram Fulkerson Executor to this my Last will and testament—

Her splitting the still between Thomas Chambers and Elenor Mount, seemingly in an effort to keep them together, is what inclines me to believe that they were the children of her second marriage. The will leaves us to guess whether Sarah Stuart’s father was Dirck or Mr. Chambers. Stuart genealogists believe she was a Fulkerson, born circa 1745.

I have not found a death record for Neeltje, nor any record of the probate of her will.

Robert Black was born circa 1725, possibly in North Carolina or southern Virginia. We know nothing of his parents.

Robert’s wife was surely Elizabeth, but her maiden name Love comes from an undocumented Internet claim, made by Judith A. Lamb in 2003. This seems plausible, because there was a Love family living near the Blacks and Fulkersons in Caswell County. On 20 October 1784, Robert’s son Henry Black sold land near the Caswell County courthouse to Nancy Love, possibly a cousin. There is also a land record involving a Robert Love Black.

In his will, made 9 August 1780, Robert left a thousand pounds to his daughter Elizabeth Fulkerson. Subsequent bequests to son George, son Henry, son John (heir at law), wife Elizabeth and youngest son Thomas Henry Black and Abraham Fulkerson to be executors. Witnessed by Archibald Murphey, Jesse Duncan and Hannah Duncan. Proved in September court, 1781. Inventory presented 29 July 1781.

It seems possible that this Black family came to Caswell County from Washington County, Virginia, where many records name a Robert Black, but I have been unable to prove any connection.

Elizabeth Love (?) was probably born circa 1730, but we have no real leads to her birth date, birth place, or parentage. I leave the question mark after her maiden name, pending some more substantial proof of her parentage.

We have no death record for Elizabeth, but her son Thomas named her in his will on 25 November 1793, so we assume she was still alive then.

Zachariah Jacob was born in All Hallows Parish, Anne Arundel County, Maryland, in 1714, the fourth of six children of John Jacob Jr. and Mary Swanson.

He married, circa 1740, Susannah, whose maiden name may well have been Jones, but whose parents have never been identified.

He inherited his father's plantation, "Stevenson's Manor." He apparently lived quietly on his plantation, appearing very rarely in the court or land records of his county. His only court records have to do with probate matters. He was administrator of the estate of William Jones, and bondsman of Susan Jones in the administration of the estate of Benjamin Jones. Finally, on 22 July 1745, he helped make an additional inventory of the estate of Charles Cheney.

Zachariah died intestate in late 1761, just before the birth of his last child. Susannah was made administratrix of his estate on 9 July 1762. The estate was not completely settled until 1773, by which time Susannah was dead. [All information on this subject was followed by a note by author indicating that something in it needs more checking. -Ed.]

Susannah Unknown. Susannah was born probably circa 1720. An Internet source for the maiden name Howard suggests a birth date of 25 January 1715/16 in Anne Arundel County.

We have no record of Susannah's maiden name. Zachariah's presence in probate cases involving the Jones family suggests that Susannah may have been a Jones. Recent Internet postings claim, without proof, that her maiden name was Howard.

Considering how young her children were when her husband died, it is remarkable that Susannah seems not to have remarried.

Renaldo Monk was born in England, probably in Wiltshire circa 1702. (He deposed in 1754 that he was then about fifty-two.) We know nothing of his parents.

Renaldo Monk, of Wiltshire in England, was sent to Virginia in 1742 as a convict, to serve a sentence of fourteen years. By August 1747, he was living in Prince George's County, Maryland, near the Patuxent iron works. He prospered in Maryland so greatly that he was listed as a creditor in the estate papers of several prominent Marylanders.

He married circa 1752, Rachel who was the widow and executrix of Edward Riston.

He made his will 20 September 1768, proved 14 August 1769 in Baltimore County.

Rachel Unknown. Rachel was the widow of Edward Riston when she married Renaldo Monk. Aside from her given name, we know virtually nothing about her.

Rev. Peter Fontaine was born in Taunton, England, in 1691, the fourth of eight children of Rev. Jacques Fontaine and Anne Elizabeth Boursiquot. When he was about six, the family moved to Cork, Ireland; by the time he was ten they were living on Bantry Bay on the south coast of Ireland.

Reverend Peter led a most adventurous life. In 1708, when he was seventeen, he was taken hostage aboard a French privateer to secure payment of ransom for his father after a siege of his family home. He was released after a couple of years.

He studied for the ministry in Dublin, and there married Elizabeth Fourreau on 29 March 1714. He was licensed as a minister in the Church of England on 12 March 1715, and came to Virginia in October that year. When first there he ministered to the French Huguenot colony. By 1720 he had become rector of Westover Parish and chaplain to the wealthy and influential Col. William Byrd.

Peter and Elizabeth had two children, Mary Ann and Peter. On 2 September 1745 Reverend Peter's sister, Mary Ann Maury, wrote this engaging account of her brother's family:

My brother Peter's first wife Lizzy was one of the loveliest creatures I ever saw. God had endowed her with all the virtues of a good Christian, a good wife and a watchful mother. She never let the least thing pass in her children that had any appearance of evil in it, and was very tender of them. She was an obliging neighbor, charitable to the poor, beloved of all them that knew her, and most dear to us. The girl she left [when she died young] I brought up, named Mary Ann, and to my great comfort she inherits the character of her mother, as also does her brother Peter, so that they are loved and respected of all.

Elizabeth Fourreau died circa 1724, and Reverend Peter lived as an attractive widower for about sixteen years until he married Sarah Wade circa 1740. Sara was the daughter of Joseph Wade and Sarah Lide.

My brother Peter's present wife is a lovely, sweet-tempered woman, and she, Mary Ann and Peter have an unusual tenderness for one another; and I believe that, if they were her own children, she could not show more tenderness to them. My brother hath two children by her, a boy and a girl. The boy is named Moses.

While he was still a widower in 1728 to 1729, Reverend Peter was persuaded by Colonel Byrd to become the chaplain to the Virginia party that combined with a party from North Carolina to survey the boundary line between the two colonies. This proved to be a great adventure, described in detail by Byrd in two separate accounts. One of these was formal and official, calling everyone by their correct name and using appropriately formal language. The second was called the *Secret Diary of the Running of the Line*, and was a more candid and humorous account. In that one all people were assigned nicknames, and Byrd told us frankly what he thought of them. Reverend Peter's nickname was "Dr. Humdrum."

One of Reverend Peter's motivations for accepting this commission was that he knew that the line would pass through territory predominantly populated by recently arrived, unchurched settlers, and he anticipated a great call for his services in performing marriages and baptisms. In this he was disappointed, because many of those settlers felt no fondness for the Church of England, especially those traditionally connected with Presbyterian, Dutch Reformed, Moravian or Baptist congregations. Many had migrated from other places and felt that Church of England people had achieved an economic and social stranglehold on society.

One aspect of the surveying expedition had a long lasting effect on Reverend Peter's health, and on the dietary advice that he would pass on to his relatives and descendants. The survey party carried food supplies, including generous amounts of wine, but they supplemented this by hunting. In particular, they frequently feasted on bear meat, for which Reverend Peter developed an inordinate fondness. Whether the rich bear meat and wine did the deed or not, Reverend Peter was much afflicted by gout in his later years, and strongly advocated an abstemious vegetarian diet to those who cared to avoid his health problems.

Of all our ancestors of his generation, Reverend Peter was probably the most highly educated. He had mastered Greek and Hebrew during his studies for the ministry. Of course he must have been fluent in English and French too. William Byrd had been educated in England and enjoyed evenings in which Reverend Peter would read to him in the ancient languages. His life at Westover, where he was Rector for nearly forty years, must have been extremely civilized and sophisticated.

A very mature man by the time he married Sarah Wade, whom he had reportedly baptized as a babe, he became a father again at age fifty-one and continued, ultimately having a total of six children by Sarah. Reverend Peter made his will 13 June 1757, and survived another two years, dying at Westover

in August 1759. He had the satisfaction of seeing his oldest son, Peter Jr., become a prominent surveyor and citizen of Halifax County, Virginia. Some letters of Reverend Peter were published in *Memoirs of a Huguenot Family*.

Sarah Wade was born circa 1720 in Charles City County, perhaps the youngest of seven children of Joseph Wade and Sarah Lide.

She lost her husband before she was forty, when her youngest child was only about three, but she did not remarry. Reverend Peter had made good provision for his family and she had well established relatives, as well as slaves, to help with the children.

She lived as a widow for about twenty-five years, dying in 1784 in Louisa County, where her son Aaron was living. Internet sources place her date of death at 10 August.

Richmond Terrell IV is thought to have been born circa 1720 in New Kent County, Virginia, the son of Richmond Terrell III and an unknown wife.

Unfortunately little survives from the early records of New Kent County. Once Richmond Terrell IV moved to Louisa County, more records remained so that it is clear he married Ann Overton; but we can only guess at a marriage date circa 1742.

He was apparently quite aristocratic in bearing and lifestyle, so much so that he was nicknamed "the duke." His will was made 31 October 1764 and proved 12 August 1765, so we guess that he died circa August 1765 at a relatively young age.

Ann Overton was born circa 1725 in St. Martin's parish of Hanover County, one of eight children (four sons and four daughters) of Capt. James Overton and Elizabeth Garland.

Anne made her will 29 July 1790; it was proved 8 June 1795. In it she named only her sons Samuel and Richard and her daughter Becky Meriwether. She must have felt that her older children were adequately set up.

She outlived her husband by about thirty years, and died in St. Martin's Parish, Louisa County on 9 March 1795.

Col. Robert Johnson was born in Orange County, Virginia, on 17 July 1745, the eldest of nine children of William Johnson and Elizabeth Cave. In 1770 he married Jemima Suggett in Orange County; she was a daughter of Lt. James Suggett and Jemima Spence.

The publications of a Johnson family reunion held at Ward Hall in Georgetown, Kentucky, in 2005, claimed that the family home in Virginia was called Montebelle and was near Gordonsville in Orange County. I have found no confirmation of this.

After having four children in Orange County, Robert led a group of family, friends and fellow Baptists to Kentucky in 1779. They went by way of the Ohio River and Beargrass Creek, and made a settlement at Floyd's Station on the latter. They moved soon thereafter in the fall of 1780, to Bryan's Station, between Lexington and the Blue Licks. This move was motivated by fear of Indian attacks, and indeed there were devastating raids by British-led Indians in 1781. In August 1782 about three hundred Indians laid siege to Bryan's Station, leading to a famous family legend which I shall tell in the section about Jemima Suggett.

Col. Robert Johnson was not personally present at the siege of Bryan's Station, having gone to Williamsburg. In spite of having missed this important incident, he was a prominent community leader. He and his children became quite wealthy—it is said that at one time they owned more than half of Scott County. In 1784 it seemed safe to leave the stockade at Bryan's Station and Colonel Robert moved his family to Great Crossings, on the North fork of Elkhorn River. There he built a station, acquired more land and helped to found a Baptist church that survives today.

Soon after Jemima died in 1814, Colonel Robert, although nearly seventy, took a new young wife. He had little chance to enjoy her company, dying himself in Gallatin County within the year, on 15 October 1815.

Colonel Robert and Jemima were buried in a small cemetery just behind the Great Crossings Baptist Church. Their gravestones are cracked and lie flat on the ground in a corner of the cemetery, where my sister Ellie and I uncovered them and took photographs a few years ago.

Jemima Suggett was born in Orange County, Virginia, on 29 June 1753, one of three children of Lt. James Suggett and Jemima Spence.

Jemima's claim to fame is that, during the Indian siege of Bryan's Station, she led a group of women and girls out of the stockade, under the rifles of the hidden Indians, to the spring which provided the station's only water supply. As the settlers had gambled, the Indians were not ready to disclose their presence and let the women return safely to the stockade with their water! The water proved crucial to the defense of the station, not only to sustain the settlers, but to quench fires set by flaming arrows. The DAR, in 1896, built a lasting monument around the spring, which still runs today. Carved on it are the names of the women and girls, and of the men who defended the station.

Jemima died at Great Crossings on 23 February 1814 and is buried in the small cemetery behind the Great Crossings church.

Henry Payne was born in Fairfax County, Virginia, on 26 January 1753, the second of nine children of Edward Payne and Ann Holland Conyers. He was an older brother of James Orlando Payne who was described in our last chapter.

When he was about nineteen he moved to Cameron Parish of nearby Loudon County, probably to live on land purchased by his father in 1772. His father gave him that land in 1778. He was married in Loudon County, Virginia, on 5 March 1775 to Ann Lane, daughter of James Lane and Lydia Hardage. The 1778 deed of gift for land from his father was witnessed by his brother-in-law, Hardage Lane.

On 14 June 1779 he was sworn in as first lieutenant of Loudon County militia, but we have no record of his actually fighting in the Revolution. Immediately after the war, he went briefly to Kentucky, and in the spring of 1786 joined his parents in settling on the Town Fork near Lexington, Kentucky. He had a grant of five hundred acres on Elkhorn River, and acquired land in several other counties of Kentucky.

In 1803, he was appointed to a Commission to restore records damaged from a court house fire in Lexington.

Although he was prosperous and of a good age when he died on 29 November 1828, he did not make a will. He is buried in the Lexington City Cemetery.

Anne Lane was born circa August 1753, seemingly the last of nine children of James Lane and Lydia Hardage. She had three sisters with ordinary English names (Betty, Jane, Lydia), and one with an Old Testament name, Keren Happuch. Keren of the Bible story was the youngest daughter of Job, and reputedly one of the most beautiful women in Israel.

Anne had three children born in Loudon County, Virginia, and four more born in Kentucky. Although Kentucky was still primitive, compared to what she left behind in Virginia, she had plenty of Negro help and lots of prosperous relatives close at hand, and presumably lived a comparatively comfortable life.

She died at the Town Fork on 21 October 1822, and is presumably buried in the Lexington City Cemetery, although Pat and I have searched that cemetery and failed to find a stone for her or Henry.

Edward Payne was born in Cople Parish, Westmoreland County, Virginia, on 18 November 1726, a child of William Payne and Alicia Jones.

When he was about seven his family moved to a station a few miles south of present-day Fairfax Court House, then in Prince William County.

Edward married Ann Holland Conyers, daughter of Henry Conyers and Janet Patterson, in Overwharton Parish, Stafford County, on 27 February 1749/50. In 1754, Edward purchased 504 acres in Fairfax County, on the upper side of Pope's Head Creek, next to land Ann had inherited from her father.

In 1755, Edward accompanied an expedition against the Shawnee Indians, as an ensign in the Fairfax County militia. By 1765 he was a vestryman, and shortly thereafter, a warden of Truro Parish, Fairfax County. In 1766 he undertook the building of a new church, or chapel of ease, for the parish. This afterwards became known as Payne's Church. In connection with parish business, he was well acquainted with George Washington.

In 1770, Edward became a Justice of the Peace in Fairfax County. In 1774, he served on the Committee of Safety, and in 1775 he was appointed Sheriff. During these times he continued as Warden of Truro Parish, and advanced in militia rank. He acquired and disposed of lands in several counties. In short, he was a wealthy and very prominent Virginian.

In 1784, he and his family joined the rush to Kentucky, and established a sizeable family settlement on Town Fork of Elkhorn, a few miles from Lexington. Then called Col. Edward Payne, he served on the 1785 Danville Convention, which initiated the long process of severing Kentucky from Virginia.

In Kentucky, Colonel Edward encountered friction with some of the other prominent military men of the area, specifically Col. Robert Paterson and Col. Levi Todd. He went so far as to suggest to Gov. Patrick Henry that those two officers be cashiered for their management of campaigns against the Indians. In his interesting book, *The Paynes of Virginia*, which has provided me with most of my information about our Payne ancestors, Col. Brooke Payne gives more details of this affair. It is interesting to note that one of Colonel Edward's allies in this affair was our ancestor Col. Robert Johnson.

There is an intriguing, and I had always thought fanciful, account of the Paynes in a history of the city of Lexington. This claims very distinctly that the Paynes were of the English nobility, and calls Colonel Edward and his wife Sir Edward and Lady Ann. Recent research by Patrick Payne of Augusta, Georgia, including a fairly large Y-DNA study, shows that these claims may be only slightly exaggerated.

Edward died on 16 May 1806 in Fayette County and was buried in a family plot set aside by his son (and our ancestor) James Orlando Payne in his will. According to Pam Sulzer, in a 2005 Internet posting, this graveyard is now on the property of Fares Farm, a prominent horse breeding business at 3675 Van Meter Road.

Although Edward apparently died intestate, reportedly he gave land in Lexington both to Transylvania University and to a Baptist church. This latter gift is interesting in that Edward was deeply connected with the Anglican Church in Virginia. However, our ancestral Johnsons of Scott County, with whom the Paynes frequently intermarried, were staunch Baptists, and Edward may have wanted to honor that family connection.

Ann Holland Connyers was born on 23 August 1728 in Stafford County, Virginia, the second of three daughters of Capt. Henry Conyers and Jannette Pattison.

The history of Lexington, which calls her “Lady Ann Holland Congers,” asserts that she was related to Lord Holland (Henry Fox), the Duke of Richmond. (There was a Henry Fox [1705–1774], who was first Baron Holland, and who married a daughter of the Duke of Richmond. Perhaps he was the man referred to here. He was a prominent Whig politician, reputedly very corrupt and unpopular.)

It seems almost certain that Ann’s paternal grandfather was Dr. William Connyers of London, probably the son of a Dr. William Connyers who died there in the plague of 1665.

After having seven children with Edward, Ann died on 11 January 1806 and is buried in the family plot on Fares Farm, near Lexington.

Robert Price was born circa 1745, almost certainly in Henrico County, Virginia, the first of four children (all sons) of Daniel Price Jr. and Mary Cocke? The maiden name of his mother is not proven.

It seems likely that Robert Price moved to Bedford County circa 1786, because his daughter Ann was married in Henrico in 1787, and his daughter Elizabeth was married in Bedford in 1791. He was still on the tax list for Henrico County in 1783, being in possession of slaves Boy, Dick, Joe, James, Sam, David, Sarah, Ursula, Ruth, Fanny, Sisley, Daniel, Addie, Eve, Moses, Tom, George, Randle, Handy, Jacob, Dowd, Cesar, Dorcas and Patience. These lists of names of slaves help prove that Robert of Bedford and Robert of Henrico were the same man.

Robert left a will, signed 8 June 1816, presented to court 24 June 1816, in Bedford County, Virginia.

I, Robert Price of the County of Bedford and State of Virginia, being ...

Imprimis—I give to my Grandchildren, the issue of my daughter Ann Satterwhite, the following negroes, that is to say With (?), Sisley, Amey, Randolph and Levin & their increase to be equally divided among my said Grandchildren, whenever they arrive at age or marry; but ...

Item, I lend to my daughter Elizabeth Povall Edgar, wife of Thomas Edgar, who formerly intermarried with Samuel Holt, negroes Handy, Billy, Caesar, Kitty, Patience, Lucy, Washington & Jefferson, and their increase, to be divided among her children by said Holt when they come of age or marry ... I give to Thomas Edgar the profits arising from the labor of these slaves ... on his boarding, schooling & clothing the said children of Samuel Holt.

Item—I give to my Granddaughter and Grandson Nancy and William Holmes the following Negroes, to wit, Hand (?), Charles, Jesse, Ursula, Jesse & Charlotte to be equally divided.

Item—I lend to my daughter Elvira Thorpe, the wife of William Thorpe, negroes Billy, George, Famous, Reuben, Eve, Sally, Bob, Jesse, Mima & Sophia.

Item: I lend to my son Daniel L. Price negroes Sam, Tom, Pharaoh, Dick, Phil, Nelson, Patrick, Adison, Randolph, Moses, Burwell, Sara, Ruth, Fanny, Selah & Amey.

H. Brown, Thomas Edgar & Daniel L. Price to execute.

Witnessed by John Robert, Joseph Hudnall & Mary Lewis

Somewhat earlier, on 22 February 1802, Robert Price made the following significant deed:

To all to whom the presents shall come greeting. Know ye that I Robert Price of the County of Bedford for and in consideration of the solemnization of marriage lately had between Andrew Holmes of the County of Fayette and my Daughter Tabitha Price, I have put in possession of the said Andrew Holmes the following negro slaves, to wit: David, Charles, Sophia, Ursula, Charlotte & Jesse, and make known that the aforesaid slaves all and every one of them are only lent to the aforesaid Andrew Holmes

Robert's will was written on 6 June and produced in Court on 24 June 1816, so we know he died in June 1816, presumably in Bedford County, Virginia. We have no idea where he or his wife was buried.

Mary Lewis was born circa 1750 possibly in Henrico County, Virginia.

Actually, what we know about Robert Price's wife is only that her name was recorded as Mary on three Bedford County deeds, dated 4 December 1794, 1796 and 1798. No wife was mentioned in the 1802 lending of slaves to Andrew Holmes, or in Robert's 1816 will. I don't know that she would have been required to cosign the deed of slaves in 1802, so all we can safely assume is that she died sometime between 1798 and 1816, probably in Bedford County. In the 1810 census of Bedford County, there is a Robert Price, over forty-five, with a woman in the household, over forty-five. This may suggest that Mary lived at least until 1810.

The idea that Mary's maiden name may have been Lewis is drawn, at this point, from some slight clues. These are: 1) her son Daniel's middle name, Lewis, 2) the presence, as neighbors in Henrico County, of a Charles Lewis and a Joseph Lewis, 3) a Joseph Lewis of Powhatan County, Virginia, made a will in 1800, mentioning daughter Mary Price. This Joseph sold his land in Henrico County to his son William Lewis in 1786.

Noah Allen Sr. was born in Medfield, Massachusetts, on 21 April 1685, the fifth of twelve children of Joseph Allen and Hannah Sabine.

He inherited the family farm in Medfield, probably purchasing the shares of the other heirs. His brothers were given lands in Woodstock and Sturbridge, so that he lived in a generation which saw a scattering of the Allen clan. We know little of his activities, other than he was appointed sealer of weights and measures in 1714.

On 25 March 1714, at Medfield, he married Sarah Gay, daughter of Jonathan Gay and Mary Bullard.

In his later years, he was harmlessly insane. Fortunately, his wife Sarah, who long outlived him, was an excellent manager. He died in Medfield on 8 January 1754.

Sarah Gay was born in Dedham, Massachusetts, on 7 April 1692, the fourth of six children of Jonathan Gay and Mary Bullard. By the time of her marriage, her family had moved to Needham, Massachusetts, where her father had died in 1713.

Sarah was “by all accounts a woman of uncommon strength of character and capacity for business; qualities for which there was, in her case, special need, as her husband, for some years during the latter part of his life, was harmlessly but incurably insane.” This quote, from Tilden’s *History of Medfield*, is repeated virtually verbatim in all accounts of the family.

Sarah died in Medfield in 1782, just as the Revolution was winding down, at the age of ninety. For some reason, the exact date of her death was not recorded.

James Ellis was born in Medfield on 3 May 1697, the first of two children of Joseph Ellis and his second wife Elizabeth Metcalf.

James married Tabitha Mason circa 1720 according to Tilden’s *History of Medfield*. There is no record of this event in Medfield Vital Records, but James and Tabitha had their first child in July 1722.

He and Tabitha lived in the old Ellis original place on Main Street in Medfield.

Shortly after Tabitha’s death, James married Hannah Jones of Hollister. Tilden says that James died in 1776, but again, there is nothing in Medfield Vital Records.

Tabitha Mason was born in Medfield on 3 July 1697, the fourth of thirteen children of Ebenezer Mason and Hannah Clark.

She grew up in a family with two sets of twins, a rare event among our ancestors.

She died in Medfield on 21 October 1770.

Henry Smith was born in Medfield on 16 December 1680, the second child of Samuel Smith and his second wife Sarah Clark.

Henry was born just four years after the disastrous Indian raid on Medfield which had cost both of his parents their first spouses.

He was married three times: first on 20 February 1702/3 to Deborah Pratt who died on 5 August 1706 after giving him a single child, Daniel. Next he married on 4 March 1707/8 Mary Adams who died on 23 February 1724/5 after giving him five children. Finally he married our ancestress Ruth Barber on 1 September 1730. They had three children, the last being our ancestor Asa Smith.

Henry lived in the southeast part of Medfield on what is now Plain Street. He was a selectman of Medfield in 1737 and died there on 14 April 1743.

Ruth Barber was born in Medfield on 5 March 1695/6, the sixth of nine children of Zechariah Barber and Abiel Ellis.

Ruth married at the rather advanced age of thirty-five. Her father had died when she was nine and her mother when she was twenty, so she may have had to postpone marriage a bit to care for her younger siblings. This, however, seems unlikely to have been the whole story.

Ruth died in Medfield on 5 August 1761.

Col. Seth Kingsbury was born in Dedham, Massachusetts, on 18 May 1720, the second of six children of Dea. Samuel Kingsbury and Joanna Guild.

He seems to have moved to Walpole as a young man for he married there on 27 September 1741, Meriam Holbrook, daughter of Ens. Daniel Holbrook and Elizabeth Clark.

Colonel Seth ("of Walpole, Gent") made his will 15 June 1798; it was proved 2 December 1800. He bequeathed to wife Meriam, sons Daniel, Seth, Asa and Joseph; and daughters Elizabeth, wife of Timothy Hartshorn; Meriam, wife of Asa Smith; Sarah, wife of Joseph Fales; and Joanna, wife of Calvin Gay. Also his will included the children of his daughter Ruth, wife of Solomon Kingsbury, deceased, and Samuel Kingsbury, son of Sarah Fales. His sole executor was to be his son Daniel.

His gravestone is inscribed,

Being in his 81st year leaving the wife of his youth whom he had lived with 60 years and had 10 children 43 grandchildren and 27 great grandchildren.

His son Joseph received a bounty land warrant for Revolutionary War service. His application papers state that his brothers Seth Jr. and Asa had also served in the Revolutionary War.

Meriam Holbrook was born in Wrentham, Massachusetts, on 16 July 1723, the first of five children of Ens. Daniel Holbrook and Elizabeth Clark.

She died on 28 October 1815, at age ninety-two, probably in Walpole, but we are not sure.

Capt. Joseph Ware was born in Wrentham, Massachusetts, on 2 June 1681, the second of six children of Capt. John Ware and Joanna Gay. He moved early to Sherborn, Massachusetts, where he married Hannah Wood on 5 January 1708/9, a daughter of Eleazar Wood and Dorothy Badcock.

Rev. Abner Morse, in his *History of Sherborn*, said, "Capt. Ware was an able, enterprising man. He served as cornet of horse in an expedition against the Indians, and was selectman [of Sherborn] eleven years." In 1710, along with Joseph Morse, he built the first gristmill on Sewall's Brook. He purchased 250 acres of the Hull farm and built a house about three quarters of a mile south of Sherborn Common. The house was still standing when Pat and I saw it in the 1980s.

In 1718 he and his brother Eleazar were co-executors of his father's will.

Captain Joseph had a slave, Duty, who was very important to the operation of the gristmill, and who planted an elm tree near the Ware house which became a great landmark of Sherborn in later years. Joseph lived out his years in the Sherborn house and died there on 26 January 1754. As far as we know, he died intestate. Pat and I have seen his headstone in the Old South Cemetery of Sherborn that is inscribed:

Here lies Buried ye Body of Capn Joseph Ware who Departed this Life in ye Memorable Mortality Jan ye 26 AD 1754 in ye 72nd year of his Age—The Memory of ye just are Blessed.

Hannah Wood was born in Sherborn on 11 February 1688/9, the first of two children of Eleazar Wood and Dorothy Badcock. Her father died about four years before Hannah married.

Hannah died in Sherborn on 4 March 1754, about three months after her husband, presumably also a victim of the "Memorable Mortality." (Samuel Drake's *History of Middlesex County* tells us that about thirty people died in Sherborn that year, when the town still had a small population. In nearby Holliston this disaster was called "The Great Sickness.") Hannah was probably buried next to Captain Joseph, but Reverend Morse noted that the Old South Cemetery had been desecrated, and her stone was probably lost as a result.

Dea. Henry Prentice was born in Cambridge, Massachusetts, circa 1693, the seventh of eight children of Solomon Prentice and his second wife Hepzibah Dunn (or Dunnton). His birth somehow escaped the Cambridge records.

He was a husbandman and brick maker. He married twice: first to our ancestress, Elizabeth Rand on 18 September 1718, and second to Elizabeth Haley on 21 October 1749. On 22 November 1718 Henry and Elizabeth “owned the covenant” of the Cambridge church.

His father died soon after Henry’s first marriage, and Henry inherited a share of the ancestral home on the west side of the Cambridge common. In 1729 he purchased a large part of the Holden farm.

The long chapter on the First Congregational Church in Paige’s *History of Cambridge* shows that he was deacon under the Rev. Nathaniel Appleton from 24 November 1741 until 14 July 1774 when he resigned. The *State of Maine* says, “He was a tall and very grave looking man and on the Sabbath occupied the ‘deacon’s seat’, directly in front of the minister. In cold weather, when he took off his hat in church, he put on a green tasseled cap, as the top of his head was bald.... He removed from Cambridge in 1775, when our troops occupied the city, and died at the house of his son, the Rev. Joshua Prentice, in Holliston.”

He made his will on 20 January 1776, proved 5 January 1779, making bequests to all his children. He had survived both his wives. He died in Holliston on 18 October 1778.

Elizabeth Rand was born in Charlestown, Massachusetts, on 23 March 1696/7, the second of eight children of William Rand and Persis Pierce.

Elizabeth died in Cambridge on 13 March 1748/9.

Capt. Thomas Clarke was born in Newton, Massachusetts, on 23 May 1704, the fourth of six children of John Clarke and Ann Bird.

He married Mary Bowen, daughter of Isaac Bowen and Hannah Winchester in Newton on 2 April 1728. He was a selectman of Newton in 1749, soon after which he moved to Hopkinton.

He died in Hopkinton, Massachusetts, on 30 June 1775.

Mary Bowen was born in Roxbury, Massachusetts, on 13 December 1704, the third of eight children of Isaac Bowen and his first wife Hannah Winchester.

Mary died at Hopkinton on 17 June 1775 about two weeks before her husband. For some reason there is no Hopkinton record of either death.

Rev. Nicholas Bowes was born in Boston on 4 November 1706, the fourth of five children of Capt. Nicholas Bowes and his second wife, Dorcas Champney.

Nicholas was christened in Old South Church, Boston, by Rev. Samuel Willard, Acting President of Harvard. This was the same man who baptized Benjamin Franklin at the same place and nearly the same time.

Sibley’s *Harvard Graduates* has a lively biography of Reverend Nicholas. I quote a bit:

When he [Rev. Nicholas] was in grammar school, his mother having died, his father married another Cambridge woman Martha Remington. The Captain, having served his generation well as tythingman and constable, died in 1721. It was probably through the influence of the Champneys

and Remingtons that Nicholas was sent to college. Although he was one of the most active or careless members of his class [1725], he remained in residence for nine years partly supported by aid from the Hopkins foundation.

Reverend Nicholas took his second degree at Harvard in 1728 and then joined the First Church of Cambridge. He had some difficulty securing a call to the ministry, but was ordained as minister of the new church at Bedford on 15 July 1730. On this occasion “Bishop” John Hancock of Lexington was moderator and Rev. Nathaniel Appleton of Cambridge opened the ceremonies. Shortly thereafter, circa 1733, Reverend Nicholas married Lucy Hancock, daughter of Bishop John Hancock and Elizabeth Clarke.

Reverend Nicholas was not an enthusiast for the religious Great Awakening, and said that he would not admit the great revivalist, George Whitefield, to his pulpit. In that action he joined with many of the Harvard-connected New England ministry for which Whitefield had expressed unreserved scorn. He served the Bedford church until 22 August 1754 when the church discharged him as minister, but retained him as a member.

In Sept 1755 he served as chaplain to Capt. Stephen Hosmer’s Company, Col. Jonathan Hoar’s regiment, at Fort Edward. On his way home in mid-December 1755, he died “struck suddenly with numb palsey, and speechless.” (Probably a stroke.) This happened near Warren, Massachusetts, but it is not known where he was buried.

Lucy Hancock was born in Lexington, Massachusetts, on 20 April 1713, the last of five children of Bishop John Hancock and Elizabeth Clarke.

After the death of Rev. Nicholas Bowes, she married Rev. Samuel Cooke on 25 November 1762.

Lucy died on 2 September 1768, at Arlington, Massachusetts, and is buried there.

Lt. Joseph Weld was baptized in Roxbury on 13 September 1650, the second of nine children of John Weld and Margaret Bowen.

He married first in Roxbury on 2 September 1674 Elizabeth Devotion with whom he had two daughters. Elizabeth died “of the pox” on 15 February 1678/9. He then married our ancestress Sarah Faxon on 27 November 1679.

In 1706, he and forty-four others “at the west end of Roxbury towards Dedham” petitioned the General Court to allow them to start a new church at their end of town. The petition was denied, but followed by a more successful one on 7 February 1710–11. Within a year after his death the Second Church of Roxbury was started as a result of these efforts (to which he contributed).

He was an important man in Roxbury, being a selectman continuously, at least from 1699 to 1709, and probably until his death. In the annual town lists of selectman he is first called lieutenant in 1703. He would have been rather old to receive that rank, but Queen Anne’s War was just getting started and there may have been a perceived need for more military men.

He made his will on 6 September 1692 stating that he was “reduced to great weakness and distemper of Body,” but he recovered to live another decade. His wife was carrying their next-to-last child (Deborah) when he wrote this, and he took great pains to provide for her. His will was proved on 3 April 1712 by the executors who were his wife Sarah and his brother John Weld. His estate was appraised at 970 pounds, and included extensive land holdings in Roxbury and Woodstock, Connecticut, as well as in Maseomoqueta (now Pomfret), Connecticut. He died in Roxbury 14 February 1711/2 and was buried in the Eustis Street Yard.

Sarah Faxon was born in Braintree, Massachusetts, on 28 August 1659, the third of four daughters of Thomas Faxon Jr. and Deborah Thayer.

She had eight children with Lt. Joseph Weld, and when he died, she married Jacob Chamberlain, in Roxbury on 29 April 1719. She was then sixty years old.

Sarah's second marriage had lasted only a couple of years as Jacob died on 7 November 1721. Sarah then lived twenty-six years as a widow and died on 14 October 1745.

Her original gravestone in Walter Street Cemetery was broken up by vandals, but descendants rescued enough of the fragments to reassemble it, and to reset it next to her first husband in Eustis Street Yard.

Benjamin Child was baptized in Roxbury by the Rev. John Eliot on 27 February 1658/9, the second of nine children of Benjamin Child Sr. and Mary Bowen. Reverend Eliot baptized Ephraim, Benjamin and Joshua, brothers and sons of Benjamin Child Sr., in that order, and this is usually stated to be the order of their births. Benjamin's birth in 1656 is suggested by his gravestone which says he was sixty-six when he died.

His elder brother Ephraim was killed in King Philip's War, making Benjamin the surviving oldest son. So, when his father died intestate in 1678, Benjamin was appointed co-administrator of his estate. On 15 May 1699 his surviving siblings and their husbands quitclaimed their interests in their father's estate, and Benjamin became sole owner.

On 7 March 1682/3 Benjamin married Grace Morris, daughter of Lt. Edward Morris and Grace Bett. His brother Joshua married Grace's younger sister, Elizabeth.

Benjamin was a man of some importance in his community, being selectman of Roxbury from 1677 to 1684. He was also a member of the General Court and a Colonial Auditor. He was an early settler of Woodstock, Connecticut, but he and his wife died in Roxbury. [Author's note placed here suggests his uncertainty whether this applies to Benjamin Child or to Edward Morris. –Ed.]

He joined the church in Roxbury on 13 April 1684.

Benjamin died in West Roxbury on 26 January 1723/4 about six weeks after the death of his wife. He was buried in the Walter Street Cemetery in West Roxbury.

Grace Morris was baptized in Roxbury on 13 February 1660/1 and it seems likely that she was born shortly before that. She was the third of eight children of Lt. Edward Morris and Grace Bett.

After her marriage with Benjamin Child on 7 March 1682/3 she had twelve children, the last born when she was forty-six. She joined the Roxbury Church on 4 August 1689.

She died in Roxbury on 10 December 1723 and was buried in the Walter Street Cemetery.

Josiah Hatch was born in Scituate, Massachusetts, on 30 May 1680, the second of nine children of Samuel Hatch and Mary Doty.

He was a housewright who obviously moved around a bit. In Yarmouth (on Cape Cod) he met and married Desire Gorham, daughter of Capt. John Gorham and Desire Hawes. This was on 24 February 1701/2. Soon after the marriage Josiah and Desire moved to Rochester, Massachusetts, where the births of the first five of their seven children were recorded.

Josiah died at Rochester, Massachusetts, on 12 January 1714/5. He was only thirty-four.

Desire Hawes was born on 28 February 1680/1 at Yarmouth, Massachusetts, ninth of eleven children of Capt. John Hawes and Desire Gorham.

She married Josiah Hatch, her first husband, at Yarmouth on 24 February 1701/2. When Josiah died intestate in 1714/5, she was appointed administratrix of his estate.

Desire then married John Cowing Jr. at Rochester on 19 June 1719. That marriage lasted only a few years. Desire died in Provincetown, at the very tip of Cape Cod, on 8 February 1723/4.

After she died, there still being unfinished business in the settling of Josiah's estate, John Cowing of Cape Cod, and later of Provincetown, was appointed administrator *de bonis non* to sell Josiah's house and lands in Rochester.

John Fisher was born circa 1683, perhaps in Boston. This date is just a guess because we have no record of any kind, not even a published guess about his birth or ancestry.

He was a carter who worked around the wharves in Boston, and who did some carting for Trinity Church there. We have no evidence of his belonging to that church, but ample evidence that his children did so.

John seemed to live on Essex Street, a district much favored by distillers of rum. John had a wife named Sarah, and a descendant in Canada. Taking note of the high frequency of "Harris" as a given name among John and Sarah's descendants, some researchers have guessed that Sarah's maiden name may have been Harris.

John died intestate in Boston, probably near the end of 1745. On 29 December 1745, Richard Smith of Boston was given administration of John's estate.

Sarah Harris (?) was born circa 1689, perhaps in Boston. These are simply guesses, because we have no records. The idea for Harris as a maiden name comes from the frequent use of that as a given name among descendants of John and Sarah. I have also just discovered that John and Sarah's grandson, Wilfred Fisher Jr., was in 1777 master of the privateer *America*, the owner of which was Thomas Harris and Co., Boston.

Sarah died circa 17 January 1765 in Boston and was buried from Trinity Church.

Stephen Minot II was the second of that name, born in Boston 21 October 1688, the first of twelve children of Col. Steven Minot and Mary/Mercy Clark. Sandwiched as he was between a very prominent father, Stephen I, and a fairly prominent son, Stephen III, Stephen II did not leave much in the way of records. He was a tailor and a merchant.

On 1 March 1710/11, shortly after his marriage, he bought the house and land of his father on the East side of Sudbury Street. At various times he bought other properties in Boston too. On 21 September 1710 he married Sarah Wainwright in Boston. She died just a month after the birth of their only child, our ancestor, Stephen III. Stephen II then married on 1 January 1712/3, Mary Brown, with whom he had eleven children.

On 14 September 1732, Stephen was voted a fire warden of Boston. He had served as constable on a couple of earlier occasions.

On 1 September 1736, a few years after his father's death, Stephen appealed to the Boston selectmen that, "He may have the Refusal of the Land belonging to this town, which has for many years past been Leased to his late Father and himself, and also that the Town house near the George Tavern

may be put into Tenantable repair.” This refers to a very important piece of property on the Boston Neck, just where Boston joins Roxbury, and at that time on the only road out of Boston. Stephen’s father had long had a license to operate the George Tavern, but the selectmen seemed to have some reservations about the son. They appeared willing to have him own the tavern, but granted the license to sell liquor there to another man.

Stephen seems to have disappeared late in life. The Minot genealogy says that he was in Jamaica in 1749. There was a suit brought against Stephen and Mary Minot in Boston on 8 November 1750. Actually, only Mary was required to appear in court, so the court may have known that Stephen was out of the country, or perhaps dead. We have no actual record of his death.

Sarah Wainwright was born on 26 January 1691/2 in Ipswich, Massachusetts, the first of six children of Col. Francis Wainwright and Sarah Whipple.

Her mother died when she was about eighteen, but her father let Sarah marry soon thereafter, and also made plans to remarry himself. Tragically, he sickened and died on the very day for which the wedding had been planned.

Sarah might have been too pregnant to attend her fathers’ planned wedding, because her son was delivered just forty-six days later; she herself died just a month afterwards on 21 October 1711.

Jonas Clarke was born in Boston 8 September 1690, the third of six children of Capt. Timothy Clark and Sarah Richardson.

On 24 November 1715, he married Grace Tilley, daughter of William Tilley and his wife Isabella. For some reason that I have never seen discussed, Jonas and Grace had only two children of record although they were married for thirty years. After Grace died in 1745, Jonas remarried, being joined to Elizabeth Lillie by Rev. John Webb on 2 October 1749. They had no children.

He became a wealthy and prominent citizen of Boston. He was a brazier by trade, and was a selectman of Boston from at least 1736 to 1746. At a Boston town meeting on 9 March 1746/7, a vote of thanks of the town was given to Jonas Clarke Esq., Mr. Thomas Hancock and Capt. Henry Atkin “for the faithful Services they have done for the Town in the Office of Select Men for several Years past.” In the 1740s and 1750s Jonas was a justice of the peace and performed occasional marriage ceremonies. He owned at least one Negro slave, a young woman named Cuba, who was married to a free Negro in 1749. In 1728 he advertised to sell two Negro children, a boy thirteen and a girl, fifteen.

He had an enormous number of real estate dealings in Boston, starting about 1719. He frequently mortgaged property, presumably to raise cash for mercantile investments, but he always managed to pay these mortgages off. He also invested in real estate elsewhere, being for a number of years Proprietors’ Clerk for the Town of Rutland in Worcester County. He once owned a sawmill and gristmill in Brookfield, Worcester County, which burned down on 1 December 1741.

He enjoyed close acquaintance with such Boston notables as Thomas Hancock and Samuel Adams, having served as selectman with them. He was also on close terms with Judge Samuel Sewall, and is mentioned in the Judge’s famous diary.

He died in Boston on 7 December 1759. Surprisingly, he seems not to have made a will, although he made a generous deed of gift to his daughter Sarah and her husband Steven Minot III on 7 April 1756.

Grace Tilley was born in Boston on 4 November 1692, the elder of two children (both daughters) of William Tilley and Isabella. We don't know her mother's maiden name, although there is a hint that it may have been Harris.

Grace was married when she was about twenty-three, and had her two children when she was about twenty-seven and thirty. Since there was no reliable birth control in those days, we can only guess whether she had a series of miscarriages.

She died in Boston on 8 October 1745, having been married for a bit more than thirty years.

William Speakman was born circa 1685, probably in Lancashire, England. We do not know his parents or siblings.

In the Boston selectman's minutes of 21 August 1716: "*Wm. Speakman, bread maker, says he came from England into this town about five months since, and that his lodging hath been at ye home of Mr. John Wass. He was then "warned out."*" This is somewhat ironic since, far from becoming an economic burden to Boston, William became one of the most prosperous and generous citizens of the town. When he died, the Boston *Evening Post* had this to say, on 11 April 1748: "Friday last died, after a few weeks illness, Mr. William Speakman, an eminent and wealthy Baker of this Town, and one of the rarest Instances of Industry and Diligence, that perhaps ever was in the Country."

William married Hannah Hackerel in Boston on 25 October 1719.

Besides doing well as a baker, William speculated extensively and successfully in Boston real estate. To set all this in motion, he must have brought some significant capital with him from England. He became quite wealthy, and was father-in-law to two of the richest merchants in Boston, John Rowe and Ralph Inman.

He was definitely an Anglican, and was especially generous to the Anglican churches (King's Chapel and Trinity) of Boston. He had been a warden of King's Chapel, and at Easter 1739 was chosen senior warden at Trinity. On 17 October 1733, he gave two hundred pounds for the founding of Trinity Church, being thereby the largest single contributor. He also bought the land for Trinity Church.

William made his will on 28 March 1748. It was proved on 26 April 1748, with the widow Hannah, son Thomas and sons-in-law John Rowe and Ralph Inman as executors.

William died in Boston, on 8 April 1748 and is buried in the King's Chapel burying ground.

Hannah Hackerel was born circa 1687, probably in England. She married William Speakman when she was already about thirty-two, so we should probably consider the possibility that she was then a widow.

She died in Boston circa 24 July 1757 and was buried at King's Chapel on 26 July 1757.

Gilbert Warner was born circa 1685, presumably in England. (The basis of this presumption is shaky. We have no immigration record, but can find no New Englanders who have ever been suggested as likely parental candidates.)

We first hear of him in Boston through the record of his marriage to Sarah Wass on 29 August 1713. He was a prosperous distiller, frequently licensed to sell strong liquors at retail from his property on Essex Street.

He was made a freeman of Boston in January 1724/5. Although he and Sarah were married for twenty-six years, they had only a single child, our ancestress Mary.

Gilbert Warner made a very generous wedding present to the newlywed Speakmans, as recorded in *Suffolk Deeds*, Vol. 54, page 114, to wit:

Gilbert Warner of Boston in the County of Suffolk distiller sendeth Greeting. Know ye that I the said Gilbert Warner in Consideration of the Marriage lately Consummated between Thomas Speakman and Mary his wife my loving Daughter, and of my natural affection to my said Daughter, as also toward their advancement in the world, Do hereby Give Grant Enfeoff—all that my Message in Boston—(3 parcels). Dated 5 May 1640.

Gilbert was associated with William Speakman in church and business matters. In particular, the two men were both original proprietors of New Boston, New Hampshire, each having the right to 150 acres of land. It seems possible that neither man's family knew of this investment, since the land was eventually sold, after the deaths of Gilbert and William, for non-payment of taxes.

Gilbert died in Boston circa 3 January 1752 and was buried from Trinity Church on 5 January 1752.

Sarah Wass was born circa 1694, probably in Boston, the elder of two children of John Wass and Ann Wilmot.

She married Gilbert Warner on 29 August 1713. She and Gilbert had only one child in twenty-six years. It strikes me as curious that this small subset of families.... [Apparently an unfinished remark. —Ed.]

Sarah died in Boston circa 19 September 1739 and was buried from Trinity Church on 21 September 1739. Her gravestone gives the indication of her date of birth.

Samuel Copeland Jr. was born in Braintree, Massachusetts, on 28 October 1711, the first of twelve children of Samuel Copeland and Mary Kingman.

On 2 April 1735, he married in Braintree Mary Owen, daughter of Nathaniel Owen and Deborah Parmenter. With her he had twelve children, all born in Braintree or Randolph.

By 1750 Samuel and Mary had moved a few miles southwest from Braintree to Randolph, and by 1765 they had moved another few miles to Stoughton. By May 1775, Samuel had sold their home in Stoughton, and was preparing to live out his days in Washington, New Hampshire. On 2 September 1776, Samuel and his sons Samuel Jr. and Jacob signed a petition asking that Washington be incorporated as a town.

The first settlers had arrived in Washington in 1768, so Samuel and his family were early arrivals. In 1778, he was appointed a tythingman and in 1779 was on a committee to search for a town minister. By 1 July 1782, he was released from paying his poll tax, presumably because of his age. His son, Samuel Jr. served the town in many different posts before finally moving to Dresden, Maine.

Warren Turner Copeland says that Samuel died in September 1799. I have searched the pioneer graveyard in Washington, but have not succeeded in finding his gravestone.

Mary Owen was born in Braintree on 27 March 1717, the second of eight children of Nathaniel Owen and Mary Parmenter. Her father had had two children with his first wife, Mary.

Her father died when she was only eleven, in what seems like an epidemic. Father and youngest sibling died within six weeks of each other. Her mother remarried when Mary was fifteen. She married Samuel Copeland on 2 April 1735 and had twelve children in the next twenty-two years.

We don't have a death date for Mary, but know that she was alive on 2 June 1775, when she and Samuel signed a deed in Stoughton.

Israel Tupper Jr. was born in Sandwich, Massachusetts, on 26 April 1710, the third of five children of Dea. Israel Tupper and Elizabeth Bacon.

He married in Sandwich, on 1 August 1734, Mary Bourne, daughter of Nathan Bourne and Mary Bassett. Israel Tupper Jr. and wife Mary were dismissed at their request from the First Church at Sandwich, Massachusetts, to the church in Dartmouth, Massachusetts, on 18 August 1751. They had moved to Dartmouth before the birth of their daughter Elizabeth there on 2 June 1745. In the *Massachusetts Archives*, Vol. 12, page 383, under heading “Dartmouth February 26th 1746,” appears the following interesting document:

We the subscribers who are members of the Presbyterian Society in Said Dartmouth being apprehensive of our [faded and illegible] and Exposed Condition—While Destitute of a Minister to Dispense the Word to us Do appoint Messrs John Cannon, Richard Pierce, Israel Tupper, Job Jenne and Lemuel Pope or Either three of them to be a Committee during our vacancy to take care of our Meeting house and to provide for ye Supply of ye Pulpit in the manner following, viz—

The interesting thing about this is that no subscriber’s name sounds particularly Scottish at a time when most of the Presbyterian churches in New England served Scots-Irish congregations. Apparently, Israel and Mary retained their membership in the Congregational church at Sandwich after they went to Dartmouth, and it sounds as though they joined a Congregational church in Dartmouth in 1751 after this flirtation with Presbyterianism.

According to *Thomas Tupper and His Descendants*, Israel’s family moved from Dartmouth to Monument Ponds near Plymouth “where he was prominent in parish affairs.”

About 1760, when their youngest child was fifteen, the family moved to Liverpool, Nova Scotia, becoming early settlers of that place. Liverpool has a nice small harbor, very close to the famous cod fishing banks, and had good and plentiful timber. It was settled largely by folk from Cape Cod who had been invited there in 1759 in an effort to bring more folk of English origin (rather than French) to populate Nova Scotia.

The town records of Liverpool frequently mention Israel, his sons Nathan and Ward and his grandson Nathan Jr. In the early days, Israel was clerk to the proprietors of Liverpool, and moderator of the town. He was called “Mr.” and “Gentleman.”

There is no Liverpool record of Israel’s death. The last mention of him, which I have discovered, is in a deed of sale to Abraham Copeland on 1 December 1770. He was involved in a flurry of similar business in 1770, which may suggest that he expected to die soon, or that he intended to leave Liverpool. Many people did leave circa 1773 and 1774 because food—other than fish—had become terribly scarce. I have found the name Israel Tupper in Maine records of a later date, but have no reason to believe they applied to our ancestor.

Mary Bourne was born in Sandwich, on 12 August 1714, the seventh of eight children of Nathan Bourne and Mary Bassett.

She married Israel Tupper Jr. and had her first four children in Sandwich before moving to Dartmouth. All her children were well grown by the time the family moved to Liverpool, and her life there must have been relatively genteel, considering the newness of the settlement.

I have never been able to discover when or where Mary Bourne Tupper died. Her family had left Liverpool, Nova Scotia, by 1787, when their land was reassigned. They may have returned to Sandwich, but I have found no proof.

Edward Page was born in Boston 11 August 1688, the last of three children of Edward Page Sr. and Abiel Thornton.

On 17 May 1711 he married Ruth Jepson in Boston. They were members of the Second Church of Boston, the place where all ten of their children were baptized.

Edward was a shipwright by trade, but was also, in 1720 and 1721, licensed to retail strong drink at his home on Charter Street. Charter Street lies at the extreme north end of Boston, just below the north edge of Copp's Hill Burying Ground. This was also next to the wharves, something essential to a shipwright. His application for a license to serve strong drink near Middle Street was disallowed in 1730.

In the early 1720s Edward and Ruth frequently mortgaged their home which was on the north side of Charter Street in the North End of Boston. They were always able to pay off the mortgage promptly.

Edward died in Boston on 15 January 1736/7 at the relatively young age of forty-nine. Letters of Administration on his estate were granted to Ruth Page of Boston, his relict, on 1 February 1736/7. His inventory amounted to about fifty pounds. He was buried on Copp's Hill, but I have not found the stone.

Ruth Jepson was born in Boston on 28 June 1690, the third of five children of John Jepson Jr. and Ruth Gardner. Her mother died when Ruth was only five, having lost at least three of her children as infants. Her father soon remarried, and Ruth grew up among six half siblings. Ruth and her sister Anna received bequests from their grandfather Richard Gardner in 1698.

Ruth herself had ten children, the last of whom was our ancestor Benjamin Page.

We have no record of the death of Ruth, knowing only that she was alive to receive letters of administration on her husband's estate on 1 February 1736/7. There were no records of guardianship for her children, the youngest of whom would have come of age in 1751, so we can guess that she lived that long.

Nathaniel Warner was born in Ipswich, Massachusetts, on 15 April 1707, the seventh of ten children of Philemon Warner and Abigail Tuttle. He was a mariner and a merchant, which presumably brought him into contact with the merchant families of Boston. He seems to have moved to Boston with his brother William.

He married in Boston 23 November 1732 Hannah Mountfort, daughter of John Mountfort and Mary Cock. Curiously, their marriage intention appears in the records of Gloucester, Massachusetts.

Nathaniel made a will in England, of which an abstract has been published.

Nathaniel Warner late of Boston in New England, Merchant, but now of the Hamlet of Ratcliffe in Saint Dunstan's Stepney in the county of Middlesex." One third part to dear wife Hannah Warner, remaining two thirds to son Nathaniel Warner and daughters Abigail and Mary Warner.

Two Englishmen were to be executors. These executors gave authority to Hannah, to collect debts owed the estate in New England.

Nathaniel died in Radcliffe, Lancashire, England, on 2 October 1746. Whether he had intended to move his family back to England, or whether he had just sickened and died while on a voyage there, we don't know. The former seems likely because his will was dated within a week of his death.

Hannah Mountfort was born in Boston 14 January 1710/11, the ninth of eleven children of Joseph Mountfort and Mary Cock.

She married twice, first to our ancestor Nathaniel Warner, 23 November 1732. She had only four children by him. When these children were baptized at Second Church they were identified as “of Hannah,” suggesting that she, but not Nathaniel, had joined the church.

After the death of Nathaniel, Hannah married in Boston on 9 October 1750, Thomas Gooding. Just before this marriage, on 5 October 1750, Hannah sold to Thomas a brick house and land, on North Street between Richmond and Cross streets. As far as I can tell, she had no children by this second marriage.

She outlived Nathaniel by forty-eight years, dying in Boston on or about 7 November 1794.

Joseph Ruggles was born in Roxbury, 21 July 1696, the eighth of ten children of Capt. Samuel Ruggles and Martha Woodbridge. He married in Roxbury 20 October 1720, Joanna White, daughter of Benjamin White and Susanna.

Joseph was acquainted with Judge Samuel Sewall, who was interested in marrying Joseph’s widowed mother.

He died on 9 September 1742 in Roxbury and was buried in the Eliot Cemetery.

Joanna White was born in Brookline, Massachusetts, 4 November 1701, the last of seven children of Benjamin White and Susanna. Many authors have asserted that her mother was Susannah Cogswell, but I believe that there are strong reasons to disbelieve that. I shall discuss that in the next chapter.

Joanna had seven children with Joseph. After Joseph’s relatively early death, she married Noah Perrin in Roxbury on 4 June 1745. She had no children by this second marriage. Mr. Perrin survived Joanna by ten years.

Joanna died, probably in Saco, Maine, on 24 August 1778.

Lt. Isaac Curtis was born in Roxbury 10 November 1685, the seventh of eight children of Isaac Curtis and Hannah Polly. He was baptized at Roxbury First Church on 15 November 1685.

He married in Roxbury 13 April 1727 Mehitabel Craft, daughter of Nathaniel Craft and Patience Topliffe. On 15 October 1727, he and Mehitabel were admitted to fellowship in the Roxbury Church.

They lived in an old family home that had been built in 1638 and given to the first Isaac Curtis. This house served six uninterrupted generations of Curtises, each headed by a father named Isaac.

Lieutenant Isaac died in Roxbury on 23 May 1748.

Mehitabel Craft was born in Roxbury 14 October 1702, the first of eight children of Nathaniel Craft and Patience Topliffe.

She died, presumably in Roxbury, on 27 June 1749 when her youngest child was only seven. Since her husband was already dead there are probably probate papers setting up guardianships for the children.

Capt. Jonathan Fellows Jr. was born in Ipswich, Massachusetts, on 15 June 1707, the second of three children of Jonathan Fellows and Hannah Dutch.

He married, first Abigail Gaines circa 22 November 1729 in Ipswich. Abigail had a son Jonathan, and then died on 30 January 1730/1. Captain Jonathan then married on 14 August 1735, our ancestress Elizabeth Norwood, daughter of Caleb Norwood and Alice Donnell.

Captain Jonathan was a coaster, but may have received his rank of captain for military service against the French and Indians in 1756. On 6 January 1747, he and other heirs of Caleb Norwood asked referees to decide the distribution of Caleb's property in Gloucester.

He died in Gloucester, Massachusetts, on 20 June 1759.

Elizabeth Norwood was born in York, Maine, 31 July 1708, the first of seven children of Caleb Norwood and Alice Donnell.

She married first John Saunders. Then a widow, she married Capt. Jonathan Fellows Jr. as his second wife. She then had eight children in eleven years, including a final pair of twins. Although we have no death record for Elizabeth, I suspect that she died soon after the birth of the twins in 1746. She was still of an age to have had three or four more children had she lived.

Capt. John Williams was born on 17 September 1712 in Roxbury, third of seven children of Joseph Williams and Abigail Davis.

He married first, in Roxbury on 2 June 1737, Elizabeth Williams, who was his second cousin, once removed. She was the daughter of Lt. John Williams and Sarah Weld. He and Elizabeth had five children, including our ancestress, Sarah.

Elizabeth died when her youngest child was only one year old. Captain John waited a surprisingly long time, and then remarried, on 12 September 1749, to Bethia Parker, a young widow with two children. He and Bethia then had seven more children.

Captain John was called Lieutenant John in the 1749 record of his second marriage, but Captain John in the baptismal records of his children. These titles probably refer to military service against the French and Indians, possibly in the expeditions against Acadia.

He evidently lived a civilized life, in that his first son became a Harvard educated minister, while his second became one of the most successful and prosperous farmers of Roxbury. In those days, the more fertile lands of Roxbury were a principal source of fruits and vegetable for Boston.

Captain John died in Roxbury on 7 April 1777.

Elizabeth Williams was born in Roxbury on 25 August 1716, the fourth of eleven children of Lt. John Williams and Sarah Weld.

She and Capt. John Williams were wed on 2 June 1737 and had five children before Elizabeth died on 17 November 1746.

Joseph Kent was born in Charlestown, Massachusetts, on 13 October 1675, the sixth of eleven children of John Kent and Hannah Grissell.

He married in Charlestown 26 November 1702, Rebecca Chittenden, daughter of Stephen Chittenden and Mehitable Buck. He was admitted to the Charlestown Church in 1703, and was taxed in Charlestown from 1727 to 1737, and from 1741 to 1748.

Joseph left a will made 28 May 1753 only two days before he died. It was proved 30 June 1753. He devised Negroes to his children: Peggy to daughter Mehitable, Venus to Rebecca, Jenny to Benjamin and Violet to Stephen. They had other Negroes.

The Benjamin Kent papers at the American Antiquarian Society in Worcester, Massachusetts, contain lots of items from the life of Joseph. Many are just business papers (deed, receipts, etc.). One historically interesting item is a letter, dated 16 May 1754 in Halifax, Nova Scotia, from Joseph's son Joseph, to the latter's brother Samuel. This stated that their brother Benjamin had just arrived (presumably in Halifax). Judging from the date, I would guess that Joseph Jr. and Samuel had been on Col. John Winslow's expedition which aimed at driving the Acadians out of Nova Scotia.

Joseph died in Charlestown on 30 May 1753.

Rebecca Chittenden was born in Scituate, Massachusetts, on 5 December 1680. Rebecca had nine children, and lived to the grand old age of eighty-one. She survived Joseph by nine years and seemed to carry on the family business competently to the end.

Rebecca made her will on 14 November 1758. She died in Cambridge on 2 April 1762.

Lt. Joseph Adams was born circa 1688, somewhere in Middlesex County, the first of five children of Joseph Adams and Margaret Eames.

Lieutenant Joseph was a weaver.

He married first on 18 January 1710/11 in Cambridge, Rebecca Cutter, daughter of William Cutter and Rebecca Rolfe. They had four children, but Rebecca died in 1717, perhaps in childbirth.

Lieutenant Joseph was then married, by Rev. William Williams of Weston on 26 June 1718, to Rachel Allen, daughter of Joseph Allen and Anna Brazier. They had six children, including our ancestress, Rebecca.

Lieutenant Joseph made his will 16 March 1749, proved twenty-five years later on 8 November 1774. He named wife Rachel; sons Joseph, William and Thomas; daughters Rebecca Kent and Mary Cutter; daughters Anna and Mary Adams; and heirs of daughter (Lucy) Doubleday.

He died in West Cambridge on 18 October 1774.

Rachel Allen, the third of nine children of Joseph Allen and Anna Brazier of Weston, was born circa 1690 as judged from her gravestone.

She and Lieutenant Joseph were married for fifty-six years. She died in West Cambridge on 1 August 1775, aged eighty-five. West Cambridge today is centered on Harvard Square, so she and Joseph may be buried in the old cemetery there.

Zechariah Hill was born in Cambridge 26 April 1708, seemingly the last of three children of Abraham Hill and Sarah Cooper. Records of the Hill family are hard to sort, however, and it seems likely to me that Zechariah may have had more siblings.

He married in Cambridge 10 February 1731/2 Rebecca Cutter, daughter of Dea. John Cutter and Lydia Harrington.

He died in Arlington, Massachusetts, 16 March 1768 and is buried in the Old Burying Ground at Arlington.

Rebecca Cutter was born in Cambridge 13 July 1712, the second of nine children of Dea. John Cutter and Lydia Harrington.

She was admitted to the First Church, Cambridge, on 11 January 1730, shortly before her first marriage, and to the Menotomy (Arlington) Church on 9 September 1739.

After Zechariah died in 1768, Rebecca married, 11 December 1770, Capt. Samuel Carter of Woburn (Cutter). She was by then fifty-eight, so all her children were by Zechariah.

She died in Cambridge on 1 February 1797 at the grand age of eighty-five. According to Cutter's *Middlesex County*, she is buried in the old cemetery at Arlington, Massachusetts. "Her gravestone says that she was the mother of 11 children, grandmother of 103, great grandmother of 150, and the fourth generation had 134."

Thomas Wellington was born on 10 November 1686, probably in Cambridge, the only child of Joseph Wellington and Elizabeth Straight. He married Cherry Adams who was a widow.

Thomas made his will, dated January 1759 and proved 24 December 1759. He died on 2 July 1759 and was buried in the Pleasant Street Burying Ground in Arlington.

Cherry Adams was baptized in Cambridge 31 January 1696/7, the second of five children of Joseph Adams and Margaret Eames. According to her gravestone, she may have been born as early as 1694.

She married first, 17 November 1712 in Concord, Jonathan Stone. Jonathan died fairly young and Cherry married circa 7 March 1734/5 Thomas Wellington. After his death she married for the last time, on 9 August 1763, Capt. James Lane. This was a bit more than a year before her own death.

Cherry died on 16 December 1764 in Bedford, Massachusetts, and was buried there.

Capt. Gershom Bradford was born in Plymouth, Massachusetts, on 21 December 1691, the second of seven children of Lt. Samuel Bradford and Hannah Rogers.

On 21 October 1716 in Plymouth, he married Priscilla Wiswall, daughter of Rev. Ichabod Wiswall and Priscilla Pabodie. Captain Gershom's title seems to have been that of a militiaman, rather than a mariner. We have no record of his commission or of his service. On 27 February 1723/24, Gershom and Priscilla were called "both of Plymouth" in a Plymouth County deed, but court records show him to have been "of Kingston" by December 1729.

He and his family lived for quite a while in Kingston, Plymouth County, Massachusetts, and then, circa 1747, moved to Bristol, Rhode Island. Two court cases in Bristol County bracket well the date of that move. Both involve Gershom's service as guardian of sons of his brother Perez Bradford of Attleborough. A record of 24 December 1746 refers to "Gershom Bradford of Kingston, Plymouth County, Gentleman," while a record of 7 June 1748 calls him "Gershom Bradford of Bristol, Rhode Island, Gentleman." On 21 March 1746/7, Gershom Bradford of Kingston bought about ninety acres of land in Bristol.

There are no surviving town records of the births of Captain Gershom's children. Captain Gershom did not leave a will. Thus, there has long been some doubt about the identities of his children. Recently, a Plymouth County Land Record (Book 48, page 166; Book 49, page 34; and Book 72, page 185) has been brought to light in connection with the writing of "The John Alden Family" in Vol., 16, Part 1, of the *Mayflower Family* series, pp. 217, 218. This record identifies children who sold their shares of a meadow in Plympton, Massachusetts, which had been bequeathed to Gershom by his father Samuel Bradford. Most of the sales occurred in 1762 or 63, reasonably soon after Gershom's death. One, the crucial one for us, did not occur until 23 December 1791. These records prove that Solomon Bradford of Bristol, Rhode Island; Daniel Bradford Esq. of Bristol; Joseph Nash of Providence and his wife Hopestill; Alexander Bradford of Stonington, Connecticut; and Job Bradford of Boston were all Gershom's children. Also the document implies that there were two more children living when Captain Gershom died. One of the presumed children, Noah, had died before his father, so the children who did not sell their shares of the meadow (or whose sales went unrecorded) were probably Priscilla and Jeremiah.

He died in Bristol on 4 April 1757, aged sixty-six, and is buried there in the East Burial Ground, where Pat and I have seen his gravestone and that of Priscilla.

Priscilla Wiswall was born in Plymouth on 21 December 1693, the sixth of seven children of Rev. Ichabod Wiswall and Priscilla Pabodie.

The funeral of Priscilla was mentioned in the diary of Col. Israel Angell. His entry for 13 September 1778 says, "In the afternoon there was a funeral near the camp at the house where Gen. Varnum quartered. It was an Antient Woman mother of Capt Bradford who owned the land we were Encampt on." Priscilla died on 12 September 1778, aged eighty-five, and is buried next to Gershom.

Samuel Parkman was born in Boston 14 November 1695, the ninth of twelve children of William Parkman and Elizabeth Adams.

He married, in Boston on 29 January 1729, Dorcas Bowes, daughter of Capt. Nicholas Bowes and Dorcas Champney, and sister of our ancestor Rev. Nicholas Bowes. Samuel was a merchant and shipowner.

Samuel Parkman died intestate, but his interesting inventory survives (Suffolk Probate #14111, 1768). His administrators were his sons-in-law Capt. Job Bradford, Mariner, and Thomas Lloyd, Blacksmith. His inventory included: the sixty-five-ton sloop, *Olive*; three quarters of the seventy-five-ton sloop, *Defiance*; a house and land on Union Street; a house and land in Salt Alley; a pew in Mr. Eliot's meeting house; and an old Negro man.

Samuel died in Boston on 10 August 1767 and is buried in Copp's Hill Burial Ground.

Dorcas Bowes was born in Boston on 19 May 1709, the last of five children old Capt. Nicholas Bowes and Dorcas Champney.

Dorcas had seven children with Samuel, and seems likely to have died in childbirth with the eighth. She appears to have died on 14 March 1744/5, leaving Samuel with six small children. The eldest daughters being fifteen and thirteen, however, apparently made it possible for him to carry on without remarrying.

CHAPTER EIGHT

✂ Sixth Great-Grandparents

Benjamin Sherman was born in Stratford, Connecticut, on 27 March 1662, the eighth of nine children of Honorable Samuel Sherman and Sarah Mitchell.

He married in Stratford on 6 June 1683 Rebeckah Phippen, daughter of Benjamin Phippen and Wilmot Yeo.

The Stratford land records present a comprehensive list of his land holdings up to about 1702. The first parcel was received by gift “from his honored father Mr. Samuel Sherman.” This same series of records gives birth dates for six of his children, including our ancestor Enos.

Benjamin died in Stratford 29 August 1741 and is buried there in the Old Congregational Church Burying Ground where his stone is still very easy to read. Pat and I have admired and photographed it.

Rebeckah Phippen was born in Boston 10 August 1666, the last of eight children of David Phippen and Wilmot Yeo.

She came to Stratford from Boston with some siblings circa 1680. An interesting Suffolk County land record of 1697 clearly identifies Rebecca and many of her siblings, and shows the connection between Massachusetts and Connecticut families. She and her sister Mary married Sherman brothers, Benjamin and Nathaniel.

Rebeckah had fourteen children in twenty-five years, and lived to the age of seventy-three. She died in Stratford 11 August 1739, having been married for fifty-six years. She was buried there in the Old Congregational Church Burying Ground, next to Benjamin. Curiously, their stones exhibit no dates or ages.

Samuel Walker was born in Stratford 6 November 1671, the eldest of seven children of Jacob Walker and Elizabeth Wheeler.

He married in Wethersfield, Connecticut, on 23 February 1696/7, Abigail Butler, who was the daughter of Nathaniel Butler and Sarah Green. She was then the widow of John Crane. He and Abigail moved back to Stratford circa 1710.

He played an important role in the settling of his father's estate, and was criticized by his stepfather, Philip Alcock, who thought that the children were shortchanging their mother.

He died intestate in Stratford, where inventory of his estate was presented on 22 November 1721. We have no record of his occupation, but his inventory suggests that he may have been a weaver, rather than a farmer.

Abigail Butler was born circa 1667 in Wethersfield, Connecticut. She married first John Crane, in Wethersfield on 27 October 1692. John died on 21 October 1694, after they had had one child, Josiah. Abigail then married our ancestor, Samuel Walker, with whom she had five children. Samuel died in 1721, and Abigail married for a final time, in August 1723, Sgt. Samuel Wright, who died on 12 October 1734.

Outliving all her husbands, Abigail died in Wethersfield on 1 January 1739/40. Our ancestor Enos Sherman was appointed to administer her estate. His account shows that he took care of Abigail during her final sickness. Payments were made to three doctors, so her case may have been of some medical interest, although she had survived to a good old age.

Ens. Samuel Gregory was born ca 1678, probably in Stratford, Connecticut, the third of eight children of Sgt. Samuel Gregory and Rebecca Wheeler.

He married in Fairfield 28 December 1699 Mary "Sillaven." This is her name as recorded. It may be the same as Silliman, but we have been unable to identify her parents. The *Gregory Genealogy* states that her name was Mary Silliman, and that her father was Robert Silliman.

Samuel lived most of his life in Stratfield. He was a yeoman, member of the church committee in 1718, sergeant of militia 1726 and ensign 1731. Some of his land fell in Trumbull, adjacent to Stratfield on the northwest.

Ensign Samuel signed his will on 8 January 1742/43; it was proved on 4 February 1743/4. He named wife Mary; daughters Beulah Treadwell and Miriam Hartshorne; sons Thaddeus and Enoch; grandsons Gilead Treadwell, and Silah and Gilead Gregory.

He died on 11 December 1743 in Stratfield and is buried in the Old Stratfield Burying Ground.

Mary Sillaven/Silliman is one of our mystery persons. The complete name, Mary Sillaven, appears in her marriage record, and Ensign Samuel's will names "my wife Mary," but these are the only records of her that have been published.

The author of the *Gregory Genealogy* claims that Mary's maiden name was really Silliman, and that her father was Robert Silliman. However, the only Robert Silliman of whom we have records seems much too young to have been Mary's father.

Mary survived Ensign Samuel, being named in his will, but she was not buried near him. This suggests that she may have remarried. By then, however, she was probably about sixty-three, so it seems more likely that she lived out her days with one of her children in a different town and was buried there.

Samuel Smith was born in Fairfield, Connecticut, circa 1672, the eldest of seven children of Samuel Smith Sr. and Sarah Frost.

He married first, in Fairfield on 9 January 1696, Abigail Lyon. She gave him two daughters before she died on 6 March 1698. He then married, in Fairfield on 27 October 1699, Deborah Jackson, daughter of Moses Jackson and Deborah Hyatt. Deborah was our ancestor.

Samuel died intestate. Administration of his estate was granted to widow Deborah, and brother-in-law John Smith on 6 February 1711/12. On 19 July 1716, daughters Deborah (2nd) and Rebecca chose their father-in-law (stepfather) Thomas Bailey as their guardian. The court assigned him to be guardian to the younger girls Sarah, Esther and Hellinah (Eleanor). The estate was distributed on 1 April 1729, to Abigail, wife of William Odell; Deborah, wife of Hezekiah Odell; Rebecca, wife of Thaddeus Gregory; Sarah Redfield, heir to Sarah, deceased wife of James Redfield; Esther, wife of Enoch Gregory; and Elliner, wife of Ebenezer French.

Samuel died in Fairfield 19 December 1711.

Deborah Jackson was born in Fairfield 8 February 1678, the second and last child of Moses Jackson and Deborah Hyatt. Her mother died when she was only two, and her father remarried Esther Seeley, thought to have been the widow of Obadiah Seeley.

She was baptized as an adult at Stratfield, along with her father and her step-sister Abigail Seeley on 6 February 1698.

Deborah had six children with Samuel. After he died in 1711, leaving her with very young children, she married Thomas Bailey. We have no precise date for that, but it was between 1712 and 1716, according to Samuel's probate file. On 19 July 1716 Thomas was appointed guardian for Samuel's younger children and chosen as guardian by older daughters Deborah and Rebecca.

We have no record of Deborah's death, or of her having any children with Thomas.

Nathaniel Seeley was born on 24 May 1678 in Fairfield, the first of four children of Lt. Nathaniel Seeley and Hannah Bennett.

He died very young, having just had time to marry Hannah Odell circa 1700, and to have a single child, our ancestor, Nathaniel, baptized in the Fairfield church. Nathaniel made his will 5 April 1703, proved 13 April 1703, naming wife Hannah and son Nathaniel. Brother (-in-law) John Odell was to be sole executor.

We don't have an exact death date, but it is obvious that it fell between 5 and 13 April, 1703.

Hannah Odell was born on 20 October 1679, maybe in Fairfield, the fifth of eight children of John Odell and Mary Walker.

When Nathaniel died she was only twenty-four. She remarried to Jacob Sterling of Stratford, with whom she had four children [Orcutt (see p.198) said five].

She died in Stratfield on 14 June 1756 and is buried in the Old Stratfield Burying Ground where we have seen her gravestone.

Joseph Jackson Jr. was born circa 1675, probably in Fairfield, one of five children of Joseph Jackson Sr. and Mary Godwin.

On 23 November 1699, probably in Stratfield, he married Elizabeth Sanford, who was then the widow of his cousin Joshua Jackson.

Joseph died intestate but good records of the settling of his estate survive. The inventory was taken by John Odell and James Seeley on 25 March 1715. A partial division was made on 10 August 1721. In this division, daughter Elizabeth got some land, some household things, and a sword! A final division of lands was made on 2 March 1728/9, by which time daughter Elizabeth had married Nathaniel Seeley.

Joseph died in Stratfield on 21 September 1714. His gravestone survives in the Old Stratfield Burying Ground. I have a snapshot of it, but a more legible depiction can be found in *History of Stratford and Bridgeport, Connecticut*, by Orcutt.

Elizabeth Sanford was born in Fairfield on 6 September 1679, the youngest of seven children of Ezekiel Sanford and Rebecca Wakelee.

Elizabeth was the widow of Joseph's cousin Joshua Jackson, when she married Joseph. After Joseph's death, she married Thomas Chambers.

She had seven children with Joseph, but three of them died before their father.

She reported on her administration of Joseph's estate on 1 February 1715/6. Because her youngest children, Ann, Sarah and Ephraim, were in their "nonage," the court made Elizabeth their guardian.

Robert Silliman Jr. was born circa 1692, probably at Fairfield, the oldest of seven children of Deputy Robert Silliman and Sarah Hull.

He married, first, at Stratfield on 20 October 1715, our ancestress Ruth Treadwell, daughter of Edward Treadwell and Mary Turney. After Ruth's death, he married on 14 December 1756, Mary Summers, the widow of Abijah Morehouse.

Robert made his will 12 November 1761, proved 1 December 1767. He probably died in November 1767.

Ruth Treadwell was born in Stratfield on 20 January 1697/8, the second of ten children of Edward Treadwell and Mary Turney.

She had six children with Robert, two of whom died in early childhood.

She died on 15 March 1756 and is buried in the Old Stratfield Burying Ground.

Capt. John Burr was baptized at Fairfield on 28 August 1698, the first of six children of Col. John Burr and Deborah Barlow.

On 18 October 1722, he married at Fairfield, Catherine Wakeman, daughter of Capt. Joseph Wakeman and Elizabeth Hawley.

He died at Fairfield 13 September 1752 and is buried in the Old Stratfield Burying Ground.

On 28 July 1771, his sons John and Ozias were simultaneously struck by lightning while attending Sunday worship services at Stratfield. John was killed and Ozias was badly maimed, but survived to the age of ninety-seven!

Catherine Wakeman was born circa 1700 in Fairfield, the second of nine children of Capt. Joseph Wakeman and Elizabeth Hawley.

She had twelve children with John, including one set of twins. The last two died before she did, so her youngest, Ozias, was fifteen when she departed.

She died at Fairfield 25 September 1753 and is buried in the Old Stratfield Burying Ground.

Sgt. Luke Noble was born in Westfield, Massachusetts, on 15 July 1675, the fifth of ten children of Thomas Noble and Hannah Warriner.

He married, first on 1 February 1699/1700 at Springfield, Hannah Stebbins. After giving him two children, Hannah died circa 1705. He then married on 5 May 1708, in Northampton, Massachusetts, our ancestress Ruth Wright, daughter of Joseph Wright and Ruth Sheldon. Ruth gave him nine children, and died circa 1730, very shortly after the birth of her last child. Finally, Luke married Sarah, widow of Dea. David Dewey.

He was a yeoman farmer, who joined the church at Westfield on 24 November 1700.

Sergeant Luke made his will 25 April 1741 (proved 10 April 1744). The will named: "my Dearly Beloved wife Sarah;" son Luke ; son Moses "five pounds besides what I have given him before;" son Asa; daughter Naomi; son Samuel; daughter Ruth; son Jacob; and son Aaron. Aaron was to be sole executor, but Asa took his place. Luke signed with his mark.

Luke died on 21 March 1744 in Westfield.

Ruth Wright was born on 26 April 1687, probably in Northampton, the fourth of eight children of Joseph Wright and Ruth Sheldon.

She had nine children with Sergeant Luke, only one of whom predeceased her.

We don't have a precise death date for her, but it must have fallen between 25 June 1729, when her last child was born, and 25 August 1731, when Sergeant Luke remarried.

Sgt. Joseph Grant was born in Windsor, Connecticut, on 14 May 1673, the fifth of eight children of Tahan Grant and Hannah Palmer.

On 1 May 1701 in Hartford, he married Mary Warren, whose parents may have been William Warren and Elizabeth Crowe.

We do not have a record of his death, but know that he died before 11 March 1744/5. In his genealogy of the Grant family, Arthur Haskings Grant states that Joseph died before 11 March 1744/5, but does not explain his reasoning.

Mary Warren is a mystery woman, thought to have been born circa 1681 to either a William Warren of Hartford or a John Warren of the same place. The most persistent opinion is that she was one of four children (three daughters and a son) of William Warren and Elizabeth Crowe. The question of her parentage has been debated by genealogists for a long time. There are several entries in the *Boston Transcript* columns, from 1901 to 1908, all by J.F.S.S., who concluded that her parents were William Warren and Elizabeth Crowe of Hartford. A competing view was expressed in the *Connecticut Magazine*.

A Mary Warren was admitted to the Hartford church on 29 December 1695. It was thought that she and her sister Elizabeth were daughters of John Warren.

She died in Windsor on 2 January 1718/9 when her youngest child was less than two years old. If the surviving records are complete, she had her children at unusually long intervals (four to six years, instead of the two years that were usual).

Col. Jonas Bond was born in Watertown on 13 June 1664, first of nine children of Capt. William Bond and Sarah Biscoe.

He was married by his father at Watertown on 29 January 1688/9 to Grace Coolidge, daughter of Sgt. John Coolidge Jr. and Hannah Livermore. After Grace died, Colonel Jonas married next on 11 April 1699, Elizabeth Jackson, then widow of John Prentice.

To quote from Henry Bond's *Watertown*,

He held a Justice's commission more than 24 years, and was sometimes called "the marrying Squire," on account of the great frequency of his officiating at weddings during the long time he held office. He represented the town many times in the General Court, and was often entrusted with its most important municipal business. He belonged to the military force sent into Canada in 1690, under Sir Wm. Phipps.

On his gravestone in Watertown is the following epitaph: "Here lies buried the body of Jonas Bond, Esq., who was called of God to serve the public, both as a Lieut. Colonel of a regiment of militia, and as a Justice of the Peace, and was careful to discharge his trusts with zeal, fidelity and courage; who was a man of unaffected piety, which was attended with all those virtues that are requisite to accomplish a Christian; who was a kind husband, a tender father, a steady friend, and a hearty lover of good men; and having served his generation, by the will of God fell asleep Ap. 21, 1727, aetatis suae 63..."

An obituary in the *Boston News Letter* said that he died pretty suddenly at his house in Watertown.

Grace Coolidge was born in Watertown 23 February 1662/3, sixth of twelve children of Sgt. John Coolidge Jr. and Hannah Livermore. She was admitted to the fellowship of the Watertown church on 12 April 1690. Having had four children with Colonel Jonas, Grace died in Watertown on 11 April 1699. She is buried next to her husband.

Nathaniel Bright was born in Watertown 5 May 1647, the seventh of eight children of Dea. Henry Bright and Anna Goldstone. He was twice our ancestor, being the father of both Mary and Hannah Bright. He was a farmer and tanner.

On 26 July 1681, at Watertown, he married Mary Coolidge, daughter of Simon Coolidge and Hannah Barron.

He served Watertown in a number of capacities, starting in 1682 as tythingman, fence viewer, constable and on a committee to settle the line between Watertown and Cambridge. He served several years as selectman, and once, on 2 May 1705, was elected to represent Watertown on the Great and General Court.

He was notably active in church affairs during Watertown's great controversy over the location of a new meeting house. On 9 May 1694, he was elected with a few others, to represent a large group of dissenters against the building of a new house. On 28 September 1696, he was in a large group of citizens who protested against the call to Rev. Samuel Angier to be town minister at the new meeting house. In both of these dissents, he and his associates were overruled by a majority.

The church controversy in Watertown was so severe and protracted that the Great and General Court stepped in to try to settle it, and as late as 24 January 1714/5 Nathaniel was on a committee about church business, specifically about how Watertown would submit to the ruling of the court.

By 1694 Nathaniel was called *Mr.* Nathaniel Bright, and on two occasions he was called Cpl. Nathaniel Bright. However, there is no record of his having been especially active in the local militia.

Nathaniel made his will on 22 September 1723. He named all four sons as executors, but John and Nathaniel declined to serve. He named both of our ancestresses, Mary Livermore and Hannah Bond.

He died in Watertown 11 May 1726.

Mary Coolidge was born on 11 December 1660, the first of eight children of Simon Coolidge and Hannah Barron. She had nine children, and like her husband, was our ancestress twice over. She died in Watertown 1 December 1717.

Capt. Abraham Brown was born in Watertown 26 August 1671, the fifth of ten children of Jonathan Brown and Mary Shattuck.

We know that he married Mary Hyde, daughter of Job Hyde and Elizabeth Fuller, but we have no record, so can't specify exact date and place. From the recorded 1690 birth of their first child, we guess 1689 as the year of their marriage.

In the settlement of his grandfather's estate in January 1694, he received all of his grandfather's real estate, paying the other heirs for their share.

He was licensed as a tavern keeper in Watertown from 1709–1713, and the house in which he had his home and tavern still stands at 562 Main Street, Watertown. Nice photographs of it have been put on the Internet by Stephen Martin Lawson.

He was very active in Watertown community affairs, being treasurer, selectman, assessor and town clerk at various times between 1695 and 1726.

Captain Abraham made his will 20 July 1728 (proved 8 December 1729). He died in Waltham, Massachusetts, on 27 November 1729 and is buried in the Grove Hill Cemetery there.

Mary Hyde was born in Watertown on 21 June 1673, the fifth of nine children of Job Hyde and Elizabeth Fuller. Eventually, when she had to function as the innkeeper's wife, she had a few children old enough to help. She had eight children in all. Mary died in Waltham and is buried in the Grove Hill Cemetery there.

Joseph Simonds was born in Woburn, Massachusetts, on 18 October 1652, the sixth of twelve children of William Simonds and Judith Phippen.

Just before he married, Joseph traded lands in Woburn, exchanging a new unfinished house thereon, to his brother James, in return for lands in Lexington. Shortly after his marriage he and his father-in-law moved to Lexington. He married in Lexington (or Woburn?), 7 March 1680/1, Mary Tidd, daughter of John Tidd and Rebecca Wood.

He was comparatively wealthy, being one of the largest subscribers to the building of the first meeting house in Lexington in 1692, and one of the ten highest taxpayers in 1693. He was appointed one of three caretakers of the ammunition stores in 1700, and was a selectman in 1712–13. In 1695 he was called sergeant, in 1712 ensign. He also served on the school committee. He was a carpenter. He died in Lexington 12 August 1733 and is buried there.

Mary Tidd was born at Woburn 13 November 1656. She and Joseph were admitted to the Lexington church in 1698. She had eight children and survived to the grand old age of seventy-six. She died on 4 December 1732 in Lexington and is buried there.

John Stearns was born in Watertown 24 June 1677, the seventh of ten children of Samuel Stearns and Hannah Manning.

On 24 Feb 1701/2 in Watertown he was married by Rev. Samuel Angier to Abigail Fisk, daughter of John Fisk Jr. and Abigail Park.

He lived on his father's homestead.

Henry Bond said that John died in 1729, although we have no exact record. Inventory of his estate was not taken until 1730/1731 which seems rather late for a 1729 death. There are Middlesex County probate records for him.

We have no record of his burial.

Abigail Fiske was born in Watertown 12 June 1684, the first of nine children of John Fiske Jr. and Abigail Park.

She had fourteen or fifteen children in about twenty-one years, but seems to have lived at least to age fifty, when she was still alive to administer her husband's estate.

James Ball was born in Watertown 7 March 1670, the third of eight children of John Ball Jr. and Sarah Bullard.

He married at Watertown 16 January 1693/4 Elizabeth Fiske, daughter of Lt. Nathan Fiske and Elizabeth.

Watertown Records tell us little about him. On 14 May 1695, he was reported to have fenced in the land where the highway used to go. In 1698 he was a hog reeve and in 1723 a tythingman.

James died in Watertown on 22 February 1729/30. He made his will one day before his death.

Elizabeth Fiske was born in Watertown 11 January 1668. She was explicitly named as the wife of James Ball in her father's probate papers. She had eight children. She is reported to have died in Watertown in 1740, but there is no record of that.

Jonathan Bemis was born in Watertown 17 November 1701, the eleventh of fourteen children of John Bemis and Mary Harrington. About 1722, presumably in Watertown (we have found no record), he married Anna Livermore, daughter of Daniel Livermore and Mary.

He is first mentioned in Watertown town records on 2 March 1729/30, when he was a fence viewer. From then through 1748, he served the town in a vast array of minor functions: as surveyor of lands and highways; as tythingman; as constable; as surveyor and measurer of timber; on a committee to oversee the protection of deer; on a committee from Watertown, Waltham and Weston; and to oversee the rebuilding of the south pier of the great bridge over the Charles River. On 7 March 1742/3, he was elected to the more prestigious post of selectman which he held through 1748.

In 1740, it was mentioned that his home was near the Waltham line, which he had helped to survey. According to Dr. Bond, Jonathan was an innholder in 1745 and 1746. He was a fairly young man when he dropped out of the Watertown records, and it may be that he moved over the line into Waltham shortly after 1748.

He made his will 1768. [Author placed a note here to “fill in details,” but none were provided. –Ed.] He died in Waltham 25 March 1768 and is buried in Grove Hill Cemetery there.

Anna Livermore was born in Watertown 18 January 1702/3, the first of six children of Daniel Livermore and his second wife, Mary.

Anna had six children. She died in Waltham 11 December 1777 and is probably buried in Grove Hill Cemetery.

Dea. Thomas Livermore was born in Watertown 5 January 1675/6, the fifth of twelve children of Samuel Livermore and Anna Bridge.

On 14 December 1704, in Watertown, he married Mary Bright, daughter of Nathaniel Bright and Mary Coolidge.

Deacon Thomas was very much involved in the controversies over the proper placement of a church meeting house in Watertown. In 1697 a second meeting house had been built to the west of the original one and closer to the center of Watertown. Many members of the original society did not like this move, and called a minister to be their pastor in the old location. Meanwhile, Rev. Samuel Angier was called to be pastor of the new, or west church. On 3 October 1718, Thomas Livermore was elected deacon of Reverend Angier’s church, and he served in this capacity until his death.

Early in his service, the church was moved again, further west, into what is now Waltham. Waltham was formally constituted 13 January 1737/8, and Deacon Thomas was moderator of the first town meeting there, and a selectman for the town.

For a few years after his marriage, Deacon Thomas lived in Cambridge, but he soon moved his family to the part of Watertown that became Waltham. In 1731, he built a gristmill along Chester Brook, near the current Lyman estate.

He died in Waltham 8 May 1761, and is probably buried in Grove Hill Cemetery.

Mary Bright was born in Watertown 7 October 1682, the first of nine children of Nathaniel Bright and Mary Coolidge.

She had eight children. Mary died in Waltham on 22 September 1757 and is probably buried in Grove Hill Cemetery.

Mark Hardin may have been born in New Amsterdam circa November 1681. There is a baptismal record at the Reformed Dutch Church there, dated 23 November 1681, for Marcus Herden, son of Martyn Herden and Magdalena de Soison. The witnesses were Marcus de Soison and Helena Fonteyn. The surname in this record is spelled in several different ways in other records that clearly refer to the same parents, so that it seems quite likely that Marcus Herden could have evolved, as a name, into Mark Hardin.

Our ancestor Mark Hardin appears for the first time in the surviving records of Virginia on 7 April 1707, when he purchased fifty acres of land from Alexander Cumins, et al., on a neck between two creeks in Wicomico Parish of Northumberland County. When Mark sold this land in 1720, his wife Mary specifically relinquished her right of dower in the property, hence showing that she was married to Mark by April 1707. These actions, i.e. marriage, moving to a new area, and acquisition of land, by 1707, all seem appropriate for a young man born in 1681.

In 1716 and 1717, Mark acquired land in what was then Richmond County, and moved his family there, about seventy miles to the northwest. By 1721, his new home fell into King George County and in 1731 into Prince William County. About 1731 Mark moved slightly eastward, to the Elk Run settlement, where he lived his last few years. He had received a grant of 642 acres there on 4 March 1722/23 when the land was (temporarily) in Stafford County. In October 1733, Mark effected a major land swap with his son-in-law James McDonnell. (James had married Martha Hardin, presumably Mark's eldest daughter.)

At least in his early days, Mark was a carpenter. He gradually acquired a few slaves, and may have been a small planter at the end. He lived in Hanover Parish in King George County, and in Hamilton Parish in Prince William County. Unfortunately, no parish vital records survive for either of these, or for Wicomico Parish, where most of Mark and Mary's children must have been born.

Fortunately, Mark left a will that has survived, so that we know the names of those children who survived to that time, which was 16 March 1734. It was presented in court on 21 May 1735, by his widow Mary and his eldest son John. The will named the following sons and daughters, presumably in birth order: sons: John, Martin, Mark and Henry; daughters: Martha, Abigail, Mary, Ann, Elizabeth and Alice.

Before leaving Mark, I need to state an alternative theory about his origin. Among his grandchildren who lived in Kentucky in the early 1800s, none of whom had actually known their grandfather or even had ever recorded his name, the following story was universally believed. I quote from an 1880 letter from Martin D. McHenry to Gen. M. D. Hardin, in response to the latter's call for information about the Hardin family. McHenry was a grandson of Col. John Hardin, a lawyer and judge, and a man whose memories, even as an old man, have always been accurate when I could check them against contemporary records. He wrote:

I still believe in the tradition that our Hardin ancestors were Huguenots and that three brothers came to America at or about the same time. This may be so notwithstanding the information you have from Hardins in Georgia and one or both of the Carolinas. It may be that one came over first and communicated with the others after looking at the situation. Our tradition is that they were french and that determining to come to the New World they supposed that in like latitude here they would probably find substantially similar climate, and first concluded to go to Canada, but finding that so much colder they settled further South. This may be true and it may also be true that they first went from France to England or some of them to Ireland and from thence came to America. I was raised in the neighborhood of my great aunt Sarah Hardin, born 1743, my great uncle Mark Hardin born 1750, my great aunt Lydia Wickliffe born 1748 and my great uncle Martin Hardin, born Feb 1758. I have this tradition as I got it from Aunt Sarah, Uncle Mark and Uncle Martin who were fond of telling the young people about such things, and my mother who was raised among them had so learned it.

It is often the case that family traditions such as this are at least partially true, and I have searched New Jersey records in particular, to see whether I could find anyone who might have been a brother of Mark Hardin. It turns out that there were a Benjamin Hardin and a Martin Hardin, living as neighbors in Hopewell at about the same time Mark was appearing in Virginia records. Benjamin moved to Surry County, Virginia, and it seems extremely likely that he was the progenitor of a large group of Hardin families in North Carolina and Tennessee. Martin stayed in New Jersey until he died in Amwell Township, making his will on 10 June 1764 (proved 1 June 1765).

We note that Benjamin and Martin were popular given names among the descendants of Mark Hardin. There is another tidbit of record that may possibly be relevant. In Lucius Little's 1887 biography of Mark's great-grandson, Benjamin Hardin, *Kitchen Knife*, a story is told of Ben's mother

Sarah, who was a Hardin cousin of his father. To quote Lucius Little: “The survivor of the brothers in Virginia bore the Christian name of Martin. Of his career and death no record is known. In her childhood, Sarah Hardin, mother of Benjamin, knew him as a very old man, with a dark countenance and French dialect.”

This sounds great, except that we now know that Sarah’s grandfather was named Mark, not Martin, and that Mark died about eight years before Sarah was born. However, Sarah was twenty-two when Martin of New Jersey died, so it is conceivable that he was her Frenchman, not her grandfather but a great-uncle.

There are other records that hint that our Mark may have been a brother of Martin and Benjamin of New Jersey. In a session of the Court of Pleas of 8 May 1700, in Burlington, New Jersey, the court acted to bar the complaint of a Martin Harding against Joshua Ely (presumably for battery) because it was Mark Harding, not Martin, who was supposed to have been beaten. In sessions of the same court on 8/9 August 1700 and 12 December 1704, Benjamin Hardin was a juror. Finally, and most intriguing, the Court of Quarter Sessions, sitting at Burlington on 4 June 1706, heard and acted favorably on the complaint of a Magdalen Harden. (I don’t worry about slight spelling variations, from Harding to Hardin to Harden—it’s quite clear from the context of these records that all these people lived in the general vicinity of Hopewell, in what is now Hunterdon or Mercer counties.)

The intriguing suggestion of these fragmentary records is that this little nest of Hardins in New Jersey may be the remnants of the Huguenot family that was baptizing children in the Dutch Reformed Church of New York a decade or two earlier. This would lead to the conclusion that Mark, Martin and Benjamin may have been the three Huguenot brothers of the family tradition, but that their parents, not they themselves had been the Huguenot refugees from France. (Of course, there are no New York baptisms for a Benjamin or a Martin, but it is easy to suppose that the records are incomplete.)

Mary Unknown. Mary, the wife and widow of Mark Hardin, was assigned the maiden name Hogue for the first time in 1928 by Judge Lewis W. Rigby of Georgia. Unfortunately, in his own words, “Lack of space and expense of printing forbids my giving documents in support of these genealogies.” He did, however, cite Mark Hardin’s will. Subsequent authors, looking around for possible Hogue connections, spotted a William Hogue at Perth Amboy, New Jersey, who had a daughter Mary of about the right age, about whom nothing was known, and have seized upon her as Mark’s wife.

We don’t know precisely when Mary died. She was alive for the probate of Mark’s will in 1735, and I believe that some record in my possession (which I can’t now find) shows that she was dead by 1755.

Thomas Waters Jr. and Rosa Wickliffe are given as the parents of Lydia Waters by long-lasting family tradition, but without a shred of contemporary documentation. It seems likely that this couple lived on Cedar Run, where a Philemon Waters, possibly a great uncle of Lydia, acquired land as early as 1712. This was in Overwharton Parish of Stafford County, or in Hamilton Parish of King George County in the time of Lydia’s birth. The problem is that most church, probate and court records for that area have been destroyed by war or other catastrophes, so that a great deal of interpolation is required to fill the gaps between those few bits of evidence that do survive.

One wonders how Rosa got her maiden name. One family tradition, very popular with Internet genealogists, says that Rosa was a Wickliffe, descended from the old family of Westmoreland County. Another, much more colorful, family tradition is related in loving detail by Lucius Little in his biography of Ben Hardin. I quote him here:

Miss (Lydia) Waters was of English descent, and of her mother an interesting incident is related by her descendants: In the early colonial days it was usual for emigrants, who had not the means to pay their passage from Europe to America, to be carried by vessels and hired out, or as it was usually termed "sold" by the ship-master for a certain period, thus to pay their passage money. There lived a gentleman some distance from the nearest port where such help could be found, who had a large family. His wife, though an energetic woman, told him there was more work than she could do, and he must go down to the port and buy a woman to help in household labor. Accordingly, he set forth on his journey, and on his arrival at his destination went among the passengers to be hired or sold, with a view to selection. His attention was attracted by a little girl, who sat alone and seemed without companions. He spoke to her and found her an interesting child of perhaps twelve years of age. He inquired who she was, and how she came to be there. She replied that she was an orphan, that arrangements had been made for her to emigrate with parties who at the last moment, had failed to come, and that she had been persuaded by others to come anyway. She had not fully comprehended matters, and only realized her forlorn condition at the end of the voyage.

Her generous hearted listener was so touched by her simple story that he paid her passage and took her home with him. When the good housewife saw what he had done, she at first repudiated the transaction altogether. She had told him, she said, to get a woman to do the work, and instead he had brought her a child to raise. He might find another home, she said, for her, as soon as he could. She did not even inquire the name of the unwelcome newcomer. Before other quarters had been found for the little girl, her inhospitable hostess started on a visit from home for a few days. As was her custom, she gave each of her children their task during her absence. When she had assigned to each sewing or knitting or whatever it was, the little stranger said "What must I do?" "You do" said she abruptly, "what can you do?" The little girl meekly replied: "I can knit a little." The lady softened down so far as to say, "Well, here is a stocking just put on the needles; you knit at that, and maybe some day you will have a pair of stockings." She left home and in a few days returned. Her children were called on to show their work. This done (she heard the children calling the little girl "Rosa") she told Rosa rather coldly, to bring her knitting and show what she had been doing. The child brought a pair of stockings nicely shaped and finished, which had been washed and put away in good order. "Who did this?" said the astonished woman. "I did" replied Rosa. "Who taught you how to knit?" "My mother." "Your mother!" said the mistress, seemingly surprised that Rosa ever had such a relation. "Yes, ma'am" replied the little girl. "Where did she live?" Rosa described her English home. Rather quickly she was asked "What was your mother's name?" "She answered. Strange and admirable providence! That child's mother had been the kind benefactor who had taken that woman, when homeless and friendless, and raised her as her own child. The forlorn little Rosa had suddenly found a home. She became a member of the family, and in the end was portioned with the other children. She grew to womanhood and married a man named Waters. A daughter of this marriage was named "Rosa," and she it was who became the wife of Ben Hardin's ancestor.

In a footnote, Little attributes this version of the tradition to a letter from Martin D. McHenry. I have a letter from McHenry to Gen. Martin D. Hardin, in 1880, in which McHenry asserts that all the older members of the Hardin, Wickliffe and Waters families in the Kentucky of his youth, in the early 1800s "received" this story. These included people who had known Rosa's daughter in person. Unfortunately we have no record of Rosa's death, so we can't tell whether they may have known her as well. At any event, the story seems pretty likely to be true.

Owen Davis and Nathaniel Davie were named as "ancestors" of Nathaniel Davies, father-in-law of Col. John Hardin, but we were not told anything about where or when they lived.

Benjamin McKinley was the maternal grandfather of Benjamin Logan, but we know nothing but his name.

Volker Dircksen, whose name was spelled many different ways because he lived in the last generation that stubbornly adhered to the patronymic naming system of his ancestors, was born in Bushwick (now Brooklyn), Long Island, circa 1692, the first of (as far as we know) three children of Dirck Folkerse and Maria de Witt.

A superb study of Volker has been made by Sarah Finch (Maiden) Rollins for her 1991 book on the Maiden family. Much of what follows is drawn from her account. When Volker was about eight or nine, his parents moved from Bushwick to the Raritan/Millstone area of East Jersey (now in Somerset County, New Jersey). On 16 November 1716 he returned to the Flatbush Dutch Church to marry Dina van Leeuwen (again spelled many different ways), daughter of Frederick Hendricksen van Leeuwen and Dina Janse. They had ten children, mostly baptized in the Dutch Reformed Church of the Raritan, in Somerville, New Jersey.

Sometime in the early 1730s, Volker moved to the Readington area, in Hunterdon County of West Jersey, selling his major holding of eastern lands to his father. Quite unlike his father, Volker was financially irresponsible and often in legal trouble from the age of about forty. Most of his difficulties occurred in the late 1730s and the 1740s. In 1745, his two eldest sons, Dirck and Frederick, had to bail him out of jail!

His father's will, made in 1752, shows his disgust with Volker's bad business practices. He allowed one of Volker's debts to him to be cancelled, but otherwise conspicuously skipped over him to make bequests directly to Volker's children.

This is the last mention of Volker in New Jersey records. Even before that time, his son Frederick had land surveyed in Halifax County, Virginia, near the North Carolina line.

Volker (called Volkert Dirrickson) appears himself in Halifax County court records, as defendant, along with Abel Lee, in a suit, the nature of which is not disclosed, first called on 21 March 1753. On 19 September 1753, Volker sued Adam Loving, Dorothy Loving, his wife, and Edith Loving (again, the charge is not named in surviving records). Dorothy asked that Volker give security for costs, "he being no inhabitant of this colony." This is interesting in suggesting that Volker, though meddling in Virginia business, may still have been a resident of New Jersey. The Loving family is often encountered in studies of Volker's son Frederick.

The last record mentioning Volker that we have found comes from Halifax County on 15 May 1755, in connection with the Dirrickson-Loving suit. It says, "The Plaintiff not further proceeding, this Suit it is dismissed." This may imply that Volker had died, or simply that he had lost interest in the suit. We have no death record for him. He would only have been sixty-three, so he may have lived on in obscurity, although that would seem to be out of character. Most family histories suggest that he died while moving down to Virginia.

Dina van Leeuwen was born in Jamaica, Queens, New York, on 9 December 1694, the seventh of nine children of Frederick Hendricksen van Leeuwen and Dina Janse.

Coming from a highly respectable family, she must have been embarrassed at times by her husband's irresponsible behavior. Fortunately his father and elder sons, and her own parents, rallied to his support. In any event, she must have been kept busy with the raising of ten children.

We have no death record for her.

John Jacob Jr. was born in Anne Arundel County, Maryland, in 1698, the third of ten children of John Jacob Sr. and Anne Cheney.

He married at All Hallows Parish, Anne Arundel County, on 4 July 1706 Mary Swanson, whose parents we have not identified.

John made his will on 16 August 1726, just before his father's death, but after the death of his first wife, and before he remarried. John then lived nearly another fourteen years, his will being proved on 12 May 1740. He named sons John, Jeremiah and Zachariah, and daughters Charity, Rachel and Mary. He left the family lands to his sons, and asked that they not be sold to strangers, but be kept in the family.

John seems to have remarried, on 24 August 1731 to "Alice Cheney alias Jones." I don't know whether that implies that her maiden name was Cheney, and she was a widow Jones, or whether it has some other meaning.

John died circa May 1740.

Mary Swanson was supposedly born circa 1688, but we have no record of her birth, or of her parents. Modern Internet sources claim that her parents were Francis Swanson and Susannah Plummer, but I have seen no credible proof of that.

Mary may not have had infant baptism, for there is a record in the Parish Register of All Hallows Parish, to wit: "Mary ye wife of John Jacob Junr (if not already baptized) was baptized April 8, 1719." The fact that no one at All Hallows knew whether she had received infant baptism suggests that she was not descended from a long-time local family.

Mary was buried from All Hallows parish on 4 November 1722.

Rev. James Fontaine was born in Jenouille, France, on 7 April 1658, the son of a Huguenot minister. He was, in my opinion, one of our most intriguing and admirable ancestors, principled, intelligent, inventive, courageous, highly educated and a highly successful educator. Besides—a genealogist's delight—he wrote extensive memoirs, which were edited and published by a granddaughter.

He was raised and educated in France, where he prepared for the ministry and became betrothed to his future wife, Anne Elizabeth Boursiquot. All this happened while persecution of the Protestant Huguenot minority in France was intensifying, with churches being burned and ministers and parishioners being imprisoned. Reverend James himself was in prison at times, where he reportedly preached to fellow Huguenots, urging them to hold firm in their opposition to Catholic authority. He was not a pacifist, and in 1685 urged a meeting of Huguenot ministers and elders to take up arms. When they declined to do so, and intensified persecution led to the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes in October, 1685, he decided to flee to England with his fiancée, her sister and a niece.

Their escape was successful and they met a kind reception in Barnstaple, where they settled for a while. There they resisted a well-intended and financially advantageous suggestion that they split up, and hastened to be married on 8 February 1685/6.

It has been some years since I read Reverend James's memoirs, and I present here only those things that have made a lasting impression on me. In raising and educating his sons, he insisted on a two-pronged approach: learn the classic languages and theology, be prepared for the ministry if called, but also learn a skilled trade, such as that of engraver or watchmaker, to be sure to have the means to support one's self and family.

His inventiveness and willingness to take chances went hand in hand. The former had a very practical turn—when a member of his parish, a weaver, lost a foot in an accident, Reverend James devised a loom for him, which could be powered by one foot, rather than two. Upon studying the incredibly labor-intensive English methods of finishing woolen broadcloth (in which we Shermans have a strong historical vested interest) he concluded that the same end result could be achieved with a swift pass of a flame over the fuzzy cloth, to remove the surplus wool that Shermans had been clipping away for ages. The competitive success of his new method so enraged the traditional manufacturers that they virtually drove him out of England, to Ireland, where his business prospered until ruined by an act of Parliament, prohibiting the export of broadcloth from Ireland.

The ruin of one of his enterprises seemed only to drive Reverend James into the development of a new one. Thus he moved from Cork, his first Irish home, down to Bear Haven, on the southern coast of Ireland, to set up a temporarily thriving fishing business. This was destroyed in turn by French privateers, who actually bombarded his home there, and eventually carried off his son Peter, our ancestor, as hostage to guarantee that Reverend James would desist from spying on the smuggling operations of the French and their Catholic Irish collaborators.

The English authorities in Ireland were sympathetic and compensated Reverend James somewhat for his losses at Bear Haven, but he concluded to abandon that place and to move to his final home, on St. Stephen's Green in Dublin. There he renovated a large house, turning it into a family home plus a grammar school. In those days, "grammar school" meant something much more educationally advanced than it does in this country today. He taught them "the French, Latin and Greek Tongue; also History, Geography ... Mathematics and especially Piety." This was, of course, aimed at the sons of the gentry.

The school was very successful, and afforded him the setting in which to assure that his own sons were well educated. Three of them (Peter, Moses and Francis) subsequently graduated from Trinity College in Dublin, and two of them went on to become ordained ministers. When Anne Elizabeth died in 1721, Reverend James closed his academy, but stayed in Dublin for his remaining seven years.

Reverend James died in 1728. We have no precise death date or place of burial. I close this with a direct quote from *The Journal of John Fontaine*, which serves as a fit obituary tribute:

During the remaining seven years of his life James Fontaine could look back with satisfaction on the way Anne Elizabeth and he had raised their family. The four children in Virginia and the three in England had been given a comfortable material start. More important, they had been taught piety and love of God; again and again they had seen their father refuse to compromise with his conscience. Each child also had received a sound education, no mean resource in that illiterate age. Both parents had set admirable examples, and the children could not reproach them for lack of courage, industry, or willingness to take risks and try new things.

Anne Elizabeth Boursiquot was born in Tailliesbourg, Saintonge near Bordeaux, France, to Aaron Boursiquot and Jeanne Guillet.

We know that she was so devoted to her fiancée that she fled to England with him, and stood by him throughout an adventuresome and at times dangerous life. From the pen of her husband we have this description of her person:

She was very beautiful, her skin was delicately fair. She had a brilliant color in her cheeks, a high forehead, a remarkably intellectual expressive countenance ... and she had a very dignified carriage which some persons condemned as haughty, but I always thought it peculiarly becoming to one of her beauty. The charms of her mind and disposition were in no way inferior to those of her person, so that altogether she seemed formed to captivate the most indifferent.

She died in Dublin on 29 January 1720/1 and is buried in the cemetery located next to St. Stephen's Green. St. Stephen's Green is today a popular park in downtown Dublin, but it does not seem that any trace of the old cemetery has survived.

Joseph Wade is thought to have been born circa 1690, but nobody knows where or to whom.

We believe that he married Sarah Lide, daughter of Robert Lide, circa 1710, but we have no record. In 1713, Joseph Wade was granted fifty acres in James City County. In an inquisition held 22 November 1720 in James City County, mention is made of "Robert Wade's line, formerly Joseph Wade's line."

On 26 January 1722/3, when Robert Lide named Joseph in his will, Joseph was living in Charles City County. James City and Charles City are adjacent counties, along the north bank of the James River.

Joseph made his will on 3 January 1757 in Orange County, North Carolina. It was proved at August Court, 1767. It mentions daughter Sarah Fountain.

We need a little more assurance that the Joseph Wade of James City and Charles City was the same man as the Joseph who made his will in Orange County, North Carolina. There seems little doubt that the latter man was our ancestor, and there was plenty of time (between 1723 and 1757) for him to have drifted down to North Carolina, but it would be nice to have more evidence.

Sarah Lide was born circa 1690 to Robert Lide and Elizabeth. We believe she married Joseph Wade, because her father's will names a daughter Sarah, wife of Joseph Wade, and because Robert Lide and Joseph Wade were occasionally in land records for the same time period and place.

Richmond Terrell III was born circa 1696 in Blissland Parish, New Kent County, Virginia, to Richmond Terrell Jr. and an unknown mother.

We know very little about him, but believe he was that Mr. Richmond Terrell who was a Vestryman of Blissland Parish from 29 September 1740 until 10 October 1768.

For some reason, we have no record of the name of either the mother or the wife of Richmond III.

Richmond III did not leave a surviving will, but the will of his grandson Richmond of Louisa County, dated 1 November 1771, shows that Richmond III had both a son and a grandson named Richmond, who lived in Louisa County.

Richmond III died circa 1 August 1771. We do not have a precise date of death, but in a letter dated 8 August 1771, it was said that he had died "within a few days."

Capt. James Overton was born probably in Hanover County, Virginia, on 14 August 1688, the fifth of six children of William Overton and Elizabeth Waters.

He married at Pamunkey Creek in 1706, Elizabeth Garland, daughter of Edward Garland Sr. of Hanover County and a sister of Margaret Garland, who married Captain James's brother William. Elizabeth, at the time of her marriage to James, was widow of ____ Truhart.

James had a grant of land on Elk Creek in Hanover County obtained in 1735.

Captain James made a deed of gift to his son James on 28 July 1747, calling himself "James Overton of St. Martin's Parish, Louisa Co., Gentleman." He wrote his will shortly thereafter, on 5 October 1747, calling himself "James Overton of Saint Martin's Parrish in Hanover County" and naming four

sons (William, James, Samuel and John), four daughters (Mary Cosby, Elizabeth Bickley, Barbara Carr and Ann Terrel) and two granddaughters (Mary and Elizabeth Overton). Willian Overton was to be executor.

He mentions two plantations, “my home plantation” and “the plantation at Elk Creek.” I believe that the latter was in Hanover, so his home may have been in that part of Hanover which became Louisa in 1742. He was a captain of the Hanover militia, a justice of Hanover County and sheriff of the county in 1735.

He died in St. Martin’s Parish, Hanover County, on 18 June 1748.

Elizabeth Garland was born circa 1688, probably in Hanover County, Virginia, possibly the fourth of nine children of Edward Garland and Martha Jane Hensley. The vagueness of these statements is due to the almost absolute lack of contemporary records for this part of Virginia.

It is said that Elizabeth died on 19 November 1739, which would probably have been soon after the birth of her last child.

Col. William Johnson was born circa 1723, a guess that would make him about twenty-one when married. There are two conflicting theories about his parentage and place of origin, published in Virkus’s *Compendium*, and a third in a genealogy of the Johnson family found at the Filson Club in Louisville, Kentucky. The three all agree as to Colonel William’s dates (born 1714, married 1742, died 1765) which makes me suspect that they all come from a common, unspecified source. Both seem to me to be unsubstantiated guesses, so I don’t repeat them here.

He married, first, circa 1742 in Orange County, Virginia, Elizabeth Cave, daughter of Benjamin Cave and Hannah Bledsoe.

Colonel William made his will 16 March 1766 (proved 22 May 1766). One of the witnesses was Colonel William’s brother Robert Johnson Sr. His sons, Robert Jr. and Benjamin, were co-executors. He bequeathed his land in Culpeper County to son Robert, but wife Elizabeth was to enjoy this property during her widowhood. His land in Orange County, on which he resided, was to go to son Benjamin, under the same conditions. Robert’s land was to descend to son William Cave Johnson if Robert died without heirs. If Benjamin should die without heirs, his land to go to son Valentine. Wife Elizabeth was to get his mill, which was to go to son William Cave Johnson after her death. Robert, Benjamin and daughter Anne Rogers were given specific horses, and wife Elizabeth was to give the other children suitable beasts when they left her. William did not name his other four daughters, who presumably were not yet married.

One of the witnesses of his will was James Madison, probably the father of the future president.

A division of slaves belonging to William’s estate was initiated by court order on 26 October 1786, shortly after Elizabeth ended her widowhood by marrying William Bell on 23 February 1786. These assets were divided into nine equal parts, and distributed to the four sons (Robert, Benjamin, Cave and Valentine), to the widowed daughter (Mildred Sebree), and to the husbands of the other four daughters (William Rogers, Laban Shipp, George Eve and Robert Bradley). Thus it is shown that all the daughters of William were married by January 1787.

It would be interesting to know how this distribution of slaves was brought about, since some of the recipients then lived in Kentucky and the rest in Virginia.

It is difficult, in studying the surviving records of Orange, Culpeper, Spotsylvania and Essex counties, to identify with certainty those records that refer to our William Johnson, since there were other men of the same name in those records. One cannot take the difference between Johnson and Johnston too seriously as an aid, because both spellings were used somewhat interchangeably. Facts that I feel reasonably sure of are that our William was the only one with a wife Elizabeth, in records made between 1742 and 1766. He was the one most likely to be associated with the Cave and Bledsoe families, being related to them by marriage. He seems very likely to have had a brother, Robert Johnson Sr. (who witnessed his will). From newspaper ads of the auction sale of Harry Beverley's lands in the Octonia Grant, we learn that both William and Robert lived on those lands, and that their homes were used as locales for the auctions in 1769. As I reexamine the records, I find nothing that clearly refers to our William before 1740.

Elizabeth Cave was born circa 1727 in Orange County, Virginia, the first of nine children of Benjamin Cave and Hannah Bledsoe.

She had had nine children with William Johnson, and was about thirty-seven when William died, her youngest child being then only about a year old. She somehow managed, probably with the help of slaves and her older children, to raise her younger ones, and to see a number of them depart for Kentucky in 1779. Her sons Benjamin and Valentine remained in Virginia, and it seems likely that she lived with one of them.

Then, on 23 February 1786, after twenty years of widowhood, she married a widower, William Bell. She made her will, proved in Orange County in February 1803, leaving everything to her son, Valentine Johnson.

Lt. James Suggett was born on 18 April 1722 in North Farnham Parish, Richmond County, Virginia, a child of James Suggett and his second wife, Katherine Lewis.

His father died when James was only about eleven. James was assigned a guardian, Daniel Hornsby, who was also granted administration of the estate of James Sr. The records of guardianship and administration show no evidence of any other surviving children of James and Katherine Suggett.

Another important item involving the younger James in his minority was a chancery case involving him on one side, and his uncles Thomas and Edgecomb Suggett on the other. This was, I believe, a friendly suit of the sort employed to facilitate division of property between relatives, some of whom were of age and needing their share, and one or more of whom were minors and not legally empowered to agree to a division. In this case, the property was the 590 acres inherited by Sarah Suggett from her father John Edgecomb, which she had given, undivided, to her sons John, Thomas, Edgecomb and James. By June, 1738 (and probably a bit earlier—I may have missed a record) the case for division involved Daniel Hornsby as guardian for James Suggett, who was still a minor, on one side, and only Thomas and Edgecomb Suggett on the other. The interest of the fourth brother, John Suggett, must have been satisfied in some other way. At any rate, the property was divided, and it would be very interesting to learn what young James did with his share. I did not find a record of that.

At court on 4 Sept 1738, James elected to change his guardian, picking Edward Spencer. The James who was baptized in 1722 would then have been sixteen, still needing a guardian, but able to pick his own. (I think all this permits us to conclude that the church record naming James's mother as Mary rather than Katherine was just written erroneously.)

On 8 January 1739/40, James Suggitt, nearly eighteen, witnessed a deed to his uncle Edgecomb in Richmond County (Deed Book 9, page 648—transcribed by TLC Genealogy.) This is the latest record I have found for James in Richmond County.

His first marriage, wife unknown, brought him a daughter Elizabeth, who is mentioned in several deeds. Alexander Spotswood brought him three hundred acres of land in Orange County on a lifetime lease of 27 August 1746. (Orange County Deed Book 10, pp 382 and 386.)

By 1744, a James Suggett, Gent. appears in the records of Orange County (Order Book 4, page 179). This reference to his social standing may connect significantly with a Westmoreland County record of 25 October 1748, in which Mr. James Suggett acquires all the right and title owned by William Muse, to a certain lease of land granted to Muse by Daniel McCarty. The witnesses to this deed were Nicholas Minor, Patrick Spence and William Bayley. I have seen only an abstract of this record, and can't help wondering whether the original might not mention the place of residence of James. We remember that our James had just been granted peaceable occupation of his leased Spotswood land in 1747. It seems very likely to me that this record refers to our James, and connects him to the Spence family a few years before his marriage to Jemima.

In about 1751, probably in Orange County, Lieutenant James married Jemima Spence. Lt. James Suggett started the westward movement of this family. An interesting deed records the sale by James Suggett of St. Mark's Parish, Culpeper County, of 150 acres in Cople Parish, Westmoreland County, land he had purchased from George Lamkin. This purchase must have taken place after his marriage to Jemima Spence, because Westmoreland authorities had to send to Culpeper to get Jemima's release of her dower right, which they did on 1 March 1758.

In a historically significant Orange County deed, made 13 May 1769, Zachariah Burnley conveyed one acre of land, on which a meetinghouse was to be built, to James Suggett, William Tomlinson, John Sutton, William Lilly, Lewis Conner, Edward Deering, Robert Johnson, Thomas Buckner, Charles Smith, William Brock, Joseph Early and Prettyman Merry, managers of the Separate Baptist meetinghouse. This was the "Old" Blue Run Church, a part of which was still standing, so Pat and I could see and photograph it in 1983.

The fact that Lieutenant James is listed first in the list of managers of the Separate Baptist group may have been a tribute to his relative seniority, but connects well with the fact that he was known as "Parson Suggett" in Kentucky.

The westward move continued to Kentucky, and is probably marked by the sale, on 23 September 1779, of 511 acres in Orange County, "where Suggett lives," by James and "Mimey" Suggett. Lt/Parson James may actually have been the leader of the party which carried the Johnsons, Caves, Tomlinsons and others to the Bluegrass region, via the Ohio River, with a stopover in Wheeling, forced by freezing of the river. They arrived in Kentucky on 29 March 1780.

Lieutenant James made a will in Fayette County, Virginia (now Kentucky), on 5 March 1786, which was proved at the August court of that year. He named wife Jemima, son John, daughter Elizabeth Smith, daughter Jemima Johnson. Of these, Elizabeth Smith was the daughter from his first marriage, who had married George Smith Jr. in Orange County on 26 February 1760.

Jemima Spence was born circa 1730 in Westmoreland County, Virginia, one (perhaps the fourth) of five children of Capt. Patrick Spence and Jemima Pope. We have no birth or baptismal records for her or her siblings, and can identify only those who were named in their parents' wills. We don't know for sure where she and Lt. James Suggett were married. They both grew up in Westmoreland County, but lived after marriage in Orange County and then in Kentucky.

As far as we know, she and James had only three children: John, who led the family on west to Missouri; Jemima, who married Robert Johnson; and Catherine, who married Prettyman Merry, another of the managers of the Separate Baptist Meetinghouse.

We don't know when or where Jemima died. She was alive in 1786, to be named in James's will.

James Lane was born in Cople Parish, Westmoreland County, Virginia, circa 1714. He was probably the first of four children (who survived to be named in their father's will) of William Lane and Martha Carr.

He grew up in Westmoreland County, and married there, circa 1734, Lydia Hardage, daughter of James Hardwick and Elizabeth. (The spelling of Lydia's maiden name varied strongly from year to year and place to place, but there seems ample evidence to believe that Hardage and Hardwick are essentially the same.)

In 1740, James and his brother William, had married sisters. (William was the first husband of Sarah Hardage.) They leased land from George Turberville in Prince William County, very likely in a part which became Fairfax County in 1742. His brother William died very shortly thereafter, and his widow married Francis Summers. The Lane and Summers families stayed in Fairfax County for a couple of decades.

In 1760, James received a substantial bequest of land in Fairfax County from his father, who had evidently begun a westward movement of the family. James continued that movement, and was established in Loudon County with his large family by 1763. There he and Lydia lived the rest of their lives in Cameron Parish.

James Lane left a long and interesting will in Loudon County, Virginia (made 29 April 1790, first proved 10 October 1790). He made a generous gift to his parish minister, and manumitted several slaves. This will makes it clear that he had two sons, James and Hardage, and not one son, James Hardage (as stated in *Seldens of Virginia*). The tracing of James and his family in Loudon is made difficult by the fact that he had brothers Joseph Lane and William Carr Lane, who also took their families, which enjoyed many of the same given names, to Loudon. Indeed, it was Joseph who first got land in Loudon, and gave it to James in return for land in Cople Parish, Westmoreland. This was further complicated by the fact that Francis Summers, with the children of James's deceased brother William, moved to Loudon at about the same time. These children included the James Hardage Lane who was sometimes confused with our James's sons James and Hardage.

For a considerable period of time, James and William Carr Lane were business partners.

Lydia Hardage was born in Westmoreland County circa 1716 perhaps in the middle of the seven children of James Hardwick and Elizabeth.

There are no birth or baptismal records for the children of James and Elizabeth, but we have the names (unfortunately not in exact birth order) of the children named in James's will. This will was made after most of his daughters had been married, and it ends with a bequest to daughter "Cyowny" Lane. I have seen the handwritten clerk's copy of the will, and that is the best transcription I can give.

Nobody knows for sure who "Cyowny" was, but several authors have asserted that she was Lydia Hardage. The basis for this belief is that Lydia and James Lane named a son Hardage Lane. I think another clue may lie in the daughter Sarah Summers, since many connections between a Summers family and the Lane family show up in Loudon County records, including the 1790 will of James Lane.

We don't have a death record for Lydia but she was alive in 1790, when her husband made his will and died by July 1793, when an executor's report listed "cash found in the desk of William Lane at the death of Lydia Lane."

William Payne Jr. was born in Westmoreland County, Virginia, on 10 August 1692, eldest of four children of William Payne and Elizabeth Pope. His mother was only about fifteen when he was born.

He married circa February 1712/3 in Richmond County, Virginia, Alicia Jones, daughter of Edward Jones and Alicia Samford. She was about seven years older than he. In 1733, he and Alicia were living in Prince William County on land which was at first in Stafford County, then Prince William, and finally, after 1742, in Fairfax, near what was later Payne's Church.

In 1744, he was sheriff of Fairfax, in 1752 a church warden of Truro Parish, in 1756 a vestryman at Colchester, and in 1763 a vestryman of Falls Church.

He lost his first wife in 1760, but liked married life so well that he took Anne Jennings as a second wife on 1 March 1763, and had two more children by her. One of these, Gen. John Payne, married Betsy Johnson, a daughter of Col. Robert Johnson and Jemima Suggett, in Kentucky.

He made his will 20 June 1769 (proved 16 September 1776 in Fairfax County) naming sons William, Edward, Sanford and John, and mentioning, but not naming, his wife and daughters.

He was identified as a "gentleman planter."

William died in Fairfax County on 24 August 1776.

Alicia Jones was born in Richmond County, Virginia, circa 1685, the fourth of five children of Edward Jones and Alicia Samford. Her siblings' births were all recorded at North Farnham Parish of Richmond County, Virginia.

She was the first wife of William Payne, and as far as we know had five children with him.

She died in Fairfax County on 31 October 1760, and must have made William so fond of marriage that he remarried at the age of seventy-one!

Capt. Henry Conyers was born, probably in London, England, circa 1679. It seems likely that he was a son of the London physician, Dr. William Connyers.

Captain Henry had two marriages, widely separated in time. In England, probably in London, on 27 January 1698, he married Elizabeth Foote. They had a daughter Hester, who married the Huguenot John Mauze. The father of this John had married in England a sister of Captain Henry. It seems likely that Elizabeth died before Henry came to Virginia.

In a deposition he made in 1729, Henry said that "on or about the twenty seventh of January in the year one thousand seven hundred and three this deponent (Henry) arrived and landed at the plantation of the said Richard Foote in St. Paul's Parish in Stafford County." This Richard Foote was then Henry's brother-in law.

In a statement dated 5 January 1701, perhaps in England, Henry said, "Whereas I am now going to Virginia and whereas Martha Gamby an Indian is contented to go with me as a hired servant I do hereby promise and agree that if the said Martha Gamby does at any time within four years next

coming desire to return to England I will also be assisting in her return to my power to pay for her passage back to England whenever she shall desire the same.” It would be interesting to know whether Martha was an Indian from America or from India.

On 13 February 1705/6, Henry bought one half of a water mill standing on the head of Potomac Creek in Stafford County.

It seems likely that Captain Henry went for a while to South Carolina, where there was a major settlement of Huguenots around Charleston. Perhaps in connection with this trip, he seems to have made a will, which was carried back to Virginia and recorded in Stafford County circa 1708.

Much later, when he was almost fifty, he had an illegitimate daughter by Jannette Pattison. He married Jannette, whose parentage we don't know, circa 1727. Some descendants theorize that she had been a servant in his house; others wonder whether she might not have been more prosperously born. There is no evidence that she brought property to the marriage.

Janette and he had two more daughters before Captain Henry died circa May 1733. He made a second will 1 April 1733 (proved 13 June 1733). From the terms of this will, it is clear that Captain Henry was a man of substantial property. He left Jannette the third part or dower of his whole estate, plus two hundred acres on Goose Creek. He split the six hundred acres he bought of David Waugh on Popshead in Prince William County between daughters Ann Holland and Theodosia. He set aside four hundred acres he had bought of Thomas and John James for Jannette to use for the maintenance and support of his children. He asked Jannette to buy a tract of land to be patented jointly to herself and daughter Sarah, a thousand acres or less. Throughout the will, he often advised the exchange of land or other resources for servants or Negro slaves.

Jannette Pattison was born, probably in Stafford County circa 1706. We have no birth record for her, nor have we found any record that identifies her parents.

We don't have an exact date for her marriage to Captain Henry, but know that it was after 4 October 1726, when Jannette Patterson and Henry Connyers jointly witnessed a deed in Stafford County. Shortly after Capt. Henry Conyers died, Jannette married Randall Holbrook as his second wife. By 21 November 1733, Randall Holbrook and Jannette his wife made a deed of gift to Jannette's daughter Sarah, of the 202 acres on Goose Creek, and designated a Negro slave called Jenny to go to Sarah after the death of Jannette.

We have no exact death date or place, but know that she was alive on 10 April 1751, when Theodosia Connyers, aged twenty, deposed in Stafford County, and Jannette Holbrook, her mother, confirmed her statement. We also know that she had died by 8 December 1755, when Randall Holbrook made a deed of gift to his son-in-law Samuel Earle and wife Elizabeth, of property possessed by his wife Jannette Holbrook, *deceased*. Since both of these records appear in Stafford County, we suppose that she died there. Some Internet writers pin the death date down to 1752, but submit no proof.

Joseph Allen was born in Medfield, Massachusetts, 24 June 1652, the youngest of the seven children of James Allen and Anna Guild. He married in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, on 10 November 1673 Hannah Sabine, daughter of William Sabine and Mary Wright. He was a cooper and farmer.

Joseph was largely responsible for enlarging the Allen Homestead in Medfield, of which there are drawings in Tilden's *History of Medfield*. This homestead remained in the family for more than two hundred years.

It is related that, in the terrible Indian raid on Medfield on 21 February 1675/6, the Indians tried to burn down Joseph's house by igniting a pile of shavings from his cooper's shop, but that the shavings burned through a trapdoor on which they were placed, and fell into the cellar, where they were extinguished. Thus, the Allen home was the only place in the neighborhood to have escaped destruction on that day.

He died in Medfield 14 January 1703/4, having made a will that left the homestead to Noah and bequeathed land near Woodstock, Connecticut, to Daniel and David. As Medfield was filling up, he saw the scattering of many of his sons; besides Daniel and David, Nehemiah went to Sturbridge, and Hezekiah and Eleazar went to Dover.

Hannah Sabine was born in Rehoboth on 22 October 1654, the ninth of twelve children of William Sabine and Mary Wright.

When she married Joseph Allen in 1673, she had the odd experience of becoming her father's sister-in-law. After having twelve children with Hannah's mother, William married Martha Allen, a sister of Hannah's husband, with whom he had eight more children. By the time Hannah was married, her father had had five children by this second marriage! Let's just say that Hannah was used to large families.

The early days of her own marriage must have been frightening, since she must have had two tiny infants when the Indians struck in February 1675/6. Imagine her relief when their home was miraculously saved from burning!

Her death was listed in Medfield town records, but the original sheet was torn when the published transcriptions were made. The published entry is "1730 [rec. after October 4th]."

Jonathan Gay was born in Dedham, Massachusetts, on 1 August 1653, ninth of ten children of John Gay and Joanna (Hooker) Borden. He married in Dedham 29 August 1682 Mary Bullard, daughter of Nathaniel Bullard and Mary Richards.

Jonathan seems to have moved his family to Needham circa 1701. His father-in-law, Nathaniel Bullard, had also moved there. He bought the "Dedham School Farm," and in 1702 purchased of Andrew Dewing four acres on the road from his house to Natick. His father, John Gay, owned land toward Natick, as early as 1653, and had in 1670 a meadow near Wolf Pit Hill.

In Tilden's *History of Medfield*, Sarah Gay is called "daughter of Jonathan Gay of Needham."

Jonathan died in Needham on 12 July 1713.

Mary Bullard was born in Dedham, Massachusetts, on 24 December 1659, first of six children of Nathaniel Bullard and Mary Richards.

She is believed to have lived to the remarkable age of ninety-seven, dying in Needham on 3 July 1757, some forty-four years after the death of her husband. Since her daughter Sarah lived to be eighty-nine, there may simply have been some genes for longevity in this family.

Joseph Ellis was born in Medfield on 24 October 1662, of John Ellis and Joan, the widow of John Clapp.

He married first in Medfield, 23 November 1688, Lydia Lovell, who died on 11 June 1694, after they had had three children. He then married circa 1696, Elizabeth Metcalf, daughter of John Metcalf and Mary Chickering.

Probably by arrangement with his brother Eleazar, he inherited his father's home on Main Street. He was a selectman of Medfield for seven years.

He died in Medfield 31 August 1726.

Elizabeth Metcalf was born circa 1655 in Dedham/Medfield, Massachusetts, the fifth of eight children of John Metcalf and Mary Chickering. She appears to have been born just as her parents were moving from Dedham to Medfield, and somehow her birth failed to be recorded, although those of all her siblings were.

She was forty-one when she married Joseph Ellis, but we have no record of a prior marriage. It seems possible that she stayed single while caring for her aging parents, since she married at about the same time as her mother died. Whatever the reason, she and Joseph had only two children.

She died in Medfield on 27 November 1735.

Ebenezer Mason was born in Medfield, 12 September 1669, fifth of seven children of Thomas Mason and Marjery Partridge.

When Ebenezer was about six and a half, his family met disaster at the hands of the Indians during King Philip's War. His father and two brothers were all killed in 21 February 1675/6.

He married in Medfield 25 April 1691 Hannah Clark, daughter of Benjamin Clark and Dorcas Morse. He was selectman for Medfield for seven years and represented the town in the General Court in 1730. He died in Medfield 18 March 1754.

Hannah Clark was born in Medfield, 22 October 1666, first of ten children of Benjamin Clark and Dorcas Morse.

She and Ebenezer had thirteen children, including two sets of twins.

She died in Medfield, 4 November 1757.

Samuel Smith was born in Dedham, Massachusetts, on 13 October 1641, fourth of five children of Henry Smith and his wife Elizabeth.

He married, first, in Medfield on 22 December 1669, Elizabeth Turner. She, running for the town fort on 21 February 1675/6, with her infant son Samuel in her arms, was tomahawked and killed. Young Samuel was thought to have been killed, but survived to crawl to his mother's body, and was saved.

Samuel then married just a year later on 22 February 1676/7, Sarah Clarke, daughter of Joseph Clarke and Alice Fenn.

He died in Medfield 25 October 1691.

Sarah Clarke was born in Dedham, Massachusetts, on 20 February 1650/1, ninth of ten children of Joseph Clarke and Alice Fenn.

She married first, on 7 January 1673/4, John Bowers, who, with his father was also killed in the Indian raid of 21 February 1675/6. Sarah and John Bowers had a son, only a month old at the time of the raid, who survived.

Sarah thus mothered her own son by John, her husband's son Samuel by Elizabeth, and the seven children that she and Samuel had together.

She died in Medfield on 20 May 1704, when her youngest child was thirteen.

Zechariah Barber was born in Medfield 29 September 1656, eighth of nine children of Capt. George Barber and Elizabeth Clarke.

He married in Medfield 30 August 1683 Abiel Ellis, daughter of Thomas Ellis and Mary Wight.

In 1684, Zechartiah was hired by the town to beat the drums on sabbath day for half the year.

He died in Medfield on 11 August 1705. His vital records should be accurate, because his father was the town clerk of Medfield.

Abiel Ellis was born in Medfield on 15 October 1662, third of nine children of Thomas Ellis and Mary Wight.

She had nine children with Zechariah, the youngest being thirteen when she died in Medfield on 14 April 1716.

Dea. Samuel Kingsbury was born in Dedham, Massachusetts, on 4 November 1690, fourth of five children of Sgt. Eleazar Kingsbury and Esther Judson.

He married in Dedham on 12 May 1715 Joanna Guild, daughter of Dea. John Guild and Sarah Fisher.

He was moderator of the Walpole town meeting on 18 May 1725. On 7 March 1726 he was town clerk and selectman, and chosen to treat with Rev. Mr. Joseph Belcher, the first minister of the Walpole Church. In 1737 he was town treasurer of Walpole and taught in the public schools. In 1739, he was called "Deacon Kingsbury."

He died in Walpole, Massachusetts, on 1 June 1744.

Joanna Guild was born on 4 February 168(?) in Wrentham, Massachusetts, fifth of nine children of Dea. John Guild and Sarah Fisher.

She married first, at Dedham 12 May 1715, Dea. Samuel Kingsbury. He died after they had had six children, and she then married, at Dedham South Church on 8 March 1748/9, when she was past sixty, William Everett Sr.

It is recorded that in 1745 "the Widow Kingsbury taught school this year, in her own home" (in Walpole).

She died in Dedham 31 January 1760.

Ens. Daniel Holbrook was born in Sherborn, Massachusetts, on 8 May 1699, first of five children of Eleazar Holbrook and Sarah Pond.

He married in Sherborn on 22 February 1721/2, Elizabeth Clark, daughter of David Clark and Mary Wheelock.

He died in Wrentham, Massachusetts, on 16 January 1775 and is buried there.

Elizabeth Clark was born in Medfield on 27 October 1704, of David Clark and Mary Wheelock. After Elizabeth's birth, we can find no record of her parents, so we don't really know whether Elizabeth had any siblings. Nor do we have any record of Elizabeth's death.

Capt. John Ware was born in Dedham on 6 October 1646, the first of nine children of Robert Ware and Margaret Hunting.

He married first at Dedham on 10 December 1668 Mary Metcalf, with whom he had five children. Mary died shortly after the birth of her last child, and he married second, in Dedham on 24 March 1678/9 Joanna Gay, our ancestress, with whom he had six children. Joanna died in 1708, and Captain John married for the third time, when he was sixty-three, Dorothy Badcock, the widow of our ancestor Eleazar Wood.

He was one of the original settlers of Wrentham in 1671, but retreated to Dedham during King Philip's War, returning to Wrentham on 21 August 1680.

John Ware was commissioned Lieutenant of the Wrentham Foot Company of Militia by Governor Stoughton on 5 August 1696, and seems to have served as captain from 1705–1715. Before being commissioned, he led a band of men in attack against the Indians at Indian Rock during King Philip's War.

He made his will on 26 June 1715, naming his wife Dority Ware, son John and John's children William, John, Moses, Mehetebell and Marey. He gives all his "pissix" (physic) books to his son Benjamin. Besides Benjamin, he names his children Elezer, Joseph, Abbagaill, Maray and Hanah. Sons Elezer and Joseph to be executors. Will proved 8 May 1718.

He had quite a valuable collection of books and tools of a carpenter, joiner and surveyor. He was evidently an educated man, but the spelling of his will is distinctive, to say the least!

He died in Wrentham on 7 April 1718.

Joanna Gay was born in Dedham 23 March 1644/5, fourth of ten children of John Gay and Joanna (Hooker), the widow of John Borden.

Joanna married first, in Dedham on 29 March 1664, Nathaniel Whiting Jr., with whom she had six children. Nathaniel appears likely to have been killed in King Philip's War, in 1676, since Joanna was granted administration of his estate 31 October 1676. She then married our ancestor, John Ware, and had six children with him.

Joanna died in Wrentham on 26 October 1708.

Eleazar Wood was born in Medfield 14 March 1661/2, the last of eight children of Nicholas Wood and Mary Pidge. He had lost both his parents by the time he was eight. On 28 January 1672/3, the Suffolk County Court assigned John Thirston, husband of Eleazar's sister Mary to be his guardian. On 24 April 1677 Eleazar, then being old enough to do so, appeared in court to choose Ens. Samuel Bullen of Medfield as his guardian.

He and his brother Jonathan were attacked by Indians 21 February 1675/6 on the bank of the Charles River. Jonathan was killed, Eleazar was scalped and left for dead, but recovered. Rev. Abner Morse said that, "He was ever after depressed in mind, and 'strange.'"

He married, probably in Sherborn circa 1687, Dorothy Badcock, with whom he had only two children, although they were married at least seventeen years. Perhaps that was what seemed "strange" to Reverend Morse.

He died, as far as we know, intestate, in Sherborn on 20 May 1704.

Dorothy Badcock There is no record of this marriage, and some doubt about Dorothy's ancestry. Two bits of evidence point to Robert Badcock of Milton and Sherborn as Dorothy's probable father.

- 1) In "Suffolk Deeds" (I, page ??), we find that Robert Badcock bought land in 1672, next to lands formerly of Nicholas Wood, in Sherborn.
- 2) On 27 April 1675, Bethia Wood, Eleazar's sister, picked Robert Badcock "of Milton" as her guardian.
- 3) Eleazar's father Nicholas took, as his fourth wife, on 16 November 1665 in Watertown, Massachusetts, Hannah/Anna Babcock.
- 4) Eleazar's brother Jonathan, who was killed the day that Eleazar was scalped, married Mary Daniel.

There is no birth or baptismal record for any Dorothy Badcock circa 1654, but there is a marriage record for a Dorothy Badcock of Milton (where Robert and his brother George lived). To wit: "Dorothy Badcock mar. John Daniel of Milton 29 Mar 1672." Emma F. Ware, author of the very accurate *Ware Genealogy*, says that John Daniel, died on 17 June 1685; the author of the *Badcock Family* gives a much later date. It seems likely that Eleazar and Dorothy were married circa 1687.

The odd thing about this is that Dorothy had been wed to John Daniel, long enough to have had several children, but no stepchildren are ever mentioned in connection with Eleazar. She and Eleazar had only two children, so it may be that Dorothy had a mismatch of RH factor with her husbands. The matter clearly requires more investigation, and may never be unraveled. Probate records for John Daniel should be sought, to see whether any children are mentioned, or any connections with the Wood family suggested.

After Eleazar died in 1704, Dorothy married Capt. John Ware, in Wrentham on 21 December 1709. She died in Wrentham on 10 December 1728.

Solomon Prentice was born in Cambridge, Massachusetts, on 28 September 1646, third of seven children of Henry Prentice and Joane. He was eight years old when his father died.

He married first, probably in Cambridge, Elizabeth ____ with whom he had two children. Elizabeth died circa 1676, and Solomon married circa 1677, again probably in Cambridge, our ancestress Hepzibah Dunn (or Dunton—both names have been recorded).

Solomon was a husbandman and brick maker, and served as a private in King Philip's War.

He died in Cambridge on 24 July 1719 and is buried in the Old Harvard Square Burying Ground, where I have seen and photographed his gravestone.

Hepzibah Dunn/Dunton was born circa 1653 or 1654, according to her gravestone at Harvard Square. No one seems to have any idea as to her parentage.

She and Solomon had seven children, including one pair of twins. She also must have raised Solomon's two children from his first marriage.

She outlived Solomon by twenty-three years, dying in Cambridge on 5 January 1741/2. She is buried next to Solomon with a gravestone which is still clearly readable, but sunk in the earth so that the entire inscription is no longer visible.

William Rand was born in Charlestown, Massachusetts, on 11 September 1674, the ninth of twelve children of Sgt. Thomas Rand and Sarah Edenden.

He married circa 1694, probably in Charlestown, Pertsis Pierce, daughter of Sgt. Thomas Pierce and Mary.

We know virtually nothing about him, except that he was a weaver and died in Charlestown on 9 February 1746/7.

Persis Pierce was born on 30 January 1668/9 in Charlestown, Massachusetts, the ninth of twelve children of Thomas Pierce and Mary.

Persis married first, in Charlestown on 26 March 1690, John Shephard, and had one child with him. When John died in Phipps's expedition against Quebec, on 9 March 1690/1, Persis married our ancestor William Rand, with whom she had eight children. She died in Charlestown, 25 June 1748.

John Clarke was born in Roxbury, Massachusetts, on 31 March 1672, the first of five children of John Clarke Sr. and Abigail.

He married in Dorchester, Massachusetts, on 16 April 1697 Ann Bird, daughter of Thomas Bird and Thankful Atherton. John and Ann lived in Newton, where he was a selectman in 1722. He died in Newton on 21 June 1730.

Ann Bird was born in Dorchester in August, 1671, fourth of ten children of Thomas Bird and Thankful Atherton.

She had six children with John Clarke. She outlived her husband by about sixteen years, and died in Newton on 18 January 1747/8.

Isaac Bowen was born in Roxbury on 20 April 1676, just after the worst of King Philip's War. He was the last of seven children of Lt. Henry Bowen and Elizabeth Johnson.

He married first, possibly in Framingham circa 1699, Hannah Winchester daughter of Josiah Winchester and Mary Lyon.

Isaac moved from Roxbury to Framingham, where he was an organizer of the First Church. He may have married there circa 1699, Hannah Winchester. Their first child was born there. The next eight were born in Roxbury.

Isaac and Hannah returned in 1702 to Roxbury, where Hannah died in January 1718. Isaac married again, in Roxbury on 15 April 1720, Elizabeth Tucker. After having two children in Roxbury, Isaac and Elizabeth moved in 1724 to Stoughton, Massachusetts, where Isaac died in 1727.

Hannah Winchester was born in Muddy River (now Brookline), Massachusetts, 11 January 1679/80, first of six children of Josiah Winchester and Mary Lyon.

Hannah died in Roxbury, 22 January 1717/8, just a few months after the birth of her last child.

Capt. Nicholas Bowes was born circa 1656, but we know not where or to whom. He married three times, first, at Cambridge, on 26 June 1684, to Sarah Hubbard. Sarah died, probably at the birth of her second child, on 26 January 1688/9 and Nicholas married again in Cambridge on 6 May 1690, our ancestress Dorcas Champney, daughter of Capt. Daniel Champney and Dorcas Bridge.

Dorcas and Nicholas had five children, only three of whom survived childhood, and then Dorcas died, sometime after 1709. On 29 January 1718/9, still in Cambridge, Nicholas married for the third time, Martha Remington.

Although he married in Cambridge, he lived and had his shop in Boston, and it was there that he and Dorcas had their children.

In 1705, he was a tythingman in Boston.

He made his will in Boston 22 October 1721 (proved 6 November 1721), naming wife Martha, eldest son William (who inherited his dwelling house), son Nicholas, daughter Dorcas (another of our ancestors), niece Dorcas Han(?), and sister-in-law Abigail Boyce (Bowes), wife of his brother Samuel. Son William and wife Martha were to be executors.

Captain Nicholas died in Boston.

Dorcas Champney was born in Cambridge 22 August 1667, first of six children of Capt. Daniel Champney and Dorcas Bridge.

She had five children, the first two of whom died in infancy.

We have no death record for her, knowing only that she was alive when her last child was born on 19 May 1709, and had died before he husband remarried on 29 January 1718/9.

Bishop John Hancock was born in Cambridge on 1 March 1671, the sixth of fifteen children of Dea. Nathaniel Hancock and Mary Prentice.

He graduated at Harvard in the class of 1689, taught the grammar school at Cambridge in 1691. In early 1692 he became pastor of the church at Groton, Massachusetts. After a brief service to the church at Newton, he was ordained into his life work, as pastor of the church at Lexington, on 2 November 1698.

Shortly after becoming established at Lexington, on 11 December 1700, Reverend John married Elizabeth Clarke, daughter of Rev. Thomas Clarke and Mary Bulkeley. They remained together for fifty-two years.

He continued as sole pastor at Lexington until 2 January 1734, when his son Ebenezer was ordained as colleague pastor. However, this relief lasted only six years, when Ebenezer was carried away by the throat distemper on 28 January 1740. Although he was then sixty eight, Rev John seemed to be reinvigorated by the challenge of handling the parish alone again, and he continued to do so until the day before his death, nearly thirteen years later.

A long and fascinating biography of "Bishop" John appears in Sibley's *Harvard Graduates*, full of charming and illuminating narratives as well as sober appreciations of the man and his ministry, written by his contemporaries. I quote just a few: The historian of Lexington, C. Hudson, said:

He was early in the morning in his study and early in the week in his preparations for the Sabbath. In this way he was always apparently at leisure, and ready to receive and entertain all those whom his social habits called to his house. By being systematic and studious, he was always master of his own time; and by being industrious, he was apparently always at leisure.

Rev. N. Appleton, in a discourse after the funeral of Bishop John, said:

He was eminently fitted for this Place (Lexington) in its Infant State, and when you were few in Number ... and needed a Man of such Wisdom and Prudence to advise and assist you in your outward and civil, as well as spiritual Concerns. And I believe it will be allowed, that but few

People have had so great Help, Benefit, and Comfort of a Minister, in all Respects as this People have had in Mr. Hancock.... The facetious Temper and Turn of Wit, which was natural to him, and which altho' some People of a different Make, might think at some Times, abounded; yet, this must be said, that he made a very good Use of it in general; and that it served for many valuable Purposes. How did it serve to scatter the Clouds of Melancholy that hung upon People's Spirits, and stir up a pleasant Cheerfulness in them? How did he hereby soften Men's Tempers, and correct their ill Humours, and bring the Fretful, the Angry, and the Revengeful, into a calm, peacable and forgiving Frame?

Unlike many other Congregational churches, Bishop Hancock's never had ruling elders, to share the load of church discipline with him. The idea was once suggested to him by two of the church's deacons, when he was quite old. The deacons had worried that the old man was making excessive use of the authority of his office. Here is the narrative of how he dealt with the suggestion.

"We think, Sir" said he (one of the deacons) "that on account of your great age, you ought to have some assistance from the church, in your numerous assiduous labors." "Ah" says Mr. Hancock, who knew what was coming—"I know that I am old, and I suppose I am feeble too—I thank the church for their kindness. But how do they propose to help me?" "Oh," said the deacons, "they thought they would appoint two Ruling Elders to divide the care of the church with you. But they did not wish to do so without your consent." "Well, I should like it," said he—"perhaps they would choose you to the office." The deacons concurred in that opinion—"They could not do better; you might be of great help to me. But what do you think to be the business of Ruling Elders?" saith he. "Oh," said the aspirants to the office, thinking the difficulty all over,—“we will leave that to you,—you are a learned man, and have studied the history of the Church.” "Yes," said he, "I have studied ecclesiastical history a good deal, and paid particular attention to Church discipline and government, and I think I know what Ruling Elders ought to do." "We leave it wholly to you to say what part of your labour they shall attend to," remarked the deacons. "Well then," said the Bishop, as he was called, "I should like to have one of them come up to my house before meeting on Sunday, and get my horse out of the barn, and then saddle him and bring him up to the door and hold the stirrup while I get on. The other may wait at the church door and hold him while I get off; then, after meeting, he may bring him up to the steps. This is all of my work I can ever consent to let the Ruling Elders do for me." The office has remained vacant to this day.

A final quote, to illustrate how he dealt with the Great Awakening, the most dramatic religious event of his day, must suffice here. We have mentioned this event above, in connection with Bishop Hancock's son-in-law, Rev. Nicholas Bowes. I quote again from *Harvard Graduates*.

But his wisdom is perhaps in nothing more conspicuous than in the manner in which he met and controlled the great movement of his day, which was denominated new-light-ism. Nothing had occurred to awaken the church or to call forth its energies for a long period, and most of the clergy had fallen into a state of stupor. This condition of things excited the attention and aroused the energies of such men as Whitefield, and their new light, as it was called, spread rapidly on both sides the Atlantic. Many of our churches were excited, distracted, and rent asunder. Many of our clergymen, waking up from their slumbers and seeing a little more interest manifested in matters of religion, fancied that the Gospel was about to be lost in the blind frenzy of the age; and they declared a war of extermination against this new movement. Others caught the fire, and without stopping to inquire whether it were a true or a false zeal, plunged into the whirlpool and suffered themselves to be carried in every direction by its blind eddies. The church at Concord was severed in twain, that of Medford was greatly agitated; and others were more or less disturbed by this new order of things. Councils were called, books were written, and all the artillery of the church militant was put in requisition to oppose the spread of what some deemed a dangerous heresy.

But in the midst of this commotion Hancock moved steadily forward, being aware that the religious as well as the natural world would have its seasons of refreshing as well as of drought; and that what was looked upon as the work of the enemy was but the natural result of the apathy into which the churches had fallen. Instead, therefore, of opposing this spirit of awakening in his society, he availed himself of it, gave it the right direction, and added many to his church. He was fully aware that these seasons of peculiar religious interest would come, and had, as early as 1728, added nearly eighty to his church in a single year. So, in 1741, and 1742, in the midst of this new-light movement, he made about the same accession to his church, and that without any foreign aid, or unnatural effort. While some of the neighboring clergy were attempting to smother this religious feeling, and thereby stifle the sincere aspirations of pious souls, and others were fanning the flame, and thereby converting it into a wild and dangerous conflagration, Hancock, with truly enlightened zeal, was guiding this spirit of inquiry and feeling of devotion, and thereby aiding the cause of true religion.

On the Sabbath before his death, Bishop Hancock, by then the senior minister of the area, and the oldest living alumnus of Harvard, preached all day. In the early hours of 6 December 1752, in the eighty-second year of his age and the fifty-fourth year of his ministry, he awoke with a great pain in his stomach, and died in a few minutes.

Bishop John Hancock was the grandfather of the famous signer of the Declaration of Independence.

Elizabeth Clark was born in Chelmsford, Massachusetts, circa 1681, the second of six children of Rev. Thomas Clark and Mary Bulkeley.

During her fifty-two years of marriage to Bishop John Hancock, she had only five children, but she must have been kept busy being the hostess for a very sociable parson. She outlived Bishop John by about eight years, dying in Lexington on 13 February 1760.

John Weld was born in Sudbury, Suffolk, England, on 26 October 1623, first of six children of Capt. Joseph Weld and Elizabeth Wise.

In 1635 his parents came to Roxbury, Massachusetts, where several other Sudbury families had settled, and where his uncle Thomas was pastor of the church. For some reason John did not accompany them, but came three years later in 1638.

On 24 December 1647 in Roxbury, John married Margaret Bowen, daughter of Griffith Bowen and Margaret Fleming.

He acquired, by inheritance from his father and by purchase from his siblings and others, a large estate of land in Roxbury, making his homestead in the section called Jamaica Plain. When a school was started in this part of town in 1676, John was one of the trustees, and the family was still actively interested in this school in 1727. The deed whereby land was donated for the school is interesting to read:

For the maintenance, support and encouragement of a school, and schoolmaster, at that part of Roxbury commonly called Jamaica, or Pond Plain, for the teaching and instructing of the children of that end of the town (together with such negroes or Indians as may come to said school) and to no other use intent or purpose under any color or pretence whatever.

Although he was fifty-three at the time, John was called into military service during King Philip's War, and served in the garrison at Mendon on 29 February 1675/6, just a week after the Indians had made their destructive raid on nearby Medfield.

Being concerned that he might not survive his military duty, John made his will, saying:

Being suddenly called forth upon an expedition against the Indians, and not knowing how it may please the Lord to dispose of me; Considering also that many that have bin sent forth upon this service have bin suddenly cut offe I do therefore seriously desire to committ my soul unto the hands and to the protection of the Almighty God who gave it, and the Lord Jesus Christ my Redeemer not doubting but after the tabernacle of my flesh shall be dissolved and my body shall be mouldered into dust it shall again thorow the power of God obtain a resuerrection to an eternall state...

John did survive the war and died in Roxbury on 20 September 1691.

Margaret Bowen was born in Slade, parish of Oxwich, Gower, Glamorganshire, Wales, circa 1627, the eldest of eight children of Griffith Bowen and Margaret Fleming. Gower is the name of a prominent peninsula on the north side of the Bristol Channel, on the very southern coast of Wales.

Margaret came to Boston with her parents in 1639. Her parents, taking some of her siblings, returned to Wales circa 1650, and later moved to London. By that time, Margaret and at least four of her siblings, including Mary and Henry, also our ancestors, were firmly rooted in New England and remained.

Margaret and John had nine children, at least four of whom died young. The parents had the satisfaction of seeing the other children grow and prosper, to sow the seeds of one of Roxbury's most prominent families.

Margaret survived her husband by almost exactly a year, dying in Roxbury on 13 September 1692.

Thomas Faxon Jr. was born in Swalcliffe, Oxfordshire, England, circa July 1630, the last of three children brought from England by Thomas Faxon Sr. and Jane (or Joan) Fawdry.

The first record of the Faxon family in New England is dated 1645, and locates them in Braintree, Massachusetts, on that date. However, many early records of Braintree are missing, and it is quite possible that they came earlier.

He married in Braintree on 11 April 1653, Deborah Thayer, daughter of Richard Thayer and Dorothy Mortimore.

He was a farmer, as shown by the many farming implements enumerated in the inventory of his estate, but he does not seem to have owned land.

He died intestate on 25 May 1662 in Braintree, Massachusetts, survived by his father who was one of the administrators of his estate. He and Deborah died within a few weeks of one another, leaving four orphans, the oldest being only eight.

Deborah Thayer was born in Thornbury, Gloucestershire, England, circa March 1633/4, second of nine children of Richard Thayer and Dorothy Mortimore.

Her family was still in England when her mother died in March 1640/41. Almost immediately thereafter her father brought his children to New England to reside for a while in Braintree where his brother Thomas was established.

As in the case of her husband, there are virtually no surviving Braintree records to tell us more of her family. She and Thomas both died young (he at thirty-one, she at twenty-nine), and had had time for only four children, all daughters. Deborah died in Braintree on 3 May 1662.

Benjamin Child was born in Aughton, Yorkshire, England, circa 1620 to Benjamin Child and an unknown mother.

He came early to Roxbury, although we have no exact record of his arrival. We do know that he was one of thirty men who subscribed the cost of raising the first church in Roxbury.

He married in Roxbury or Boston circa 1653, Mary Bowen, daughter of Griffith Bowen and Margaret Fleming.

Benjamin died intestate, the administration of his estate being given to his widow, John Weld Sr. and son Benjamin Child. On 15 May 1699, Jacob Chamberlain and Mary his wife; Elizabeth and Margaret Child, spinsters; Samuel Perrin and Mehetiable his wife; and John Child (later joined by brother Joshua Child) quit claimed interest in their father's estate to their brother Benjamin Child.

Although we have no record of his military service, his inventory showed that he owned a carbine, a fowling piece and a rapier. Administration of his intestate estate was granted to Mary Child, John Weld Sr., John Weld and John Gore.

He died on 14 October 1678, residing at the time near Jamaica Pond, and presumably near the Weld family. Although he survived King Philip's War, he lost a son, Ephraim, in the fight at Northfield, Massachusetts, on 23 September 1675.

Mary Bowen was born circa 1635, presumably on the Gower peninsula in Glamorganshire, Wales, the fifth of ten children of Griffith Bowen and Margaret Fleming, and sibling of our ancestors Henry and Margaret Bowen.

"Mary Childe, wife of Benjamin Childe, joined church 23 Feb 1658[/9]." Three of her children were baptized in Roxbury First Church on 27 February 1658/9. To me, it makes sense for that to have occurred just after she joined the church.

A widow Mary Child died in Roxbury on 31 October 1707. It has been assumed (in Bowen's *Woodstock Families*) that she was our Mary.

Lt. Edward Morris was baptized at Great Amwell, Hertfordshire, England, on 22 January 1631/2, the last of four children of Edward Morrison and Prudence Heath.

He came to New England 23 February 1652/3, and was married at Boston 20 November 1655 to Grace Bett whose ancestry is unknown.

He settled at Roxbury where he was Constable (1664), Selectman (1674–87) and Deputy to the General Court (1677–87). Near the end of his life, he moved to Woodstock, Connecticut, where he was selectman (1688–90) and first military officer. Somewhat surprisingly, for such a pillar of the community, he was sued by the trustees of the Free School of Roxbury in July 1674 for withholding property that had been given to the school from the estate of Mr. Thomas Bell of London.

He died on 14 September 1690 at Woodstock, Connecticut.

Grace Bett is a bit of a mystery in that her marriage to Edward Morris was recorded in both Boston and Roxbury, with two very different spellings of her name (Bett and Burr). In any case, nothing convincing has been published about her birth or ancestry.

She and Edward were married for nearly thirty five years, and had eight children. After her husband died in Woodstock, Grace must have returned to Roxbury where she died on 6 June 1705. A handsome modern memorial stone for her has been placed in Woodstock Hill cemetery.

Samuel Hatch was born in Scituate, Massachusetts, on 22 December 1653, the second of eight children of Walter Hatch and Elizabeth Holbrook.

He married (probably in late 1677 or early 1678 in Scituate), Mary Doty, daughter of Edward Doty and Faith Clark.

He made his will 13 June 1728 (proved 7 July 1735). The original was still in excellent condition in the Plymouth County Registry of Probate more than two hundred years later. He called himself a yeoman, and his inventory included a fair number of woodworking tools, but nothing that would indicate a specialized trade. He had books and spectacles.

His will was a genealogist's delight in that he named not only his children, but many of his grandchildren. Son Isaac was to be sole executor. He named four living sons, Samuel, Isaac, Elisha and Ezekiel; three daughters, Hannah Tincom, Elizabeth Bonney and Desire Hatch; and the children of his two deceased sons, Josiah and Ebenezer. He had land in Scituate, Hanover and Rochester.

Mary Doty was born circa 1654, probably in Plymouth, Massachusetts, the last of nine children of Edward Doty and Faith Clark. Her father died when she was only about one year old, but her mother did not remarry until she was about twelve.

Mary's mother, Faith, signed a will on 12 December 1675, bequeathing to her daughters Mary Doten, Elizabeth Rouse and Desire Sherman. Her estate was settled on 10/20 July 1677 indicating that Mary, for whom no marriage record has ever been found, was single on that date. On 23 February 1679/80, Samuel Hatch gave a receipt to John Rouse of Marshfield "for all that which was Due to me by virtue of my wife." On 3 June 1680 (recorded on the same page of Plymouth County probates) Desire Sherman gave a receipt to John Rouse, for "the legacyes which was Due to me by virtue of my Mothers Will and by order of the Court."

John Rouse was the executor of the will of Faith (Clarke) (Doty) Phillips and these two receipts constitute proof that Samuel Hatch married Mary Doty (between 20 July 1677 and 23 February 1679/80.)

Except for the one mention of her name in her mother's will, Mary's name never appears in Plymouth town or county records. We believe that she had nine children, between 1678 and 1698. These births were all duly recorded, but only as children of Samuel, without any name of his wife. Samuel did not mention Mary in his will of 13 June 1728, so we assume she died before then. There is no record of Samuel's ever marrying anyone else, but then there is no record of his marrying Mary either. There are no conspicuous gaps between recorded births of Samuel's children, suggesting that they were all children of the same mother.

Capt. John Hawes is said to have been born circa 1636 in Duxbury, Massachusetts, but this seems to be just a plausible guess. In the will of his father, Edmund Hawes, he is called "my natural son," which term frequently implies a birth out of wedlock. (As his father seems to have been an eminently law-abiding man, this possibility is not mentioned in any publication about the family.) In any event, there is no record of his birth, and no record of a mother's name. He is the only child named in his father's will.

On 5 March 1660/1, at a General Court held in Plymouth,

John Hawes, of Yarmouth, was indicted for violently and by force of armes taking away the life of Joseph Rogers, of Eastham, by giueing him a most deadly fall, on the 25 of December, 1660, in the towne of Eastham, whereof and wherupon he did most vehemently complaine, and about 48 houres after died. The said John Hawes did put himselfe vpon tryall by God and the country.

The Grand Jury found the indictment to be a true bill, but the jury that tried the case found John not guilty. Unfortunately, the records do not provide any details.

On 7 October 1661, in Barnstable, Massachusetts, Captain John married Desire Gorham, daughter of John Gorham and Desire Howland. They had eleven children, all of whom were named in their grandfather's will.

Captain John seems to have been a military man, rather than a mariner. In 1693, in connection with the probate of his father's estate, he was called "Ensign John Hawes." Surprisingly, we have no record of his service in King Philip's War. In some Internet postings it is said that he was a cutler like his father.

He made his will on 15 October 1701 (proved 19 November 1701), calling himself simply "John Hawes of the Town of Yarmouth," and naming sons Isaac, Ebenezer, Joseph, John, Benjamin and daughters Desire Hawes, Experience Hawes, Elizabeth Doggett and Mary Bacon. Sons Joseph and Isaac were joint executors. The inventory of his estate included two Negro girls and an Indian boy.

Captain John died in Yarmouth on 11 November 1701, and we have a tradition in the *Wast Book* of Col. John Gorham, a grand nephew of Captain John's wife, of the ultimate cause of death. Colonel John said, "Desire—Gorham—maryed a Capt. Haws Yarmouth—having his Leg Cut off Dyed with it." Again we yearn for details, but do not get them.

Desire Gorham was born on 2 April 1644 in Plymouth, Massachusetts, the first of eleven children of Capt. John Gorham and Desire Howland.

She herself had eleven children, and lived until the youngest of them was fourteen.

She died in Yarmouth on 30 June 1700, the dates for her death and Captain John's being exactly the same in the Yarmouth town records and in an old Gorham family Bible that seems to have come down through her family and that of her son Benjamin Hawes, who bequeathed it to his daughter Experience Hawes. This Bible record has been published in many places, most recently in Vol. 17 of the *Mayflower Descendant*, pp. 251–254.

Col. Stephen Minot was born in Boston on 10 August 1662, fourth of five children of Capt. John Minot and Lydia Butler.

He married in Boston on 1 December 1686 Mary (or Mercy) Clark, daughter of Capt. Christopher Clark and Rebecca Eire.

Colonel Stephen was an avid trader in Boston real estate, especially around 1707–1710, besides being a tailor and merchant. He was active in town affairs, being a selectman 1707–8 and 1723–5. By 1711, he is called "gentleman" in the land records.

Although he lived and died on Sudbury Street in Boston, he leased an important piece of land on the Boston Neck, near the Roxbury Gate. There he operated the George Tavern, and nearby he pastured the town bull. He also bought and sold property near the Roxbury Gate.

He was one of the founders of the Brattle Street Church in Boston. He made his will on 30 October 1732 (proved 13 November 1732). The record of probate is long and genealogically very informative.

He died in Boston on 3 November 1732.

Mary Clark (sometimes called Mercy), was born in Boston 1 March 1666/7, last of the nine children of Capt. Christopher Clark and Rebecca Eire.

She had twelve children, only three of whom died in childhood.

We have no death record for Mary, which seems odd, considering the social prominence of her husband. She was still alive when Stephen made his will in October 1732.

Col. Francis Wainwright was born in Ipswich, Massachusetts, on 25 August 1664, the sixth of seven children of Francis Wainwright and Philippa Sewall.

He graduated from Harvard with the class of 1686. On 12 March 1686 he married Sarah Whipple, daughter of Capt. John Whipple and Martha Reyner.

He was a merchant in Ipswich and was conspicuously active in the affairs of the town. Besides being town clerk for many years, he was representative to the General Court, 1699–1700; justice of the General Sessions Court; and commissioner and collector of excise for Essex County.

His military career was not particularly successful. Both in August 1696 and in 1707, he was involved in unsuccessful expeditions against the French in Canada. In the latter expedition, against Fort Royal in Nova Scotia, he was second-in-command but required to take command at the last moment. Upon his return home, he and his commander were both harshly criticized for their failures.

When Sarah died in 1709, leaving him with three daughters, he made plans to remarry and became engaged to Elizabeth Hirst of Salem. The wedding was set for 31 July 1711, but Colonel Francis took sick on 29 July, and died on 3 August. Judge Samuel Sewall, who may have been a relative of Colonel Francis's mother, gave the following description in his diary.

Aug 3, 1711. Col. Francis Wainwright died at his own house at Ipswich. Left Salem for his last July 25, the day before his first-appointed Wedding-day, which Appointment was remov'd to the last of July. He was taken sick at Ipswich on the Lord's-Day, July 29, and died on the Friday following at 10 m; his Bride being with him. Tis the most compleat, and surprising Disappointment that I have been acquainted with. Wedding-Cloaths, to a Neck-cloth and Night Cap laid ready in the Bride-Chamber, with the Bride's Attire: Great Provision made for Entertainment, Guests, several come from Boston, and entertained at Mr. Hirst's, but no Bridegroom, no Wedding. He was laid in a new Tomb of his own making lately, and his dead wife taken out of another, and laid with him.

Sarah Whipple was born in Ipswich on 2 September 1671, the last of six children of Capt. John Whipple and Martha Reyner.

She had very poor luck with her six children: two died of smallpox as infants, and her surviving son died while a senior at Harvard.

Sarah died in Ipswich on 16 March 1709 and is entombed with her husband.

Capt. Timothy Clarke was born circa 1657, almost certainly in Cambridge, Massachusetts, fourth of the six children of Elder Jonas Clarke and Elizabeth Clark, and younger brother of our ancestor Rev. Thomas Clarke.

He married circa 1678, probably in Boston, Sarah Richardson, daughter of Amos Richardson and Mary Smith.

He was a lieutenant in the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts in 1706, and was a founder of the Brattle Street Church on 12 December 1698. That church took the liberal side in many matters of church discipline and governance, and its founding was regarded with suspicion and outright hostility by some of the ministers of churches that conformed to the traditional practices of the Puritan churches of New England.

An obituary, published in the *Weekly Journal* on 21 June 1737, described him:

Son of the exemplary, pious and well-known Mr. Jonas Clarke, Ruling Elder of the Church of Cambridge, where he was born in 1757. He followed the sea till he was near 40 years of age; when, settling on shore, he was successively employed by this town in the various offices of Assessor, Selectman, Overseer of the Poor, &c., and by the Government as Captain of our south and north batteries, overseer of the buildings of Castle William, with Col. Romer, director and overseer of the fortifications on the Neck, and of the building our Light house, and as a Justice of the Peace. He had likewise served as a member of the Hon. House of Representatives, in the time of the Non-resident Act; and he discharged the duty of every employment with singular wisdom, diligence, and fidelity; and was esteemed among us as a pattern of every grace and virtue, a true and sincere lover of his country, and who took a singular pleasure in being useful to all about him.

Many details of his various services are given in the *History of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company*. One of his ceremonial duties was to command the firing of a twenty-one gun salute for the birthday of Queen Anne in 1702.

Captain Timothy resided on Summer Street in Boston. The ordinance giving that street its name refers specifically to his house. In his several land transactions in Boston, Captain Timothy bought property from his father-in-law, Amos Richardson, and dealt with other Richardson relatives.

He died in Boston, aged eighty, on 13 June 1737. He apparently died intestate, but a deed of 6 March 1721/2 identifies his children Jonas, Mary, Katherine, Abigail, Margaret, and Prudence.

Sarah Richardson was born in Boston on 19 July 1657, the fifth of nine children of Amos Richardson and Mary Smith.

For some reason, there is no record of children born to Sarah and Timothy before April 1687, some nine years after they were married. Since Captain Timothy bought their Summer Street home from Sarah's father in 1679, the marriage date, which is based on an estimate given in Judge Samuel Sewall's diary, seems likely to be fairly accurate. Perhaps Sarah had several miscarriages in their early wedded life.

Sarah died in Boston in April 1726.

William Tilley was born circa 1658, probably in Devonshire, England. His father's name was John, but we know little more about his English background. He is said to have come to Boston in 1660, but there seems to be no record of his presence there before circa 1690. Since later records show that he was to some degree a military man, he might have participated in King Philip's War, or in the abortive invasion of Canada in 1690.

He was a rope-maker by trade. Permissions for him to build a ropewalk were recorded in Boston on 27 January 1707/8; 27 October 1708; and 10 April 1713. On 22 May 1716, his nephew John and eight servants arrived from Bristol, England, to help him in his business.

About 1690, William married Isabella whose maiden name may have been Harris. In the settlement of the estate of Robert Harris of *HMS Hampshire*, in May 1700, reference is made to his sister Isabel Tilley, alias Harris, wife of William Tilley.

On 22 March 1696/7, William was allowed twenty pounds per year as gunner for the Town of Boston during the preceding three years. In 1706 he joined the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, being second sergeant in 1707.

William joined the Old South Church of Boston on 29 March 1691. An earlier William Tilley had joined that church in 1674. The historian of the church speculated that our William may have been a nephew of this earlier one. The identification of records for our William is complicated by the fact that there had been men of that name living in Boston since 1635.

Shortly after Isabella died, on 27 May 1703, William married widow Abigail Woodmancey. As far as we know, he had only two children by Isabella, and none by Abigail. Abigail subsequently married Judge Samuel Sewall.

William made a will, 14 November 1717, proved 9 December 1717. (Suffolk Probate Records Vol. 20, page 127.) He named a brother John Tilley and a sister Elinor Tilley, living in Edford, Devonshire. He named son-in-law Jonas Clarke of Boston, brasier.

He died on 21 November 1717, "a great loss to the South Church and to the Town," according to the diary of Judge Samuel Sewall who married William's widow. William was buried at the Granary Burying Ground "in the 60th year of his age."

Isabella Harris (?) was born circa 1666 probably in England. This date is calculated from her gravestone. A suggestion that Isabella's maiden name may have been Harris was made in the *National Genealogical Society Quarterly*: vol. 61, p. 188, where the settlement of the English estate of Robert Harris of HMS (*Hampshire*) in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, May 1700, is presented. It names Robert's sister, Isabel Tilley alias Harris, wife of William Tilley. Our Isabella was still alive at this time, and it seems likely that this may refer to her.

Isabella died in Boston on 13 January 1702/3 and was buried in the Granary Burying Ground, "aged 36 years."

John Wass was born circa 1670, probably in Boston or Charlestown, Massachusetts, the first of five children of Capt. Thomas Wass and Alice.

On 21 July 1712 he was admitted as an inhabitant of Boston, and during 1712–1717 he was at least occasionally an innkeeper there. There are numerous records of his applications to the selectmen for permission to sell strong drink as innholder.

In 1717 he and his father-in-law, Richard Wilmot, were among the first fifteen settlers who re-occupied Casco, later Falmouth (now Portland) Maine, which had been destroyed by Indians several years earlier. In June 1718, John and Richard were petitioners to the General Court of Massachusetts Bay Colony for incorporation of Falmouth. On 10 March 1718/9 John was elected a selectman of Falmouth. On 1 and 2 Dec. 1719, John purchased a hundred-acre farm at Back Cove, Falmouth, suggesting that he intended to sink roots there.

It is suggested in a list published by *Flagon and Trencher* that John operated an inn or tavern in Falmouth, but I have not confirmed that. However, for some reason, probably that of a renewed threat from the Indians, John returned to Boston and on 10 October 1726, he and Ann sold the farm at Back Cove.

On 7 January 1727/8 John was admitted in full communion to the Brattle Street Church, whose pastor, Rev. William Cooper, specifically noted that there had been a large flood of new communicants after the earthquake of 29 October 1727.

It is well recorded that John kept the Golden Ball tavern near the town dock in Boston, but he had retired from that business by 1735, as noted in an obituary notice for Ann.

His will was signed 1 June 1741 and proved 1 Sept 1741. This will names "very good friend William Speakman," "granddaughter Mary Speakman," and "grandson [by marriage] Thomas Speakman." William and Thomas Speakman were to be executors. His daughter, Sarah, having predeceased him, the will skips over her to her daughter, Mary (Warner) Speakman. The will makes a major bequest to his son Wilmot Wass, and names John's second wife, Elizabeth, who was to receive John's Negro woman named Moll.

Ann Wilmot was born circa 1671, place unknown. Her year of birth is calculated from her gravestone. She was the daughter of Richard Wilmot.

She and John had only two children of which any record has been found. The birth dates of these two are so far separated (1694 for Sarah and 1711/12 for Wilmot), that we suspect there may have been a large number of miscarriages or stillbirths in between. Actually, we have no record proving that she was John's only wife and the mother of Sarah, but we can see that she was of a perfect age to have served both of these roles.

Ann died in Boston, 11 November 1735 and was buried in the Granary Burying Ground.

Samuel Copeland Sr. was born in Braintree, Massachusetts, on 20 September 1686, the second of eight children of John Copeland and Ruth Newcomb.

He was a husbandman, who married, circa 1710 or 1711, Mary Kingman, daughter of John Kingman and Desire Harris. No record of this marriage has been found, but John Kingman named a daughter, Mary Copeland, in his will, and Samuel and Mary named their third and fourth children Desire and John.

All children of Samuel and Mary were baptized at North Parish, Braintree.

Samuel died intestate, but left a substantial estate valued at a thousand pounds. The court concluded that the estate was not practically divisible, so eldest son Samuel paid each of his siblings sixty-six pounds for his/her share.

Samuel died circa 7 December 1746 and was buried in Braintree on 9 December 1746.

Mary Kingman was born in Bridgewater, Massachusetts, by 5 July 1669, the second of five children of John Kingman and Desire Harris. She had twelve children, four of whom predeceased her.

We have no record of her death, but know that she was still alive on 30 August 1748 when there was a final settlement of Samuel's estate. There is a possibility that another probate action may shed some light on this subject. Her father died in 1755, having left her ten pounds in his will. I have looked at the records of his probate, but perhaps with insufficient care. If she received her ten pounds in the final distribution of his estate, she was certainly still alive, if she did not, she was probably dead.

Nathaniel Owen was born in Braintree on 21 November 1683, eldest of at least seven children of Nathaniel Owen Sr. and Mary.

He married in Braintree on 22 April 1714 Deborah Parmenter, daughter of Dea. Joseph Parmenter and Mary Marsh. Nathaniel was a hog reeve of Braintree in 1715. He died in Braintree on 23 November 1728, leaving a widow who outlived him by thirty-eight years.

Deborah Parmenter was born in Braintree 24 February 1690/91, the youngest of six children of Dea. Joseph Parmenter and Mary Marsh.

Deborah had poor luck with her nine children, five of whom died within their first year.

A “Widow Owen” was buried 5 April 1760 according to the records of Rev. Samuel Niles. Waldo Chamberlain Sprague, the great historian of Braintree, thought it likely that this record referred to our Deborah.

Dea. Israel Tupper was born in Sandwich, Massachusetts, 22 September 1666, the third of eleven children of Capt. Thomas Tupper and Elizabeth Bacon.

On 11 April 1691 in Sandwich, he married Elizabeth Gifford, who died on 19 October 1701, having given him four children.

On 31 August 1704 in Sandwich, he married our ancestress Elizabeth Bacon, daughter of Nathaniel Bacon and Sarah Hinckley.

He died after 1 July 1751, on which date he gave a deposition about his father’s interest in lands in Agawam (now Springfield, Massachusetts). He said on that date that “this deponent, through age and infirmity, is unable to appear in court.”

Elizabeth Bacon was born in Barnstable, Massachusetts, on 11 April 1680, third of four children of Nathaniel Bacon and Sarah Hinckley.

Her mother died when Elizabeth was six, and her father died only five years later.

Nathan Bourne was born in Sandwich on 31 August 1676, the eldest of seven children of Elisha Bourne and Patience Skiff.

He married in Sandwich on 26 November 1697, Mary Bassett, daughter of Col. William Bassett and Rachel Willison.

He was in 1717, the owner of the *Charming Betty*, the first packet boat to operate between Boston and Sandwich.

Nathan greatly outlived his wife, and even most of his children. No explicit record of his death or burial has been found, but he made his will on 23 July 1761, and it was proved on 23 November 1770 (*Barnstable County Probate*, vol. 12, pp. 406–407).

He called himself “Nathan Bourne of Sandwich” and gave all his real property and most of his personal estate to “my sons John & Thomas Bourne, and grandson Elisha Bourne.” He gave one third of his household goods to his daughter Mary Tupper, although Mary and her family had moved to Liverpool, Nova Scotia, by the time he signed the will.

He gave another third of his household goods to granddaughters Abigail Smith and Mary Dillingham, daughters of his deceased daughter Elizabeth. The final third of household goods he gave to grandson John Freeman, who also got some land.

Grandson John Dillingham got one dollar; so did granddaughters Mary Nye and Abigail Bourne, daughters of his deceased son Jonathan. Granddaughters Eunice Clark and Remember Ellis each got one dollar. Grandson Stephen Bourne got his great Bible and his gun.

Nathan died circa November 1770.

Mary Bassett was born on 20 October 1676, probably in Sandwich, daughter of Col. William Bassett and Rachel Willison.

She had eight children, all of whom were adult when she died. Mary died in Sandwich 18 December 1733 and is buried in the Old Burying Ground there, where I have found her gravestone. The inscription is now practically illegible, but the Sandwich Town Library has a reading of stones in the “OBG” made circa 1915. This says, “Mrs. Mary Bourne Dec 18, 1733, in her 58th year.”

Edward Page was born in Boston on 20 March 1658/9, third of seven children of Edward Page Sr. and Elizabeth Bushnell.

He married circa 1682, probably in Boston, Abiel Thornton, daughter of Robert Thornton and Mary Doling. This identification is clearly proved by a long and interesting deed between Edward and his father-in-law, acknowledged by Robert Thornton in Suffolk County on 1 March 1682/3. This deed shows that Edward and Abiel were married by this date.

He was a can cooper. Edward died in Boston on 16 August 1693.

Abiel Thornton was born, probably in Boston, circa 1664, daughter of Robert Thornton and Mary Doling.

After Edward's death, Abiel married Cornelius Loeson on 4 November 1697 in Boston. We do not know when or where she died, although an undocumented Internet source suggests 1710.

John Jepson was born in Boston 8 May 1661, the fourth of six children and the second of his name, to John Jepson Sr. and the widow Emm Coddington. There seems to be no record of Emm's maiden name, but we have benefitted from her first marriage to John Coddington, due to a most definitive and impeccably documented account by John Insley Coddington, in *The American Genealogist* [TAG,] of the first few generations of the Jepson family.

John was a house carpenter or house wright. He married first circa 1686, probably in Boston, our ancestress Ruth Gardner, daughter of Richard Gardner and Anna Rolfe. John married, second, in Newbury, Massachusetts, on 1 April 1696, Apphia Rolfe, daughter of Benjamin Rolfe, a niece of his mother-in-law. He married, third, in Boston, 23 February 1714/5, Mercy Daniels.

He was chosen a tythingman of Boston on 13 March 1698/9 and again on 11 March 1700/1.

Letters of Administration were granted to his son-in-law Edward Paige on 21 November 1721. We have no exact date of death, but assume that it was in November 1721.

Ruth Gardner was born in Woburn, Massachusetts, in April 1661, daughter of Richard Gardner and Anna Rolfe.

Ruth died in Boston on 17 October 1695 when her youngest child was only about eighteen months old. Her gravestone in King's Chapel burying ground is inscribed, “Here lyes ye body of Ruth Jepson ye wife of John Jepson, aged ___ years, dec'd October ye 27 1695.”

Philemon Warner was born in Ipswich on 1 September 1675, third of nine children of Daniel Warner Jr. and Sarah Dane.

He married in Ipswich, 27 April 1696, Abigail Tuttle, daughter of Simon Tuttle and Sarah Cogswell.

He was a blacksmith. He had a smithy in Ipswich, inherited from his father, on land that had belonged to his grandfather, and he built a smithy in Gloucester when he moved there. He also built a wharf and warehouse at Gloucester.

Philemon moved from Ipswich to Gloucester in 1710, and bought Jonathan Springer's estate. He and his son Philemon Jr. were original proprietors of New Gloucester, now in Maine, but there is no evidence that they ever settled there.

He died in Gloucester on 6 May 1741.

Abigail Tuttle was born in Ipswich on 6 October 1673, sixth of twelve children of Simon Tuttle and Sarah Cogswell.

She died in Gloucester on 30 September 1756, aged eighty-two, having had ten children, the youngest of whom would have been forty-one when Abigail died.

John Mountfort was born in Boston on 28 March 1670, the fifth of nine children of Edmund Mountfort and Elizabeth Farnum.

He married in Boston on 17 January 1693/4, Mary Cock, daughter of Joseph Cock and Susannah Upsall.

John was a Captain of the Artillery Company in 1697. He owned "Mountfort's Wharf" in Boston and was involved in the West Indies trade. This may help explain how the Mountforts of Boston and the Warners of Gloucester got acquainted.

He made his will 4 January 1723/4. It was very brief, but followed by a genealogically interesting division of his estate, indicating that daughter Hannah Warner had legal claim to four sevenths of the premises. John died two days after he made his will on 6 January 1723/4.

Mary Cock was born in Boston 10 June 1676, sixth of seven children of Joseph Cock and Susannah Upsall. There is no Boston birth record for Mary, although all the other children of Joseph and Susanna are recorded. What I suspect is that Mary was mistakenly recorded as Ann in the Boston records, or in their transcription for publication. Hence, I have assigned her Ann's birth date. That would make her seventeen and a half when she married John Mountfort (young, but not impossibly so), and forty-one when she had her last child (again quite reasonable). She was alive and called Mary when her father wrote his will on 15 January 1678/9.

As yet I have found no indication of Mary's remarriage or death, but she seems to have been alive as a widow on 25 June 1742 when she deeded house and land at the North End to Joseph Proctor. She would then have been sixty-three, so I think it unlikely that she subsequently remarried.

Capt. Samuel Ruggles was born in Roxbury on 1 January 1658/9, third of eight children of Lt. Samuel Ruggles and Hannah Fowle.

On 8 July 1680 in Roxbury he married Martha Woodbridge, daughter of Rev. John Woodbridge and Mercy Dudley.

It is hard to find out much about his career, but in the *History of the Town of Roxbury*, we find this brief notice:

Samuel, his brother (and father of the present Captain Samuel), was many years selectman, representative, and Captain of the Roxbury company, and was actively involved in the overthrow of Governor Andros in 1689.... His son Samuel succeeded his father in the several offices named.

This family, now nearly or quite extinct in Roxbury, formerly played no inconsiderable part in its history. For a century and a half it was rarely without a representative, either in the General Court or the board of selectmen, holding some position of responsibility or trust either in church or State.

He was well acquainted with Judge Samuel Sewall, who gave in his diary this notice of his death:

Capt. Saml Ruggles was buried with Arms the same Third day of the Week, at Roxbury. Was not full 58 years old. Has left 9 Children, Four Sons and Five Daughters. Daughters all married, the Eldest but about a Week before her Father's death. He was before me with his Sisters, Morris and Bayly, Widows, with their Inventories: and now, March the first, these Sisters are here with deacon Mayo to prove their Brother's Nuncupative Will. He is much Lamented at Roxbury.

Samuel Sewall was Judge of Probate for Suffolk County at the time.

Captain Samuel died in Roxbury on 25 February 1715/6 and is buried there, probably in the Eliot Cemetery.

Martha Woodbridge was born at Barford St. Martin in Wiltshire, England, on 15 June 1658, the tenth of eleven children of Rev. John Woodbridge and Mercy Dudley. Her parents had already emigrated to New England, but her father accepted for a few years, a post back in England, and some of his children were born there.

Two of her sons were Harvard graduates who served as ministers.

Martha (Woodbridge) Ruggles is often mentioned in the *Diary of Samuel Sewall*. He offered himself as a suitor after Capt. Samuel Ruggles died. His wording is worth a quotation: "I shew'd my Willingness to renew my old acquaintance (as a suitor); She express'd her inability to be Serviceable. Gave me Cider to drink. I came home."

She died in Billerica, Massachusetts, at the home of her son Samuel on 3 July 1738.

Benjamin White was born in Watertown, Massachusetts, circa 1645 (date estimated from his gravestone), the third of four children of John White and Frances.

In the records of Suffolk County Court for July 1674, we discover that our Benjamin White was fined five pounds for assailing Jabez Buckminster and pulling him off his horse. By this time, Benjamin was probably living in Muddy River (now Brookline, Massachusetts).

The publication, *Muddy River Records*, makes many references to men named Benjamin White. Care must be taken to separate our Benjamin from his two nephews named Benjamin, one born in 1675/6 to Joseph White, and the other probably in 1689 to John White.

To judge from birth records of his children, our Benjamin married Susanna circa 1682.

Our Benjamin appears to have been constable in 1685/6; perambulator of town lines in 1689/90 and 1693; surveyor in 1694/5; and was referred to as Mr. Benjamin White in 1699. He signed petitions to separate Muddy River from Boston on 17 June 1704 and on 13 August 1704.

He was probably that Benjamin White who was a selectman for Muddy River in 1698/9 thru 1703/4. In three of those years, he was called Sgt. Benjamin White, and in the fourth Benjamin White Sr. In the last of those years, an "Ens. Benjamin White" was also a selectman.

Benjamin did not make a will, but on 24 March 1717 he made an elaborate deed of gift to his son Edward, which was in effect a will. He named his wife Susanah, his three married daughters, Ann Boillston, Mary Rugls and Susanah Sharpe and his two unmarried daughters, Elizabeth White and

Joannah White. This document is quoted in part in *Papers of the White Family of Brookline, 1650–1807*, which was published by the Brookline Historical Publications Society in 1895 or 1896 and is available at Heritage Quest Online.

About 13 June 1733, the married daughters of Benjamin White, and their husbands, submitted deeds of release of their rights in the estates of their father and mother Benjamin and Susanna White, “now both deceased,” selling these rights to their brother Edward White. The participants were Peter Boylston of Brookline and Ann his wife; Timothy Ruggles, clerk, and Mary his wife, both of Rochester in Plymouth County; Robert Sharp and Susanna his wife; William Fairfield of Boston, bricklayer, and Elizabeth his wife; Joseph Ruggles of Roxbury and Joanna his wife, “youngest daughter of Benjamin White.”

Benjamin died in Brookline on 9 January 1722/3. His gravestone there calls him, “aged about 77 years.”

Susanna Unknown. Beginning, perhaps, with James Savage, circa 1860, dozens of authors have identified this Susanna—whose maiden name is never mentioned in records of Muddy River or Brookline—as Susanna Cogswell, daughter of William Cogswell and Susannah Hawkes of Ipswich. None of these authors have presented any proof, or even suggested why they thought it might be true.

I have recently begun to worry about this identification, because I cannot imagine how Benjamin White of Brookline could have met Susanna Cogswell of Ipswich. Our Benjamin was a husbandman, who would have little occasion to travel to Ipswich on business. There is no contemporary record to suggest that Susannah Cogswell’s father ever brought his family down to the Boston area. There is no record to show any other connection between the White family and the Cogswell family. Our Benjamin White and his wife Susanna did not name any children for parents or siblings of Susannah Cogswell.

There is no doubt that Susannah Cogswell married, on 21 January 1681, a man named Benjamin White, and we now have his signature on a probate paper for the estate of William Cogswell. My concern is that Susannah Cogswell’s husband was not the Benjamin White of Muddy River/Brookline, but a different Benjamin White who lived in Ipswich.

We do not know exactly when or where our Susanna died, only that she had died before 13 June 1733 when her daughters said in a court record that both their parents had deceased.

Isaac Curtis was born in Roxbury on 22 July 1641, the last of nine children of William Curtis and Sarah Eliot, and the first of four successive men of his name.

Being the youngest child, and the only one not yet established with a family of his own, Isaac received from his father on 11 February 1669/70 all his father’s estate on condition that he care for his parents during their old age.

He married in Roxbury on 10 May 1670, Hannah Polley, daughter of John Polley and Susannah Bacon. Isaac died in Roxbury on 31 May 1695 and is buried in the Eustis Street Burial Ground.

Hannah Polley was born on 15 February 1651/2, third of seven daughters of John Polley and Susanna Bacon. Her mother died when she was thirteen, and her father married twice more, producing six more daughters by his third wife. Thus, Hannah never lacked for sisters!

Hannah died in Roxbury on 6 February 1719/20 and is buried in the Eustis Street Burial Ground.

Nathaniel Craft was born in Roxbury on 11 January 1676/7, the ninth of eleven children of Lt. Samuel Craft and Elizabeth Seaver.

On 16 October 1661 in Roxbury he married Patience Topliffe, daughter of Samuel Topliffe and Patience Somes.

One of my favorite ancestral stories concerns Nathaniel's son Jonathan. In the *History of Roxbury* is written, "Nathaniel's son, Jonathan, has numerous descendants in Roxbury, and would doubtless have attained to great age, had he not in 1801, at the premature age of ninety-three, fallen from an apple tree."

Nathaniel made his will, and it is presented in full on pages 53 and 54 of *The Crafts Family*. [Note: the date of the will and the author of *The Crafts Family* were missing items that the author apparently intended to check out. –Ed.]

He died in Roxbury 9 December 1709.

Patience Topliffe was born in Dorchester, Massachusetts, on 24 January 1677/8, third of eleven children of Samuel Topliffe and Patience Somes.

Patience had eight children, and died when the youngest was barely a year old. She died in Roxbury on 10 March 1720/1 and is buried in the Eliot Cemetery.

Jonathan Fellows was born in Ipswich, Massachusetts, on 28 September 1682, the fourth of six children of Corp. Isaac Fellows and Joanna Boreman.

He married first in Ipswich on 17 May 1705, our ancestress Hannah Dutch, daughter of John Dutch and Elizabeth Roper.

Hannah died after five years of marriage, and he married Sarah Day on 8 January 1712/3. Sarah gave him two sons, and died on 1 May 1716.

Jonathan married again on 6 February 1716/7 Sarah Potter, widow of John Rust. They had five children before Sarah died in May 1725.

Finally, Jonathan married on 8 June 1733, Deborah Batchelder, widow of David Tilton. They had no children.

He was a farmer who lived in Ipswich most of his life. Then in 1742, he sold his property there and moved to Kensington, Rockingham County, New Hampshire. While he was in Ipswich he was deacon of the church, 1727–36; selectman, 1728, '31, '33 and '35; and Representative in the General Court, 1730, '31, and '33.

Deacon Jonathan died in Kensington on 21 January 1753.

Hannah Dutch was born circa 1685, probably in Ipswich, last of the seven children of John Dutch and Elizabeth Roper. As luck would have it, there are complete birth records for all of Hannah's siblings, but none for her. Her father died in the year of her birth, so family routine was undoubtedly disrupted. She had only three children, dying at age twenty-five, just a few months after the birth of her last child.

She died in Ipswich on 18 January 1710/11.

Caleb Norwood was born in Gloucester, Massachusetts, on 12 August 1685, the ninth of ten children of Francis Norwood and Elizabeth Coldam.

He married circa Sept 1708 in Gloucester, Alice Donnell, daughter of Samuel Donnell and Alice Chadbourne. After their marriage, Caleb and Alice lived in York, Maine, long enough to have their first child there. They then moved to Gloucester.

Caleb had a grant of land, near Halibut Point in Gloucester, in 1710, but finally removed to Boston where he was an innholder at the "Sign of the Dolphin."

He died in Boston on 7 December 1735 and is buried at Copps Hill, where his stone is still clearly legible.

Alice Donnell was born in York, Maine, on 2 June 1687, fourth of seven children of Samuel Donnell and Alice Chadbourne.

Although the youngest of her seven children was only seven when Caleb died, Alice did not remarry until 1 June 1749. Then she married Rev. John White. Alice died in Boston in January 1763.

Ens. Joseph Williams was born in Roxbury on 24 February 1681/2, seventh of the twelve children of Capt. Stephen Williams and Sarah Wise.

He married in Roxbury 22 May 1706 Abigail Davis, daughter of Ens. John Davis and Marry Torrey. On 20 June 1717 he was granted administration of the estate of his father-in-law, John Davis.

He died intestate, but there are informative probate papers. His inventory shows that he owned land in Woodstock, Connecticut. Joseph died in Roxbury 17 August 1720 and is buried in the Eustis Street Burial Ground.

Abigail Davis was born in Roxbury on 13 February 1687, the only child of Ens. John Davis and Mary Torrey.

Although she had not quite delivered her last child when Joseph died, she did not remarry until 11 January 1731/2, when she wed Edward Ruggles in Roxbury.

Abigail was assigned to administrate Joseph's estate on 5 December 1720, and she was named in the will of her mother-in-law circa 1728.

She died in Roxbury on 23 November 1771, having outlived her first husband by fifty-one years!

John Williams was born in Roxbury on 1 December 1684, third of nine children of Lt. Samuel Williams and Sarah May. He married in Roxbury on 1 June 1709, Sarah Weld, daughter of Lt. Joseph Weld and Sarah Faxon.

John made his will on 21 October 1742, and it was proved 24 November 1742. It named his wife Sarah, although she had died eight days before he signed it. It also named sons Jonathan, Joseph and John (the last two being minors), daughters Sarah, Elizabeth and Mary, and brothers Samuel and Eleazer.

He died in Roxbury 5 November 1742 and is buried in the Eustis Street Burial Ground.

Sarah Weld was born in Roxbury on 17 June 1687, fourth of eight children (and the second of her name) of Lt. Joseph Weld and Sarah Faxon.

She had eleven children and lived until the youngest of them was twelve. By that time, five of her children had died. She died in Roxbury 13 October 1742, about three weeks before her husband. She is buried in the Eustis Street Burial Ground.

John Kent was born circa 1640 in England, but we know nothing more about his origins.

John Kent was brought from England by his brother Joshua in 1645, and settled first in Dedham, Massachusetts. He was admitted to the Dedham church on 16 July 1652 and was admitted freeman on 3 May 1654. He was on tax lists for Dedham from 20 August 1653 through 22 November 1664. He signed a petition to the General Court, from Dedham, on 7 May 1662, and was elected fence viewer for West Field, Dedham, on 24 February 1664/5.

He married at Dedham on 21 May 1662, Hannah Grissell (Griswold?), daughter of Francis Grissell and Mary. Hannah was admitted to the Dedham church on 5 February 1664/5.

By 2 July 1667, when daughter Hannah was baptized in Charlestown, they had moved to that place. There is no record of their having any children before Hannah, although it seems surprising that her mother would have no child for about five years, and then have eleven in the twenty-one years following that. They were admitted to the church in Charlestown on 13 April 1673. In 1678 and 1679, he was chosen a tythingman for Charlestown.

At about this time, say June 1679, John petitioned the Probate Court of Middlesex County, describing in detail (though with almost indecipherable spelling) his relationship with his father-in-law ("my father bulard"), William Bullard. Actually, we might term William as John's "stepfather-in-law." William had married Hannah's widowed mother about nine years before John and Hannah married.

In his petition, John attempted to show that William had disregarded the terms of a noncupative will made by Hannah's father, and had not dealt fairly with him (John). The court record was extensive, and has been published in book form. The Court finally declined to do anything, reckoning that so much time had passed and so much had happened, both to support and to oppose John's claim, that it was best to leave things as they were.

We have no record of either the birth or the death of John Kent, although he was still living in Charlestown in 1707 when he conveyed land.

Hannah Grissell was born at Cambridge, Massachusetts, on 4 March 1644/5, the younger of two daughters of Francis Grissell and Mary. When she married John, Hannah had been a half-orphan for several years. Her father, Francis Grissell, has died in 1652 and her mother had remarried, to William Bullard, within the year. Her father had made a noncupative will, in which he left all his real property to his elder daughter, Elizabeth, after his wife's death, on condition that Elizabeth pay her younger sister, Hannah ten pounds. Somehow this will was never executed and when William and Mary (Hannah's mother) got old, the care of them fell on John and Hannah.

John and Hannah eventually turned to the Probate Court of Middlesex County, to seek redress of what they saw as an unjust situation. The court did nothing for them, but accumulated a lot of evidence that helps to give a picture of their times and situation. For example one witness, Joseph Frost, gave this account : "I have sene hannah grissell now the wiffe of John Kent manney tims working in the felds: Reaping and howinge and Raking heay and lookinge more like a sarvant ten a chillde."

In support of his position, William Bullard gave this account:

An a count what Hanah Kent have had of William Bullard I brought her up from about 8 yeres ould on tell she wase abought 17 years of age and suplyed her with what was nesery and what when she went from me she had twoe sutes of aparell on for working dayes and a nother for saboth dayes ... a weding gowne outer cote and other sheayfe sutebell for on of her ranke and after she was married she had of me twoe good cowes...

What interests me here is his assessment that her wedding outfit was suitable for one of her rank. This conjures up an entirely different picture from that of the girl working in the fields. What did he mean by “her rank?” My guess is that she was daughter and bride of a freeman of Massachusetts Bay, rather than an indentured servant. To be a freeman, you had to own some real estate and to have been accepted into church membership.

Hannah’s sister Elizabeth was not a party to this petition, as she and her husband Josiah Palmer had sold all her interest in her father’s estate to William Bullard on 9 November 1655, some twenty-four years earlier.

Hannah had eleven children, two of whom died in infancy. She herself may have died in childbirth, when her youngest child was barely two. She died in Charlestown on 9 January 1690/1.

Steven Chittenden was born in Scituate, Massachusetts, on 5 November 1654, fifth of seven children of Isaac Chittenden and Martha Vinal.

He married in Scituate, on 6 November 1679, Mehitabel Buck, daughter of Lt. Isaac Buck and Frances Marsh.

Whereas both his father and father-in-law are frequently mentioned in the records and histories of Scituate, Steven seems to be a missing person. His father was killed in King Philip’s War, defending the town against Indian attack while the young and able-bodied men were out campaigning. Steven would have been a prime candidate for military service, about twenty-one and single, but we have no record of his having been a soldier.

Indeed, we have no record of Steven, later than that of the birth of his last child in July, 1694. (I need to check Plymouth County land and Probate records for him.)

Mehitabel Buck was born in Scituate circa 1660, a daughter of Lt. Isaac Buck and Frances Marsh. For some reason, only one of Isaac Buck’s children had a birth recorded, so we must turn to other records for proof of Mehitabel’s parentage. Fortunately, there are surviving probate records for her father, and these, dated 1695, name her as a daughter, and as wife of Steven Chittenden. Her date of birth is a pure guess on my part, making her nineteen when she first married.

As is the case with her husband Steven, there are no death records for Mehitabel.

Joseph Adams was born circa 1664 in Menotomy, Massachusetts, probably the youngest of eight children of John Adams and Ann.

He married on 21 February 1687/8 in Cambridge, Margaret Eames, daughter of Thomas Eames and Mary Blanford.

Joseph received from his father on 4 September 1697, a deed of the Adams homestead in Menotomy. By that time he was the only surviving son of his parents.

He died intestate, and administration was granted to his widow on 1 August 1701.

Margaret Eames was born in Sudbury, Massachusetts, on 8 July 1666, the third of at least six children of Thomas Eames and Mary Blanford.

When Margaret was only nine, on 1 February 1676, her family home was raided by Indians who killed her mother and (supposedly) five siblings. Margaret was carried off, and there is this romantic legend about her return. I quote from the *History of Framingham*.

We learn from the confessions of the Indian actors in this domestic tragedy, that near the month of June following the event, the two daughters of Mr. Eames were "at a great hill about midway between Watchusett and Penecooke, in good health, and not in a starving plight;" that Mattahump had one of the daughters, and Pumapen the other. They were supposed, in August, to be in the neighborhood of Fort Aurania, (Albany). Respecting the subsequent fate of the captives, we know little more than that two sons and one daughter were happily restored to their desolated home and friends. Tradition throws an air of romance upon the fortunes of Margaret, the daughter. The colonial government having dispatched some agents to obtain the release of captives detained in Canada, one of their company was in his own turn captivated by the attractions of the daughter of Mr. Eames, whose release he had obtained, and whom he soon after made his wife. The Cambridge Records are authority for the fact, that Joseph Adams married Margaret Eames, in 1688.

This seems such a nice tale that it is worth repeating, although it does seem unlikely that Margaret's attractions at age ten were sufficient to induce Joseph to marry her twelve years later. Still, it's worth a search to see whether there is any surviving record of Joseph having been sent to Canada as an agent. If the release was not effected until about 1685, the story could make sense. Joseph would then have been twenty-one, young for such a mission, but not impossibly so.

There is a monument in present day Framingham, Massachusetts, to commemorate the attack on Margaret's family. I have visited and photographed it.

After the death of Joseph Adams, Margaret remarried to Lt. Daniel Dean on 27 December 1705, probably in Concord.

In 1721, Margaret and Lt. Daniel Dean, for love and good will, gave to her sons, Daniel and John Adams, their homestead of a hundred acres in Concord, Massachusetts.

We have no record of Margaret's death.

Joseph Allen was born circa 1645, probably in Newbury, Massachusetts, perhaps third of five children of Walter Allen and Rebecca.

He married in Watertown 11 October 1667, Anna Brazier. He settled in Weston.

Joseph made his will on 15 January 1712/13, naming wife Anna, sons Joseph and Nathaniel, and daughters Deborah, Rachel and Patience. He died in Weston 9 September 1721.

Aнна Brazier. Her parents have not been identified. She had nine children, only five of whom were alive when Joseph made his will in 1712/3. She died in Weston in December 1720.

Abraham Hill was born in Malden, Massachusetts, circa 1672, the first of three children of Zechariah Hill and Deborah Norton.

About 1692, perhaps in Groton, he married Sarah Cooper, daughter of Timothy Cooper Jr. and Sarah Morse.

He lived in Cambridge where he was selected constable 13 March 1692/3; surveyor of highways 12 March 1693/4; selectman on both 11 March 1694/5 and 9 March 1695/6. When he moved to Menotomy, he was selected hayward for Menotomy field on 11 March 1700/1, and fence viewer on 10 March 1700/1. On 19 March 1700/1, Abraham and Sarah joined with Sarah's brothers Timothy and John Cooper to sell bits of land in Groton. In this deed, Abraham is called "husbandman of Cambridge."

One of the most valuable clues for sorting all the Hills named Abraham and Zachariah is the probate of this Abraham's will. In his will (or in a power of attorney to his son-in-law Ebenezer Frost), he specifically states that Zechariah Hill was his father, and that Francis Norton was his grandfather. The inventory of his estate shows that he was quite wealthy. He died in Menotomy on 9 March 1745/6.

Sarah Cooper was born in Groton, Massachusetts, circa 1672, third of four children of Timothy Cooper Jr. and Sarah Morse.

Sarah was admitted to the precinct (presumably Menotomy which was still part of Cambridge) church at its organization, on 9 September 1739 and was admitted to the Cambridge church 8 March 1742/3.

She had only three children of whom we have any record. She died in Cambridge 3 March 1752, aged eighty, and is buried in the old Harvard Square Burial Ground where I have photographed her stone.

Dea. John Cutter was born in Cambridge on 15 October 1690, fifth of ten children of William Cutter and Rebecca Rolfe. He was baptized at the Cambridge church 15 September 1700.

He married circa 1709, probably at Cambridge although we find no record, Lydia Harrington, daughter of John Harrington and Hannah Winter. John and Lydia joined the Cambridge church on 4 June 1710.

He purchased several pieces of property that had belonged to his mother's family. They, with many other families from Newbury, Massachusetts, had moved to settle Woodbridge, New Jersey.

He was a husbandman, and probably helped run a mill which belonged to his brothers.

John was a member of a unique "Vigilance committee" of nine, which served the Cambridge church as "a kind of privy council to the minister, though without authority." John and Lydia were among the founders of the church in the second precinct of Cambridge (then Menotomy, now Arlington), when it was established 9 September 1739. On 17 November 1739, John became one of the first deacons of that church, and served in that capacity until his death.

Deacon John died on 21 January 1776. The gravestones of John and Lydia stand near the center of the Arlington burial ground. His inscription declares that he had 68 surviving children and grandchildren, 115 great-grandchildren and 3 of the next generation!

Lydia Harrington was born in Watertown circa February 1689/90, fourth of twelve children of John Harrington and Hannah Winter. She was baptized in the Watertown church on 2 March 1689/90.

She was undoubtedly an active church woman all her life, although her husband, as was typical for that age, got all the titled offices.

She lived to see all her nine children grown up and married, and to enjoy the company of many grandchildren. She died on 7 January 1755 and is buried beside Deacon John in the Arlington Burial Ground.

Joseph Wellington was born in Watertown on 9 October 1643, eldest of six children of Roger Wellington and Mary Palgrave.

He married first, Sarah. When she died on 5 February 1683/4, he married almost immediately on 6 June 1684, our ancestress Elizabeth Straight, daughter of Capt. Thomas Straight and Elizabeth Kemball.

He was admitted a freeman in December 1677, and was admitted into full communion with the church on 31 July 1687 along with his wife Elizabeth.

He died on 30 October 1714.

Elizabeth Straight was born in Watertown circa 1662, the third and last child of Capt. Thomas Straight and Elizabeth Kemball. We have no record of her birth, but her older siblings were born in 1657 and 1660.

We have no record of any births to Elizabeth after she was about twenty-nine, after she had had four in fairly normal succession. This seems biologically doubtful, unless her last birthing was unusually difficult.

Again, we have no contemporary record of her death, and some disagreement among secondary sources. We accept here the date given in the *History of Cambridge*: 30 July 1714. My general conclusion is that this family needs more research.

Samuel Bradford was born circa 1667/8 at Plymouth, Massachusetts, eighth of ten children of Maj. William Bradford and Alice Richards.

On 31 July 1689, Samuel married Hannah Rogers, daughter of John Rogers and Elizabeth Pabodie.

On 9 June 1703, his father appointed him, along with his brothers John and Israel, executors of his last will and testament. In this will, his father gave Samuel, besides other valuable properties, “all my Latin books, to Encourage him in bringing up one of his sons in Learning which said bookes it is my Will that they shall by him be given to his sd son whom he shall so bring up.”

He lived about a third of a mile northeast from the mouth of Island Creek in Duxbury. He served Duxbury as constable in 1701, selectman in 1702, and in 1710, on a committee to divide the common lands.

Samuel Bradford made his will on 26 January 1713/14. He was then of Duxbury. In it he names sons Gershom, Perez and Gamaliel; married daughter Hannah Gilbert; unmarried daughters Elizabeth, Jerusha and Welthea; and son-in-law Nathaniel Gilbert. The will was probated on 16 June 1714, the executors being wife Hannah (Rogers) Bradford and eldest son Gershom Bradford (then twenty-three).

Samuel's bequests to son Gershom, which have proved essential to fixing the identity of some of Gershom's children, included “lands and meadow lying on the southerly and westerly sides of Jones River in the townships of Plymouth and Plympton ... all my Cedar Swamp lying at Black water in Plymouth from Castle hill to Jefferies meadows ... all my interest in a sawmill standing on Jones River brook in Plympton ... all my [1/4] interest in a grist mill, fulling mill, and house on the northerly side of Jones River in Plymouth.” [I have modernized spelling in these quotes.]

He was obviously a fairly wealthy man. He made generous provisions for his wife, as long as she should remain a widow, and gave her unconditionally his Negro servant William. Lieutenant Samuel died in Duxbury on 11 April 1714.

Hannah Rogers was born in Duxbury, Massachusetts, on 16 November 1668. There seems to be some dispute among Internet genealogists as to whether her parents were John Rogers and Elizabeth Pabodie, or Thomas Rogers and Elizabeth Snow. John Rogers was one of the witnesses of the will of Maj. William Bradford, Samuel's father, and I believe he was our Hannah's father.

She had seven children with Samuel, but had none after she was about thirty-six. All of her children survived their father.

We have no certain record of her death, although an Internet source suggests that she died in Hingham in September 1754 (Ref: *History of Hingham*).

Rev. Ichabod Wiswall was born in Dorchester, Massachusetts, in 1637, fourth of seven children of Elder Thomas Wiswall and Elizabeth.

Reverend Ichabod had a most interesting career. He went three years to Harvard to prepare for the ministry, but joined several other "rebels" in leaving the college without his degree, because the authorities had decided to extend the course to four years. This did not prevent him becoming one of the leading ministers of Plymouth Colony. (He was, incidentally, the first of our family to attend Harvard, starting a tradition which extended on an unbroken, though wandering path, through every generation to myself. Unfortunately, I was unaware of this tradition when we sent our sons to the University of California and the University of Colorado, so it has now been broken.)

The Dorchester town records are full of references to his father, and on 8 February 1655 an agreement was made for Ichabod to teach the town school for three years. When King Philip's War broke out, Ichabod was in a dangerous position up in Maine, in what was briefly called the County of Devon. It was from here that he and others petitioned the Massachusetts General Court for a garrisoned fort to be set up there for protection.

About 1679, probably in Duxbury, Reverend Ichabod married Priscilla Pabodie, daughter of William Pabodie and Elizabeth Alden.

He was ordained in Duxbury in 1676, and was sent to England in 1689 as an agent for Plymouth Colony, to attempt to secure a new charter for the colony. This was the year in which the colonists rose up to overthrow Gov. Edmund Andros whose plan was to unite Plymouth, Massachusetts Bay, Maine, Connecticut and New York into a single colony.

At the same time, Massachusetts Bay sent Rev. Increase Mather on a similar, but more ambitious project to get a charter which would unite Massachusetts Bay, Plymouth and Maine. As it turned out, Mather was successful, and Plymouth Colony was absorbed into Massachusetts Bay.

Reverend Ichabod died in Duxbury 23 July 1700. I have seen his gravestone in the old Duxbury Burial Ground, but do not know whether it is an original stone or a modern replacement.

Priscilla Pabodie was born in Duxbury on 15 January 1653/4, seventh of thirteen children of William Pabodie and Elizabeth Alden, and the second of her given name.

She and Ichabod had two sons and five daughters.

Priscilla outlived Ichabod by twenty-four years, but did not remarry. She may have spent her last years with the family of Gershom Bradford and her daughter Priscilla, as she died in Kingston, Massachusetts, where the Bradfords were living, on 3 June 1724.

William Parkman was born in Salem, Massachusetts, on 1 March 1658, the first of five children of Elias Parkman Jr. and Sarah Trask.

He was a shipwright who built ships in Boston. He served his apprenticeship with his father-in-law, Alexander Adams. In the earlier part of his life, he went on many voyages, mostly with his father to Curacao. Subsequently he lived on Ship Street in Boston, and built several vessels in the shipyard of his father-in-law. During the latter part of his life, he was a mast maker. Of his sons, two were joiners, one a mast maker, and another a shipwright.

He married in Boston on 16 May 1680, Elizabeth Adams, daughter of Alexander Adams and Mary Coffin.

He and Elizabeth kept a family Bible, printed in 1599 in England, which has had a fascinating history. It had gone to Parkman, Ohio, with William's descendants, where it was presented in 1876 to Felipe Parkman of Guanajuato, Mexico. Felipe was the eldest son of Samuel Parkman, a surveyor and miner who had gone to California and then to Guanajuato, for the silver mining. In Guanajuato, in 1835, he married Antonia Vega, an "India Pura." The Bible eventually fell into the hands of a bookseller in Guanajuato, and from him, in 1911, to Charles Lincoln Johnson of Chicago, whose wife had Parkman ancestors. The Bible thus came back to the U.S., and in 1949 it was presented by Mrs. Johnson to the American Antiquarian Society in Worcester, Massachusetts.

William was one of the original members of the New North Church (Second Church) of Boston, and became a ruling elder of that church where the baptisms of all twelve of his children were recorded.

He died in Boston on 28 November 1730 and is buried with Elizabeth and several others of his family in Copps Hill Burying Ground. Their slate gravestones are still quite clearly legible.

Elizabeth Adams was born in Boston 21 September 1660, the youngest of seven children of Alexander Adams and Mary Coffin.

She had twelve children, only two of whom died in infancy. Her youngest son, Ebenezer, became a well-known and highly respected minister at Westboro. His published diary gives valuable insights into colonial life, and it was his careful recording of the baptism of our ancestors, Samuel and Isabel Ferguson, that enables us to know where they came from in Ireland.

She died in Boston 13 April 1746. Her stone at Copps Hill is inscribed, "Here lyes buried the body of Mrs. Elizabeth Parkman, the virtuous and pious consort of Mr. Wm. Parkman, aged 85 years & 7 months, 13 Apr 1746."

CHAPTER NINE

✂ Seventh Great-Grandparents

Hon. Samuel Sherman was born in Dedham, County Essex, England, circa July 1618, ninth of the ten children of Edmund Sherman and Joan Makin. He was baptized at Dedham on 12 July 1618.

He came to New England with his parents in 1634 (some authors say 1632). Samuel was briefly at Watertown Massachusetts, before settling at Wethersfield, Connecticut, on the Connecticut River in April 1635. His brother John was initially the minister of the Wethersfield congregation, but soon returned to Watertown.

Samuel had been at Wethersfield only briefly when in May 1637, he along with his future father-in-law, Matthew Mitchell, was on the committee that declared war on the Pequot Indians. (The General Court of Connecticut was not yet organized.) He was, along with our ancestor Robert Seeley, one of the twenty-six soldiers sent from Wethersfield against the Pequots.

By 1640 a number of Wethersfield men were out of favor with Dea. Clement Chaplin, Ruling Elder of the church there. They bought land from the Indians at Stamford on the coast of Long Island Sound, and formed a new settlement there. Samuel, his brother-in-law Andrew Ward, and his future father-in-law Matthew Mitchell were among them. However, the original scheme of governance there made them part of New Haven Colony, and they soon grew restive with that arrangement. (Samuel's parents had moved to New Haven from Wethersfield circa 1638 or 1639.)

It was probably in Stamford, soon after the settlement in 1640, that Samuel married Sarah Mitchell, daughter of Matthew Mitchell and Sarah Wood, widow of Nathaniel Butterfield. (Sarah and Nathaniel's son Samuel Butterfield, was killed in the Pequot War.)

Samuel did not stay long at Stamford, but bought land in Stratford in 1650. His first four children were born at Stamford, the rest were born at Stratford. He was very active in community and colony affairs at Stratford, especially in the 1660s. From 1662 to 1665 he was Assistant to the General Court. In 1664 he was on a committee to guard the coast from Stratford to Rye against the Dutch who were being forced to surrender New York to the English. The General Court awarded him 250 acres of land in Stratford for that service.

Somewhat later, Samuel was much involved in the founding of the town of Woodbury. Although he never moved there to live, some of his sons did.

By 9 November 1685, he had moved in with one of his sons on the Toilsome Road near the second Stratford meetinghouse and called himself "Samuel Sherman, Senr., now of Fairfield."

The area where he then lived became known as Stratfield, and it was there that he died on 5 April 1700. He was buried in the Old Stratfield Burying Ground, where his gravestone, a rugged and crudely inscribed piece of granite, can still be read.

Sarah Mitchell was born circa October 1621 in Halifax, Yorkshire, England, and was baptized at South Oworm, Halifax, Yorkshire, on 14 October 1621, the third of eight children of Matthew Mitchell and Susan Wood, the widow of Nathaniel Butterfield. At least two of Susan's brothers came to New England with her husband.

Connecticut records seem completely silent, as to Sarah's name. Early genealogists seem to have followed Savage, in saying that her name was Mary, not Sarah, but that was before the baptismal records for her family had been published. (I intend to make a comprehensive search of Stratford land and probate records, to see if I can find her name in one of those.)

Needless to say, there is no record of her death. From the fact that she is not buried next to Samuel in Stratfield, I assume that she died while they were still living in Stratford, say before November 1685.

Benjamin Phippen was born in Weymouth, England, circa 1625, possibly the fifth of ten children of David Phippen and Sarah.

He came to Hingham, Massachusetts, circa 1635 with his parents and five siblings. The family moved to Boston circa 1641.

About 1650, probably in Boston, he married Wilmot Yeo (Ewer, Ure?). They had eight children, including our ancestress Rebecca, before Wilmot died circa 1671. Benjamin then soon married Eleanor by whom he had three more children.

Benjamin had been a block maker (probably he made blocks for the shaping of hats). Then on 28 April 1673 he was granted leave to keep a cook shop, renewed each year until he died in 1677. Thereafter, the license was transferred to his widow Eleanor.

On 3 June 1663, Benjamin bought a house and land from his brother Joseph, who was executor of the estate of their mother, then Mrs. Sarah Hull, wife of George Hull of Fairfield, Connecticut.

Benjamin died intestate in Boston circa 1677/8. His estate was settled on 6 February 1678/9 to be divided equally among his children, with a double share to eldest son, Benjamin. In a very informative deed of 10 July 1697, it becomes clear that three of his daughters and a son had all moved to Connecticut.

Wilmot Yeo was probably born in England circa 1625, but we have no certain knowledge of that or of her ancestry.

She died in Boston circa 1671, having had eight children. The last, our ancestress Rebecca, was about five when Wilmot died.

Thomas Noble was born circa 1632, probably in England. We don't know his parents. According to Cutter's *Connecticut*, Thomas came to Springfield, Massachusetts, from Boston. He was resident in Springfield on 5 January 1653 and moved to Westfield circa 1669.

He married in Springfield on 1 November 1660, Hannah Warriner, daughter of William Warriner and Joanna Scant.

In 1679, Thomas, together with John Maudesley, submitted a petition to the General Court on behalf of the citizens of Westfield, asking that the town's accounts be accepted.

Thomas made his will 11 May 1697 (proved 5 September 1704). He died in Westfield 20 January 1703/4.

Hannah Warriner was born on 17 August 1643 in Springfield, Massachusetts, daughter of William Warriner and Joanna Scant.

She and Thomas had ten children, all of whom lived to adulthood. After Thomas Noble's death, she married Dea. Medad Pomeroy of Northampton, on 24 January 1705.

We have no record of Hannah's death, other than Lucius Boltwood's statement that she died before 12 May 1721.

Joseph Wright was born in Northampton, Massachusetts, on 2 June 1657, second of eight children of Sgt. Samuel Wright Jr. and Elizabeth Burt.

On 6 November 1679 he married Ruth Sheldon, daughter of Isaac Sheldon and Mary Woodford.

Both Joseph and Ruth, and Joseph's parents, Samuel and Elizabeth, used the interesting Biblical tradition of naming a child Benoni, to signify that the father of that child had died just before the child was born.

He died on 16 February 1697, only thirty-nine.

Ruth Sheldon was born on 27 August 1663, the fourth of eight children of Isaac Sheldon and Mary Woodford.

When Joseph died, leaving her with a home full of infant children, she married again on 28 October 1698 to Samuel Strong.

We do not have a record of her death, but she died sometime between 1712 and 1729.

Capt. William Bond was baptized 3 September 1625 at St. James Church, Bury St. Edmunds, Suffolk, England. He was the third of eight children of Thomas Bond and Elizabeth.

I quote here from Dr. Henry Bond's *Watertown*:

His first marriage is the earliest mention of him in the town records. There is however, a deposition on the files of the county court, which renders it very possible that he came to America at a very early age, in 1630, with Dea. Ephraim Child, and which greatly strengthens the presumption that Elizabeth, wife of Deacon Child, was a sister of his father. She had lived several years with her second husband without having children; and the presumption is, that when she was about to embark for America, her brother, Thomas Bond, who was filling his own house with sons, gave his third son, William, to his sister to supply a void, of which she would be the more sensible in her new abode.

The deposition was given by William Bond on 20 December 1681 and stated that William had been living in Watertown since 1631.

Captain William married in Watertown on 7 February 1649/50 Sarah Biscoe, daughter of Nathaniel Biscoe and Elizabeth Honor.

On 15 March 1654/5, he purchased a farm in Watertown, which remained in the family for 170 years. In 1850, it was owned by John F. Cushing Esq., “whose taste and princely generosity have made it one of the most elegant residences in New England.” (Quote from Dr. Bond.)

He received, at different times, numerous offices and appointments of trust. He was often employed in taking Inventories, writing Wills and Deeds, and settling estates. He was Selectman, Town Clerk, a Captain [of a company of horse], a Justice of the Peace, a member of the Council of Safety in 1689; often represented Watertown, and was elected Speaker of the General Court in 1691, '92; '93, and '95, being the first speaker elected under the new Royal Charter, which united the colonies of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay into one colony. He was admitted freeman, Oct, 11, 1682, and to the church, f.c. [full communion] Mar 27, 1687.

In 1679 he was appointed to a committee to supervise the reconstruction of Lancaster, after it had been destroyed by Indians in King Philip's War. In 1686 he was appointed to a similar committee to regulate the settling of Worcester.

On 14 December 1695, Judge Samuel Sewall wrote in his diary, “Capt. Bond went home from Court very sick, and then Mr. Jewett was chosen Speaker in his room.” He said that Captain Bond died on the fifteenth, although Watertown vital records say the fourteenth.

Sarah Biscoe was born in Little Missenden, Buckinghamshire, England, on 7 May 1626, the fourth of five children of Nathaniel Biscoe and Elizabeth Honor.

Her father had come to New England, but was so upset by the narrow-mindedness of the church members there, that he returned to England, leaving his wife and children in Watertown.

Sarah and William had nine children, and Sarah lived to see most of them well settled and respected in their community. Three of her sons received officer's commissions in the militia.

She died in Watertown 15 February 1692/3.

Ens. John Coolidge Jr. was born circa 1628 in Cottenham, Cambridgeshire, England, the first of seven children of John Coolidge and Mary Ravens.

He married first our ancestress Hannah Livermore, in Watertown on 14 November 1655. She was the daughter of John Livermore and Grace Sherman. Hannah died on 23 December 1678, possibly in childbirth, having given him twelve children, including two sets of twins. Having a house full of infants, John married again, in Watertown on 16 September 1679, Mary Wellington, widow of Henry Maddock.

Ensign John made his will, dated 9 February 1690/1 and proved 7 April 1691. In it he named sons John and Richard, and daughters Elizabeth, Sarah and Mary. At least six children had predeceased him.

John died in Watertown on 8 February 1690/1, thus barely outliving his mother and mother-in-law, and dying just before his venerable father.

Hannah Livermore was born circa 1636, probably in Wethersfield, Connecticut, first of eleven children of John Livermore and Grace Sherman. Her parents lived briefly in Watertown, then went to Wethersfield circa 1636, and then onto New Haven in 1640. They returned to Watertown circa 1650, about three years after Hannah's uncle Rev. John Sherman had returned there from Connecticut to be the town's minister.

Hannah and John had thirteen children, the youngest of whom was only two when Hannah died in Watertown on 23 December 1678.

Dea. Henry Bright was baptized at Bury St. Edmunds, Suffolk, England, on 29 December 1602, son of Henry Bright and Mary.

He came to Boston in 1630 in time to become the forty-eighth member of the Boston church. By 1635, he had moved to Watertown where he became a freeman on 6 May.

By 1635, either in Boston or Watertown, he married Anna Goldstone, daughter of Henry Goldstone and Anna.

He was frequently selectman for Watertown between 1639 and 1680. He was assessor; perambulator of town bounds; sergeant of the train band; clerk of the train band; surveyor of arms; and in early 1664, elected deacon of the Watertown church.

Deacon Henry made his will 25 January 1680, with a codicil on 25 October 1685 and proved on 13 November 1686. He stated that he was seventy-eight (in 1680) and named eldest son John; son Nathaniel; daughters Anna Ruggles, Elizabeth Hastings, Mary Coolidge, Abigail Audly, and Beriah Fowle; and daughter-in-law Mary Bright (wife of son John). He also mentioned his "father Goldstone."

On 7 October 1686, Judge Samuel Sewall wrote in his diary that, "Deacon Bright, carrying home chairs etc, used at Mr. Bayly's [ordination], is hurt by his cart none seeing, so that he dies October 9th, Saturday. It seems he was the only officer left in that church. Several of his ribs broken."

Anna Goldstone was baptized at Wickam Skeith, Suffolk, England, on 16 May 1615, eldest of two daughters of Henry Goldstone and Anna. She came with her parents and her sister Mary to Watertown on the *Elizabeth* of Ipswich in 1634.

She and Deacon Henry had eight children by 1649, and then had no more, although Anna was only thirty-three.

There is no record, and as far as I can see, no speculation as to the date of Anna's death. It must have occurred between 1649 and 1680, when Deacon Henry made his will without mentioning her. The lack of children during the last decade of her child-bearing potential suggests an early death, but the fact that Deacon Henry did not remarry argues against it.

Simon Coolidge was born circa 1632 in Cottenham, Cambridgeshire, England, the second of seven children of John Coolidge and Mary Ravens. He was a younger brother of our ancestor Ens. John Coolidge. He was brought to Watertown as an infant circa 1636.

He married first our ancestress Hannah Barron, in Watertown on 17 November 1658. She was the daughter of Ellis Barron and Grace. They had had eight children when Hannah died on 14 July 1680, perhaps in childbirth. That left him with many youngsters on his hands, so he remarried quickly in Watertown on 19 January 1681/2, to Priscilla Rogers.

Simon was modestly involved in town affairs, especially between 1666 and 1672. He was a surveyor of highways, a surveyor of cattle and fences, and a constable. On 16 October 1671, he was paid three pence by the town "for birds." Because these notations in the town expenses books were sometimes called "for foxes and birds," I suppose that the birds were crows or seagulls, or something else considered a pest.

Simon died in Watertown 27 December 1693.

Hannah Barron was born in Waterford, Ireland, circa 1637, first of seven children of Ellis Barron and Grace. She was brought to Watertown, where her youngest siblings were born, as an infant sometime before 1640. Hannah died soon after the birth of her eighth child, in Watertown on 14 July 1680.

Jonathan Brown was born in Watertown 15 October 1635, fourth of six children of Abraham Brown and Lydia.

He married in Watertown 11 February 1661/2 Mary Shattuck, daughter of William Shattuck and Susannah.

On 1 January 1672/3, Jonathan Brown of Watertown was identified in a Suffolk County court document as “cousin and next heir of Edmund Brown formerly of Boston ... deceased.” The record also called Edmund Brown “uncle.” These brief statements provided the clues that allowed the correct English ancestry of these Browns to be determined.

Jonathan made his will on 19 February 1690/1, proved 7 April 1691. He died a few months before the final (forty years delayed) settlement of his father’s estate.

Mary Shattuck was born in Watertown on 25 August 1645, second of ten children of William Shattuck and Susannah.

She had ten children with Jonathan and lived forty-eight years after the birth of her last, so she must have had the pleasure of knowing grandchildren and great-grandchildren. She died in Watertown on 23 October 1732.

Job Hyde was born in Cambridge, Massachusetts, circa 1643, second of five children of Samuel Hyde and Temperance.

He married in Cambridge circa 1663, Elizabeth Fuller, daughter of John Fuller and Elizabeth Cole.

He and Elizabeth had nine children, and then both died when the youngest of these was only a year old. Fortunately, the grandfathers were still alive, so three of the children (Samuel, Sarah, and John) were cared for by their grandfather Hyde, while four (Elizabeth, Jonathan, Mary and Hannah) were cared for by their grandfather Fuller. Two had died as infants. Four of these youngsters married children of their uncle Jonathan Hyde.

Job died in Cambridge on 19 November 1685.

Elizabeth Fuller was born circa 1650, presumably in Newton, Massachusetts (then called Cambridge Village), where her father had settled in 1644. She was the third of eight children of John Fuller and Elizabeth Cole.

Elizabeth died in Cambridge only nine days after her husband on 28 November 1685. We don’t know whether this was because of an epidemic (which seems unlikely, because none of the children died at about the same time) or in an accident.

William Simonds was baptized at St. Peters, Winchester, Hampshire, England, on 20 November 1612. His ancestry is not well proven, but there was a well established Symonds family in Winchester.

William came to America circa 1635, settling first at Charlestown where he became a freeman in 1639. He may have lived for a while in Concord where his first wife, Sarah was buried on 3 April 1641. He then married in Woburn, Massachusetts, on 18 January 1643/4, our ancestress Judith Phippen, a daughter of William Phipping and Judith of Wedmore, Somersetshire, England.

William settled in Woburn circa 1643 or 1644. He was taxed in Woburn in 1645, and built a house in the Cummingsville section. This home was used as a garrison house during the early Indian wars.

He died in Woburn 7 June 1672.

Judith Phippen was born circa 1619 in Wedmore, Somersetshire, England, seemingly the first of four children (all daughters) of William Phipping and Judith.

Judith was licensed to embark on the *Planter* in 22 March 1634/5 from London, aged sixteen, a servant of Nicholas Davies, together with James Haieward, age twenty-two, servant and tailor. She married James, probably as soon as their indentures were up, but he died in Woburn 20 November 1642, probably before they had any children. Judith then married William Simonds.

This Judith does not seem to be connected in any way to our other Phippen ancestors.

She and William had twelve children, the youngest of whom was about thirty when Judith died in Woburn on 3 January 1689/90.

John Tidd was born perhaps circa 1630 in England. Probably he was the youngest of five children of John Tidd and Margaret Greenleaf.

He embarked for Charlestown, Massachusetts, in 1637, and moved shortly thereafter to Woburn. After some decades in Woburn, he moved on in 1686 to Lexington.

He married on 14 April 1650, probably at Woburn, Massachusetts, Rebecca Wood, whose ancestry is unknown to us.

John made his will 7 August 1701 (proved 31 May 1703). He died in Lexington 13 April 1703.

Rebecca Wood was born circa 1625 in England, but we know little else about her origins. It is known that she and John had eight children, and she survived the youngest by nearly fifty years! Surely she must have dandled her great-grandchildren.

She died in Lexington on 10 June 1717.

Samuel Stearns was born in Watertown on 21 April 1638, sixth of eight children of Isaac Stearns and Mary Barker.

He married in Watertown, 1 February 1662/3, Hannah Manning, daughter of William Manning Jr. and Dorothy.

Samuel's farm, at the northwest corner of the crossroads made by the direct road from Cambridge to Waltham, and by that going north to Lexington, remained in the family through the generation of his great-grandson, Capt. Phineas Stearns.

He was first mentioned in the Watertown Town Records on 6 November 1665, as a surveyor of highways. He then served as a surveyor of cattle, fences and hogs, and as a constable. In 1674, he was asked to bargain with John Coolidge for repairs to the meeting house. On 2 November 1674, he was elected selectman, and served in that capacity until his death. Indeed, the selectmen met at his house several times, including once just a few months before his death.

One of the most unusual tasks assigned him by the town was to maintain possession of a black cloth, donated to the town by Deacon Bright, to be used in burial rites. The town business records do not mention Samuel's death, but they do record the transfer of the black cloth to another custodian.

He died in Watertown on 3 August 1683.

Hannah Manning was born in Cambridge on 21 June 1642, first of five children of William Manning Jr. and Dorothy.

Her husband Samuel died when her youngest child (of ten) was only one year old, but Hannah did not remarry. She lived to a good old age, probably in the family of her son John who inherited the family homestead. She died in Watertown, 26 February 1723/4.

John Fiske Jr. was born in Watertown on 20 November 1655, third of ten children of John Fiske Sr. and Sarah Wyeth.

He was a husbandman.

He served in King Philips War. Shortly thereafter, on 9 December 1679, in either Watertown or Newton, he married first, our ancestress Abigail Park, daughter of Thomas Park and Abigail Dix. When Abigail died circa 1698, after giving him nine children, he married second in Watertown on 19 January 1698/9, Hannah Richards, with whom he had one child.

His will was dated 6 June 1709 and proved 23 June 1718. He died in Watertown 6 June 1718.

Abigail Park was born in Cambridge on 3 March 1658/9, third of nine children of Thomas Park and Abigail Dix.

Abigail and John had eight children, the youngest of whom was probably less than a year old when Abigail died, presumably in Watertown circa 1698. We have no precise record of her death, but John remarried early in 1699.

John Ball Jr. was born in 1644, probably in Watertown, the first of four children of John Ball Sr. and Elizabeth Peirce. On 17 October 1665, in Watertown, he married Susan Bullard, very probably the daughter of George Bullard and Beatrice Hall.

He was a weaver and was paid sixteen shillings eight pence by the town for some weaving he did for Ned Saunders in 1675.

He died in Watertown 8 May 1722.

Sarah Bullard was born circa 1645, probably in Watertown, and most likely as the second of at least four children of George Bullard and his second wife, Beatrice Hall.

George Bullard and Beatrice had a daughter Mary born on 12 February 1639/40 (recorded in Boston). She might have been our Sarah; or Sarah may have been born, but not recorded, circa 1645 in a convenient gap between the births recorded for George and Beatrice.

It may be significant that the John Ball who married Sarah Bullard was involved with Jacob Bullard, a recorded son of George, in a mining venture in Groton. Another, more specific entry in Watertown town records on 23 December 1684 says, "John Ball, son-in-law, and Jonathan Bullard, son, be notified of the necessity of help for father Bullard and his wife." The only Bullard then living in Watertown who could have been "father Bullard" was George, and he did have a wife.

t. Nathan Fiske was born in Watertown on 17 October 1642, the first of five children of Nathan Fiske and Susanna. Nathan married in Dorchester, Massachusetts, on 26 April 1665, Elizabeth, daughter of William Frye and Elizabeth.

He died in Watertown 11 October 1694.

Elizabeth Frye was born in England circa 1620, but where and to whom is still disputed. She and her sister Mary were dismissed from the church at Weymouth to join the one at Dorchester on 10 July 1659. Elizabeth, “being married to a man at Water-towne was dismissed to joyn to ye Church 3 June 1666.”

She outlived her husband by a couple of years and lived thirteen years after the birth of her youngest child, dying in Watertown on 15 May 1696.

John Bemis was born in Watertown, in August 1659, the last of nine children of Joseph Bemis and Sarah.

He married circa 1680, probably in Watertown, Mary Harrington, daughter of Robert Harrington and Susanna George. He was forty-seven when she died, after having fourteen children, and he remarried almost immediately Sarah Holland, widow of Jonathan Phillips, but had no more children. When Sarah died, he married a third time to Judith Jenison, widow of James Barnard. He evidently didn't like a cold bed.

Of historic interest, along with his son-in-law Daniel Child, on 6 April 1702 he bought of Nathaniel Saltonstall, Fellow of Harvard College, 160 acres in Watertown. This was the thirtieth lot, first granted to Sir Richard Saltonstall.

John lived in (or moved to) the western part of Watertown that became Waltham; but none of the births of his children were recorded there.

He died in Waltham on 24 October 1732 and is buried in Grove Hill Cemetery there.

Mary Harrington was born in Watertown on 12 January 1663, the eighth of thirteen children of Robert Harrington and Susanna George.

Mary died in that western part of Watertown that later became Waltham on 8 September 1716. This was eleven years after delivering her last children, a pair of twin sisters, both of whom married. Mary was probably buried at Grove Hill (or the Watertown Cemetery) in Waltham.

Daniel Livermore was born in Watertown on 3 February 1674/5, fourth of twelve children of Samuel Livermore and Anna Bridge, the next eldest brother to our ancestor, Thomas Livermore. (Daniel and Thomas present a good example of how two persons of almost exactly the same age can be removed from us by a different number of generations. For much of our history, families were so large that there could be twenty to twenty-five years age difference between the first child and the last.)

Daniel was a potter. On 28 May 1697 in Watertown he married Mary Coolidge. She gave him a son and two daughters, one of whom died as an infant. Mary died in childbirth with the second daughter on 10 December 1702.

Within a very few months, but with no surviving record, Daniel married our ancestress Mary. People have been trying, unsuccessfully, to determine her maiden name since at least 1858.

Daniel's estate was administered (MSX Probate) in 1720. He died on 16 November 1720.

In 1711, a Daniel Livermore identified Steven Coolidge as his uncle.

Mary Unknown. Mary was born circa 1679, of unknown parents. She and Daniel married circa April 1703 and had six children between January 1703/4 and June 1718. She was young enough when she married Daniel to be entering her first marriage, but not so impossibly young to have been a widow. A careful search of Daniel's probate papers might yield something of interest.

After Daniel died she remarried, on 17 August 1724, John Goodenow of Sudbury. After John died, Mary returned to Watertown, where she died on 7 October 1745.

Samuel Livermore was baptized in New Haven, Connecticut, on 15 August 1641, as the third child of John Livermore and Grace Sherman. He was a brother of our ancestress Hannah Livermore, and presumably came back to Watertown, Massachusetts, with the rest of his family circa 1650.

In Watertown on 4 June 1668, he married Anna Bridge, daughter of Matthew Bridge and Anna Danforth.

He was a maltster who lived in Watertown all his life. He died there on 5 December 1690.

Anna Bridge was born in Watertown circa 1646 or 1647, second of seven children of Matthew Bridge and Anna Danforth.

Anna had had twelve children when Samuel died, within a year of the birth of her last child. She then remarried (no surviving record), but probably soon, Oliver Wellington.

She died on 28 August 1727 in Watertown, and Oliver died two days later in Lexington.

Martyn Hardewyn and his wife Magdalena du Soisson have not been proven to be the parents of Mark Hardin, but much circumstantial evidence suggests that this may be true. Considerable effort has been made, especially by Mrs. Charles C. Cartwright of Texas, Dorothy Ford Wulfeck of Connecticut, and Dr. B. C. Holtzclaw of Virginia, to assemble and publish this evidence. I have continued this search, especially in New Jersey records, and include my findings (and judgment calls) here.

Let me start with family tradition, which seems to have been first recorded in the generation of Mark Hardin's grandchildren. (I repeat this material from the previous chapter, to save your having to skip back and forth.) Among Mark's grandchildren who lived in Kentucky in the early 1800s (none of whom had actually known their grandfather or even had ever recorded his name), the following story was universally believed. I quote from an 1880 letter from Martin D. McHenry to Gen. M. D. Hardin, in response to the latter's call for information about the Hardin family. McHenry was a grandson of Col. John Hardin, a lawyer and judge, and a man whose memories, even as an old man, have always been accurate when I could check them against contemporary records. He wrote:

I still believe in the tradition that our Hardin ancestors were Huguenots and that three brothers came to America at or about the same time. This may be so notwithstanding the information you have from Hardins in Georgia and one or both of the Carolinas. It may be that one came over first and communicated with the others after looking at the situation. Our tradition is that they were French and that determining to come to the New World they supposed that in like latitude here they would probably find substantially similar climate, and first concluded to go to Canada, but finding that so much colder they settled further South. This may be true and it may also be true that they first went from France to England or some of them to Ireland and from thence came to America. I was raised in the neighborhood of my great aunt Sarah Hardin, born 1743, my great uncle Mark Hardin born 1750, my great aunt Lydia Wickliffe born 1748 and my great uncle

Martin Hardin, born Feb 1758. I have this tradition as I got it from Aunt Sarah, Uncle Mark and Uncle Martin who were fond of telling the young people about such things, and my mother who was raised among them had so learned it.

It is often the case that family traditions such as this are at least partially true, and I have searched New Jersey records in particular, to see whether I could find anyone who might have been a brother of Mark Hardin. It turns out that there were a Benjamin Hardin and a Martin Hardin living as neighbors in Hopewell at about the same time Mark was appearing in Virginia records. Benjamin moved to Surry County, Virginia, and it seems extremely likely that he was the progenitor of a large group of Hardin families in North Carolina and Tennessee. Martin stayed in New Jersey until he died in Amwell Township, making his will on 10 June 1764 (proved 1 June 1765).

We note that Benjamin and Martin were popular given names among the descendants of Mark Hardin. There is another tidbit of record that may possibly be relevant. In Lucius Little's 1887 biography *Kitchen Knife*, of Mark's great-grandson, Benjamin Hardin, a story is told of Ben's mother Sarah, who was a Hardin cousin of his father. To quote Lucius Little:

The survivor of the brothers in Virginia bore the Christian name of Martin. Of his career and death no record is known. In her childhood, Sarah Hardin, mother of Benjamin, knew him as a very old man, with a dark countenance and French dialect.

This sounds great, except that we now know that Sarah's grandfather was named Mark, not Martin, and that Mark died about eight years before Sarah was born. However, Sarah was twenty-two when Martin of New Jersey died, so it is conceivable that he was her Frenchman, not her grandfather, but rather a great-uncle.

There are other records that hint that our Mark may have been a brother of Martin and Benjamin of New Jersey. In a session of the Court of Pleas of 8 May 1700, in Burlington, New Jersey, the court acted to bar the complaint of a Martin Harding against Joshua Ely (presumably for battery), because it was Mark Harding, not Martin, who was supposed to have been beaten. In sessions of the same court on 8/9 August 1700 and 12 December 1704, Benjamin Hardin was a juror. Finally, and most intriguing, the Court of Quarter Sessions, sitting at Burlington on 4 June 1706, heard and acted favorably on the complaint of a Magdalen Harden. (I don't worry about slight spelling variations, from Harding to Hardin to Harden—it is quite clear from the context of these records that all these people lived in the general vicinity of Hopewell, in what is now Hunterdon or Mercer counties.)

The intriguing suggestion of these fragmentary records is that this little nest of Hardins in New Jersey may have been the remnants of the Huguenot family that was baptizing children in the Dutch Reformed Church of New York a decade or two earlier. This would lead to the conclusion that Mark, Martin and Benjamin may have been the three Huguenot brothers of the family tradition, but that their parents or grandparents, not they themselves had been the Huguenot refugees from France. (Of course, there are no New York baptisms for a Benjamin or a Martin, but it is easy to suppose that the records are incomplete. I did note, however, that the given names Benjamin and Martin were not at all represented in the baptismal records of the New York Dutch Church.)

Here then is a copy of Mrs. Cartwright's record extractions, as published by Mrs. Wulfeck first for the family of Magdalena, because those records start earlier. Mrs. Wulfeck does us the great favor of explaining some of the potentially confusing spelling variations typical of the records of New Amsterdam, where the recorder's native language may have been Dutch, French, English or one of the Scandinavian tongues.

Main record sources:

- Monnette, *First Settlers of Piscataway and Woodbridge, New Jersey*
- James Riker, *History of Harlem*, 2d. ed., 1904
- *New York Genealogical Magazine*
- *Yearbook of the Holland Society*

17 June 1655	Marc du Sauchoy in New Amsterdam before this date. Riker, p. 319. [The fact that he was out of France before the revocation of the Edict of Nantes does not mean he was not a Huguenot. Huguenots (French Calvinist Protestants) had been fleeing to Holland, England, Switzerland and Prussia for decades, even though the Edict afforded them, at least on paper, some freedom of religion and guarantees of political rights.]
20 January 1658	Magdalena, daughter of Marcus du Soison and Lysbeth Rosiljel, his wife, baptized in the Dutch Church [of New Amsterdam]. <i>New York Genealogical Magazine</i> 9, 48.
6 April 1668	Martin Hardewyn admitted to membership in New York Dutch Reformed Church.
5 March 1671	Banns for marriage of Martin Hardewyn with Madeline du Sauchoy, both living at Fordham; present, bride's mother, Elizabeth Nachtegal and Jacques Cousseau; with note from the bride's father, Marc du Sauchoy, that he "beared consent to same." [Magdalena was only a bit over thirteen at the time.] Riker, p. 272; <i>New York Genealogical Magazine</i> 6: 186.
2 March 1676	Magdaleen du Souson, wife of Martin Hardewyn, admitted to membership in New York Dutch Reformed Church. <i>New York Genealogical Magazine</i> 9: 147.

When he married Magdalena, both were living at Fordham. He was presumably at the same place when, on 21 August 1674, he sued Frederick Philips and Thomas Lewis for firing him from his year's contract as their miller. They claimed he was incompetent. He counter-claimed that he had put the mill in good repair and had ground good flour. He was to produce witnesses at a future court session.

If he was Martin Hadaway, he got a warrant for land survey on Staten Island as early 6 April 1678.

He seems to have been a settler of Staten Island as early as 1680. On 7 February 1680 he was in court there, in debt to Claes Smith who got his warrant for survey of Staten Island land at the same time as Martin.

From 1685 to 1710, the only church on Staten Island was the "French Congregation." The congregation consisted of thirty-six French, forty English, and forty-four Dutch. There was, however, a Dutch Church at Port Richmond (1696–1941).

Thomas Waters Sr. It seems likely that Thomas Sr. may have been a Quaker, as were his brothers Richard and John. The will of his father states that these three left no heirs. Prior to 1705, Quaker marriages were illegal in Virginia, and it was not until 1718 that full legal rights were restored to Quakers.

If Thomas and Mary were wed before 1705, which seems likely, and if they did so on the Eastern Shore of Virginia, their marriage may not have been legally recognized, and their children would not be recognized as heirs.

Family tradition says that they had four children, including Thomas Jr.

Mary Lloyd is thought to have been the daughter of Capt. Philemon Lloyd, although Internet sources say that this daughter died at the age of seven. Other Internet sources suggest that Thomas Waters married Mary's sister Margaret, and still others claim that he married a Mary Lloyd who was born several years before Colonel Philemon married.

There is thus ample reason to be skeptical about this claimed connection to the rich and important Lloyd family. The Lloyd family home, built by Colonel Philemon, was burned by the British in 1781, and all family records destroyed. There is, however, an old family burial ground, which has been recorded, and there seem to be good surviving land and probate records for Talbot County. Since both Philemon and his wife made generous bequests of land to all their children, there may still be hope of gaining some factual base to this claimed relationship. [Rick's plans to travel to Salt Lake City to do more research on Mary's origins were thwarted by his untimely death. —Ed.]

Dirck Volkerts was born circa 1667, at Bushwick, Long Island, New York, the first of ten children of Volkert Dircks and Annetje Phillipse. Many of our New Amsterdam ancestors, from this date on back used the patronymic naming system.

In 1689, he was appointed ensign of the town militia. His name was spelled in various ways in town records: as Derck Folkerse when he loaned money to his uncle Jacob Dircksen on 17 July 1689; and as Derick when he was a grand jurymen at the court of sessions in 1692.

On 25 September 1691, at the Flatbush Dutch Church on Long Island, Dirck married our ancestress, Maria de Witt, daughter of Pieter de Witt and Sarah Alberts. At the time of the 1698 census, he had a wife, three children, and two slaves.

In 1701, he bought land in Somerset County, New Jersey, together with Hendrick Pieters Lott, Pieter Cortelyou and Hendrik Polhemus. On 3 April 1705, he bought another tract of land, on Millstone River, from John Royce. About 1710 he purchased more land at the Harlingen tract in Somerset County, and operated a mill with his brothers Philip and Nicholas at Bound Brook on the lower Millstone River.

By 1710, his wife Maria had died, and on 27 September 1710, Dirck was in New York City to marry Jenneke Schouiwten. We know virtually nothing about her, but she seems not to have lived long, and by the 1720s, Dirck had a third wife, Geertje Zynieltse, by whom he had, perhaps four more children. It is difficult to identify, with confidence all of Dirck's children. We do know who survived past 4 November 1752, when Dirck made his long and informative will, which was proved on 5 August 1754.

In this will, Dirck named his wife Gerttie; his son Volker Derrickson and all of Volkert's children; a grandson Garret Rosaboom, son of his daughter Deborah; the children (unnamed) of his daughter Hannah Dally; and his daughter Mary, wife of Peter Schenk. In his will, he alludes to the fact that son Volkert has already had a good share of his estate, and makes it clear that he has little faith in Volkert's management of financial matters.

Dirck died in Somerset County on 2 June 1754 and was buried in the Weston cemetery, where his footstone can still be seen. The headstone has unfortunately fallen apart.

Maria de Witt was born circa 1671 (no record), probably in Bushwick on Long Island, quite possibly the only child of Pieter de Witt and Sarah Albertse.

She seems to have had two sons and two daughters, and to have died circa 1709 or 1710 in Somerset County, New Jersey. Actually, we know from a 1698 census of Flatbush, that she had three children by then, and it seems biologically likely that she would have had several more in New Jersey, but that they died before their father made his will (at age eighty-five).

We have no death record for Maria. Most genealogists guess that she died circa 1709 or 1710, on the assumption that Dirck remarried soon after her death.

Frederick Hendricksen van Leeuvin was born in Utrecht, Holland. He married at Jamaica, on Long Island, on 2 October 1681 Dinah Janse.

Frederick made his will 19 November 1712, proved 6 June 1726, naming wife Dinah, sons John, Henry and Frederick; and daughters Greta, Dinah, Elizabeth, Analche and Mary Probasco. He mentioned his estate in Holland, without much hope of ever collecting it.

He died, presumably in Jamaica, shortly before his will was proved. (There is a conflict between published dates for his death [8 June 1726], and for the proving of his will [6 June 1726]. As far as I know, a will is never proved before the death of the person making it.)

Dina Janse was born on 20 November 1662 in Jamaica, Queens, New York, (which in that day would still have been New Amsterdam, under Dutch control). It strikes me as very odd that a precise date is known for her birth, and yet there is no recorded identification of her parents.

Dinah left a will that is crucial in proving our line of descent from this couple. It was dated 4 June 1736, proved 30 December 1740. She named "my children Johannes, Mary wife of Jacob Probasco of New York, Henry, Gertje wife of John Stryker of New York, Dinah wife of Volkert Dircksen, Fematie, Elizabeth wife of Evert van Wicklen, and Altie, wife of John Dorland."

She mentions her two old Negroes.

John Jacob was born circa 1632, probably in England. We get this date from his deposition, dated 14 May 1726, saying that he was about ninety-four. The record of his arrival in Maryland in 1666 gives his age as thirty-three, so that is in good agreement. (Nothing is known about his parentage or place of birth, although many fanciful theories have been published.)

John Sr. was the immigrant. In 1665, he arrived in Maryland as the indentured servant of James Warner. On 2 December 1674, he proved his rights to fifty acres of land "for his time of service to James Warner, 9 years hence."

He got a warrant for fifty acres on South River, near a creek that became known as Jacob's Creek. He subsequently acquired quite a substantial landholding, 150 acres by gift from his father-in-law, and the rest by purchase.

He married in 1681 at All Hallows Church, Anne Arundel County, Anne Cheney, daughter of Richard Cheney.

He made his will on 4 June 1719, proved 1 December 1726. He bequeathed his dwelling and plantation on South River to son John. Sons Joseph and Benjamin each got two hundred acres in Prince George's County. The residue of real and personal property went to wife Anne during her life; upon her death the land was to be divided between sons Richard and Samuel, and the personal property between daughters Elizabeth and Susannah. (Having lived to great age, he outlived three of his children.)

He was buried from All Hallows Church in Anne Arundel County on 29 October 1726.

Anne Cheney was born circa 1661, in South River Hundred, Anne Arundel County, Maryland. She was probably the youngest of three children of Richard Cheney Sr. and Charity. Our estimate of her birth year comes from a deposition she made on 16 January 1725, saying that she was then about sixty-five years old.

It seems that Anne may have missed her infant baptism, because an Ann Jacob, wife of John, was baptized at All Hallows on 6 July 1720.

Anne and John seem to have had ten children.

Anne was buried 1 May 1730 from All Hallows Church.

Richmond Terrell II may have been born in England, coming with his parents to Virginia circa 1656, or he may have been born in Virginia after 1656. I think the latter is more plausible, for reasons given below.

The great difficulty in answering genealogical questions about him is the near total loss of early records for New Kent County. In fact, the only record naming this Richmond involves his signing the "grievance" put together by followers of Nathaniel Bacon in "Bacon's Rebellion" of 1676 and 1677. He signed in Blisland Parish in 1677.

Some authors have proposed that this was signed by the immigrant father, Richmond Terrell I, but I think that unlikely, given the social and political context of the Grievance. It was aimed specifically at Sir William Berkeley, then governor of Virginia, who had denied Bacon permission to wage unlimited warfare against neighboring Indian tribes. In an economic sense, it was aimed at perceived unfair trading advantages, enjoyed by the wealthiest planters at the expense of smaller planters, indentured servants, and slaves. But Richmond I had received substantial land grants through the hands of Governor Berkeley when he immigrated, and seems to me more likely to have felt aligned with the large planters than the small. I don't know what could have made Richmond II feel differently from his father, but sons often do. Bacon was himself a handsome, wealthy young man, and he may have attracted followers who were interested in military adventure or vengeance, rather than more strictly economic motives.

William Overton was born in England on 3 December 1638, possibly to Gen. Robert Overton and Anne Gardiner.

He married at Yorktown, Virginia, on 24 November 1670 Elizabeth Waters, daughter of Samuel and Ann Waters of London.

Apparently, a family register for William and Elizabeth was once enclosed in a book called *History of the Jews* by Flavius Josephus. The original of this record was passed down in the family until destroyed by fire in 1888. Copies of the record had been made in 1821 by Mrs. L. Payne and Dr. W. S. Pryor. A copy apparently survives today at the Valentine Museum in Richmond. (A printed version appears

on p. 140 of *The Early Descendants of William Overton & Elizabeth Waters of Virginia* by William P. Anderson [1938]. It is to this source alone that we owe our knowledge of William's date (but not place) of birth, his date (but not place) of marriage, and the birth dates of his children. Unfortunately, the Bible record did not name his parents or place any of the recorded events.)

William obviously had considerable wealth, for he was able to import ninety-two people to Virginia, for which he received a grant of forty-six hundred acres on the South side of Pamunkey River, on Falling Creek, on 23 April 1681. It is not clear that he brought all these people over on one voyage, since he seems to have started the importation with his wife and her nurse in 1670.

We have no record of William's death, although some authors assert that it occurred in James City in 1697.

Elizabeth Waters was born in London on 30 December 1654, daughter of Samuel and Ann Waters of St. Sepulchres. Some authors contend that her family was Catholic, whereas William, if truly the son of General Robert, was probably Protestant.

We owe our knowledge of the identity of Elizabeth to the will of her mother, made at St. Sepulchre, London on 7 September 1697. In this, her mother, Ann Waters, names her daughter "Elizabeth Overton, now in Virginia."

We have no proven death record for her, although one Internet author asserts that she died in Virginia in 1697, and was buried in London in the same year. This seems very unlikely, since that was the year in which she was named in her mother's will.

Edward Garland Sr. was born circa 1664. Most (undocumented) sources claim that Edward was born in Virginia, but one notes that his father, Peter Garland, lived in Charlestown or Boston, Massachusetts, before he came to Virginia, at about the time of Edward's birth.

Edward lived in New Kent and Hanover counties, and his family suffers the same loss of basic records that afflicts the Overton family.

Any list of his children's names is highly speculative. Every Internet offering has a different list, none of them supported by any contemporary data.

He died in Hanover County, Virginia, on 14 March 1719.

Martha Jane Unknown and Jane Jennings. There seems to be dispute over the name of Edward's wife, an occasional suggestion that he had two wives, and even a quite serious suggestion that both of the names we play with are just inventions of the imaginations of twentieth-century genealogists. Evidently, there are no contemporary records on which to pin a conclusion. There is also a lot of variety in published lists of Edward's children.

It seems possible that "Martha Jane" died circa 1700, and that Edward married again in 1703 to a Jane Jennings.

Benjamin Cave was born in England circa 1703. We do not know precisely where, or to whom he was born.

About 1727, in Spotsylvania County, Virginia, he married Hannah Bledsoe, daughter of Capt. William Bledsoe and Anne.

Benjamin received a land grant, dated 28 September 1728, along with Abraham Bledsoe, for a thousand acres on the Rapidan River, in what is now Culpepper County. He was a vestryman for St. Mark's parish from 1731 until 1740, when St. Thomas parish was cut off. He served on the vestry of St. Thomas Parish for the rest of his life.

Benjamin made his will on 26 June 1762 (proved 26 August 1762). He named wife, Hannah; sons William, John, Benjamin Jr., David, Richard; and daughters Elizabeth Johnson, Ann Cavender, Sarah and Hannah Cave. Wife Hannah and sons John and Benjamin were to execute. The inventory shows that he had property, including slaves, in both Orange and Culpepper counties.

There is a family graveyard in front of the handsome mansion, Montebello, near the town of Orange. It is said on a plaque on the brick wall surrounding this cemetery that therein lie the graves of Benjamin and Hannah Cave. However, Pat and I have explored the cemetery carefully, and there are no stones of that ancient vintage. The cemetery ground was seriously undermined by woodchuck burrows, and overgrown with weeds.

The mansion, on the other hand, is a wonderful place. It was probably not built by Benjamin, but has been in the family probably since the mid 1700s. When we visited it, it was owned by Mrs. Grey Dunnington, a Cave descendant and our very gracious hostess.

Hannah Bledsoe was born circa 1710, probably in Spotsylvania County, Virginia, apparently the oldest of five children of Capt. William Bledsoe and his first wife, Anne.

She and Benjamin had nine children, the youngest of whom was at least twenty when she died.

We don't have a death record for her, but she was named in her father's will, which was proved in 1770. She could well have lived past that year, but we have found no later record of her.

James Suggett was born circa 1672 in Richmond County, Virginia, the second of four children, all sons, of John Suggett and Sarah Edgcombe.

James seems first to have married a cousin, Frances Baylis, presumably after 4 May 1694, on which date his mother, her four sons, and the wife of John, the eldest son, signed a tripartite deed in Richmond County. This family connection is reinforced by the fact that James was executor of the will of Sarah Baylis. The probable date of this marriage is circa June 1703.

James and Frances had just one child, Bernie, of whom we have any record. He was baptized at North Farnham Parish in Richmond County on 24 January 1714.

His second marriage was to our ancestress Katherine (Lewis) Deeke, whom he must have known since childhood, because her parents, Edward and Mary Lewis, were next neighbors to James's parents. This must have occurred before 3 January 1721/2, on which date James Suggett and Katherine his wife received her portion from the estate of Katherine's first husband, Joseph Deeke.

The main things I found, that were new to me, are court records that bracket the death date of James Suggitt of Richmond County between 3 Sept 1733, when he was assigned by the court to help divide the estate of Giles Webb, and 5 August 1734, when Mr. Daniel Hornby obtained letters of administration for James's estate. Since the court seems to have met monthly, I would guess that James died in July 1734, but possibly in June. Further, his death seems to have been sudden, catching him probably in his early fifties, without having made a will. He seems to have been socially important (foreman of a jury), but not a model of perfect deportment (often presented for swearing). His brother Thomas was also presented for swearing.

Katherine Lewis was born circa 1685, probably in Richmond County, Virginia. There seems no doubt that her parents were Edward and Mary Lewis, but there seem to have been two couples with those names in Richmond County at the time, and there is wide variety in the guesses as to Katherine's birthdate and parentage.

We know that she married, first, before 8 March 1704/5 (and probably not long before this date) Joseph Deeke, with whom she had five children whose births were registered in North Farnham Parish. Joseph died in 1718, and three of his children died shortly thereafter. As mentioned above, James Suggett and Katherine then married, and she received her portion from Joseph's estate on 3 January 1721/2.

It appears that James and Katherine had a single child, our ancestor Lt. James Suggett. His birth was entered erroneously on the North Farnham Parish records as 18 April 1722, son of James and *Mary* Suggett, giving rise to the false notion that James had married three times.

Katherine died on 28 July 1727, when son James was only five, but there is no indication that his father married again.

Capt. Patrick Spence was born circa 1688, in Westmoreland County, Virginia, probably the eldest of three children of Patrick Spence and Penelope Youell. There is little doubt about the identity of his parents, but this is just a guess, as to his date and place of birth. His parents had had at least three children when his father died in 1694. This Patrick was always named first, so I guess he was the eldest.

In the will of his grandmother, then Dorcas Jordan, made on 25 October 1708, we find this bequest "to my grandson Patrick Spence, son to Patrick Spence, deceased, one Negro man Prince." Captain Patrick's father-in-law, Lawrence Pope, was one of three executors of that will. His mother-in-law, Jemima (Waddy) Pope, received a bequest from a codicil to this will.

Captain Patrick married, probably in Westmoreland County before March 1722/23, Jemima Pope, whose father called her Jemima Spence in his will of that date. Her parents were Lawrence Pope and Jemima Waddy.

His will named wife Jemima, sons Patrick and Youell, and daughters Elizabeth, Jemima and Mary, called "Spence," on 10 December 1739. Captain Patrick died circa March 1740.

Jemima Pope was born circa 1701, probably in Westmoreland County, probably the eldest of nine children of Lawrence Pope and Jemima Waddy.

In the will of her grandmother, then Elizabeth Muckleroy, made 12 February 1717, we find a bequest to "Jemima daughter of my son Lawrence Pope and his wife Jemima."

She may have had more than five children, but only the five named in their parents' wills survived them. Her will on 6 May 1755 named sons Patrick and Youell Spence; daughters Elizabeth Sandford, Jemima Suggett and Mary Spence; and granddaughters Jemima Suggett and Jemima Sandford. Her bequest to daughter Elizabeth Sandford, of a large trunk "marked with brass nails P.H. in the year 1679" has long intrigued genealogists. A possible explanation could be that Jemima had inherited the trunk from her grandmother, Ann Hull, who had a sister Penelope Hull, who would have been of marriageable age in 1679, and that the trunk may originally have been Penelope's "hope chest."

Jemima died circa October 1755.

William Payne was said by Col. Brook Payne to have been born before 1652 to John Payne and Margaret. His father was recorded in Virginia as early as 1653, so William may have been born in Lancaster County. Moreover, on 6 October 1656, John Payne was granted land for transporting Margaret and John Jr. plus eleven others. The fact that William was not on this list suggests that he was not brought from England as an infant.

The earliest record we have of William is from Old Rappahannock County in 1673, when William Payne, son of Mr. John Payne, recorded the earmark of his cattle.

He married first, in Westmoreland County, circa 1688, Frances, the widow of William Clements. They had one child before Frances died circa 1690.

William next married circa 1691, our ancestress Elizabeth Pope, daughter of Humphrey Pope and Elizabeth Hawkins. Very shortly after that, he was named guardian of the orphans of his father-in-law, Humphrey Pope.

William was a merchant, planter, and justice of Westmoreland County. He made his will there on 31 January 1697/8 (proved 23 February 1697/8). He named daughter Anne by first marriage; eldest son William; son Edward; daughters Betty and Mary and “my loving wife” (unnamed).

Elizabeth Pope was born probably in June 1677 in Westmoreland County, possibly the second of five children of Humphrey Pope and Elizabeth Hawkins. She was a sister of our ancestor Lawrence Pope.

The date of her birth is in some question, having been determined from a buried and broken gravestone in Yeocomico Church graveyard. A pamphlet called “A Sketch of Yeocomico Church” shows a re-assembly of the gravestone fragments made in 1906. This reconstruction gives the birth date October 1677. However, when Col. Brook Payne for his 1935 book supplied the text carried by the missing fragments, he changed the year to 1667, believing it unreasonable for Elizabeth to have married William when she was only fourteen.

Such early marriages were, however, not unheard of in Virginia of those days, and a reconstruction of the probable birth years of Elizabeth’s siblings is made possible by use of court records. Her eldest brother, Humphrey Jr., deposed in 1707 that he was then about thirty-three. All her brothers chose William Payne as their guardian in 1696. To do so, they would have been between fourteen and twenty-one at the time. Had Elizabeth been born in 1667, she would have been seven years older than her next surviving sibling, certainly not impossible, but requiring some as yet unfound explanation.

Finally, when William Payne died, Elizabeth soon remarried to Capt. Daniel McCarty who would become a wealthy and prominent lawyer of Westmoreland County. He was born circa 1678 and would have been only about twenty to Elizabeth’s thirty-one when they married, had she been born in 1667. That age difference would have been quite extraordinary, although not impossible. She and Daniel had eight children, four daughters and four sons.

From the surviving fragments of her tombstone, Elizabeth was buried in March 1716. The date suggests that she may have died in childbirth with a stillborn child.

Edward Jones deposed that he was about twenty-seven on 7 May 1679, so was born circa 1652. We have no record or hint of his place of birth (except that Jones is a very Welsh surname) or of his parentage.

He was a planter, and very possibly a lawyer, having been frequently the witness to legal documents or the recipient of powers of attorney.

Edward married at Farnham Parish, Old Rappahannock County, Virginia, on 27 August 1679, Alicia Samford, daughter of his friend and neighbor James Samford and his wife Mary. This is one of the few old Virginia marriages of our ancestors, for which we have an actual record. The deposition that Edward gave on 7 May 1679 verified that William Lunn, first husband of Edward's wife, had signed his will.

Edward lived near our ancestors the Lewises, Samfords, Baylises and Suggetts in the watershed of Totuskey Creek, in that part of Old Rappahannock County that became Richmond County. Totuskey Creek drains into the Rappahannock River. One of his neighbors was a Roderick Jones, with wife Mary, who may have been his brother. The land on which he lived was originally owned by Col. Moore Fauntleroy, who obtained two hundred acres in a 1650 grant.

Edward's will was proved on 5 October 1715. He named sons Samford and John, Edward and Charles, and daughter Alicia Payne. He made a codicil on 3 September 1715, so his date of death can be well estimated to have been sometime in September 1715.

Alicia Samford was born circa 1658, probably in Old Rappahannock County, Virginia. Her parents were James Samford and Mary. We know from her father's will that she had three siblings alive in 1704.

Alicia married first at North Farnham Parish, 23 January 1675, William Lunn. She and William had two children before William died in April 1679.

She then married Edward Jones on 27 August 1679. They had five children, of whom some record survives, but there appears to be a twelve-year gap between the births of the last two, suggesting that there may have been others.

There is a North Farnham parish death record for an Alicia Jones, identified only by name, dated 20 September 1728. This may refer to our Alicia, but some further examination of court records seems in order to try for confirmation.

William Lane was born circa 1693, probably in Westmoreland County, Virginia, son of James Lane and Martha Tidwell (?).

His father died when he was about five or six, and William presumably spent the next five or six years in the home of his stepfather, Andrew Delabree.

"William Lane, son of James Lane and Martha his wife, is bound apprentice to John Forsith ... [William] being now eleven yeares of age..." *Westmoreland Order Book 1698-1705*, Part 13, page 35, dated 26 July 1704.

He married circa 1710, probably in Westmoreland County, Martha Carr, daughter of William Carr and Sarah.

Between 27 October 1735 and 18 June 1737, William purchased three small parcels of land in the forest of Nominyin Cople Parish, Westmoreland County. He also bought land in Fairfax County. In the mid-1750s, he made deeds of gift of this land to his sons William Lane, William Carr Lane and Joseph Lane. Joseph Lane then made a compensating gift to his brother James Lane.

His will was made 19 August 1758 and proved 9 Sept 1760, in Westmoreland County. (It is reproduced in full in *Seldens of Virginia*, pp 243-246.) This will has a super-long religious preamble. He gave his land in Cople Parish, and the land he bought from William Eskridge in Fairfax County to son James Lane. He gave other lands to sons William Carr Lane and Joseph Lane. Son William had predeceased him. He also named daughter Hannah Middleton and his wife Martha Lane.

A large part of his will named and disposed of twelve slaves. The records of his purchases and bequests seem to show that he was not terribly prosperous, but that he and Martha, after a very early marriage (he was only about seventeen, she about fifteen) had lived prudently and had laid the foundation for the family's future prosperity.

We have no death record for William, and find no record of him between the signing of his will and the proving of that. Since such a formal and well attested will was often presented in court soon after the death of its author, we are probably safe in guessing that William died circa August 1760.

Martha Carr was born circa 1695, probably in Westmoreland County, perhaps fifth of the eight children of William Carr and Sarah.

Her father died when she was about seven. It should be emphasized that both this birth date, and the date of her marriage are raw guesses, hemmed in by circumstantial evidence, but unsupported by any primary records.

After the birth of her children and the death of her husband, many records of Cople Parish exhibit actions taken jointly by Martha and her son Joseph, suggesting that she spent her last years with Joseph's family. Indeed, the last record we have when she was alive is a deed of date 29 September 1767, by which she and Joseph sold land purchased by William Carr in 1695.

James Hardwick was born circa 1675 probably in Westmoreland County, Virginia. I say this because James Harditch and Anne Armesby (who are widely believed to have been his parents) bought land there in 1670.

His will named wife Elizabeth; sons James, Thomas and John; son in law Elias Davis; and daughters Elizabeth Nash, Sarah Summers, and Cyowny (?) Lane.

Nobody knows for sure who "Cyowny" was, but several authors have guessed that she was Lydia Hardage. The basis for this belief is that *Lydia* and James Lane named a son Hardage Lane. I think another clue may lie in the daughter Sarah Summers, since many connections between a Summers family and the Lane family show up in the 1790 will of James Lane.

Elizabeth Unknown. The mysterious wife of James Hardwick seems to be named in just two Virginia records which seem likely to refer to the same person: James and wife Elizabeth are named together in a Westmoreland County Court order in 1708. Elizabeth is also named in James's will.

James Allen was born circa 1615, probably near Colby, England. We have no birth or baptismal record for him, but the Rev. John Allen, first minister of Dedham, Massachusetts, bequeathed in his will twenty shillings to his "cousin" James Allen of Medfield. This will was made 23 August 1671, when our James was still alive. In those days "cousin" frequently meant nephew. There is a baptismal record for Reverend John, in Colby, Suffolk, England, in 1587, so it has sometimes been assumed that James came to New England in 1637.

James was in Dedham, Massachusetts, by 16 March 1637/8, when he was married there to Anna Guild.

On 6 April 1638, he was granted six acres of land in Dedham where his neighbors were Jeffery Mingey, James Jordan, Francis Chickering and John Kingsbury. On 6 February 1642 he was granted four acres of upland suitable for ploughing. On 4 February 1644 he was granted three and a half acres of woodland, and on 15 January 1648 he was granted a two-acre parcel of swamp land.

He attended town meetings on 23 November 1638 and 1 January 1646. He was received into the Dedham church on 2 October 1646, and a few days later, on 11 October 1646, had his first five children baptized there.

From Dedham property evaluations, James seems to have been one of the poorest men in town. He seems to have done some menial tasks around the meeting house.

On 4 December 1651 he sold his upland in Dedham to John Morse, having been, in 1649, one of the thirteen original proprietors who settled Medfield, Massachusetts. He drew the fifth land lot of the Medfield settlers, on South Street, and with another grant and some purchases, built up the Allen family farm, which remained in the family for over two hundred years.

James made his will on 23 September 1676, just a few days before his death. He died in Medfield on 27 September 1676, having just survived the ravaging of that town during King Philip's War. In the main Medfield cemetery, there is a monument to James and his family.

Ann**a Guild** was born circa 1616, possibly in Scotland. She was a sister of our ancestor John Guild. They supposedly came over together, with another brother, Samuel Guild, in 1636, but nothing has been discovered about their ancestry. Many Internet genealogists assert that her family came from Scotland, where a Guild family was established in Dundee at a much later date. If this is true, it could explain the Medfield Allens's long held belief that their family was of Scottish origin.

Anna and James had their first six children in Dedham, Massachusetts, and their last in Medfield.

Anna died in Medfield, 29 March 1673.

William Sabin (or Sabine) arrived in New England by 1643, when he participated in the founding of Seekonk (later named Rehoboth). I think it likely that he was in Massachusetts Bay Colony, perhaps in Braintree, for a few years prior to that. It is claimed in published genealogies, without proof, that he was born on 11 October 1609, in Titchfield, Hampshire, England. I tend to doubt that he was born so early, for that would have made him seventy-one when his last child was born.

He was evidently a man of some wealth and learning, active and influential in Rehoboth affairs. On 28 June 1653, he was empowered by the town, together with Richard Bowen (another of our ancestors), Stephen Paine and Thomas Cooper to settle land ownership issues with Capt. Miles Standish, Capt. Thomas Willett and Josiah Winslow.

The following quote from Richard LeBaron Bowen's *Early Rehoboth* is historically significant.

William Sabin, the Rehoboth miller, was a veteran Plymouth Court grand jurymen, having served in that capacity for many years. He was foreman of the jury that brought in the verdict of guilty against the three Indians for the murder of John Sassamon, which resulted in two being hanged on 8 June 1675. This hanging precipitated the opening of King Philip's War, which sixteen days later burst forth in all its horrors with the Indian massacre of the English at Swansea.

On 2 January 1676/7, after Rehoboth had suffered losses in that war, William paid more than all but three citizens of Rehoboth to repair the damages suffered by the town.

The mill William operated was a corn mill built by his father-in-law. On one occasion, William was brought to Plymouth Court to face charges of short-changing his customers, but he was cleared of the charge.

Most outstandingly, he contributed twenty children, by two wives, to the founding population of Massachusetts. The name of his first wife is unknown, unless it be Mary Wright. The evidence for this is a Rehoboth deed, in which William repeatedly refers to Richard Wright as his father-in-law. The catch in this is that the term father-in-law was often used in those days to mean what we would call stepfather, so we don't really know whether Richard Wright was the father of William's wife, or the second husband of William's mother. Richard LeBaron Bowen, an extremely careful genealogist and historian, has made a meticulous study of Richard Wright. While he acknowledges the possibility that stepfather could have been meant, he concludes that that would be very improbable.

His second wife was Martha Allen, daughter of James Allen and Anna Guild. He had twelve children with his first wife and eight with his second. It was the somewhat mysterious first wife who was our ancestress.

William made his will on 4 June 1685 (proved in Boston 17 July 1687, and on file there). In it are mentioned sixteen of his twenty children, including sons Samuel (eldest), Joseph, Benjamin, James, John, Hezekiah, Noah, daughters Experience, Abigail, Hannah, Elizabeth, Patience, Mehitabel, Mary, Sarah and Margaret.

He was buried at Rehoboth 9 February 1686/7.

Mary Wright was born in England circa 1621, and would have come with her father, Richard Wright in the Winthrop fleet. Most people guess that she married William Sabin circa 1639. I add the guess that they may have married in Braintree, where the surviving records of that period are very scant, but where her father was prominently involved at the time.

She died in Rehoboth circa 1661, between the dates when she bore her last child, 27 September 1660, and when William married his second wife, 22 December 1663.

John Gay was born circa 1613, probably in England, of unknown parents. He had come to Watertown by 1634, and moved to Dedham in 1637. He was made freeman of Watertown on 6 May 1635, and of Dedham on 29 May 1644, having been received into the Dedham church on 12 April 1644.

He married, by 1638, Joanna (Hooker), the widow of John Borden, and they had ten children, all born and baptized in Dedham, including two of our ancestors, Joanna and Jonathan. There is evidence that Joanna's children by John Borden grew up in the Gay family.

He held many town offices in Dedham, being selectman 2 January 1653/4, frequently highway surveyor, fence viewer, woodreeve and lotlayer. He received many land grants there, including one in Wrentham and another near Medfield.

John made his will on 16 December 1686, proved 17 December 1689, as "John Gay Senior resident in Dedham." He bequeathed to wife Joanna, sons John, Jonathan, Samuell, Nathaniell, Eliezer and to "my loving son-in-law John Ware one part of the twelve parts aforesaid in the right of my loving daughter Joannah Ware his wife which with what I have formerly given to them is to be their full portion." Also he provided for his daughter Judah and her husband John Fuller, and daughter Abiell and her husband Daniell Hawse, with his wife and son John to be executors.

John's use of the term "son-in-law" in the modern sense, to mean the husband of his daughter, illustrates the ambiguous use of the term as seen above in our effort to identify the first wife of William Sabine. John died in Dedham on 4 March 1688/9.

There is an account of John Gay and some of his descendants, by Frederick Lewis Gay of Boston, in *NEHGR*. Vol. 33, January 1879, pp 45–57. The dates of vital events reported in that article agree well with those in *Dedham Births, Marriages and Deaths*.

Joanna Hooker was baptized at Lenham, Kent, England, 12 April 1612, daughter of Robert Hooker and his wife Margaret (Topley) Packenham. She married first there, John Borden in 1628/29. (Joanna's maiden name and parentage was published in *NEHGR* in 2010.)

We learn more of her from a certificate of conformity, dated 12 May 1635, listing her family with her first husband, to wit: John Borden, twenty-eight; Joan Borden, twenty-three; Matthew Borden, five; and Elizabeth Borden, three. The family arrived in America sometime that same year on the *Elizabeth and Anne* and settled in Watertown, where they had a son John in 1635, and where father John died by 1637.

Joanna then married John Gay, whether before or after the move from Watertown to Dedham we don't know. She was admitted to the Dedham church on 25 July 1639, almost five years before her husband.

Joanna outlived her husband by a few years, making her will 1 March 1689/90, proved 12 November 1691 as "Johanna Gay, widow, the relict of John Gay Senior deceased in Dedham." She died in Dedham on 14 August 1691.

Nathaniel Bullard was born either in England circa 1633, so coming to New England as an infant, or perhaps as late at 1639, in which case he would have been born in Dedham, Massachusetts. In either event, his father was William Bullard, and his mother unidentified. Nathaniel and his brothers Isaac and Benjamin were all on the 1656 tax list for Dedham. This makes the earlier birth date seem the more likely.

He married in Dedham 15 December 1658 Mary Richards, daughter of Edward Richards and Susan Hunting.

On 30 March 1683, the General Court of Massachusetts Bay responded to a request of a Nathaniel Bullard, Constable of Dedham. On 28 November 1684, Nathaniel and Mary signed a receipt for part of their share in Edward Richards's estate. On 1694, he was a selectman of Dedham.

Nathaniel died in Dedham on 1 May 1705.

Mary Richards was born in Dedham on 29 September 1639, the first of five children of Edward Richards and Susan Hunting.

She had at least six children with Nathaniel Bullard. (I say "at least" because there is a large gap of years between the next-to-last and last births.)

She died in Dedham 4 February 1722/3.

John Ellis, whose surname was often spelled Ellice, apparently came from England as a young man. He was present at the meeting to form the town of Dedham on 18 August 1636, and was the thirtieth signer of the Dedham covenant. He was received into the Dedham church on 17 July 1640, and married his first wife, Susan Lumber, there on 10 November 1641. All these activities suggest that he was born before 1615.

He was appointed on 14 July 1641 to help lay out the bounds of Dedham. He was granted many small lots of land, swamp and woodland in Dedham, and once was granted two cedar trees to make and sell boards. Aside from this, he does not seem to have been particularly active in town affairs. From the county tax list of 1648, he appears to have been of average wealth.

He was one of the thirteen original settlers of Medfield in 1650. On 5 April 1653, shortly after moving his family there, Susan died, having given him three children. He then married, probably at Dorchester on 16 June 1656, our ancestress Joan, the widow of John Clap of Dorchester. That marriage was performed by our ancestor, Maj. Humphrey Atherton.

His family seems to have survived the Indian attack on Medfield in February 1675/6 without deaths. His second son, Samuel, predeceased him in 1684, but John's will, made 24 September 1690 and proved 24 June 1697, showed that the rest of his children were then still alive.

He died in Medfield 2 April 1697.

Joan Unknown. Joan was presumably born in England circa 1620. Her maiden name is unknown. She had no children with her first husband, John Clap of Dorchester. His will, dated 11 July 1655, made an important bequest to the Dorchester free school, and named Joan as his sole executrix.

She and John Ellis appear to have had no children during the first four years of their marriage, and then had just three. Joan outlived John by about six years, and died in Medfield on 2 March 1703/4.

John Metcalf was born in Norwich, England, 3 September 1622, fourth of eleven children of Michael Metcalf and Sarah.

He arrived in New England near midsummer 1637 and went with his parents to Dedham. He was admitted to the Dedham church on 19 May 1643.

He married there on 23 March 1647, Mary Chickering, daughter of Francis Chickering and Ann Fiske.

He was among the early settlers of Medfield, where he lived for forty years, dying there on 8 October 1690.

Mary Chickering was born in England, probably in Suffolk County circa 1625. I guess that she probably made the land transaction cited below when she was twenty-one. She had the last of her eight children in 1668, which also points to her own birth circa 1625.

In November 1646, a Mary Chickering made over to her "Cosin" John Chickering, in New England, all her interest in some land in Suffolk County, England; he was a son of Henry Chickering of Dedham. Clarence Almond Torrey believed that this was the Mary who married John Metcalf. James Savage was far off the mark when he identified our Mary as the daughter of Francis Chickering of Dedham. Francis's daughter Mary was not yet born when our Mary wed John Metcalf. It seems fairly likely that Mary was a sister of Henry and Francis Chickering who came together to Dedham circa 1637.

Mary died in Medfield 15 March 1697/8.

Thomas Mason is thought to have come with his parents Robert and Elizabeth, from England in 1630 with the Winthrop fleet. They settled in Roxbury, where Thomas grew up, before making his own settlement in Medfield circa 1652. Thomas had a house in Medfield in 1653, and on 23 April 1653 he married Marjery Partridge in Medfield. He and Marjery had six children, the youngest being

our ancestor Ebenezer.

Together with his brothers John of Dedham and Robert of Medfield, Thomas gave bond on 14 November 1667 to administer on the estate of their father, Robert, who had lived his last years in Dedham.

King Philip's War was devastating for the family. Their home was burned, and Thomas and two of his sons were killed during the Medfield attack of 21 February 1675/6. Later in the war, their eldest son, John, was killed as a soldier "at the eastward."

Marjery Partridge was born circa 1628 in England, and presumably came to New England with her brothers William and John. She was probably keeping house for her brother William, on "Bachelor's Roe" in Medfield when she married Thomas Mason.

We do not have a record of Marjery's remarrying after the death of Thomas, but she made a will, as Margery Stacy, in 1695. (*Suffolk Probates*, Vol XX, page 281.) At that time she said she was about sixty-seven. She bequeathed all her real and personal estate to her son Ebenezer, who was her only surviving child.

She lived another sixteen years, dying in Medfield on 7 February 1710/11. She is said to have outlived all but one of the men who came to Medfield during its first ten years.

Benjamin Clark was born at Dedham, Massachusetts, on 9 February 1643/4, the second of eleven children of Joseph Clark and Alice Fenn. He presumably moved with his parents to Medfield circa 1650, his father having been one of the thirteen original settlers.

He was by trade a wheelwright. He was a prominent man in Medfield affairs, serving as selectman for seventeen years, and as representative twice. On 19 November 1665, in Medfield, he married Dorcas Morse, daughter of Joseph Morse and Hannah Phillips.

His home was burned in the Indian raid of 21 February 1675/6, but was rebuilt on the same spot. It stood on Main Street, opposite where Pound Street enters it.

He died in Medfield 1 December 1724.

Dorcas Morse was born in Dedham on 24 August 1645, fourth of seven children of Joseph Morse and Hannah Phillips.

She had ten children with Benjamin. She died in Medfield 14 July 1725.

Henry Smith was born circa 1607, probably in Newbuckham (Buckingham New), England. We know nothing of his parents.

We have the record of his preparing to come to New England, to wit: 12 April 1637: "The examination of Henry Smith of Newbuckham husbandman, aged 30 years, and Elizabeth his wife aged 34 years with two children, John and Seth, are desirous to passe into New England to inhabit."

We have no record of his marriage to Elizabeth, but it must have occurred in England circa 1632. If parish records for Newbuckham are available, they might be worth searching.

He settled first in Dedham where he was a proprietor on 28 November 1637; and accepted into the church on 22 September 1639; and freeman 13 May 1640. He was burned out in 1641, and moved to Medfield with the earliest settlers. His home lot in Medfield was on South Street. He was a conscientious citizen of Medfield, being selectman for thirteen years.

His will, dated 2 August 1683 and proved 3 March 1686/7, included bequests to sons John, Seth and Samuel. He died circa February 1686/7, presumably in Medfield, but the Medfield vital records have no record of the event.

Elizabeth Unknown. Elizabeth was born in England circa 1603. She appears to have had just four children, all sons. Elizabeth was admitted to the church in Dedham in 1639, and died in Medfield in 1670. Again, the Medfield vital records have no record of her death.

Joseph Clarke was baptized 11 April 1613 at Banham, Norfolk, England, the fourth child of Thomas Clarke and Mary Canne.

He married at Banham 15 April 1640 Alice Fenn, and left for New England soon thereafter. He had arrived at Dedham, Massachusetts, by late summer 1640, being mentioned in Dedham town records on 28 September 1740.

By 1651 he resided in Medfield, having been one of the original thirteen settlers. His home was on the west side of South Street, near Oak Street. He was a selectman of Medfield in 1660, but otherwise not much involved in town affairs.

Joseph wrote his will on 24 June 1682; it was proved 4 July 1684. He died in Medfield 6 January 1683/4.

Alice Fenn was born in County Norfolk, England, circa 1619. She had nine children with Joseph, six in Dedham and three in Medfield.

She had the satisfaction of knowing her grandchildren and perhaps even great-grandchildren, living to the fine old age of ninety-one. She died in Medfield 17 January 1710/11.

Capt. George Barber was born circa 1619, most probably in County Norfolk, England. Captain George came in the *Transport* on 4 July 1635. He signed the Dedham Covenant, and was accepted as a townsman at Dedham in 1640, leaving us to wonder where he was between fall 1635 and 1640.

He married in Dedham on 24 November 1642 Elizabeth Clarke, younger sister of Joseph Clarke, described just above.

In 1646, he was a captain of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company. In 1652, he was the oldest sergeant authorized by the General Court to train men. Presumably this was at Medfield. He was one of the foremost settlers of Medfield, where he was for several years principal military officer; for ten years a selectman; five years a representative to the General Court; and for twenty-three consecutive years Medfield town clerk. In November 1651, he contracted with the selectmen of Medfield to build a mill for the town. This he did, but he was not a miller, and he sold the mill in 1652 to Henry Adams.

Although there is no record of the event, it is said that Captain George remarried, very late in life. This was, say, circa 1684 to Joanna Faxon of Dedham, who had been the widow of Anthony Fisher since 1670. If it actually happened, it was a very brief marriage, since both Joanna and Captain George were dead within the year.

In spite of his activities as town clerk and as a frequent drawer and attester of legal documents, he failed to make a will. Administration of his estate was granted to his son Samuel on 15 May 1685.

He died in Medfield on 13 April 1685.

Elizabeth Clarke was baptized at Banham, Norfolk, England, on 23 May 1620, the youngest child of Thomas Clarke and Mary Canne.

Elizabeth was admitted to the church at Dedham 27 October 1643, a few years before her husband. This seemed to be not unusual in Dedham, where the church, true to its covenant, took its time to be sure that its male members didn't harbor independent religious ideas.

She and Captain George had nine children. Afterwards Elizabeth lived to the good age of sixty-three, dying in Medfield on 22 December 1683.

Thomas Ellis may have been born circa 1629 in Wrentham, England. (Numerous Internet sources claim, without proof, that he was born on 13 December 1629 to Thomas Ellis and Alice Phillips.)

According to Tilden's *History of Medfield*, Thomas was a brother of our John Ellis. He was listed on tax lists for Dedham in 1649 and 1651. He came to Medfield in the end of 1651 or beginning of 1652. "His grant for a house was on North Street, the spot now occupied by his lineal descendants. The estate has never been out of the possession of the family."

He married in Medfield 21 May 1657 Mary Wight, daughter of Thomas Wight of Dedham and his wife Alice Roundy (?).

He died in Medfield on 12 December 1690.

Mary Wight may have been born in Watertown circa 1636. Her parents Thomas Wight and Alice Roundy(?) are believed to have come from England to Watertown in 1635, with her three elder brothers.

She and Thomas had nine children, the last in 1677/8, when she would, by my estimate, have been forty-one or forty-two.

She died in Medfield on 7 March 1692/3.

Sgt. Eleazar Kingsbury was born in Dedham, Massachusetts, on 17 May 1645, the sixth of seven children of Joseph Kingsbury and his wife Millicent.

He married in Dedham 30 October 1676 Esther Judson, daughter of Samuel Judson and his wife Mary.

There is no record of Eleazar and Esther joining the Dedham church. This may be explained by the following record of the Suffolk County Court. (Note: I need to get the date of this. [Apparently this was not done. -Ed.])

Eleazar and Judith his wife formerly Judson convict by their own confession in Court of committing Fornication before marriage: The Court sentenced them to bee whip't with Fifteen Stripes apiece or to pay Forty Shillings in mony fine to the County and fees of Court standing committed etc.

Eleazar apparently chose the fine. It is of course not completely clear that this record applies to our Eleazar, whose wife was Esther (not Judith) Judson, but if it does, the church may not have admitted them, even though they had confessed and submitted to punishment. The church had been very slow to admit Eleazar's father, considering him to be too self-willed.

He died in Dedham 22 February 1722/3. Although Eleazar's death is recorded in Dedham vital records, the 1962 *Kingsbury Genealogy* by Arthur Murray Kingsbury says that he died in Needham. There was a considerable migration of Dedham families to Needham in the early 1700s, so this may possibly be true.

Esther Judson was born in Dedham on 10 June 1654, the last of three children of Samuel Judson and Mary, the widow of Henry Aldridge. Esther lost her father when she was only three.

If the pre-marital fornication to which she and Eleazar confessed gave rise to a pregnancy, there was no record of a resulting childbirth, because the first recorded child of this couple was born on 26 December 1677, more than a year after their marriage. She had five recorded children, the last born when she was forty.

She died in Dedham 6 May 1717.

Dea. John Guild was born in Dedham on 29 November 1649, third of seven children of John Guild and Elizabeth Crooke.

He married in Dedham on 22 May 1677 Sarah Fisher, daughter of Anthony Fisher Jr. and Joanna Faxon. Deacon John and Sarah moved from Dedham to Wrentham circa 1681. John united with the church in Wrentham on 13 April 1692, and was elected deacon on 7 December 1707.

Sarah Fisher was born in Dedham on 27 October 1658, fifth of eight children of Anthony Fisher Jr. and Joanna Faxon.

She had nine children with Deacon John, the last born in Wrentham September 1700.

We find no record of her death, so can only suppose that it happened after 1701, probably in Wrentham.

Eleazar Holbrook was born in Medfield on 20 December 1660, third and last child of Thomas Holbrook and Hannah Shephard.

He married in Dedham on 14 June 1698 Sarah Pond, daughter of Daniel Pond and Ann Edwards.

He died in Sherborn, Massachusetts, on 18 February 1725/6.

Sarah Pond was born in Dedham on 10 July 1679, last of seven children of Lt. Daniel Pond and Ann Edwards. She and Eleazar had only five recorded children, the last born when she was only thirty-three.

She died in Sherborn on 24 December 1725.

David Clark was born in Medfield 25 September 1680, tenth of twelve children of Joseph Clark Jr. and Mary Allen.

He married in Medfield on 14 October 1703 Mary Wheelock, daughter of Capt. Eleazar Wheelock and Elizabeth Fuller. We find no death record for either David or Mary, but an Internet source speculates that they died in Wrentham in 1714. David reportedly inherited a house in Wrentham from his father. If he and Mary indeed died there in 1714, there may be record of a guardianship for their daughter, Elizabeth, who would have inherited that house.

Mary Wheelock was born in Mendon, Massachusetts, on 16 August 1686, third and last child of Capt. Eleazar Wheelock and his first wife, Elizabeth Fuller.

Mary lost her mother when she was only about two and a half, so the mother she knew as she grew up was Captain Eleazar's second wife, Mary Chenery.

Mary and David had only a single child of whom we have any record, although they may have been married eleven years.

Robert Ware was born circa 1620, probably in Suffolk, England. Surprisingly nothing is known for certain about his origins, for he was a man of some wealth, education and social standing. My guess of 1620 as a birth date would make him twenty-five when he first married, and seventy-nine when he was called “Robert Ware the Aged” at his death.

We don’t even know exactly when he came to New England, but he signed the Dedham Covenant, probably in 1637. He received a land grant in Dedham on 6 February 1642/3. He was made a freeman 26 May 1647, showing that he had joined the Dedham church by that time. Most important as a sign of his wealth and social standing, he was admitted to the Artillery Company in 1644.

He married first in Dedham on 24 March 1644/5 Margaret Hunting, daughter of Elder John Hunting and Esther Seaborn. On 3 May 1676, after Margaret had died, he married Hannah Jones, daughter of Thomas Jones of Dorchester.

He was frequently a town surveyor, especially in 1656 and 1658. Over the years, he acquired many pieces of land by purchase as well as by grant from the town. One of his first purchases, on 25 November 1642, and a later one on 15 March 1650/1, were sold to him by a Thomas Eames, who may have been the man of that name who was our ancestor. It is a little surprising that Robert was not more active in town affairs. He was never a selectman or a representative.

Robert made his will on 25 February 1698/9, and it was proved 11 May 1699, naming wife Hannah; son Samuel; son John (to have twenty pounds more than a single portion); and sons Ephraim and Ebenezer. Sons John, Robert and Samuel were to be executors, and Dea. Thomas Metcalfe, Dea. William Auery and Dea. Joseph Wight to be overseers. He left his homestead in Dedham equally divided between wife Hannah and son Samuel, with instructions to Samuel to care for his stepmother’s needs.

He died in April, 1699, called *the aged*.

Margaret Hunting was baptized 21 September 1628 in Hoxne, Suffolk, England, the eldest of seven children of Elder John Hunting and Esther Seaborn.

She and Robert had ten children, the youngest of whom was only three when she died.

She died in Dedham 26 August 1670.

John Gay and Joanna Hooker have been treated above as ancestors of Rev. Joseph Allen. Here we encounter them again as ancestors of his wife, Lucy Clark Ware.

Nicholas Wood was probably born in England circa 1610, though we have no record of his birth. The first notice of him in New England comes from Dorchester where on 13 February 1638/9 he and another were chosen herdsmen “to keep the cows in the ordinary cow pasture, from April to November.” He seems always to have been surrounded by livestock, so we could probably call him a husbandman.

Nicholas moved around quite a bit. He was in Dorchester by 1638, but belonged to the church of Braintree, which was closer to his home. He became a freeman in Braintree in 1641, and signed a petition there in 1645.

There has been much confusion in the genealogical literature about the marriages of Nicholas, neither of which is in a surviving record. There is, however, conclusive proof that his first wife and mother of the first two of his children was Mary Pidge, daughter of Thomas Pidge and Mary Sothy of Roxbury. The evidence is the following notation of Rev. John Eliot of Roxbury, made on the occasion of the

birth of Nicholas' first two children, twin girls Mary and Sarah, born on 25 December 1642: "1642 25, 10, Mary Wood, Sarah Wood, twins: daughters of ___ Wood of the church of Brantree, who maryed our bro. Pig's daughter and she lying in childbed in this towne they were baptized here by communion of churches."

Though we can refer to no record, it seems possible that Mary Pidge died shortly after the birth of her twins, and that Nicholas remarried circa 1650, probably in Roxbury, his second wife being Mary Williams. She may have come to New England, age eighteen in 1637, as a servant to Robert Williams of Roxbury. If this is true, Mary Williams would have been the mother of the last five of Nicholas's children. There was certainly a connection between Nicholas and the Williams family of Roxbury, since Robert and Samuel Williams were among those who inventoried Nicholas's estate, and his daughter Abigail, on 28 January 1672/3, chose Steven Williams to be her guardian.

In May 1652, Nicholas, together with Thomas Holbrook and Andrew Pitcher, bought 535 acres in Boggastow (then Natick, now part of Sherborn). It seems likely that he moved there almost immediately, although Suffolk land records assert that on 6 February 1653, and again in 1654 he was living on the farm of Mr. John Glover, then deceased, at the south edge of Dorchester.

When Nicholas moved to Boggastow, on the north side of Charles River, the nearest town was Medfield, across the river, where most of the records of his family are found. The birth of his son Jonathan was recorded there on 3 January 1651/2. Nicholas and his few neighbors lived in a very exposed situation, in an area with no civic organization. They went to church in Medfield and paid taxes there.

Relatively late in life, his wife Mary having died in 1663, and his last child only about one year old, Nicholas married again. This time we have at least a record of a premarital contract, made with Anna (or Hannah), the widow of William Page of Watertown, on 16 November 1665.

Nicholas made his will on 16 January 1669. He bequeathed to "my now wife," Anna; to his sons Jonathan and Eleazer; and to his daughters Mehetable, Abigail and Bethya Wood; to married daughter Mary Thurston; and to deceased daughter Hannah Harding and grandson Abraham Harding. He had lands in Boggastow, Milton, Roxbury and Watertown.

In the transcription of this will, by Rev. Abner Morse in his *Genealogical Register of Sherborn and Hollister*, there is no direct mention of daughter Sarah Bass, although Nicholas spoke of his six daughters and named Sarah's husband, Thomas Bass, as one of his executors. The other executors were son-in-law John Thurston Jr, and wife Anna Wood. [Note: I had better examine another copy of this will.]

When first Mary and then Nicholas died, guardians had to be arranged for the under-aged children. In the records of the Suffolk County Court (*Collections of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts*, Vols. 29 & 30) we find the following: on 28 January 1672/3 (page 222) Abigail Wood, daughter of Nicholas Wood of Boggestowe near Medfield, chose Steven Williams (probably of Roxbury) as her guardian. The court appointed guardians for Bethia Wood (Thomas Bass) and Eleazer Wood (John Thirston). These men were the husbands of the eldest (twin) sisters, Mary and Sarah.

When Bethia and Eleazar became old enough to choose their own guardians, Bethia chose Robert Badcock of Milton (27 April 1675, page 594), and Eleazar chose Ens. Samuel Bullen of Medfield (24 April 1677, page 810).

Nicholas died in Sherborn on 7 February 1669/70.

Mary Pidge An interesting record of a frightening event in the life of Mary is found in the *Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony*, under date 8 Sept 1642, about three and a half months before she delivered the twins at Braintree (recorded at Roxbury).

Sgt. John Leveret and Sgt. Edward Hutchinson were sent to Meantonomo, an Indian sachem, “To acquaint him, that one Mischeveese, an Indian about Providence, did lately attempt by force to ravish the wife of one Nicho: Wood, of Dorchester, & desire that hee may bee sent to us to bee punished, not with death, but some other punishment.”

Mary Williams was born circa 1619, probably in Norwich, England. She came to New England in 1637 as a servant to our ancestor Robert Williams, and may have been his sister or cousin.

When Robert Williams was preparing to come to New England, his family group was described as follows:

April 8th 1637. The examination of Robert Williams of Norwich in Norff. cordwaynar, aged 28 years and Elizabeth his wife, aged 27 years, with 4 children, Samuel, John, Elizabeth and Debra and two servants, Mary Williams aged 18 years, and Anne Williams, aged 15 years, are desirous to pass to Bostone in New England to Inhabit.

If this servant Mary Williams was indeed the wife of Nicholas Wood, she would have been about forty-three when she had her last child, and about forty-four when she died in Sherborn on 19 February 1663.

Robert Badcock is included here as a potential, but unproven, ancestor, because he seems to have been a next-door neighbor to our Eleazar Wood when the latter married Dorothy, supposed to have been Badcock. Their families lived in a sparsely settled neighborhood, where the opportunities to find a wife would have been pretty limited. It is clear that the Wood and Badcock families had been close, both in Bogastow, and earlier in Milton and Dorchester. When Bethia Wood, orphaned daughter of Nicholas, picked a guardian on 27 April 1675, she chose Robert Badcock, still then called “of Milton.”

The difficulty with this surmise is that the children of Robert seem closely accounted for, and none of them was a Dorothy. Also, I find no record of Robert having actually lived on his lands at Boggastow.

Henry Prentice was born circa 1615, presumably in England. By far the best biography of him is given in *Dawes and Allied Families* in a chapter on the Prentice family.

He came to New England by 1639, when he was a “planter” at Sudbury; there he acquired several modest land grants, and had a home lot of four acres at “Bridell Point.” He had moved to Cambridge by 1643 (some say without evidence, 1640). On 13 May 1643, his first wife, Elizabeth, by whom he had no recorded children, died in Cambridge.

Soon after the death of Elizabeth, he married Joane, probably in Cambridge, but we have no record. He and Joane soon joined the Cambridge Church, where all their children were baptized. A church record of 1658 states, “Joane Prentice widow of Henry Prentice deceased is [a] member in full Comm[union] as was her said Husband also.”

Henry died intestate in Cambridge on 9 June 1654, a relatively young man. His estate was not officially administered until 6 October 1663, at which time Joane and her second husband, John Gibson, were granted administration.

Joane Unknown. Joane, of whose birth we have no record, was the mother of Henry's six children. If she was no older than Henry, she would still have been of child-bearing years when Henry died. She raised her young family single handedly for eight years, and then married the recently widowed John Gibson in Cambridge on 22 July 1662.

John was probably considerably older than Joane, but he lived to great age, supposedly having been about ninety-three when he died in 1694. We have no record of the death of Joane.

Sgt. Thomas Rand was born circa 1627 in England, fourth of seven children of Robert Rand and Alice Sharpe (?).

He was a cordwainer, cowherd and soldier. He was a soldier of some rank in King Philip's War, having been paid fourteen shillings six pence on 20 December 1675 for his service.

On 25 March 1656 he was married to Sarah Edenden in Charlestown, Massachusetts, by Major Willard. (Her name was spelled Idends in the Charlestown record of that marriage.) She was the daughter of Edmund Edenden and Elizabeth Wightman/Whiteman.

Thomas died on 3 August 1683 in Charlestown and was buried in the Old PIPPS Street Burial Ground.

Sarah Edenden was born circa 1636, probably at Tenterden, Kent, England, the third of six children of Edmund Edenden and his second wife, Elizabeth Wightman.

She must have come to New England as a tiny infant, because her father witnessed a will in England on 8 August 1636 and was a proprietor at Scituate, Massachusetts, in 1637.

She and Sergeant Thomas appear to have had eleven or twelve children. (It is a little hard to be sure because their first child, Thomas also had a wife Sarah, and this younger couple were also having children in Charlestown.) Sarah would have been forty-three when her last recorded child was born. We have no death record for Sarah, although there is speculation that she died in 1699.

John Clarke Sr. was born in Watertown on 13 October 1641, the eldest of three children of Hugh Clarke and his wife Elizabeth.

John married our ancestress, Abigail circa 1671, probably in Roxbury or Boston, at a time when he seems to have been living in Muddy River (now Brookline). They had five children, all births recorded at Roxbury.

In the records of the Suffolk County Court, session of 25 April 1676, appears the following entry:

Obadiah Swift Thomas Bird & John Clarke or either of them being Sons-in-Law to the late Major Humphry Atherton decd Plaints agt Richard Smith of Wickford in the County of New-London Defendt in an action of the case for his the sd Smith's keeping possession of an Estate belonging to them & not paying theire respective dues according to promiss & engagement to them once and again as will further appear by a bill....

(This hints that Abigail may have been a daughter of Maj. Humprey Atherton, a possibility I am just beginning to investigate.)

In 1681, John received from his father a gift of sixty-seven acres of land in Newton, and shortly thereafter moved there. His land was next to a tract claimed by Joseph Bartlett, but also claimed by John's father, Hugh Clarke. John soon was engaged in an angry dispute with Joseph, and tore down a house that Joseph built on the disputed land. He (John) was reported to have said, "I'll pull them down as fast as he can put them up!"

Abigail died soon after the move to Newton, and shortly thereafter, John took a second wife, Lydia Buckminster. They retained their membership in the Roxbury church, where they “took hold of the covenant” on 20 July 1684. Lydia appears to have died soon after that in fall 1684, although we find no record. John’s sister Elizabeth had married a Joseph Buckminster, probably a cousin of Lydia. Joseph died young, and administration of his estate was granted to Elizabeth’s father, Hugh Clarke.

Hugh rented the whole of Joseph’s estate to his son, John Clarke, to hold until Elizabeth’s son Joseph should become twenty-one. This arrangement, described in great detail in court papers, seemed entirely satisfactory to Elizabeth, but then she married Abiel Lamb, who was by no means satisfied. After lengthy court hearings, Abiel successfully persuaded the court to transfer the administration of the estate to him, and things finally settled down. (The point of retelling this here is to show that this Clarke family was contentious and not at all afraid of court appearances.)

Almost immediately after the death of Lydia, John married for the third time on 18 December 1684, Elizabeth Norman. He and Elizabeth had six children, and she was pregnant when he died.

John Clarke made his will 3 January 1694/5, proved 25 March 1695. He named sons John and William, and mentioned younger children. John was a child of Abigail, and William a son of Elizabeth. He anticipated the birth of another child by Elizabeth, and indeed son Moses was born six months after he died.

John died in Newton on 6 January 1694/5.

Abigail Atherton (?), if I have guessed her maiden name correctly, was probably born in Dorchester, Massachusetts, circa 1650.

The births of her five children were all recorded at Roxbury where she and John attended church, although they seem to have resided in neighboring Muddy River.

Abigail died in Newton on 2 January 1682/3, shortly after the family had moved there.

Thomas Bird was born in Dorchester, Massachusetts, on 4 May 1640, the first of four children of Thomas Bird Sr. and Ann. He married in Dorchester on 2 February 1665/6 Thankful Atherton, daughter of Maj. Gen. Humphrey Atherton and his wife Mary Wales(?).

In October 1673, he appealed to Suffolk County Court for a division of the estate of his mother, Anne Bird, who died intestate. The estate was divided in two equal parts. Thomas, the eldest son, was to have one portion and the other was to be divided equally between his brothers.

In 1676, he joined his brothers-in-law Obadiah Swift and John Clarke in a suit attempting to recover their share of the estate of Humphrey Atherton who had died fifteen years before. The suit got mired in a jurisdictional dispute between the Massachusetts Bay and Connecticut courts, and I don’t know whether the brothers-in-law ever got satisfaction.

He lived in Dorchester all his life and died there on 30 January 1709/10.

Thankful Atherton was born in Dorchester, Massachusetts, on 29 April 1644, approximately the ninth of twelve or thirteen children of Maj. Gen. Humphrey Atherton and his wife Mary (Wales?). She and Thomas had ten children, the last of whom was thirty-six when Thankful died in Dorchester on 11 April 1719.

Lt. Henry Bowen was born in Wales circa 1633 or 1634, fourth of eleven children of Griffith Bowen and Margaret Fleming.

He married in Roxbury on 20 December 1658 our ancestress Elizabeth Johnson, daughter of Capt. Isaac Johnson and Elizabeth Porter. When Elizabeth died in 1683, he married again on 14 April 1684, Susannah King, daughter of John King of Weymouth.

He was ensign and lieutenant in Capt. Isaac Johnson's 4th Company of the Massachusetts Regiment. He took command of the company in the Great Swamp Fight when Captain Johnson was killed and Lieutenant Upham was mortally wounded.

Lieutenant Henry was granted power of administration for his father's estate in New England on 17 April 1676. He went briefly to Woodstock, Connecticut, in 1686, but returned to Roxbury for another twenty years. Finally in 1707 he returned to Woodstock for the rest of his life.

On 5 November 1703 Henry deeded his Roxbury lands to his youngest son, Isaac (our ancestor).

Lieutenant Henry died in Woodstock on 13 March 1723/4 and is buried with many family members in the graveyard on Woodstock Hill.

Elizabeth Johnson was born in Roxbury, Massachusetts, on 24 December 1637, first of six children of Capt. Isaac Johnson and Elizabeth Porter.

She had seven children, the last of whom was born during King Philip's War, just four months after her father was killed in the Great Swamp Fight. That son was named for her father.

She died in Roxbury on 13 August 1683. This was before a large part of her family moved to Woodstock, Connecticut.

Josiah Winchester was baptized in Roxbury on 20 May 1655, the last of four children of John Winchester and Hannah Sealis. In this record his father was called "Goodman Winchester of Scituate." Josiah may actually have been born in Scituate, just before his father moved his family to Muddy River.

He married on 10 December 1678 Mary Lyon, daughter of Peter Lyon and Ann of Dorchester.

He was a prominent citizen of Brookline and one of the petitioners for the incorporation of the town (previously Muddy River) in 1704. He was selectman; moderator; town treasurer; representative in the General Court in 1711, 1713 and 1717; and the first town clerk. As town clerk he served Muddy River in 1686/7; Muddy River and Brookline from 1697/8 to 1706/7 and Brookline again in 1712/3.

He and his family were members of the Roxbury church until a church was formed at Brookline.

Together with his brother John he was executor of his father's will, under which he received thirty-six acres of land in Muddy River.

He died in Brookline on 22 February 1727/8.

Mary Lyon was born in Dorchester 4 November 1650, first of six children of Peter Lyon and Ann/Hannah Tolman. (Actually, Savage said that Hannah was Peter's second wife, so we can't be sure she was Mary's mother.)

Mary and Josiah had six children, the last named for her brother Elhanan, a name which was carried down in the Winchester family for generations. Old enough to have known her grandchildren and very likely, some great-grandchildren, Mary died in Brookline on 27 July 1730, .

Capt. Daniel Champney was born in Cambridge on 9 March 1644/5, seventh of eight children of Elder Richard Champney and Jane.

He married first, in Cambridge on 3 January 1665/6, our ancestress Dorcas Bridge, daughter of Thomas Bridge and Dorcas Dowing/Downey.

Daniel was a “trooper” during King Philip’s War; it seems that he acquired his rank of captain at a later date. He was accepted as a freeman of Cambridge 10 October 1677.

Dorcas died on 7 February 1683/4, and Captain Daniel married second in Cambridge 9 June 1684 Hepzibah Corlet/Corlot, who was then the widow of James Minot.

Daniel lived for a while in Billerica, where his father had been granted land in 1655, and where his brother Samuel resided and had some children.

Captain Daniel died in Cambridge 19 November 1691.

Dorcas Bridge was born in Cambridge on 16 February 1649, the only child of Thomas Bridge and Dorcas Dowing/Downey. She had six children, the youngest of whom was only about ten months old when she died in Cambridge on 7 February 1683/4.

Dea. Nathaniel Hancock was born in Cambridge on 18 December 1639, third of six children of Nathaniel Hancock and Joanna.

By trade he was a shoemaker. He was also one of the town drummers, but had to go to court to get the selectmen to pay him for his duties.

He married first on 8 March 1663/4, our ancestress Mary Prentice, daughter of Henry Prentice and Joane. Some years after Mary’s death on 26 December 1699, when Henry was already sixty, he married Sarah Greene in Cambridge.

He was admitted to the Cambridge church 31 May 1667, being baptized the same day. On 7 June 1705 he was elected deacon. Deacon Nathaniel died in Cambridge on 2 April 1719.

Mary Prentice was born in Cambridge on 25 November 1644, first of six children of Henry Prentice and Joane.

She and Nathaniel had fifteen children, but of those, five died as infants. She survived all these child-births, dying in Cambridge on 20 September 1699 when her youngest child was eleven.

Rev. Thomas Clarke was born at Cambridge 2 March 1652/3, second of seven children of Elder Jonas Clarke and Elizabeth Clark.

He graduated at Harvard in 1670, and received his M.A. in preparation for the ministry. In 1677, at the end of King Philip’s War, he was settled as the minister at Chelmsford, Massachusetts.

As a minister, Reverend Thomas served with the colonial troops during King Philip’s War. The Massachusetts Bay Colony Records for 17 October 1676 say, “Mr. Thomas Clarke, minister, being seven weeks in the army at Narragansett, & officiating at the request of the commander in chiefe during that time, the Court Judgeth it meet to grant him sixe pounds money, to be payed by the Treasurer.”

He married twice, first to our ancestress Mary Bulkely circa 1679; soon afterwards he began his ministry at Chelmsford. Mary was the daughter of Rev. Edward Bulkeley, at that time a minister in nearby Concord. After Mary died in Dec. 1700, he married again at Billerica on 14 October 1702, Elizabeth Whiting, daughter of Rev. Samuel Whiting.

Donald Lines Jacobus, in his book on the Bulkeley family says of Reverend Thomas, "He was an able man, and by the exercise of strong common sense, that (in so early a day) too many of the clergy were afraid to show, saved one woman, accused as a witch."

There is a touching comment on his death in John Marshall's diary for 1704, "As to this December past it may be Remembered that on about the 8th day of the month dyed Mr. Thomas Clarke pastor of the Church at Chelmsford a great Loss to all our towns and especially to our frontiers on that side of the Country who are Greatly weakened by the Loss of such a worthy man." For a highly esteemed minister, he left a surprisingly sparse paper trail. None of his sermons or speeches survive.

Reverend Thomas died intestate. Administration of his estate was granted to Edward Emerson of Charlesown, a nephew of Mary Bulkeley. An inventory was submitted on 18 December 1704. His widow received her dower, but apparently most of the estate was sold for the benefit of creditors.

He died suddenly of a fever at Chelmsford on 7 December 1704. In 1708, the town voted money to place a monument on his grave. (Unfortunately for us, it is inscribed in Latin.)

Mary Bulkeley was born (say 1653) in Marshfield, where her father was minister at the time. She was the last of five children of Rev. Edward Bulkeley and Lucia /Lucy Anna. She and Rev Thomas had six children, one of whom died young. Their youngest was about six years old when she died on 2 December 1700, in Chelmsford.

Capt. Joseph Weld was born in Sudbury, Suffolk, England, on 7 April 1599. He came to New England in 1635, and was an early member of the church at Roxbury, of which his brother Thomas was the first minister.

He married first our ancestress, Elizabeth Wyse at All Saints parish in Sudbury on 11 October 1620. When she died in Roxbury, Massachusetts, soon after their arrival there, he married in Roxbury 20 April 1639 Barbara Clap.

He was a cloth merchant and also ran a large farm. He also had license to draw wine from 1639 through 1644. He was made freeman of Roxbury on 3 March 1635/6. He was a selectman of Roxbury prior to 1643, and several times deputy from Roxbury to the General Court.

On 2 November 1637 he was assigned by the General Court to keep Ann Hutchinson in his home (under a sort of house arrest). In *Weld Connections*, Charles Frederick Robinson says,

As to Mrs. Hutchinson's residence in Roxbury, we know little. One notable record indicates that sympathies in the Weld household may have not all been averse to her. Edward Denison, who married Joseph Weld's daughter Elizabeth, was disarmed that year for his sympathy with Antinomianism (Thwing, FCR, p, 57); it may be he got that trend through his acquaintance with Mrs. Hutchinson's demeanor while in his father-in-law's home. Her commitment to Weld's care by the General Court was, at any rate, a tribute to the repute in which his discretion was held. As to his military career, it began by his being recorded as "Ensign" as early as March 1637/8, and ended with the title of Captain. The detachment in which he served is known as "The Roxbury Training Band," or, as it would now be known, local militia.

At this point, I probably need to say a few words about Anne Hutchinson, who may well be unknown to many of my readers. She was actually a very well known figure in the religious controversies of pioneer New England, about whom a great deal has been written. A brief but stirring summary, easily found on the Internet, was given by Prof. Peter G. Gomes of Harvard Divinity School for the Mar/April 2002 issue of *Harvard Magazine*.

Anne, the wife of William Hutchinson, came to Boston in 1634 as an enthusiastic follower of the Rev. John Cotton of Boston in Lincolnshire, England. She was a much loved midwife in Boston, who differed crucially from the established, university-trained clergy of Massachusetts Bay Colony, in believing and proclaiming that one did not need guidance from a scholarly clergy in order to divine God's will and to win salvation. At first, while her friend Henry Vane was Governor of the colony, her views were tolerated, but when John Winthrop became Governor, she was seen as a dangerous threat to the centralized civil and religious authority which was essential to the survival of the colony. Anne was brought to a trial before the magistrates, predictably found guilty, and placed under house arrest. Prof. Gomes says, "The transcript of her trial shows her to have been deft in theological and legal sparring, intellectually superior to her accusers, and a woman of conscience who yielded to no authority."

Anne did not stay long in the home of Joseph Weld. In an ecclesiastical trial of 1638, even her former mentor, Rev. John Cotton, turned against her, proclaiming "Your opinions frett like a Gangrene and spread like a Leprosie, and will eat out the very Bowells of Religion." With her family and sixty followers, Anne was banished to Rhode Island. When her husband died in 1642, she took her younger children with her to New Amsterdam colony, where in 1643 she and all but one child were killed by Indians.

Admitting that this and many other incidents paint, to our modern eyes, an unflattering picture of the lack of religious liberty in early New England, I think it must be imagined that the tight civil and religious control imposed on the colonists may have been largely responsible for the survival and continuous growth of the colony in its early days.

Joseph Weld made a long will on 2 June 1646 which was proved 8 October 1646. He died in Roxbury on 7 October 1646 of a cancer on his tongue.

Elizabeth Wise was born probably in Suffolk County, England, circa 1602. These are just guesses, based on the date and place of her marriage.

Nothing is known definitively of her parentage, but it seems very likely that the widow Elizabeth Wise (listed right after Joseph Weld among the early members of the church at Roxbury) was her mother.

Elizabeth had five children in Sudbury, England, and one child, Edmund, in New England, before she died in Roxbury in October 1638.

Griffith Bowen was born in Langewith, Gower, Glamorganshire, Wales, circa 1600, a son of Francis Bowen and Ellen Franklyn.

He married in 1627 in Wales, Margaret Fleming, a daughter of Henry Fleming and Alice Dawkin. We are descended from Griffith and Margaret through three of their children. Although enthusiasts for many of our ancestral lines claim descent from ancient royalty, the line of Griffith Bowen from Henry I, son of William the Conqueror, is one that has been most carefully studied. Another pedigree, certified in England (for whatever that is worth) traces his ancestry back to Beli Mawr, King of Britain, 55 BC!

Griffith and Margaret, with most of their children, came to New England in the winter of 1638/9. They were admitted to the church at Boston on 6 February 1638/9. They had six children in Wales and had four more in Boston, Massachusetts.

On 25 March 1639, he was granted a great farm at Muddy River, and two months later, he was made a freeman of Boston.

For some reason, Griffith was not content to stay long in Boston, and by 1650, he returned to Wales, leaving many of his children to sink deep roots into New England. His subsequent life in Wales, and after 1668, in London, has been studied in great detail by Edward Augustus Bowen, and reported in Vol. 47 of the *NEHGR*, pp 453–459.

Griffith died, probably in London, before 17 April 1676, when the Court in Boston, Massachusetts, granted “Power of Administration unto the Estate of Mr. Griffith Bowen formerly of Boston (who died in England) unto Henry Bowen his son in right of those whome it may appear to belong.” On 6 November 1683, the Suffolk County Court appointed Lt. Samuel Ruggles and Mr. John Bowles of Roxbury and Mr. Jacob Eliot of Boston a committee to make division “and sett out the sd Estate,” instructing them to “give a double part thereof to Francis his eldest son.”

Margaret Fleming was born in Gellihir, Glamorganshire, Wales, circa 1607, a daughter of Henry Fleming and Alice Dawkin. (Like Griffith, she has a published pedigree extending back many generations.)

Nobody seems to have any idea as to when or where Margaret died. It is not even certain that she accompanied Griffith when he returned to Wales. It would be interesting to study the 1669 deed of his lands in Massachusetts, made in London by Griffith to Isaac Addington, who had just married daughter Elizabeth Bowen, to see whether Margaret agreed to relinquish her dower rights.

Thomas Faxon Sr. was born circa 1600, almost certainly in Swalcliffe, County Oxford, England, probably the fifth of eight children of William Faxon.

He married at Swalcliffe on 25 June 1625 Joane Fawdry, daughter of Richard Fawdry and Jane. They had three children baptized at Swalcliffe, two of whom were our ancestors.

Joan was dead by 1670, when Thomas married his second wife at Braintree on 5 September 1670. She was Sarah Mullins, a granddaughter of William Mullins of the *Mayflower*, and widow, successively, of Thomas Gannett of Duxbury and William Savill of Braintree.

Thomas and Joan arrived in New England by 1645, when he was recorded in Braintree as leasing a large farm from Atherton Hough. It is likely that he came earlier, but early records of Braintree are, as we have sadly observed before, largely nonexistent.

He was made a freeman of Massachusetts Bay Colony on 6 May 1657, and was a deputy to the General Court from Braintree in 1669. He was a selectman of Braintree from 1670 through 1672.

Thomas was land hungry, purchasing 450 acres in Braintree on 14 May 1656; 180 acres in Dorchester on 10 January 1666/7; and in 1667 renting an additional 600 acres in Braintree. He was one of the sixteen original purchasers of Block Island in 1660, but sold his one-eighth interest to a man in England on 17 September 1662.

No record of Thomas's death has been found.

Joan Fawdry was baptized at Enstone, County Oxford, England, on 12 June 1603, the fifth of eleven children of Richard Fawdry and Jane.

For some reason, Joan had only three children, the last baptized 11 July 1630, when she was only twenty-seven. She lived long enough to see her three children married and to know her grandchildren.

She was still alive in Braintree on 17 September 1662, but dead by 1670, when Thomas remarried. No record of her death has been found.

Richard Thayer was baptized at St. Mary's Church, Thornbury, Gloucestershire, England, on 5 April 1601. No parents' names appeared on this record.

He married first at Thornbury on 5 April 1624, our ancestress Dorothy Mortimore, daughter of William Mortimore. Immediately after Dorothy died in January 1640/1, Richard and his eight small children came to New England, settling at Braintree where his brother, Thomas Thayer, was established. Richard was made freeman of the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1641.

About July 1646 in Boston, Richard married again to Jane, widow of John Parker.

After his children were somewhat grown, presumably in the late 1650s, Richard returned to England. Probably his second wife died there, and he married again, to Katherine.

As early as 12 March 1660, Richard re-appears in America, this time in Barbados. His sons Richard and Nathaniel were there too.

He died in Barbados in the town and parish of St. Michaels in early October 1664. He made a will there on 6 October, which was proved on 12 October 1664.

Dorothy Mortimore was born circa 1606 (to make her eighteen when married) probably in Gloucestershire, England, daughter of William Mortimore. She had nine children baptized at St. Mary's in Thornbury and was buried there on 17 January 1640/1.

Walter Hatch was born circa 1623 in England, only child of William Hatch and an unidentified first wife.

He was about twelve years old when he came to New England on the *Hercules*, with his father, stepmother, four half siblings and several servants. The family settled in Scituate, in Plymouth Colony.

Walter married in Scituate on 6 May 1650, Elizabeth Holbrook, daughter of Thomas Holbrook and Jane Powys. Elizabeth died between 1669 and 1674, but there is no surviving record. Walter married again, at Marshfield on 5 August 1674, Mary (Staple?).

Walter was a constable of Scituate in 1654. He and his cousin Jeremiah Hatch were admitted freemen on 1 June 1658. He and Jeremiah were partners in a shipyard on the North River.

Elizabeth Holbrook was baptized on 13 February 1630/1 in Glastonbury, Somerset, England, fifth of six children of Thomas Holbrook and Jane Powys.

She came to New England with her parents and (probably) four siblings in the company of Rev. Joseph Hull, landing at Dorchester, Massachusetts, on 7 June 1635, and moving soon thereafter to Weymouth.

She had eight children, and died when the youngest was still an infant, some time between December 1669, when her last child was born, and August 1674, when Walter took his second wife.

Edward Doty was born circa 1599, presumably in England, but we have no sure knowledge of place, date, or parentage.

He came to New England on the *Mayflower*, and signed the *Mayflower Compact*. He came as a servant of Stephen Hopkins.

He had an unknown first wife, whose existence is unrecorded, but implied by William Bradford saying, when Edward married Faith, that Edward had “a second wife.” He married in Plymouth on 6 January 1634/5 our ancestress, Faith Clarke, daughter of Thurston Clarke.

He was a rough and ready character, often in court on charges of violent behavior. He was also often in court for civil disputes, winning a few but losing most.

He made his will on 20 May 1655, proved 5 March 1655/6, calling himself Edward Dotten of New Plymouth. He named only his son Edward, but stated that he had other sons, as yet under twenty-one. His inventory was presented to the court on 21 November 1655. All this, and his wife’s will, is transcribed in *Mayflower Descendant* 3: 87–91.

He died in Plymouth on 23 August 1655.

Faith Clark was born circa 1617, perhaps near Ipswich, Suffolk, England, eldest of six children of Thurston Clarke and his wife Faith.

She came to New England with her parents, and possibly two brothers on the *Francis*, out of Ipswich in late April 1634. On the list of passengers, Faith was identified as fifteen, but it seems likely that she was about seventeen. The family was soon of Duxbury, near Plymouth.

Faith and Edward had nine children, the youngest of whom was our ancestress Mary, who was only about a year old when her father died. More than ten years after the death of Edward, Faith remarried, at Plymouth 14 March 1666/7, to John Phillips.

She made a will on 12 December 1675, naming her daughters Mary Doten, Elizabeth Rouse and Desire Sherman. Her estate was settled on 10/20 July 1677, indicating that Mary, for whom no marriage record has ever been found, was single on that date. On 23 February 1679/80, Samuel Hatch gave a receipt to John Rouse of Marshfield “for all that which was Due to mee by virtue of my wife.”

On 3 June 1680 (recorded on the same page of Plymouth County probates) Desire Sherman gave a receipt to John Rouse for “the legacies which was Due to mee by virtue of my Mothers Will and by order of the Court.”

John Rouse was the executor of the will of Faith (Clark, Doty) Phillips, and these two receipts constitute proof that Samuel Hatch married Mary Doty (between 20 July 1677 and 23 February 1679/80).

Faith died at Marshfield circa 29 December 1675, just before the outbreak of King Philip’s War.

Edmond Hawes was baptized at Solihull, Warwickshire, England, on 15 October 1612. He was a cutler by trade, being bound as an apprentice in the Company of Cutlers of London on 14 February 1626[/?].

He came to New England on the *James* of Southampton in April 1635, and settled at first in Duxbury. He was twice a constable in Duxbury, and is lightly represented in the land records of that place. About 1643 he moved to Yarmouth, where he was extremely active in community affairs.

We have no record of his marriage, but guess that it occurred in Duxbury shortly after his arrival there. We are in fact not certain that he ever married, but he had a son, our ancestor John Hawes, born circa 1636, presumably in Duxbury.

Between 1645 and 1675, he was frequently deputy for Yarmouth at the Plymouth Colony General Court. He held many offices for Plymouth Colony, being several times auditor of accounts, on the committee on excise, commissioner for the Kennebec trade, on the committee for purchase of Indian lands, on the council of war and juryman on both petit and grand juries. Between 1665 and 1685, he was frequently a selectman for Yarmouth.

He made his will on 5 May 1692, proved 20 July 1693, naming “natural son” John Hawes; “daughter” Desire Hawes, wife of John; grandsons Joseph, Jabez, John, Edmond, Ebenezer, Isaac and Benjamin Hawes; granddaughters Desire Hawes, Elizabeth Dogged and Mary Bacon; and “grandchild” Experience Hawes. Son John was his sole executor.

He died at Yarmouth 9 June 1693 and was buried the following day.

Capt. John Gorum is still a mystery, as respects his birth and parentage. Modern authors say with no hint of doubt, but also with no shred of proof positive, that he was baptized at Benefield, Northamptonshire, England, on 28 January 1621, son of Ralph Gorum and Margaret Stephenson. However, a surviving family document, *Col. John Gorham's "Wast Book,"* presents a contradictory picture in *Mayflower Descendant*, Vol. 5, pp. 172–179. According to this family account, Captain John's father was named John, and the family came from Huntingdonshire.

The difference between Huntingdonshire and Northamptonshire may not be important, because those are abutting shires, and the Gorums may have lived near the common boundary.

He was at Plymouth, in New England, by 1637, and may have been the John Gorham who was a passenger on the *Philip* to New England on 20 June 1635.

John's name was on the 1643 list of men able to bear arms in Plymouth, and in that same town circa March 1643 (no record) he married Desire Howland, daughter of John Howland and Elizabeth Tilley of the *Mayflower*. After the birth of their first child in Plymouth in 1644, John moved his small family in 1646 to Marshfield, where his father (Ralph or John) had been living. They stayed there just a few years, John serving as constable in 1648, and being made freeman on 4 June 1650. The family moved again in 1652, to Yarmouth, where he purchased a home on the North County Road, adjoining the town of Barnstable. He also purchased a hundred acres of good farm land near his home, but mostly in Barnstable. He also owned a gristmill, a tannery, and a landing place on the town wharf.

One of the things that intrigues me about the family history related in Col. John Gorham's *Wast Book* is the assertion that Captain John went back to England after he had had several children. I wonder if this could have happened just before he moved his family to Yarmouth/Barnstable. He seems to have been much wealthier and socially prominent in Yarmouth than he had been in Plymouth and Marshfield. I wonder whether he went to England to claim a bequest of some sort, of which there might be some surviving record.

He was evidently a welcome addition to the Yarmouth community, serving as deputy to the Plymouth Colony General Court on 20 April 1653. He was surveyor of highways in 1654, and selectman toward the end of his life in 1673 and 1674.

It was for his military service that Captain John was best known. In 1672, he was appointed Lieutenant of the Plymouth Colony forces, and on 4 October 1675, captain of the second company of Barnstable forces. He participated in the Great Swamp Fight of 19 December 1675, under Maj.

William Bradford. The *Wast Book* says that he was mortally wounded in the Swamp Fight, having his powder horn explode against his side, and having contracted a serious fever.

He died before he could reach home and was buried at Swansea, Massachusetts, on 5 February 1675/6.

He died intestate, and administration of his estate was granted to his widow, Desire, and his two eldest sons, James and John. A long inventory of his estate can be found in *Plymouth Colony Wills*, Vol. III, p. 164 ff. The total value was 710 pounds, which indicated real prosperity. One interesting item was a Negro man.

Just a year before he died, on 4 March 1674/5, Capt John deposed that he was about fifty-three years old.

Desire Howland was born circa 1625/6 in Plymouth, Massachusetts, eldest of ten children of *Mayflower* passengers John Howland and Elizabeth Tilley.

She and Captain John had eleven children. There is a slight gap in the birthdates of these children, circa 1655, when the family was at Barnstable. If Captain John did indeed make a trip to England, it may have been at about this time.

Desire died at Barnstable on 13 October 1683, four years before the death of her mother. None of her children were mentioned in the will of their grandmother, perhaps in recognition of the fact that they had inherited well from their father and mother.

One of the remarkable things about Captain John and Desire is that the family Bible record of their children has survived to the modern day. The list of his children was written all at one time by Captain John, in a handwriting that is unmistakably his. The Bible evidently was given by Desire Gorum to her daughter, Desire Hawes, who left it to her son Benjamin Hawes. In his will, Benjamin described it as "my Great Bible which was my Mothers, and left it to his daughter Experience Hawes." How it came from Experience Hawes to Hiram Luce, among whose papers the family record page was found in 1911, remains unknown.

Capt. John Minot was baptized at Saffron Walden, Essex, England, on 10 April 1626, second of five children, all sons, of Elder George Minot and Martha Stocke. Joseph Graphpton Minot, in his 1897 *Genealogical Record of the Minot Family*, asserts that he was born on 2 April 1626.

He presumably came to New England with his parents in 1632 and grew up in Dorchester, where his father was a very prominent citizen.

He married in Dorchester on 19 May 1647, Lydia Butler, daughter of Nicholas Butler and Joyce Baker. Lydia died in 1667, and John, having a family of infants, apparently soon remarried to Mary (Dassett) Biggs, the widow of John Biggs.

Lydia was obviously a cherished member of the Dorchester Church, but John was not. In spite of his father being Ruling Elder of the church, John was unwilling to join, and thus could not become a freeman of Dorchester until the General Court, on 3 August 1664, repealed the requirement that one be a church member in order to become a freeman. Then on 3 May 1665, John became a freeman.

He died in Dorchester 12 August 1669.

There is an engaging legend concerning the old Minot house, presumably where John and Lydia had lived, and where John's second wife was raising the last of their children, both Lydia and John having died several years before the incident of the legend occurred. This incident occurred in the days just before King Philip's War, on a Sunday in July 1675, when a lone Indian, armed with a musket, came

to the Minot house, where he was detected poking around the house, by a young housemaid, who was reportedly caring for two young children while their elders were at church. (John and Lydia's youngest would have been ten and thirteen, so it's unlikely that they were the children involved.) The maid quickly hid the children under two large brass kettles, and rushed upstairs, where a musket was kept. She came back down just as the Indian entered the front door. The Indian fired without effect, but she managed to shoot him through the shoulder. When he was so indiscreet as to push his face in through a window, she met him with a shovel full of hot coals! He was subsequently found dead in the woods about five miles away. The legend was recounted by Justin Windor in his 1880 *Memorial History of Boston*. That book contains a drawing of the house.

Lydia Butler was baptized 23 February 1628/9 in Kent, England, the third of three children of Nicholas Butler and his second wife, Joyce Baker.

She and John had just five children, when she died in childbirth with her sixth. This occurred in Dorchester on 24 January 1666/7 and occasioned the publication of an elaborate eulogy, "Upon the DEATH of the Virtuous and Religious Mrs. Lydia Minot (The wife of Mr. John Minot of Dorchester)." This was embellished with sentimental and religious poetry, including the following clever piece:

*Light sown is for the Righteous; its full Crop
Yields Glory's Harvest, Souls fill'd up, to th'top,
Day in my Lot is now, still calm, still bright,
In leaving your dark world, I left all Night;
Ascended where, nor Sun, nor Moon, we crave,
My God, & th'Lamb's the light that here we have.
In his Light we see light, and light'ned stay,
No light to that of the' Everlasting Day!
O pleasant Lines that thus are (?) to me!
To make that Day my Lot which aye shall be.*

Capt. Christopher Clark was born circa 1617, presumably in England. Our estimate of his birth year comes from a deposition he made in London, England, on 5 March 1669/70, saying that he, master of the *Society* of Boston, was then fifty-two.

In about 1647 (no record) probably in or near Boston, he married Rebecca Eire, daughter of Simon Eire and Dorothy Paine.

In 1648, he was fined for shooting off his ship's guns at night (presumably in Boston Harbor). The fine was remitted by the General Court, so he must have had some good reason for doing so. (Maybe he was celebrating the birth of his first child.)

Whereas many of our mariner ancestors stuck close to our Atlantic coastline, perhaps venturing into the Caribbean, Christopher Clark evidently sailed fairly frequently to England and was involved in helping New Englanders settle affairs in the old country, and vice versa.

In May 1684, he was successfully sued by Watchman James Wardell and others for "riotous carriage, assault & battery of a watchman."

He and Rebecca lived on Union Street and Cross Street in Boston.

He died at Boston 10 February 1692/3. An agreement between his heirs, dated 7 November 1693, shows that three of his sons were also mariners.

Rebecca Eire was born circa 1626, probably in Suffolk, England, fourth of ten children of Simon Eire and his first wife, Dorothy Paine.

Rebecca came to New England with her parents and seven siblings on the *Increase* of London in April 1635. Her family lived first in Watertown, but moved to Boston in 1647.

The proof that she was the Rebecca who married Capt. Christopher Clark was worked out by Robert Charles Anderson and published in *The American Genealogist (TAG)* in January 1990.

She and Christopher had nine children, the last of whom was our ancestress, Mary.

We have no record of her death. I would guess that she lived several years after the 1666 birth of her last child, because Captain Christopher did not remarry. She had died by November 1693, because she was not then mentioned in a division of Christopher's estate among his heirs.

Francis Wainwright was born, perhaps circa 1618, possibly near Chelmsford, Essex, England. These guesses are based on reports that he came to New England as a servant to Alexander Knight of Chelmsford circa 1634 or 1635, and that he behaved perhaps foolishly, but ultimately successfully, in the Pequot War of 1637.

Philip Vincent says, in his *True Relation of the late Battel fought in New England between the English and the Pequet Salvages*,

A pretty sturdy youth of New Ipswich, going forth somewhat rashly to pursue the salvages shot off his musket after them till all his powder and shot were spent: which they perceiving, reassaulted him, thinking with their hatchets to have knocked him in the head: but he so bestirred himself with the stock of his piece, and after with the barrell, when that was broken, that he brought two of their heads to the army. His own desert, and the encouragement of others will not suffer him to be nameless. He is called Francis Wainwright, and came over servant with Alexander Knight that kept an inn in Chelmsford.

About 1647, probably in Ipswich, Massachusetts, where he lived, he married Philippa Sewall, daughter of George Sewall and Sarah.

In 1664, he was made corporal of the foot company of Ipswich. Aside from that, he does not seem to have been conspicuously active in community affairs.

Although it is said that he came over as a servant, he soon showed signs of respectable wealth. He was a merchant in Ipswich, dealing largely in fish. He obviously often sold on credit, because he was in Essex County Quarterly Court about fifty times between 1647 and 1678, usually to collect debts. One gets the impression from these records that he was a stern but fair businessman. From 1665 on, he held a license to sell strong waters by the gallon.

Francis was not made freeman of Ipswich until 31 October 1671, probably indicating that he was lukewarm in his attachment to the church. He was several times a trial juror and a grand juror, and served as administrator of estates.

He died suddenly, but of good age, on a business trip to Salem, on 19 May 1692, and his tombstone stands in the old Charter Street burying ground in Ipswich.

Philippa Sewall was baptized 8 March 1628/9, in Halsted, Essex, England, the fifth of eleven children of George Sewall and his second wife, Sarah.

She and Francis had seven children of record, and she died in Ipswich 6 October 1669, when her youngest was not quite three.

Capt. John Whipple was born on 21 December 1626 in Bocking, Essex, England, third of eleven children of Elder John Whipple and Susanna Stacy (or Clark). He was their eldest surviving son, a brother of the same name having been born and deceased before him.

Captain John inherited from his father a house which, with improvements probably added by him, stands in Ipswich today as an important historical monument.

We have no exact record of his first marriage, but can guess that it occurred before September 1653, probably in Ipswich or Rowley. The evidence for this is an Essex County court record of September 1653 in which John Whipple's wife was presented "for wearing a silk hood," but was discharged, her husband being worth two hundred pounds. His first wife was Martha Reyner, daughter of Humphrey Reyner and Mary Middlebrook. Martha died in 1679 and Captain John remarried on 28 June 1680 to Elizabeth Burr (widow Paine).

Captain John had a license to distill liquor. He was cornet captain in 1668 and lieutenant and captain of Capt. Nicholas Paige's company in the Mt. Hope Campaign of King Philip's War. Shortly before his death on 16 May 1683, the General Court appointed him captain of the Ipswich troop of horse.

He was active in the leadership of his community, being representative to the General Court from 1674 to 1680; in 1682; and in 1683.

Captain John left a will, dated 2 August 1683, naming wife Elizabeth; daughter Susan Lane; youngest daughter Sarah, to be brought up with her mother (if she be willing), and to have 150 pounds when she is twenty years of age. His three sons, John, Matthew and Joseph, were to be executors. The estate was valued at 3,314 pounds, which made him a very rich man. His inventory included an Indian slave.

He died in Ipswich on 10 August 1683.

Martha Reyner was born circa 1634, probably at Batley, West Riding, Yorkshire, England, second of three children of Humphrey Reyner and Mary Middlebrook.

She must have been brought to New England as a babe in arms, but was soon established in a comfortable home in Rowley, Massachusetts, where her father was ruling elder of the church.

She and Captain John had six children, the youngest of whom was eight years old when Martha died. She died in Ipswich 24 February 1679.

Elder Jonas Clark was born circa 1619, presumably in England. It is surprising that a man who became so well known in later years seems to have drawn almost no attention from searchers of English origins.

He came to Boston circa 1640. Our first record of his presence in New England is of the birth of a child in Cambridge on 2 December 1642.

Elder Jonas had three wives, first marrying Sarah circa 1641. She died in Cambridge 20 February 1649/50. They had four children. He then married our ancestress, Elizabeth Clark in Cambridge on 30 July 1650. Nothing is known about her ancestry. They had seven children, including our ancestors Captain Timothy and Reverend Thomas. Finally, in Cambridge on 19 August 1673, he married Elizabeth Cook, with whom he had six children, so seventeen children in all!

In 1649, Elder Jonas was described in the *Aspinwall Notarial Records* as a "seaman." He was owed money by H. William Preston of Newfoundland.

On 18 October 1654, he was appointed by the General Court as “well skild in the mathemattiks, having had the command of ships upon several voyages” to take an observation at the northerly bounds of our patent upon the sea coast. His report, made together with Samuel Andrews on 29 October 1653 (note discrepancy of year from published date of court meeting) placed the point of observation at north latitude 43 degrees, 43 minutes, 20 seconds. This line of latitude was said to run over the northern tip of Clapboard Island, in Casco Bay. According to modern surveys, the latitude of Clapboard Island is 43 degrees, 43 minutes, 6 seconds. I would say that our ancestor was a pretty good surveyor!

On 27 May 1674, the General Court awarded Elder Jonas three hundred acres of land. This land was eventually laid out near the east side of Dunstable, almost on the New Hampshire line.

Jonas was ordained ruling elder of the Cambridge church on 15 November 1682. In his role as ruling elder, Jonas evidently had some disagreement with William Brattle, who was ordained as minister at Cambridge on 25 November 1696. Reverend Brattle got the church to rule that Elder Clark should not lay his hand on his (Brattle’s) head in the ordination ceremony. Elder Jonas continued in that position until he died, and the Cambridge church never had a ruling elder again.

He died on 14 January 1699/1700. Judge Samuel Sewall had this to say in his diary: “Lord’s day, January 14, 1699/1700: Elder Jonas Clark of Cambridge dies; a good man in a good old age, and one of my first and best Cambridge friends. He quickly follows the great patron of Ruling Elders, Tho. Danforth, Esq.”

Elizabeth Clark is a genealogical mystery woman. I have guessed that she was born circa 1623, probably in England. I picked that birthdate to make her about forty-three at her last recorded childbirth. She lived another eight years with no more children. Elder Jonas does not seem to have gone in for sexual abstinence, so I have guessed that Elizabeth passed her childbearing years at about the same age as many others of our ancestresses.

The record of her marriage to Jonas does not suggest that she was then a widow, but that possibility can’t be ruled out.

Elizabeth had seven children and died at Cambridge on 21 March 1672/3 when her youngest child was eight.

Amos Richardson was born circa 1620, probably in England. He was in Boston, Massachusetts, by 9 September 1639, as a witness, and bought house and land there on Summer Street on 7 October 1642. He had many connections with the Winthrop family which might hold clues to his origins.

He married circa 1643, probably in Boston (no record) Mary Smith, sister of Richard Smith Sr., one of the Atherton partners.

He was a tailor, and a prosperous merchant. He was a major speculator in lands, being a member of the “Atherton Partners” who purchased a large tract in the “Narragansett Lands,” an area that was something of a buffer zone between the colonies of Massachusetts Bay and Connecticut. The partners were John Winthrop Jr., Maj. Humphrey Atherton, Captain Hutchinson, William Hudson, John Tinker, Amos Richardson and Richard Smith Sr.

Amos moved his family to Stonington, Connecticut, sometime between 1662, when his last child was born in Boston, and 1667. That is when records show that the First Congregational Church of Stonington held its winter meetings in his house.

Amos died at his home in Stonington, Connecticut, on 5 August 1683.

Mary Smith was born in England circa 1623 (just guesses), sister of Richard Smith Sr. In the *Genealogy of Amos Richardson of Boston and Stonington* by Rosell L. Richardson, the author does not believe that the wife of Amos was really Mary Smith, daughter of John Smith of Boston and Sudbury. Also he does not believe that Richard Smith in the Atherton Company is the same man found in Groton and Sudbury, Massachusetts. While the identification of the Richard Smith of the Atherton Company is not clear, it does seem certain that Richard Smith, brother of Alice (Smith) Tinker was in the area. Charles Dyer Parkhurst of New London, Connecticut; Donald Lines Jacobus; and William Durant, have all researched the family, and have all accepted Mary Smith as wife of Amos Richardson.

Mary and Amos had eight children, all registered in Boston. The youngest child was married before Mary died. That was about a month after Amos died in Stonington.

Capt. Thomas Wass was born in Charlestown, Massachusetts, on 29 November 1646, second of three recorded children of John Wass and Katherine.

He married Alice circa 1669. (There is no record, so we don't know where.)

He sailed in the *Swan* in 1680, and was master of her in 1683 on a voyage "to the Spanish wrecks," presumably to search for sunken treasure. In 1688 he was captain of the bark *Pelican* on a voyage to Jamaica. Then, in 1702 he was master of the brigantine *Hannah and Mary*.

Very little seems to be known about him. There was another man of the same name (which surname has always been rare in Massachusetts) who was schoolteacher in Essex County, found at Haverhill, Ipswich and Newbury. For some reason, Walter Preston Wass, author of *The Wass Family*, confuses these two men, thinking them to be one man with two careers, but it is hard to imagine how the two careers could have been compatible.

He died in Boston in 1723, apparently intestate.

Alice Unknown. Alice is a genealogical mystery. All we know about her is that she and Thomas had at least one son and four daughters, but there are large time gaps between recorded births, and there may have been other unrecorded children. Of course, all their children were born during the years when Captain Tomas was often at sea. We don't know when Alice died, except that her last recorded child was born circa June 1686.

Richard Wilmot is another genealogical enigma. About all we know is that he was active in the rebuilding of Casco/Falmouth/Portland, Maine, between 1717 and 1721.

We know that Richard was dead by 10 October 1726 when his daughter Ann and her husband John Wass sold property in Falmouth. The deed refers to John Wass as the heir of Richard Wilmot "late of Falmouth."

John Copeland was born in Braintree, Massachusetts, on 10 December 1658, fourth of twelve children of Lawrence Copeland and Lydia Townsend.

He married circa 1682, probably in Braintree, Ruth Newcomb, daughter of John Newcomb and Ruth Marshall.

He was a blacksmith and lived in a part of Braintree called, then and now, Monatiquot. There, from 1694 through 1711, he was found in records as a fence viewer, field driver, surveyor and tythingman. He died at Braintree on 7 August 1714, intestate. Administration on his estate was granted to his eldest son, John Jr. There is an interesting collection of Suffolk Deeds, by which John's younger children sold their portions of their father's estate to their brother John.

Ruth Newcomb was born circa 1664 in Braintree, probably fourth of ten children of John Newcomb and Ruth Marshall.

She had eight children, the youngest of whom was forty-two when she died, so she certainly knew her grandchildren, and possibly her great-grandchildren.

She was buried at Braintree on 26 May 1742.

John Kingman was born at Weymouth, Massachusetts, on 20 April 1664, the eldest of seven children of John Kingman Sr. and Elizabeth Edson.

He married first our ancestress Desire Harris, daughter of Isaac Harris and Mercy Latham. That happened circa 1689, probably in Bridgewater, Massachusetts. Desire died circa Feb. 1697/8, leaving John with five children under nine years old. He hastened to marry again to Bethia Newcomb, a sister of our Ruth Newcomb, with whom he had another seven children.

John made his will on 21 January 1744/5, leaving ten pounds in “new tenor” currency to his daughter Mary Copeland. It was not proved until 3 February 1755, and it would be useful to examine the probate records closely, to see whether his daughter Mary was still living on that date.

He died at Bridgewater, Massachusetts, on 8 January 1755. His tombstone says he was ninety-five, but he would have been only ninety or ninety-one if the birthdate given here is accurate.

Desire Harris was born by 5 July 1669, probably at Bridgewater, Massachusetts, eldest of eight children of Isaac Harris and Mercy Latham.

She died about February 1697/8, probably in childbirth with her fifth child.

Nathaniel Owen Sr. was born circa 1660/61, probably in Braintree, Massachusetts, fourth of seven children of William Owen and Elizabeth Davis.

In about 1683, probably at Braintree, he married Mary whose parents have never been identified.

In 1701, it was voted by the Braintree town meeting that “Nathaniel Owen is to have 5 pounds of the next town rate toward erecting a room for ye entertaining and taking care of his father and mother provided yt [that] said Owen will do it.”

Nathaniel seems mysteriously missing from Braintree records, before the birth of his first son and conspicuously inactive in town affairs before 1703. Then he was elected field driver (1703 and 1713); constable (1712, 1715, 1717, 1719 and 1726) and surveyor of highways (1722 and 1732). He died at Braintree on 30 November 1733.

Mary Unknown. Mary was probably born circa 1665, possibly in Braintree. I have guessed this birth year, to make her forty-three at the birth of her last child, and eighteen or nineteen at the birth of her first one.

Mary was baptized and owned the covenant in the Braintree church on 2 January 1697/98. Her parentage was evidently not known to the church clerk at that time. She had four children baptized the following 12 June 1698.

There is a mysterious gap in the records, between the birth of her first child in 1683 or 1684 (duplicate records) and that of her second one, seven or eight years later. Also another gap of five years came between the births of her next-to-last and last children. Overall she is credited with seven children. She died on 14 February 1732/3.

Joseph Parmenter was born in Braintree on 20 December 1655, second of five children of Robert Parmenter and Leah Saunders.

He married at Braintree on 17 November 1675 (or September per duplicate record) Mary Marsh, daughter of Thomas Marsh and Sarah Beal of Hingham. This date is interesting, because very soon thereafter, on 3 December 1675, he was impressed as a trooper from Braintree in King Philip's War.

His father was elected a deacon of the Braintree church in 1677. Joseph may have joined the church at about the same time, and was made freeman in May 1678.

He appears to have lived on the homestead of his father, and was prominent in town affairs, having been town treasurer for three years and town clerk from 1699 to 1728. He suffered a temporary fall from grace on 9 September 1722, when "Brother Joseph Parmenter made a public Confession, in the presence of the Congregation, of the sin of drunkenness." At a church meeting ten days later, he repeated the confession, and "the question was put whether they would accept his confession to restore him; it passed in the negative, because he had made several confessions of the sin, and is still unreformed thereof: the Brethren concluded it proper to suspend him from communion in the Lord's Supper, for his further humiliation and warning."

However, there was a good ending to this. Joseph reformed and was reinstated on 3 March 1722/3, and on the very next day was reelected as town clerk for the following year.

Joseph is reported to have "dropt down dead in the pulpit of the church, Feb 20, 1737/8, A. M. in the 82 year of his age." Waldo Chamberlain Sprague, from whose *Braintree Families* most of this information is taken, said that there were no probate records for Joseph.

Mary Marsh was born in Hingham, Massachusetts, on 22 February 1657/8, last of five children of Thomas Marsh and Sarah Beal.

We know little of her, save that she had six children with Joseph, and lived some twenty-nine years after the birth of the last of them.

She died in Braintree on 2 July 1719, before the episode of Joseph's drunkenness, so we may possibly attribute that to loneliness.

Capt. Thomas Tupper was born at Sandwich, Massachusetts, on 16 January 1637/8, the only child of Thomas Tupper Sr. and his third wife, Anne, the widow Hodgson.

The following is quoted from, *Thomas Tupper and his Descendants*.

He [Capt. Thomas] became a Freeman at 20 and in 1658, with his father, was listed as one of the largest landholders [in Sandwich]. He served on a jury in 1664, was one of two excisemen in 1667 and town constable in 1669. He early became one of the most prominent citizens, serving as selectman for fourteen years; Town Clerk from 1675 to 1685; Deputy to the General Court at Plymouth for eleven years; Representative to the Court in Boston, and in 1680 was appointed lieutenant of the military company in Sandwich, becoming captain in 1690. He had strong religious convictions and for many years was a missionary among the Indians of the Mashpee and Herring Pond tribes.

Captain Thomas was the town clerk who inscribed the death records for his father and mother.

On 27 December 1661, probably in Sandwich, he married Martha Mayhew, daughter of Gov. Thomas Mayhew of Martha's Vineyard, and his wife Jane Galland. This united two families with a strong tradition of Christian missionary work among the Indians of Cape Cod and Martha's Vineyard. His work with the Indians was supported by Judge Samuel Sewall of Boston.

As a sign of others' support, we have the following interesting deposition, made by his son Israel on 1 July 1751, to wit:

About fifty years past I understood that ye proprietors of Agawam Laid out certain Lands and Meadows in said Agawam for the support of the Gospel Ministry and to be devoted to that use only, and that they gave my hon. father Thomas Tupper, ye use & Improvement of said Ministry Lands and Meadows for several years for his preaching to them, and after my father's death they gave Mr. Rowland Cotton [minister of Sandwich] the use thereof because they attended his ministry. As I have ever Understood and further Say that my said father told me that he & others were appointed to lay out said Ministerial Lands & Meadows & that it was done to the Acceptance of said Proprietors & Never till lately heard but that it still lay to the use of the Ministry.

(Agawam was a fairly common Indian place name, most commonly associated with Springfield in Western Massachusetts. There is, however, an Agawam on Cape Cod, not far from Sandwich, and I am sure that is the one referred to in Deacon Israel's deposition.)

Captain Thomas made a will in 1706 (Barnstable Probates, Book 3, page 6). A substantial corner of each page is missing, but the following is easy to read. "I, Thomas Tupper—Item: unto Martha my loveing wife—the benefit and improvement of dwelling house in Sandwich—also lands & meadows in Sandwich." He also named sons Eliakim, Thomas, Israel, Eldad, Ichabod, Medad and Samuel, and daughter Bethiah. The witnesses were William Bassett and Mathias Ellis Sr.

Captain Thomas died in Sandwich on 26 April 1706. I have seen and photographed his gravestone in the Old Town Cemetery of Sandwich, on the west shore of the Mill Pond. It is unique, in that the original slate stone has been preserved by surrounding it with a large granite stone.

Martha Mayhew was born in Watertown, Massachusetts, circa 1641, last of four children of Gov. Thomas Mayhew and his second wife, Jane Galland.

Martha received much valuable property from her father, Gov. Thomas Mayhew of Martha's Vineyard, by deed of gift in 1666. According to Freeman's "*History of Cape Cod*," page 697, this included an "estate at Chapaquidick," and half of "the island of Nunnemisset bought of Isaac, sachem of Manomet;" and also a share "of Cuttayhunck which was given by the said sachem."

Martha and Thomas had eleven children, the last of whom was thirty-two when Martha died. Her seven sons were all alive when their father died.

Martha died in Sandwich on 15 November 1717.

Nathaniel Bacon Jr. was born in Barnstable, Massachusetts, on 5 February 1644/5, second of eight children of Nathaniel Bacon Sr. and Hannah Mayo.

He married at Barnstable on 27 March 1673 Sarah Hinckley, daughter of Gov. Thomas Hinkley and Mary Richards. This was almost inevitable, as the fathers of Nathaniel Jr. and Sarah were constant and close companions in the settling and early governance of Barnstable and Yarmouth.

He must have married Hannah after the death of Sarah in 1686/7, but the only record we have of this second wife is his naming of her in his will.

Nathaniel Jr. made his will 6 August 1691, proved 20 April 1692. He named his wife, Hannah, and made careful provision for her. He did the same for "my honored mother Bacon;" his eldest son Nathaniel and younger son Samuel; and for daughters Mary & Elizabeth. He also bequeathed to "my Loving Friend Jonathan Russell of this Towne minister." Executors were to be loving brethren Jeremiah Bacon and John Otis, and friends Jonathan Russell and Lt. James Lewes.

By deed registered with Barnstable probate court on 30 November 1710, sons Nathaniel and Samuel agreed to a division of lands between them. This may hint at the date of death of Hannah (Mayo) Bacon, grandmother of the two men.

Nathaniel Jr. died at Barnstable on 31 December 1691, a relatively young man.

Sarah Hinckley was born at Barnstable circa 4 November 1646, second of eight children of Gov. Thomas Hinckley and his first wife, Mary Richards.

She had four children with Nathaniel, and died at Barnstable on 16 February 1686/7, at the early age of thirty-nine. Her death was extensively mentioned in an intensely religious letter, written the day after by her father to his second wife. In this he implies that Sarah was the first of his grown children to die.

Elisha Bourne was born circa 1641, probably at Sandwich, Massachusetts, second of four sons of Rev. Richard Bourne and Bathsheba Hallett. Curiously, although Reverend Richard was a very prominent man in Plymouth Colony, there is no surviving record of his first marriage, or of the births of his first three sons.

At Sandwich on 26 October 1675, Elisha married Patience Skiff, daughter of James Skiff and Mary.

Elisha left a will in 1698 (Barnstable Probates, Book 3, page 39). It was presented for probate by Mr. and Mrs. Rowland Cotton on 3 March 1706/7. An inventory was made on 21 December 1706. This seems early, if he indeed died on that same day, as said on his gravestone. Elisha named his wife, Patience, and two sons, Nathan and Elisha, and mentioned (but did not name) his five daughters. Patience and his son Nathan were to be joint executors.

Elisha died at Sandwich 21 December 1706 and was buried in the Old Sandwich Burying Ground.

Patience Skiff was born at Sandwich on 25 March 1652, seventh of nine children of James Skiff and Mary.

Patience died intestate, but possessed of sufficient estate to require probate (Barnstable Probates, Book 3, page 472). This was dated 6 August 1717, and said:

Whereas Mrs. Patience Bourne Widow Relict of Mr. Elisha Bourne late of the town of Sandwich died Intestate and was seized and possessed of circa 100 pounds, 14 shillings. Now Know ye that we: Nathan Bourne the only son of the sd Patience Bourne, Deceased, John Pope with the Eldest daughter (then deceased, with children), William Bassett, Jr. and Abigail Bassett his wife another daughter of sd Deceased, Seth Pope and Hannah Pope his wife, another daughter, Micha Blackwell & Bathsheba Blackwell another daughter, all of the town of Sandwich, John Parsival & Mary Parsival his wife, another daughter—

“It being some time since she Deceased being the twenty fifth day of October last past.” This date of death, 25 October 1716, is confirmed by the inscription on her remarkably well preserved gravestone in the Old Sandwich Burying Ground.

Col. William Bassett was born circa 1656, presumably at Sandwich, Massachusetts, the younger of two children of William Bassett Jr. and Mary Rainsford. On 9 October 1675 at Sandwich, he married Rachel Willison of Taunton, Massachusetts.

William Bassett, then Captain and later Colonel, wrote an interesting letter to Gov. Thomas Hinckley of Plymouth Colony on 23 September 1689. He was then with Maj. Benjamin Church, near Casco (now Portland), Maine, on an expedition against French and Indians. He describes a seven hour skirmish with about four hundred enemy Indians (exaggerated?) indicating that the English were accompanied by friendly Indians. This and subsequent letters, found among the published *Hinckley Papers*, give quite a detailed account of this little campaign which resulted in lots of searching but little further fighting.

Colonel William was one of the most prominent men of Sandwich, being Chief Marshal of Plymouth Colony 1689–1692 while it was being merged into Massachusetts Bay Colony. He was Sheriff of Barnstable County 1692–1699; made colonel in 1707; Judge of the Court of Common Pleas of Barnstable County, 1710 and 1711; Justice of the Peace 1715 and 1717; Town Clerk 1717 until his death in 1721; representative from Sandwich to the Plymouth Colony Court for many years; and register of Probate for Barnstable County. He had an uncommonly fine handwriting, in view of which it is unfortunate that almost no written record of his family has survived—if it was ever made.

Colonel William reportedly died at Sandwich on 29 September 1721, but did not make a will, although he was Register of Probate!

Rachel Willison/ Williston is, as far as I know, mentioned in only one surviving record. That was of her marriage to Col. William Bassett in which she is said to have been of Taunton. Some have guessed that she was born in Taunton circa 1656, but cite no evidence. She was presumably the mother of William's children, but the birth record of daughter Mary, in the Sandwich Town Records, only names the father.

There is no record of her death that I have found. One Internet site suggests, without evidence, that she died on 12 December 1744, and was a daughter of Thomas Williston.

Edward Page Sr. was born circa 1625, almost certainly in England. This is a guess, since we have no record. It is based mostly on the following record, which we assume referred to our Edward. On 29 April 1641—"Edward Page, it being testified that his master confessed he was not to be turned over, nor serve his wife if he dyed, the said Edwd was freed by the Courte." I believe that this implies that Edward was brought to New England at the expense of someone else, to whom he was then indentured for a time.

At Boston circa 1652, Edward married Elizabeth Bushnell, daughter of Edmund Bushnell and Martha Hallor, and step-daughter of William Beamsley, who has been frequently but erroneously called her father.

Edward lived in Boston next door to William Beamsley. As Elizabeth's husband, he shared equally with William's other children and stepchildren, in the distribution of William's estate. Like William, he became a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, joining in 1661.

He appears to have come "in service," indicating that he could not afford to pay for his own passage. The circumstances of his later life (ownership of a home in Boston, membership in the Artillery Company) seem to indicate a fair degree of prosperity. He was a can cooper by trade, as was his son Edward, but I have no idea whether that occupation was a remunerative one.

We have no direct record of his death, but a Boston tax list of March 1690/91 states that he was then dead. He was alive for a tax list of 1687. He appears to have left no probate records.

Elizabeth Bushnell was baptized at Horsham, Suffolk, England, on 2 April 1632, third of five children of Edmund Bushnell and Martha Hallor.

Elizabeth was brought to New England in 1635. Her father went into service with the Winthrop family, and died soon, about a year after his arrival at Governor Winthrop's Ten Hills Farm. The Governor thought enough of Goodman Bushnell to come to Boston to see that he got a decent burial. Her mother having soon remarried, Elizabeth was brought up in the family of her stepfather, William Beamsley.

She and Edward had seven children, the first of whom died within a year. Elizabeth's last child was born in January 1672/3.

I have found no death record for Elizabeth. Subsequent generations of the Page family were buried at Copp's Hill, but there seem to be no headstones for Edward Sr. or Elizabeth.

Robert Thornton was born in England circa 1624. He came to New England on the *Elizabeth* in 1635, aged eleven.

He settled first in Boston, and being a carpenter, may have worked in Walter Merry's shipyard.

For some reason, as yet undisclosed, Robert moved to Taunton where he was shown by Plymouth Colony records to have been a Surveyor of Highways on 3 June 1656. After Walter Merry drowned on 28 August 1657, Robert returned to Boston to marry Walter's widow, less than two months later, on 13 November 1657. Her maiden name was Mary Doling.

Robert and Mary lived in Boston at least through September 1663, when their daughter Rebecca was born there; but were back in Taunton by 12 October 1667 with Robert's stepson, Walter Merry Jr. From 1675 through 1683, Robert is called "of New Plymouth" or "Taunton" in numerous Suffolk County deeds involving property of Walter Merry Sr. ("New Plymouth" was the formal name of Plymouth Colony, which at that time included the town of Taunton.)

We have no record of Robert's death. We know only that he was still alive in 1683.

Mary Doling was born, we guess, circa 1635, probably in England. This guess at a birth year would make her eighteen at her first marriage, but only twenty-eight at the last recorded birth of a child. It seems likely that she and Robert had more children in Taunton, but the lack of probate records for the family leaves us in doubt. Mary was still alive in 1683, and still Robert's wife.

John Jepson Sr. was born in England circa 1610, but we know no more than this. John had arrived in New England by July 1639, for on 2 July he was granted "a great Lott at the Mount [Wollaston] for three heads..." This implies that he had a wife and child at that time, but we never hear of them again. By May 1647, John had purchased a house and lot in Boston.

At Boston, on 7 May 1656, when he was already middle-aged, John married again, Emm who was the widow of John Coddington.

He was still in Boston on 29 June 1663, when he was fined for breach of town order. Perhaps feeling that Boston was a bit too confining, he moved for a while to the frontier town of Mendon, being received as an inhabitant there on 24 March 1664/5. It seems likely that two of his children were born there. By 11 March 1671/2, he was back in Boston, to receive a license as a seller of leather there.

Although he sold his land in Mendon in 1673, he may have retained an interest in the affairs of that town, and may have been the John Gepson who was a member of the garrison at Mendon in 1675, during King Philip's War.

John was back in Boston after the war, and was accused of excessive drinking there on 24 April 1676. He seems, from a succession of land transactions, to have stayed continuously in Boston until his death. He died intestate in Boston shortly before 29 March 1688, when letters of administration on his estate were granted to his widow Emm and to his eldest son John.

Emm Unknown. To judge by the dates of her marriages and of the births of her first and last children, Emm was probably born circa 1630–33, but whether in England or New England we cannot know.

There seems to be no record of Emm's maiden name, but we are indebted to her first marriage, to John Coddington, for a most definitive and impeccably documented account of the first few generations of the Jepson family, by John Insley Coddington in *TAG*.

After John's death, Emm became a midwife, and frequently testified before the Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts, in cases involving charges of fornication.

She still lived in Boston on 12 February 1699/1700, then joining with her children John, William and Emm Jepson to sell a lot.

She died in Boston and was buried there on 26 September 1702.

Richard Gardner was born in England, some say in Surrey circa 1619. We know nothing of his ancestry or siblings.

He was in New England by 1648 when he obtained land in Woburn. There he married, 18 October 1651, Anna Rolfe, daughter of Henry and Honour Rolfe, and then widow of Thomas Blanchard. He lived in nearby Groton, Massachusetts, for about ten years, then moved back to Charlestown.

The will of Richard Gardner of Charlestown, Massachusetts, yeoman, was dated 15 March 1696/7, he being well stricken in years. It named his only son Henry, Henry's son John, and daughter Hannah Coddington. "I give to the two Children of my Daughter Ruth Gypson (viz) Ruth & Anna besides what I have formerly given in a deed of gift to yr ffather as his wife's portion five pounds to be payd by my Executors & to be equally divided between them when they come to ye full age of eighteen years." The will was proved on 6 June 1698.

Richard died in Charlestown on 29 May 1698 and is buried at Groton, where his handsome gravestone can still be seen.

Anna Rolfe was born circa 1626, in England, presumably at Melchitt Park, Wiltshire, from which her uncle John Rolfe is recorded to have come. She had a brother John, from whom we are also descended.

She married first, in Charlestown, Thomas Blanchard. Thomas died on 14 February 1650/1, just a few weeks after Anna's mother had died at the Blanchard home. Anna and Thomas are reported to have had two children, but I have seen no record of that.

Anna remarried six months later, and she and Richard had ten children, six in Groton, and four later, in Charlestown.

Anna was not mentioned in Richard's will, dated March 1696/7, and so had presumably died before that time, in that part of Charlestown which is today Winchester.

Ens. Daniel Warner Jr. was born in Ipswich, Massachusetts, circa 1640, first of eight children of Daniel Warner Sr. and Elizabeth Denne.

In 1657 he was witness in a lawsuit that sheds interesting light on the church discipline of the time. Daniel had furnished a slip of paper to Edmond Bridges, who wrote a note on it during the sermon at Rowley. Caught in this irreverent act, Edmond was fined by the court.

He was a blacksmith, who married at Ipswich, 23 September 1668, Sarah Dane, daughter of John Dane Jr. and Eleanor Clark. His marriage took place just two weeks after the death of his father, whose bequests to him left Daniel well set up to take a wife and start a family.

Daniel and Sarah “took the covenant” of the Ipswich church on 12 April 1674, and Daniel took the freeman’s oath in September 1682.

Daniel Jr. died in Ipswich 24 November 1696. He died intestate, his eldest son Daniel being administrator. His sons Philemon and John split the house lot, on which Philemon is thought to have lived (until in 1710, he moved to Gloucester). When Daniel died, his son John and daughter Mercy were underage and required guardians: John Dane for John Warner and Philemon Dane for Mercy Warner.

Shortly after Ensign Daniel’s death, on 28 February 1697/8, his children and all the other surviving heirs of his father joined in a genealogically helpful conveyance to their young relative, Michael Farley.

Sarah Dane was born in Ipswich, Massachusetts, circa 1645, perhaps the third of six children of John Dane Jr. and Eleanor Clark.

Sarah and Daniel had ten children, the first stillborn, and the last born when Sarah was about forty-one. She died in Ipswich 28 December 1701.

Simon Tuttle was christened on 10 January 1630/1 at St. Albans, Hertfordshire, England, second of five children of John Tuttle and Joan Antrobus. He came to New England with his parents as a boy of four years, on the *Planter of London* in 1635.

Although his father was often in Boston on business, Simon seems to have lived exclusively in Ipswich. He became a member of the Artillery Company in 1651, as his father had earlier in 1644.

He married circa 1663, when he was about thirty-two, in Ipswich, Sarah Cogswell, daughter of John Cogswell and Elizabeth Thompson. By that time, his father had returned to England, and died at his home in Carrickfergus, Ireland. It is not certain, but his mother may also have died before Simon married.

Before his marriage, Simon had become well known in the courts of Essex County. The account of this family in the highly reliable and informative *Dawes-Gates Family Lines* includes an amusing account of his long-running disputes over wandering horses. He was a litigious man, and not as successfully business-like as his parents had been. In or before March 1664 “he had very freely and publicly criticized the colonial government, the military officials, the laws and law makers, winding up with the statement that it would be better to live in Turkey than in the colony.” Complaints were made, and he was called before the General Court in Boston to apologize. This he did in abject terms, and by the time the whole affair had been settled to the satisfaction of the courts, Simon seemed a changed and much quieter citizen. I suspect that his wife may be due credit for settling him down.

Simon was buried at Ipswich, Massachusetts, on 11 January 1691/2. He died intestate, the widow Sarah administering his estate which was valued at 863 pounds, a healthy sum.

Sarah Cogswell was born in Ipswich, Massachusetts, circa 1645, last of twelve children (nine daughters) of John Cogswell and Elizabeth Thompson. Ten of her siblings were born and baptized at Westbury Leigh, Wiltshire, England.

Sarah was evidently a strong woman, having borne twelve children in twenty-two years, and lived another forty-six years after that. She lived to know her grandchildren and great-grandchildren. She died at Ipswich 24 January 1731/2.

Edmund Mountfort was born circa 1627 in Bescot, Staffordshire, England. He came to New England in 1656, during the Cromwellian period in England. In 1980, William Haines of NEHGS sent me a collection of pedigree charts, purporting to show Edmund's ancestry all the way back to the Battle of Hastings. This indicated a high probability that the Mountforts were Royalists during the English Civil War. Family tradition said that he had to flee London "for political offenses."

He lived in Boston, and was a shopkeeper of some means.

Edmund made his will on 2 April 1691, as Edmund Sr. His wife Elizabeth was to execute. The legatees were wife Elizabeth, brothers Henry and Benjamin and eldest son Edward. [Note: I think this is confused. I need to check it.]

He died in Boston on 14 August 1690. His tombstone is inscribed, "Here lyeth buried ye body of Edmund Mountfort, Senior, brother to Henry and Benjamin Mountfort. Left issue six sons and two daughters. Died in ye 61 year of his age."

Elizabeth Farnum was probably born in England circa 1634, second of five children of John Farnum and Elizabeth. Her birth year is estimated from her deposition, aged fifty-seven, made on 28 January 1691.

Her first husband was Joshua Carwithy, whom she married in Boston on 6 August 1657. They had at least one daughter, Elizabeth, but Joshua died young, probably in August 1663. (His inventory was presented on 1 September 1663.) Probably quite soon thereafter, Elizabeth married Edmund Mountfort and had nine children with him.

She died in Boston 22 August 1703.

Joseph Cock was probably born in England circa 1633. An older Joseph Cocke, born circa 1608, came to New England in 1635, as a servant to Roger Harlakenden, but no record connects our Joseph to him.

The earliest New England record we have for him puts him at Boston on 10 November 1659, when he was married to Susannah Upshall, daughter of Nicholas Upshall and Dorothy Capen, by Mr. Tho. Danforth.

He was a master mariner, commander of the ship *Mary* in 1665 and 1666. He and Susannah inherited a half interest in Nicholas Upshall's Red Lyon Inn.

Joseph made his will on 15 January 1678/9, proved 28 January 1678/9. His will had bequests to wife Susannah, son Nicholas, and daughters Susannah, Elizabeth and Mary. Since Mary's birth was not recorded in Boston, this will is important in proving her descent from Joseph and Susannah.

Susannah Upsall was born at Dorchester, Massachusetts, on 7 February 1639/40, second of five children of Nicholas Upshall and Dorothy Capen.

She and Joseph had seven children, three of whom, all named Joseph, died before their father. Curiously, there were no births recorded for them during the first five years of their marriage. Perhaps Susannah had miscarriages. Joseph may have been away at sea for part of this time, but there is no record of his taking unusually long voyages.

After Joseph's death, Susannah took a second husband, Elder Joseph Bridgham.

She died at Boston 11 July 1696.

Lt. Samuel Ruggles was born circa April 1629 in Nazing, Essex, England, the fourth and last child of Thomas Ruggles and Mary Curtis. He was brought to New England by his father in 1637.

He married, first, at Roxbury 10 January 1654, our ancestress Hannah Fowle, daughter of George Fowle of Charlestown. After the death of Hannah in 1669, he married, second, at Roxbury 26 May 1670, Anna Bright. Lieutenant Samuel had eight children by Hannah and six by Anna. However, only two of his children by Hannah Fowle survived to adulthood.

I believe he was the Samuel Ruggles described here: "Samuel Ruggles, going up the meeting hill, was struck by lightning, his two oxen and horse killed, a chest in the cart, with goods in it, burnt in sundery places, himself coming off the cart, carried twenty feet from it, yet no abiding hurt." This happened on 25 March 1667.

Lieutenant Samuel was licensed "to keepe a house of publike Entertainment & to Sell wine, beare & Sider by retail till Aprill Court next ..." on 23 January 1672/3.

He was many years selectman and representative of Roxbury and captain of the militia company. He was active in the overthrow of Governor Andros in 1689.

He died in Roxbury 15 August 1692 and was buried at the Eustice Street Burying Ground.

Hannah Fowle was born, probably in England, and brought to Concord, Massachusetts, as a very young child. We have no certain information about her birth.

She had eight children in fifteen years, and suffered through the deaths of four of them. Two more died very soon after her own death. Hannah died in Roxbury 24 October 1669.

Rev. John Woodbridge was born at Stanton, Wiltshire, England, circa 1612/3, son of Rev. John Woodbridge and a Miss Parker.

He was sent to Oxford for his education, but left the university when the oath of conformity was required.

He came first to New England with his uncle, Rev. Thomas Parker, in 1634, settling at Newbury as soon as that town was established.

In 1639, presumably at Newbury, he married Mercy, daughter of Gov. Thomas Dudley and Dorothy Yorke. The governor encouraged John to complete his education for the ministry. This he did privately, apparently feeling that Harvard was not yet ready to do the job.

He was ordained 24 October 1645, as the first minister at Andover, Massachusetts. He returned to England in 1647, in the middle of the Civil War, and stayed through the Commonwealth period. He was then minister at Andover, Hampshire, and at Barford St. Martin's, Wiltshire.

On 27 July 1663, he arrived back in Boston, to remain in New England. Thus we encounter the unusual fact that his early children were born in New England, and his older ones, including our ancestress Martha, in old England.

After his return to New England, he was able to settle again at Newbury, serving as assistant to his aged uncle, Rev. Robert Parker. He served ably, but eventually was separated from the church by some disagreement over matters of church discipline. He continued to live honorably in Newbury, until his death. His grief over the death of his wife, to whom he had been wed for fifty-two years, was reportedly very deep. He had the consolation of seeing three of his sons and two sons-in-law follow him in the ministry.

Reverend John was definitely a man of note, and was the subject of many biographies, the most complete being that in Cotton Mather's *Magnalia*.

He made his will on 12 September 1691; it was proved 27 March 1695, bequeathing to eleven of his children, including our Martha (Dudley) Ruggles, and to many grandchildren. He died at Newbury, 17 March 1694/5.

Mercy Dudley was born on 27 September 1621 at Yardley-Hastings, Northamptonshire, England, last of six children of Gov. Thomas Dudley and Dorothy Yorke.

She and Reverend John had eleven (or twelve?) children over the course of twenty-two years. Eleven of these survived her. She died at Newbury, Massachusetts, on 1 July 1691.

John White Sr. does not seem to have attracted much attention from early genealogists. In *NEHGR* October 1898, Hon. Thomas J. Lothrop of Brookline, Massachusetts, tells us only that John was in Watertown as early as 1639, and moved to Muddy River (now Brookline, Massachusetts) in 1650.

He married (perhaps at Watertown and presumably before 1642, when his first child was born) Frances, about whom we know almost nothing.

He is mentioned twice in the published records of Suffolk County Court, both times as John White Sr. On 30 July 1678, he was dismissed from ordinary military training "hee keeping Six good fire armes with appurtenances & ammunition proportionable to bee alwaies in a readines for the Country's Service—." In March 1679/80 he and others were ordered to lay out to Mary Sheers her one third part of land in Roxbury, sometime belonging to her former husband Peacock.

John made a will on 13 April 1691, naming wife Frances, sons John, Joseph and Benjamin; and grandchildren John, Benjamin, Mary (dau of son Joseph) and Mary (dau of John). John died at Brookline, Massachusetts, on 15 April 1691, just two days after he made his will.

Frances Unknown. Frances is known to us only by her given name and Thomas Lothrop's assertion that she died in 1695, presumably at Muddy River.

William Curtis was baptized 12 November 1592 at Nazeing, Essex, England, son of Thomas Curtis and Mary Camp.

He married first at St. Margaret Moses, London, on 3 December 1615, Mary Rawlins, who died soon after bearing her first child. He married second at Nazeing on 6 August 1618 our ancestress Sarah Eliot, daughter of Bennett Eliot and Lettice Agar, and sister of Rev. John Eliot, "Apostle to the Indians."

William came to New England in *The Lion*, arriving Boston 16 September 1632, with wife Sarah and four children. His son William, of his first marriage, had come the year before, but died toward the end of 1634. William Sr. joined the church at Roxbury soon after he arrived, as member #37. It is suggested in *The History of Roxbury* that, "There can be little doubt that the influence of his brother-in-law (William) Curtis, was potent in drawing (Rev. John) Eliot from Boston, where he was so earnestly 'labored with' to induce him to remain."

The *Town of Roxbury* has a rather extended description of William's house, which was comparatively large and very sturdily built. It and much of its furniture evidently survived well into the nineteenth century.

William evidently survived a serious accident in 1644.

Soon after that one William Curtis of Roxbury was cast off from a cart of loggs vnto the ground with such violence, that his head & one side of his face were bruised, blood gushed out of his eare, his braine was shaken, he senseless diverse days, yet by degrees thro' God's mercy he recovered his senses, yet his cheeke drawne awry & p'altic [paralyzed?], but in a quarter of a yeare, he was pretty well recovered, to the wonder of all men.

In a testamentary deed dated 11 February 1669/70, William, noting that his older children had already received their portions and were well established, gave everything to his youngest son, Isaac, who was living with him, on condition that Isaac care for William and Sarah as long as they should live.

He died at Roxbury 8 December 1672.

Sarah Eliot was baptized at Widford, Essex, England, 16 January 1599/1600, the first of seven children of Bennett Eliot and Lettice Agar.

She joined the Roxbury church, of which her brother was the pastor, immediately after William, as member #38.

She and William had nine children. An excellent account of these is given in *The Ancestors of Peter Parker and Sarah Ruggles*, pp. 463–470.

Sarah died at Roxbury 26 March 1673.

John Polley was born circa 1618, according to his age in his death record. Presumably he came from England, but we have no record of that.

John Polley made a will 17 December 1686. He had seven daughters by his first wife and six daughters by his third wife. He had just one son, John Polley of Rehoboth.

He died at Roxbury 2 April 1689.

Susannah Bacon was born in England circa 1625, and was brought to New England with her parents on the *Increase* in 1635. She was called 10 years old on the passenger list, hence our estimate of her birth date.

The identification of Susanna Bacon as John's first wife (*Suffolk Deeds*, Vol. 12, p 357) comes from John when he said on 30 March 1670, "That I John Polle of Roxbury in the County of Suffolke of the Massachusetts Government in New England having formerly had to wife one Susanna the daughter of one George Bacon of Hingham..." John's other wives are clearly identified by contemporary records, so this must have been the first, whose name Susannah was often recorded.

Susannah joined the church at Roxbury 12 May 1650 and had her first two daughters baptized there on the same day, 2 June 1650. She went on to have seven daughters by John, dying when her last one was about two and a half years old. She died at Roxbury on 30 April 1664.

Lt. Samuel Craft was born at Roxbury on 12 December 1637, fifth of six children of Lt. Griffin Craft and Alice.

He married at Roxbury 16 October 1661 Elizabeth Seaver, daughter of Robert Seaver and Elizabeth Ballard.

He was a lieutenant in the Roxbury military company, a selectman of Roxbury many times, and in 1689 was one of those to take an inventory of all the real and personal estate of each Roxbury man.

He was one of the twelve to whom the “Mashamoquet purchase” in Pomfret, Connecticut, was granted in 1687, but he never went there to live. He was also one of the thirty-nine Roxbury persons who signed to settle in New Roxbury (Woodstock, Connecticut) in 1689–90, but he died before he could carry out this plan.

Samuel died intestate at Roxbury in 1691. A very complete description of the probate of his estate is given in *The Crafts Family*, an excellent genealogy written by James Monroe Crafts and William Francis Crafts in 1893.

Elizabeth Seaver was born at Roxbury and baptized at the Roxbury church on 19 November 1643, the fourth of seven children of Robert Seaver and his first wife, Elizabeth Ballard.

Elizabeth and Samuel had eleven children, the youngest of whom was about nine when her father died. Elizabeth outlived her husband by about forty years, and played an important role in the settlement of his estate and that of her father-in-law, who died only about a year before his son.

She died at Roxbury on 9 December 1731, old enough to have known her grandchildren and great-grandchildren. She was buried in the Eliot Street Cemetery, where her gravestone can still be read.

Elder Samuel Topliffe was born at Dorchester, Massachusetts, on 7 May 1646, the last of five children of Clemt Topliffe and Sarah.

On 5 October 1671, at Dorchester, he married Patience Somes, daughter of Morris Somes and Elizabeth Kendall.

Samuel was active in Dorchester town affairs, being constable, selectman and town clerk. He was also prominent in the Dorchester Church, being presiding elder.

He died at Dorchester 12 October 1722 “in the 77th year of his age.”

Patience Somes was born at Gloucester, Massachusetts, on 10 March 1652/3, the fourth of seven children of Morris Somes and Elizabeth Kendall.

The identification of Patience Somes as the wife of Samuel Topliffe hinges on a discovery by Mary Lovering Holman of an item in the October 1678 records of the Middlesex County Court: “Samuel Topliffe of Dorchester and Patience Somes [Soames] of Boston were published three times without opposition, 5 Oct 1671.” Why this should have been in Middlesex County Court when both Dorchester and Boston were in Suffolk County seems a mystery.

How Patience came to live in Boston, after growing up in Gloucester may be connected with the fact that her elder brother, John Somes, moved to Boston. Both of Patience's parents were still living in Gloucester at the time.

Patience lost a younger brother, Joseph, in the Great Swamp Fight of King Philip's War. Also, her sister Abigail was confined to Boston jail on charges of witchcraft in the summer and fall of 1693.

Patience died at Dorchester 8 September 1728, as "Relict Widow of Elder Samuel, in the 76th year of her age."

Corp. Isaac Fellows was born circa 1637, probably in Ipswich, Massachusetts, eldest of eight children of William Fellows and Mary Ayers. He married at Ipswich 29 January 1672/3 Joanna Boreman, daughter of Thomas Boreman and Margaret Offing.

Isaac was mentioned in his father's will, but always somewhat separately from his younger three brothers, who were named joint administrators. Whether this acknowledged some rift in the family, we cannot know. It may be that Isaac was still committed to military service at the time. Corporal Isaac served in Captain Willard's company in King Philip's War, and was credited to Ipswich on 24 July 1676.

He was once a surveyor of highways for Ipswich, but aside from a few land transactions, little more is known about him.

He died at Ipswich on 12 April 1721. An old family Bible, probably started by his son Jonathan, has survived in good condition. The family records in it have been printed in *NEHGR* 127 (April 1973), pp. 127–129.

Joanna Boreman was born circa 1650, probably in Ipswich, Massachusetts, fifth and last child of Thomas Boreman and Margaret Offing. About her birth date, we know only from her father's will that she was not yet twenty-two in December 1670. Many Internet sources assert that she was born in 1646 but give no source or reasoning.

When her mother made her will, proved in Ipswich Court on 30 May 1680, Joanna was mentioned as follows: "To my daughter ffellowes all my corse lining Sauing one shet and a spit and a chafing dish a Sarge gonne and one petticote and a Silk Scarfe and a hud and all the Lining she hath in hur hands of myne and one bead blancut and allso a pint pot..."

Both Joanna and her husband lived into their eighties. She died in Ipswich 20 March 1732.

John Dutch was born in Gloucester, Massachusetts, on 1 May 1646, the eldest of eight children of Robert Dutch and Mary Kimball.

He married, probably in Ipswich, Massachusetts, circa 1669/1670, Elizabeth Roper, daughter of Walter Roper and Susan. No marriage record has been found. However, Elizabeth was still called Elizabeth Roper in Salem Court in June 1669 and was called Elizabeth Dutch in Ipswich Court in May 1670.

John was, like his father and brother Robert, a sailor, taking goods to various ports on the New England coast. He was frequently a witness in the many court trials, through which his father attempted to get paid for his services to local merchants.

Walter Goodwin Davis, in *The Ancestry of Phoebe Tilton, 1775–1847, Wife of Capt Abel Hunt of Newburyport, Massachusetts* (Portland, Maine 1947), provides carefully researched chapters on the Dutch, Kimball and Roper families. It was he who identified the mother of Robert Dutch.

John died quite young in Ipswich on 5 November 1685, leaving his wife to administrate his intestate estate.

Elizabeth Roper was born circa 1647, presumably in Ipswich, third of five children of Walter Roper and Susan.

She and John had seven children, the youngest of whom was very young, if indeed he had been born when John died.

Elizabeth died of smallpox, according to Davis, and administration of her estate was granted to her brother John Roper on 31 March 1691. Elizabeth left a will, naming Susannah, John, Benjamin, Nathaniel and Hannah Dutch. *Essex Probate* 304, pp. 322, 41. (I need to see this! It sounds fishy to me.)

Francis Norwood is believed to have been born in England before 1636. Many authors have tried to connect him with the Norwoods of Leckhampton parish in Gloucestershire, but a comprehensive study of original sources by *DeBrett's Peerage* in England seems to disprove that connection.

He seems to have come to New England rather late, and to have settled first at Lynn, Massachusetts, circa 1657. He soon thereafter moved to Gloucester, where our first record of him reports his marriage on 15 October 1663, to Elizabeth Coldam, daughter of Clement Coldam and Mary Pierce.

He lived in Gloucester the rest of his life, at Goose Cove, where he acquired considerable property. He made his will on 23 January 1706, making careful provision for his wife and naming eight children, one of them deceased.

Elizabeth Coldam was born circa 1646, probably in Lynn or Gloucester, Massachusetts, the first of two children of Clement Coldam and Mary Pierce. We have no record of her birth, and I have guessed her birth year by making her forty-three when her last child was born.

Although her parents lived to a great age, she seems to have had only one sibling, which was rather unusual for those days. She and Francis had ten children, nine of whom lived to adulthood.

Elizabeth died at the home of her son Thomas, in Lynn, Massachusetts, on 3 August 1711.

Samuel Donnell was born circa 1646, probably in York, Maine, the last of nine children of Henry Donnell and Frances. Actually "York" did not yet exist as a town, the area being sparsely settled, mostly by fishermen such as Samuel's father. It seems possible that some of Samuel's siblings may have been born in England.

Samuel married Alice Chadbourne, daughter of Humphrey Chadbourne and Lucy Treworgy. The Chadbourne Family Association believes the wedding took place in Barnstable, Massachusetts, on 5 November 1677, although there is no record of it in Barnstable vital records. It would be interesting to know how two children of southern Maine and New Hampshire came to be in Barnstable just after King Philip's War.

As a young man, Samuel entered into the fishing business with his elder brother Thomas on Jewell Island in Saco Bay. Their father Henry had operated a fishing business there for many years, and claimed ownership of the island, although he had no deed to it. Later in life, Samuel was a shipwright, ship owner and innkeeper.

In the last days of King Philip's War, when the local Abenaki and Androscoggin Indians finally took arms against the English, there was an Indian raid on Jewell Island which has been the subject of extensive local legend. Of interest to us is the fact that our Samuel seems not to have been involved in that episode, so that he may indeed at that time have been on Cape Cod, where the war was essentially over.

Samuel Donnell was a very prominent man in York, being selectman for York in 1695/6; justice of the peace in 1701; moderator of the town meeting in 1710/1; royal councillor for William and Mary in 1700; and a representative to the General Court in 1690/91, 1700 and 1706.

Samuel made a will in 1718 and died on 9 March 1718. Samuel is buried in the Old Burying Ground at York. I have seen his gravestone and have a snapshot of it.

Alice Chadbourne was born in Kittery, Maine, circa 1661, fifth of seven children of James Treworgy and Catherine Shapleigh. The dates and places for Alice's birth and first marriage are taken from the website of the Chadbourne Family Association where they are presented without source or explanation. All we really know about Alice's birth is that she and her closest two sisters are called "my three little daughters" in her father's 1667 will and are declared to be under twelve then.

Alice and Samuel had seven children. After Samuel died, Alice was granted a license to keep a tavern that had been in the Donnell family for many years. She exercised this license for five years, then surrendered it to her son Nathaniel when she remarried.

Her second marriage was to the prominent Jeremiah Moulton in September 1723. Her name is inscribed on his gravestone in the Old York cemetery, but I suspect that the inscription of that stone was ordered long after her death, by someone who was better intended than informed. According to the stone, Alice died on 18 January 1744, but she was not mentioned in the 1731 probate of Jeremiah Moulton's estate, which makes the death date given by York vital records on 22 October 1727 seem more likely to be correct.

Capt. Steven Williams was born at Roxbury, Massachusetts, on 8 November 1640, the last of six children of Robert Wiliams and Elizabeth Stalham.

According to Dr. Edward H. Williams Jr. in his 1891 *Robert Williams of Roxbury and his Descendants*, Captain Stephen married at Roxbury in 1666 Sarah Wise, daughter of Joseph Wise and Mary Thompson. Curiously, there is no mention of this marriage in Roxbury vital records, but we do know that Stephen Williams and his wife Sarah Wise joined First Church in Roxbury on 5 April 1668. Also, the births of all his children were recorded at Roxbury.

Captain Steven was a farmer who inherited the family homestead because he had lived with, and cared for, his father and his uncle Nicholas there.

We know nothing about his military service, although he was of a prime age to have been an officer in King Philip's War. His title as captain is taken from his tombstone. He died at Roxbury 15 February 1719/20 and is buried in the old Roxbury Burying Ground. (The Eliot Street Cemetery?)

Sarah Wise was born at Roxbury 19 December 1647, third of twelve children of Joseph Wise and Mary Thompson. The evidence that she was the wife of Steven Williams comes from the record of their joining the Roxbury church.

Sarah had twelve children, and outlived seven of them. She supposedly died in 1728, though we have no record to prove that.

Ens. John Davis was born at Roxbury on 17 April 1651, first of five children of Tobias Davis and his second wife, Bridget Kinman.

He married at Dorchester on 14 January 1673 Mary Torrey, daughter of Philip Torrey and Mary Smith.

There was another, somewhat older, John Davis at Roxbury at that time. This John had a wife Marie, so it requires some care to avoid mixing the records of the two families.

Ensign John died at Roxbury on 11 March 1716/7.

Mary Torrey was born at Roxbury on 2 April 1654, last of three children of Philip Torrey and Mary Smith. She and John appear to have had only four children (perhaps only three) over forty-three years of marriage. She died at Roxbury 11 November 1719.

Lt. Samuel Williams was born at Roxbury on 15 April 1655, second of twelve children of Dea. Samuel Williams and Theoda Parke.

He married first, at Roxbury on 2 February 1679/80, our ancestress Sarah May, daughter of John May and Sarah Brewer. Quite late in life, after eight years as a widower, he married again at Roxbury, Dorothy Weld, daughter of Thomas Weld Jr. and Dorothy Whiting. He died at Roxbury 8 August 1735.

Sarah May was born at Roxbury on 8 September 1659, second of eight children of John May and Sarah Brewer. She had nine children with Lieutenant Samuel, and died about eleven years after the birth of the last of them. Her death occurred in Roxbury 29 December 1712.

Francis Grissell has origins and ancestry that seem shrouded in mystery. His surname was variously spelled, Grissell, Griswold, etc. In various works investigated by the Griswold Family Association, it is asserted that he was born circa 1610 in Warwickshire and was the eldest brother of three Griswolds who were early in Hartford and Wethersfield, Connecticut.

The earliest record which may refer to him places him at Providence Island, off the Mosquito Coast of Nicaragua, in 1635. In 1630, an English colony had been established there by a company of adventurers, headed by the Earl of Warwick, who thought the prospects for profits looked better there than in New England. The reference to a Francis Grissell is the following: "In 1635 Francis Grissell came to the company, asking that the cost of his transportation be remitted. He had gone to Providence Island on a contract with Samuel Rishworth with whom he spent his time without profit."

My speculation is that Francis left Providence Island soon thereafter, and migrated to Massachusetts Bay Colony, settling for a while in Cambridge, before moving the short distance to Charlestown.

Our next record of Francis refers to his purchase of a dwelling house, orchard and land on the western edge of Charlestown, from Richard Wilson of Boston, on 16 March 1649 (1648/9).

Francis made a non cupative will, presented 1 March 1652/3:

The Last Will of Frances Grissoll Lately deceased at Charlestowne spoken to his wife, while he was in his perfect health about three weeks before his Death which was the 2d of the 8th [Oct] 1652.

My husband thus spake unto me, that whereas he had formerly made his will, which was that I should enjoy al he had during my life time, after his decease, and after my decease that then it should be equally devided between his two Daughters, save only one Cow to be at my dispose,

with this he was not pleased, But he would that his eldest Daughter should have after my decease all the houseing and land, excepting only two acres that was not payd for lying in West feild, and that the eldest Daughter should pay to her Sister, his youngest Daughter the summe of ten pound, when the estate came into her handes.

Dated 1.2.1653. By me, Mary Bullward

Mary Unknown. Mary was born probably in England circa 1610. She married first our ancestor Francis Grissell, probably at Cambridge, Massachusetts, circa 1638.

She and Francis had three daughters, one of whom died in infancy. Another was named Mary in Cambridge vital records, but may have been the woman called Elizabeth in later life.

Shortly after Francis died in 1652, Mary married William Bullard, who seems to have been about sixteen years her senior. They apparently had no children. William and Mary moved to Charlestown, where William made his will in 1679, and where Mary died on 17 May 1685. They lived their last years with, or close to, Mary's daughter Hannah and her husband John Kent.

Isaac Chittenden was born in Kent, England, possibly in Wapping, circa 1625, son of Thomas Chittenden and Rebecca Bamfort.

He came with his parents and younger brother Henry on the *Increase* from London in 1635, to Scituate, Massachusetts.

He married at Scituate, April 1646, Martha Vinal, daughter of the widow Ann Vinal.

He was made freeman of Scituate in 1653, served as "rater" in 1667, to assess taxes for the support of the ministry, was frequently a deputy from Scituate to the General Court of Plymouth Colony. He was at times a tavern keeper at Scituate. In the early days of King Philip's War, Isaac was a member of the War Board.

When the Indians attacked Scituate on 20 May 1676, Isaac and Cornet Robert Stetson led the successful defense, having at their command mostly men over fifty or boys under sixteen. Isaac was the only Englishman killed in that battle.

Martha Vinal was reputedly born circa 1625 in Kent, England, the daughter of Steven Vinal and Ann. She came with her parents and two younger brothers to Scituate circa 1637. Her father was proposed as a freeman of Scituate on 5 March 1638/9, but he seems to have died soon thereafter, and her widowed mother became a proprietor of Scituate.

Martha was identified as Mary in her marriage record, but she was called Martha when she and her son Israel were granted papers of administration of the estate of her husband, on 1 November 1676. She and Isaac had seven children, the youngest of whom was a son, aged twelve when his father died. Probably he handled a musket during the defense of Scituate.

No one seems to have found a record of Martha's death. She was about fifty-one when her husband died, and probably did not remarry. (I need to search Plymouth Colony probate and land records to find when she was last recorded as being alive.)

Lt. **Isaac Buck** was born in England circa 1601 and supposedly came to Boston in October 1635 on the ship *Amitia*.

Isaac was the town clerk of Scituate for thirty years, and representative to the Plymouth Colony General Court in 1663, 1664 and 1665. He was lieutenant of the force of old men and children that repulsed the Indian attack on Scituate in April 1676. He then received ten pounds worth of land as a reward for his service on 21 July 1676.

In 1655 Isaac was chided by the General Court of Plymouth Colony, in connection with his duties as clerk of the trainband in these words, "Whereas wee are informed that Isacke Bucke, the new clarke of the said band, on your last day of training, when hee called the companie together, did unworthily demean himselfe..."

He died intestate, but a lengthy record of the administration of his estate shows that he had nine children. However, two predeceased him, and several others died not long after he did, so he did not leave a numerous progeny. What we know of his children has been mostly dug out of the probate records by Mrs. John E. Barclay of Whitman, Massachusetts, and reported in *TAG* 24, pp. 124–127.

After a careful review of all the material I have found on Lt. Isaac Buck and wife Frances, there are still many questions

Isaac was first of record in Scituate as being able to bear arms in 1643 and died there, intestate, in 1695. Frances was first named as wife of Lieutenant Isaac in the will of Ester Woodfield of Scituate on 27 May 1672. She was alive to be granted administration of Isaac's estate in 1696, but had died before the final settlement of probate, on 28 July 1701.

Lieutenant Isaac was a prominent man in Scituate, and many contemporary records tell of his career. However, no record that I have found allows an estimate of his birthdate. This seems astonishing, since he was town clerk of Scituate from 1665 until his death, and must have signed many documents in connection with that job. Also, as a man who lived in Scituate for over fifty years, he must have given many depositions to help settle questions of land ownership, stating his age, but I have found nothing of the kind.

The only verifiable clue we have about Frances is the will of John Marsh (usually spelled March in Charlestown records), in which he named, on 1 January 1655/6, a daughter Frances Buck, and a son Theophilus Marsh. There were several men surnamed Buck living in nearby Cambridge, who might have married Frances, but we have no record of that happening. There are many Charlestown records of Theophilus Marsh, who did not marry until 1664 or 1665, so he might have been born circa 1640.

How does it happen that we are so confident that we know the birth dates and places of Lieutenant Isaac and Frances? Savage, in his circa 1850 *Genealogical Dictionary*, doesn't hazard a guess. As far as I can tell, it all started with the assertion by Cornelius B. Harvey, in his 1889 book on the Buck Family, that Lieutenant Isaac sailed to Boston in October 1635, aged thirty-four on the passenger list, and that Frances, already his wife, followed two months later. This assertion was, typically for the period, undocumented, and no one has been able to confirm it. No such sailings are listed in Peter Coldham's recent book of passengers to colonial New England, which I take to be authoritative.

If Lieutenant Isaac and Frances really did come to Boston in 1635, I should expect them to be listed in *The Great Migration Begins*, which is being compiled by some of the most skillful and careful genealogists of our day. But they are not there.

There are some circumstantial tidbits that add to my doubts about the birthdates of Lieutenant Isaac and Frances. This couple had lots of children, at least ten, but there are no birth records for any of them. In *TAG* (Vol. 24, pp 104–108), Mrs. John E. Barclay made a heroic effort to assemble some dates for these children, and various descendants have offered undocumented guesses. There is some disagreement among these guesses for any given child, but the bulk of the guesses fall in the 1650s. If these guesses are close to the truth, and if the conventional belief that Frances and Isaac married in England (so before 1635) is correct, we are faced with a puzzle. How could a couple be childless for fifteen or twenty years, and then spit out ten children in quick succession?

Other things make me seriously doubt that Lieutenant Isaac was born as early as 1601, as conventional wisdom would assert. This would have made him ninety-four when he died, but he was still the town clerk, and no contemporary commentator or subsequent historian ever mentioned his great age. Also he was credited with a large role, as lieutenant of militia, in the successful defense of Scituate during the great Indian raid of 20 May 1676 and received a substantial reward from Plymouth Colony for his services. Does this sound like the work of a seventy-five-year-old man? Admittedly, the defense of the town was left up to old men, boys and probably women, but Lieutenant Isaac's close friend and collaborator, Isaac Crittenden, was among those old men, and he was only fifty-two. (Note that Gen. James Cudworth of Scituate, who was frequently described as being old in 1676, was not born until 1604.)

Does anyone out there share my misgivings, and have any idea how to remove them? The only thing I can think of is a page-by-page search of Plymouth Colony land records, looking for a deposition that states his age on a given date. This would be pretty grim work, because those who gave depositions are not listed in the deed book index unless they were grantee or grantor.

He was a blacksmith.

Frances Marsh was supposedly born in England circa 1615. (See my doubts, expressed under Lieutenant Isaac above.)

According to Cornelius Harvey, in his 1889 *The Buck Family*, Frances and Isaac were married in England, and Frances followed Isaac to New England in December 1635.

We have no record of the births or baptisms of any of her children.

John Adams “of Cambridge” is of uncertain origin, or was so when Andrew N. Adams, author of the great work, *Henry Adams of Braintree*, carefully surveyed the divergent opinions known to him in 1898. Some said he was English, and others said Scottish. Dr. James Savage, in the *Genealogical Dictionary*, wrote as follows: “That he was son of Henry, an amiable credulity would assume, is highly improbable...” (I love his phrase “an amiable credulity.”)

From here, I quote a bit from Andrew Adams.

John Adams of Cambridge was a millwright, and was resident in Menotomy about 1650, with his wife “Anne” and eldest daughter “Rebecca,” who was born before coming to America. He was admitted as a freeman in 1666. He made his will June 1, 1705–6, and died not long thereafter at an advanced age.

Anne Unknown. Anne was presumably born in England, and married there circa 1648. She had children at least until circa 1664. That would suggest that she was born after about 1620, probably between 1620 and 1630. We have no idea of her ancestry.

Anne and John had eight children, two of whom died young. Anne lived about fifty years after the birth of her last child, and so would have known her grandchildren and probably some great-grandchildren.

Anne was still alive in 1714 (thus quite old) when she and her son John, as executors of her husband's estate, deeded land in Charlestown to her grandson Joseph. She probably died soon thereafter, but we have no record of that event.

Thomas Eames was born circa 1618, presumably in England. We have no record of birth or baptism, but he gave a deposition in 1652, saying that he was about thirty-four. He is reputed to have come to New England by 1634, but recent attempts to confirm this have failed. By frequent changes of residence, Thomas indicated that he came on his own, rather than as a member of a group.

He lived in Dedham by 1640, having received land there on the "great island" in September of that year. He sold that parcel to our ancestor Robert Ware on 25 March 1642. He also signed the *Dedham Covenant* as number eighty-two, but the date of his signing is somewhat uncertain. He married first, Margaret, presumably in Dedham, and they had three children.

He is supposed to have served in the Pequot War of 1637 (*NEHGR* 89: 172).

By 1652, Thomas was living in Medford, practicing and teaching the arts of brickmaking and bricklaying.

His wife Margaret died circa 1660, and on 12 July 1663 at Cambridge, he married our ancestress Mary Blanford, daughter of John and Mary Blanford, and widow of Jonathan Padlfoot. (Just before this he had moved to Cambridge.) On 10 February 1664 he moved again, to Sudbury. Finally, he built a spacious home and barn in what is now Framingham. To add to the complexity of all these moves, he attended church in Sherborn and was active in the affairs of that town.

In 1670, Thomas was appointed by the General Court to lay out lands in Natick, for the use of the "Praying Indians" there.

In 1677, the General Court, "on sundry considerations them moving thereunto," granted Thomas two hundred acres "to be laid out in any free place." The considerations stemmed from Thomas's petition, accompanied by a detailed inventory which still survives, begging compensation for his losses when Indians burned his home and killed his wife and several children on 1 February 1675/6.

In 1679 Thomas, then a citizen of Sherborn, together with others from Sherborn and from Natick (the latter including some Indians) got permission of the General Court for a land swap between Sherborn and Natick.

From *Samuel Sewall's Diary* (pg. 47) we read, "January 25, 1680—1. Tuesday. Thos Eams drops down dead in the Morning at Mr. Pain's stable, as he and others saw Hay thrown before their Horses. He was come to Court about Sherborn Controversy with respect to their Meeting House, its Situation." Most published accounts say that he died in Sherborn or Framingham, but Judge Sewall's account shows that he was in Boston, intending to attend a meeting of the General Court, when his fatal attack occurred.

There is a memorial stone at the place where his home was burned by the Indians in King Philip's War, now at the corner of Mt. Wayte Avenue and Chautauqua Avenue in Framingham, about a mile from Framingham State College. My mother's cousin, Elizabeth Copeland, once took me to see it. Thomas was never given the title, "Mr.," but it is clear that he was a trusted and valued member of society, frequently entrusted with tasks that required skill and sensibility.

Mary Blanford was supposedly a daughter of John and Mary Blanford, but we have no proof of that. In fact, John Blanford made a will, in which he did not mention any wife or children. We get her maiden name from the record of her first marriage, at Cambridge, to Jonathan Padlfoot on 5 October 1652.

She and John had five children before John died in Sept 1661. Mary then married circa 1662, presumably at Cambridge, the widower Thomas Eames. She and Thomas had at least six children (two recorded at Cambridge, two at Sudbury and two at Framingham). Thomas claimed to have lost nine children (killed and captured) in the Indian raid on his home.

Mary was killed in the Indian raid, having thrown lye on the Indians. This happened on 1 February 1675/6.

Walter Allen was born in England circa 1601. We have no birth or baptism record, but get the same birth year from his deposition in 1677, and from the notice of his death. He came to New England from Bury Saint Edmunds, but we do not know that he was born there.

He was a hatter who settled first in Newbury, moved to Charlestown circa 1652, thence on to Watertown, and then to Weston, and finally back to Charlestown. The farm he bought in Weston had belonged to our ancestor Thomas Mayhew who had moved to Martha's Vineyard.

An interesting letter concerning Walter shows that he had come to Newbury, Massachusetts, before 7 February 1638/9. This was a letter to John Winthrop from Edward Rawson of Newbury. This letter gives us a peek into the workings of Puritan society, as it sought to protect its purity. In quoting it, I have modernized the spelling. To test yourself on the original spelling, consult pp. 97 and 98 of the *Winthrop Letters*.

RIGHT WORSHIPFUL SIR, Whereas there is one Walter Allen brother in law to Mr. Cutting come over from berrye (Bury St. Edmunds?) in old England hither this year, being licensed by your Worship to live in this jurisdiction; and hath bought a lot of one of our town; the men deputed by our freemen to order their affairs hearing of some scandalous reports of him and that he had no license to reside here, we sent for him to know, whether those reports were true or not viz: whether within five years past he had two bastards the one by a maid the other by another woman according to the report of his brother-in-law Goodman Ward of Layford, and who affirmed to a brother of our Church that so he had, and that he came over hither because he could no longer abide in berrye: He confessed that he had one bastard but denied the other affirming that he hoped he had made his peace with god therefore and doubted not but he could give sufficient testimony of his conversation since that time answerable to such profession of repentance by Mr. Ayres of Watertown; the town therefore remembering the law made in May 1637: and considering the godly intents thereof which was as well to keep out such whose lives were publicly profane and scandalous as those whose judgments were corrupt, least by the one the comfortable society of god's people might be disturbed, and by the other the judgments of god procured, for the preventing of which it pleased the Lord to move your hearts to enact the law ...

Mr Rawson then asked Governor Winthrop how to proceed and must have received advice favorable to Walter Allen, who remained peacefully in New England.

Wyman, in *Charlestown Genealogies and Estates*, asserted that Walter had three wives, the first of whom did not come to New England. His second wife, our ancestress, was Rebecca. When she died in August 1678, Walter remarried at a fairly great age. His third wife was Abigail Rogers who he married at Charlestown on 20 November 1678.

Walter made his will 19 February 1679/80, proved August 1681. The will had bequests to wife Abigail and sons Daniel, John and Joseph. He had a mansion house in Charlestown and a farm in Watertown (Wyman's *Charlestown*). He died at Charlestown 8 July 1681.

Rebecca Unknown. Rebecca was born, probably in England, circa 1625. She and Walter had five children, as far as we have record. The first of these was born in 1641 in Newbury, so they may have been married there, although we have no record.

Rebecca died at Charlestown, 7 August 1678, when her youngest child was probably about twenty-seven.

Zechariah Hill was born circa 1645, probably in Charlestown, Massachusetts, third of seven children of Abraham Hill and Sarah Long. We guess that birth place because his father sold his home in Charlestown in 1646.

Although he was probably raised in Malden, he lived most of his adult life in Charlestown. At Charlestown on 24 September 1668, he married Deborah Norton, daughter of Capt. Francis Norton and Mary Houghton. Zechariah died very soon thereafter, before 12 June 1672, leaving Deborah and three sons. He may have died before the birth of his last son, our ancestor Abraham.

Deborah Norton was the eldest of four children, all daughters, of Capt. Francis Norton and Mary Houghton. We have no birth record for her, but her parents were living in Charlestown, Massachusetts, at the time of her birth.

Deborah had three children by Zechariah. After his death, she married Matthew Griffin, who became a soldier in King Philip's War on 2 June 1669.

Various authors assert, without proof, that Deborah died in 1698. It seems likely that she had children by Matthew Griffin, but we have no record as yet.

Timothy Cooper Jr. was born at Lynn, Massachusetts, circa 1651, fourth of six children of Timothy Cooper Sr. and Elizabeth.

On 2 June 1669 at Groton, Massachusetts, he married Sarah Morse, daughter of Joseph Morse and Hester Peirce of Watertown.

Timothy was killed in an Indian raid on Groton in King Philip's War, 2 March 1675/6.

Sarah Morse was born, probably at Watertown, Massachusetts, circa 1649, sixth of seven children of Joseph Morse and Hester Peirce. Her birth and that of her younger sibling are not recorded at Watertown. All authors, including the very reliable Robert Charles Anderson, seem certain that Sarah was a daughter of Joseph and Hester, but they don't identify the evidence.

Watertown and Groton are quite close together, but it is not clear how Sarah and Timothy met. Sarah and Timothy had four children, one of whom died in infancy. The youngest was born a couple of months after the Indian raid that claimed his father.

After Timothy's death, Sarah married Nathaniel Patten, and had three more children. Nathaniel died in 1725. [A Sarah Patten of Cambridge married Joseph Hamilton at Boston on 2 May 1728. Could that have been our Sarah, at age seventy-nine?]

William Cutter was born at Cambridge, Massachusetts, circa 1645, fourth of seven children of Richard Cutter and Elizabeth.

He was a housewright, miller and successful real estate speculator. When he died, his estate included land at Cambridge, Charlestown and Lexington.

He lived in that part of Cambridge subsequently known as Menotomy, along a stream that flows north into the Mystic River. This was the stream on which John Rolfe built a mill when he moved to Cambridge from Nantucket in 1670. This made it easy for William to meet and marry Rebecca Rolfe, daughter of John Rolfe and Mary Scullard. No record has been found for this marriage, or for the births of William and Rebecca's first two children, but it seems virtually certain that they were married in 1680, probably in Cambridge. They did not join the Cambridge church until 28 July 1700; a few weeks afterwards, all their children born by that time were baptized. When John Rolfe died in 1681, he gave William one acre of land on the mill property. In his latter years, William moved into a large, comfortable house, evidently built by John Rolfe in 1671.

William made his will at Cambridge on 1 June 1722. It is reproduced in full in *A History of the Cutter Family of New England* by Benjamin and William Richard Cutter. William died on 1 April 1723, aged seventy-four, and is buried beside his parents in the Harvard Square Burying Ground.

Rebecca Rolfe was born at Newbury, Massachusetts, on 9 February 1661/2, third of nine children of John Rolfe and Mary Scullard. She lived a couple of years at Newbury, then moved to Nantucket Island for about eight years, and finally moved to Cambridge with her parents and family circa 1671.

Rebecca and William had ten children, the youngest of whom was about eighteen when William died. After William, died Rebecca remarried to Dea. John Whitmore. She was past sixty when she did this, but lived to the great age of ninety. She died at Arlington, Massachusetts, on 13 November 1751.

John Harrington was born at Watertown on 24 August 1651, second of thirteen children of Robert Harrington and Susanna George.

John fought in King Philip's War, and in a battle at Northfield, 4 September 1675, was struck by two balls but survived.

He married at Watertown on 17 November 1681 Hannah Winter, daughter of John Winter Jr. and Hannah Cutler.

He died at Waltham, Massachusetts, on 24 August 1741 and was buried at Grove Hill Cemetery.

Hannah Winter was born at Cambridge 10 April 1665, eldest of nine children of John Winter Jr. and Hannah Cutler.

Hannah was only sixteen and a half when she married, and set right about having twelve children, including a final set of twins, all born within eighteen years.

Hannah died at Waltham on 17 July 1741, just five weeks before her husband. She was buried at Waltham, at Grove Hill Cemetery.

Roger Wellington was born in England circa 1609, and was in New England by 1637. He married Mary Palgrave, daughter of Dr. Richard Palgrave and Anne. We are not at all certain of the date or place of the marriage. G. Andrews Moriarty guessed that it took place circa 1637, which fits well with the first recorded birth of a child, in October 1638.

Roger left a will, made 17 December 1697, and proved 11 April 1698. Although a very early settler of Watertown, he was not admitted as a freeman until 18 April 1690. His will named sons John (executor), Joseph, Benjamin, Oliver and Palgrave (also executor); grandsons John Maddock and Roger Wellington; and granddaughter Mary Livermore. Roger died, probably at Watertown, on 11 March 1698/9.

Mary Palgrave was possibly born at Wymondham, Norfolk, England, circa 1619. This is thought because a Dr. Richard Palgrave was the father of a boy buried there in 1621/22. Mary's birth year is estimated to be 1619, but we have no record of her birth.

Presumably Mary came to New England with her parents in the Winthrop Fleet of 1630, and was raised in Charlestown, where her father was one of the earliest doctors of Massachusetts Bay Colony.

Mary and Roger had five boys and a girl, the first three births recorded in Watertown.

We have no record of Mary's death, knowing only that she was alive when her mother made her will in 1668. She had died by the time Roger made his will in 1698. She was survived by all her children, except perhaps her daughter Mary.

Capt. Thomas Straight was born circa 1619, presumably in England. We have no record of his birth, but he deposed in 1666 when aged about forty-seven.

He got land in Watertown, Massachusetts, circa 1644, and was admitted freeman, having taken the oath of allegiance in 1652.

We have no record of his marriage, but know that at a court of 1651 he acknowledged receipt of his wife's share of her father's estate. His wife was Elizabeth Kemball, daughter of Henry Kemball and Susanna.

He was consistently called "Captain" Thomas Straight in those few records we have found, but no record proves whether he was a mariner or a militiaman.

He made a noncupative will 4 October 1681, providing for his wife, for daughters Susanna and Elizabeth, and for son Thomas. He died on 22 November 1681.

Elizabeth Kemball was baptized on 1 November 1629 at Mistly, Sussex, England, daughter of Henry Kemball and Susan Stone.

She was identified as a four-year-old when brought to New England with her parents and her half brother Richard Cutting on the *Elizabeth* in 1634.

She and Captain Thomas apparently had only three children, the first not until they had been married about seven years. This lack of productivity (by the standard of the times) evidently had no ill effect on the health of Elizabeth, who lived to be eighty-eight. She died at Watertown on 1 January 1718/9.

Maj. William Bradford was born at Plymouth, Massachusetts, on 17 June 1624, first of three children of Gov. William Bradford and Alice Carpenter.

He became a very prominent military and political leader of the colony, being Deputy to the Plymouth General Court in 1657; Assistant, 1658–1681; Deputy Governor of Plymouth Colony 1682–1686 and 1689–1691; treasurer of the colony 1679–1685 and 1689–1691; one of Gov. Edmund Andros's (unpopular) council in 1687; and (after Plymouth Colony was swallowed up by Massachusetts Bay in 1691), a councillor of Massachusetts Bay 1692–98.

He was also the chief military officer of Plymouth Colony during King Philip's War. Also, he was commander-in-chief of Plymouth forces in the Great Swamp Fight, where he was reportedly seriously wounded but recovered.

He married three times, first to our ancestress Alice Richards, daughter of Thomas Richards and Welthian Loring. He and Alice had ten children before she died in December 1671. The identity of his second wife has never been absolutely proven, but a very persuasive hypothesis was offered in 2001, asserting that she was Sarah, the widow of Francis Griswold of Norwich, Connecticut.

William and Sarah had just one child, and Sarah died either in childbirth or soon thereafter. He finally married, circa 1677, Mary Wood, by whom he had four sons. Mary and fourteen of his fifteen children survived him.

On 29 June 1703, Maj. William Bradford made a long and interesting will, providing for wife Mary, eight sons, six daughters (all married) and two grandsons. The will shows that he had a large and interesting library, many military accoutrements and parcels of land all over Plymouth County and even in Connecticut. He died at Plymouth on 20 February 1703/4.

Alice Richards was baptized at Pitminster, Somersetshire, England, on 9 April 1629, fourth of nine children of Thomas Richards and Welthian Loring. She came to New England with her parents in 1633, living for about six years in Dorchester, and then settling in Weymouth, Massachusetts. I don't know how she met her husband, but note that Weymouth is not far from Plymouth, and that both families were well connected and probably enjoyed more mobility than most.

Alice had ten children in eighteen years of marriage and appears to have died in her tenth childbirth. She died at Plymouth 12 December 1671.

John Rogers Jr. was born at Duxbury, Massachusetts, circa 1640, eldest of four children of John Rogers Sr. and Anna Churchman.

On 16 November 1666 at Duxbury he married our ancestress, Elizabeth Pabodie, daughter of William Pabodie and Elizabeth Alden. After the death of Elizabeth, circa 1678, he married on 21 October 1679 at Hingham, Massachusetts, Hannah Hobart, then widow of John Browne. Hannah died in 1691, and John married third, Marah Cobham, then the Widow Browning.

John Jr. was a merchant, who moved around a lot, living in Duxbury, Boston, Taunton, Bristol and Barrington. He evidently became blind late in life.

He left no will, but a very informative petition was filed on 30 August 1732, asking the court to appoint administrators. Those appointed were Perez Bradford of Milton, Massachusetts, and William Richmond and Nathaniel Searle, both of Little Compton, Rhode Island. John Jr. died in Barrington, Rhode Island, on 28 June 1732.

Elizabeth Pabodie was born at Duxbury on 24 April 1647, second of thirteen children of William Pabodie and Elizabeth Alden. She was also a sister of our ancestress Priscilla Pabodie.

Elizabeth died circa 1678, soon after the birth of her fifth child.

Elder Thomas Wiswall was born in England circa 1601. We have no birth record, but he deposed on 27 October 1663 that he was about sixty-two. Internet sources assert that he was baptized at Warrington, Lancashire, on 30 September 1601, but I have not seen the record.

Elder Thomas came to Dorchester circa 1635. Savage thought that he came with his wife Elizabeth and his eldest son Enoch. He and wife Elizabeth joined the Dorchester church in 1636. He was granted two acres there on 2 January 1637. He was a fence viewer and marker of cattle, a selectman in 1644, deacon of the church and elected to be first warden of the school in 1645. In 1655 he was still called Deacon Wiswall in Dorchester. In all this, he was closely associated with his brother John.

In 1656, he moved to Cambridge, deeding his homestead in Dorchester to his son Enoch. At Cambridge, he probably lived in the part called Cambridge Village, which became the independent town of Newton in 1664. Thomas's title comes from ordination as ruling elder of the church in Newton on 20 July 1664.

Savage says that Elder Thomas survived his wife Elizabeth and married again late in life. His second wife was Isabel Barbage, the Widow Farmer. We find no record of this marriage, but in his probate papers Thomas's widow is called Isabel.

Elder Thomas died intestate at Newton on 6 December 1683. Administration of his estate was given to his sons Enoch, Noah and Ebenezer. It is said, and seems most likely, that he was buried in the yard of the First Church, now called the Centre Street Church. A large First Settlers Monument was erected in that churchyard on 1 September 1852, bearing his name and those of the Rev. John Eliot Jr. and Dea. John Jackson. The fourth side lists some twenty other early settlers.

Elizabeth Unknown. Elizabeth was born in England, but we have no record. The *International Genealogical Index [IGI]* says her maiden name was Berbage, but gives no source. It also gives the date of her marriage to Elder Thomas Wiswall as 1632, which seems quite likely, but is unproved.

In New England, the last record showing Elizabeth to be alive is her 1657 approval of the deed of gift of the Dorchester homestead to her son Enoch. I have found no record of her death.

William Pabodie was born in England circa 1620, the youngest son (surviving in 1649) of John Pabodie and Isabel.

On 24 December 1644 at Duxbury, Massachusetts, William married Elizabeth Alden, daughter of John Alden and Priscilla Mullins.

William was town clerk of Duxbury for eighteen years and recorded the births of all his children there. He was a Deputy from Duxbury in 1659 and for most of the years until 1678. He was active in business and in other town affairs, leaving an unusually broad paper trail. In one event which provides a bit of social history, he was fined by the Plymouth court for "making a writing for the separating of William Tubbs from Marcy, his wife, in reference unto their marriage bond." I don't know whether divorce was simply prohibited, or whether William had just exceeded his authority in providing a divorce certificate without an order from the court.

Following many of the early Plymouth Colony families, William and his family moved south to Rhode Island, perhaps circa 1680.

He made his will on 13 May 1707 in Little Compton. It was proved in Bristol County on 1 March 1707/8, and is reproduced in *Mayflower Descendants*, Vol. 6, pages 129–135. William died in Little Compton, Rhode Island, on 13 December 1707, in his eighty-eighth year.

Elizabeth Alden was born at Plymouth near the beginning of 1624, eldest of ten children of the famous pilgrims, John Alden and Priscilla Mullins. Elizabeth had thirteen children in less than twenty-one years, but it did not seem to harm her health, since she lived to the age of ninety-three. She died in Little Compton 31 May 1717.

Elias Parkman Jr. was born at Dorchester, Massachusetts, on 3 November 1635, first of eight children of Capt. Elias Parkman and Bridger.

Elias married at Salem 13 October 1656 Sarah Trask, daughter of Capt. William Trask and Sarah.

In 1672, Elias bought a house, land and wharf in Boston. In 1684, he bought land near Merry's Point.

Like his father, Elias Jr. was a mariner. Unlike our Captains Abraham Copeland and Job Bradford, who sailed only up and down the Atlantic coast and into the Caribbean, Elias voyaged across the Atlantic. He made his will in London, England, on 6 August 1691. It was brought for probate by his widow on 6 March 1693.

Elias died at Wapping, London, on 18 August 1691.

Sarah Trask was born at Salem, Massachusetts, on 1 January 1634, eldest of six children of Capt. William Trask and Sarah.

Sarah had just five children, the first two born at Salem, and the latter three, after a five year's pause, at Boston. When Elias died in London, Sarah had to arrange for the probate of his estate in Boston.

Sarah died at Boston on 26 December 1696.

Alexander Adams was born at Colchester, Essex, England, circa 1614, the son and grandson of Henry Adams. He came to New England circa 1632 with Capt. Thomas Hawkins.

He was a shipwright, and was closely associated with Captain Hawkins and Elias Parkman. He built ships in Boston for many years and trained thirty apprentices, including his son-in-law, William Parkman, who took over the business when Alexander died.

At Boston in 1644 he married Mary Coffin, daughter of Peter Coffin and Joane Kember. Soon thereafter, he made his home on Merry's Point, buying a house that had been built by Walter Merry.

Alexander was admitted to First Church, Boston, on 31 May 1646, and was made freeman 10 May 1648. He was dismissed to the church at Dorchester on 10 December 1647, but soon returned to Boston.

Alexander joined the Ancient & Honorable Artillery Company in 1652, and was first sergeant there in 1656.

Alexander died on 17 January 1677.

Mary Coffin was born at Brixham, in Devonshire, England, circa 1620, the sixth of eight children of Peter Coffin and Joane Kember. She was brought to New England by her mother in 1640 or 1642.

After Alexander died in 1677, Mary remarried in 1679 to William Wasser. She died at Boston on 18 September 1691.

APPENDIX A

✿ Unfinished Chapter

Below is a list of names which were being considered by Rick for inclusion in a chapter about his eighth great-grandparents. The chapter was never written.

Edmund Sherman and Joan Makin

Matthew Mitchell and Susan Wood

David Phippen and Sarah

Robert Walker and Sarah Leager

Moses Wheeler and Miriam Hawley

Richard Butler and Elizabeth

Samuel Green and Jane Banbury

Judah Gregory and Sarah Burt

Sgt. Ephraim Wheeler and Ann

Giles Smith and Unknown

Daniel Frost and Elizabeth Barlow

Henry Jackson and Unknown

Thomas Hyatt and Elizabeth Russell

Nathaniel Seeley and Mary Turney

James Bennett and Hannah Wheeler

William Odell and Unknown

George Godwin and Ellen Smith

Thomas Sanford and Sarah

Daniel Silliman and Peaceable Eggleden

Cornelius Hull and Rebecca Jones

Samuel Treadwell and Ruth Wheeler

Nathaniel Burr and Sarah Ward

John Barlow and Abigail Lockwood

Samuel Wakeman and Hannah Goodyear

Ebenezer Hawley and Hester Ward

William Warriner and Joanna Scant

Samuel Wright and Eliethieth Burt

Isaac Sheldon and Mary Woodford

Tahan Grant and Hannah Palmer

APPENDIX B

✂ Pedigree Charts

Circle Pedigree Chart for Samuel Sterling Sherman

Circle Pedigree Chart for Mary Ware Allen

Four-Generation Pedigree Chart for Samuel Sterling Sherman

Four-Generation Pedigree Chart for Mary Ware Allen

Four-Generation Pedigree Chart for Joseph Allen



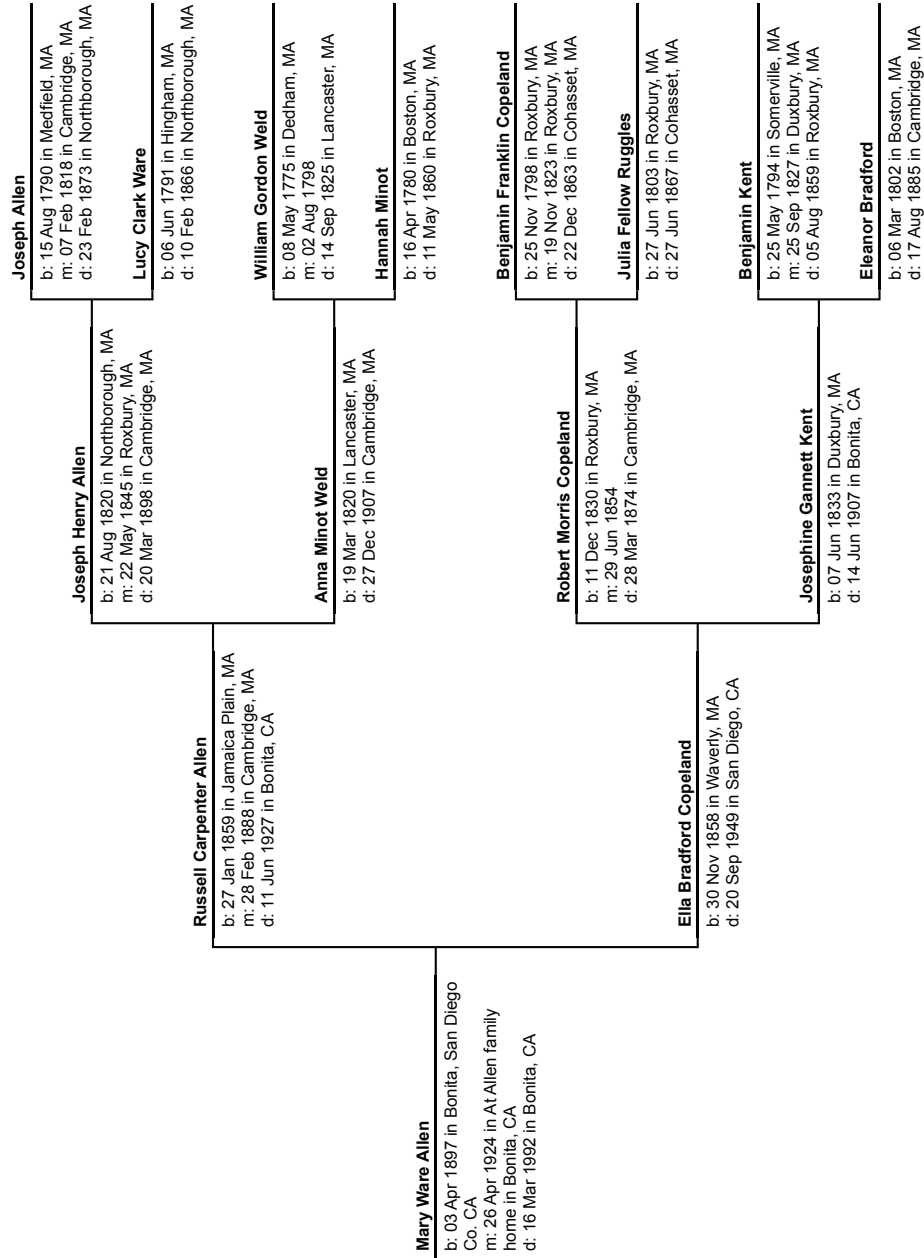
Circle Pedigree Chart for Samuel Sterling Sherman
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

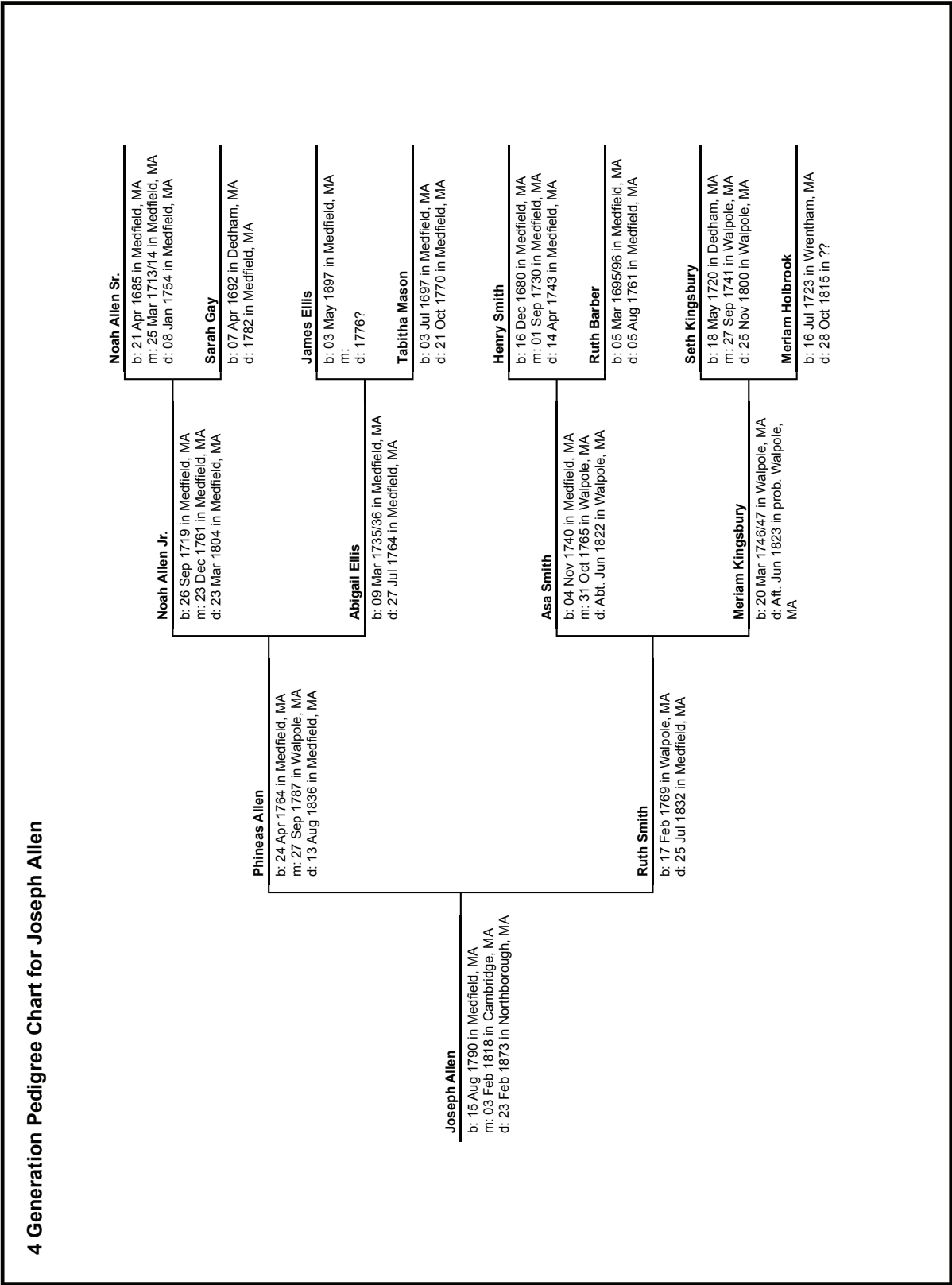


Circle Pedigree Chart for Mary Ware Allen
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

4 Generation Pedigree Chart for Samuel Sterling Sherman







Four-Generation Pedigree Chart for Joseph Allen
From the Frederick S. Sherman Archives

APPENDIX C

❧ *Sherman Manuscript Collection*

Box 1

001 Phineas Allen (1764–1836)

- Typed transcription of Revolutionary War Service of Phineas Allen.
- Two pages of notes and photo of Phineas Allen, his horn, in possession of Marion Kent Allen, who sent photo, 9 June 1990.

002 Rev. Joseph Allen (1790–1873)

- Necrology of the New England Historic Genealogical Society on Rev. Joseph Allen, D.D.
- Family group sheet.
- Descendants of Joseph and Lucy Clark Allen, dated October 1945.
- Certified copy of record of death, Massachusetts, Joseph Allen and Lucy Clark Allen.
- “Minister’s Clan Plans Reunion, 200th Birthday Celebration.” *Telegram & Gazette*, 1 August 1990. Reunion of Rev. Joseph Allen’s descendants.
- Correspondence regarding the 1990 reunion.
- Allen, Joseph. *A Sermon Preached in Northborough, 31 October 1841, On the Completion of the Twenty-fifth Year of His Ministry in That Place*. Cambridge: Metcalf, Torry, and Ballou, 1842. 23 pages.
- Kent, Josiah Coleman. *Northborough History*. Newton, Massachusetts: Garden City Press, Inc., printers, 1921. Joseph Allen, 47–56, the Allen Home School, 116–117, the organ and choir, 121–124, the Sunday school, 124–125.
- Mulhern, Katherine Myrick. *The “Dreadful Mistake” Rectified: Nineteenth-Century Religion and Women’s Bereavement*. Durham, New Hampshire, April 1981. 23 pages. Includes discussion of Mary Ware Allen, oldest child of Joseph and Lucy Allen.
- Photos of Joseph Allen home and cemetery tombstones.

003 Col. John Allen (1798–1813)

- Family group record.

004 Joseph Henry Allen (1820–1898)

- Family group sheet.
- Certified copy of record of death, Joseph Henry Allen.
- U.S. federal census 1860, 1880 for Joseph Henry Allen.
- Handwritten transcription of Joseph Henry Allen’s will dated 27 November 1896.
- Certified copy of return of a death of Anna Minot Allan, Massachusetts.

- Tiffany, Rev. Francis. "Joseph Henry Allen." *The Christian Register* (31 March 1898): 351–352.
- An article on Rev. Allen. *The Christian Register* (6 April 1893). San Diego, California.
- Transcription by Frederick S. Sherman of excerpts of correspondence (1870–1888) of Joseph Henry Allen to Russell Lant Carpenter, originals at Harvard Divinity School Library.
- An article on Joseph Henry Allen. No publication information. 301–313.
- Group photo of Joseph Henry Allen, Anna Minot Allen, Mary Ware Allen, Lucy Clark (Allen) Gage, Cambridge, circa 1897.
- Photo of Joseph Henry Allen, Cambridge, 1897.
- Group photo of Mary Ware Allen, Anna Minot (Weld) Allen, Joseph Henry Allen with grandson Richard Minot Allen, Ella Bradford Allen and Russell Carpenter Allen above son, Morris Copeland Allen, Cooper House, Bonita, California, 1893.
- Photos of Joseph Henry Allen ever in possession of Marion Kent Allen, 1990.
- "Joseph Henry Allen." *The National Cyclopaedia of American Biography*. New York: James T. White & Co., 1940. 8 pages.
- "Tribute to Dr. Joseph Henry Allen," *The Colonial Society of Massachusetts*. (April): 310–315. No other publication information.
- Everett, Charles Carroll. "Mémoir of the Rev. Joseph Henry Allen, D.D." *The Colonial Society of Massachusetts* (December): 288–295. No other publication information given.
- *A Sermon Preached at Jamaica Plain, 21 February 1847 by Joseph Henry Allen, on Resigning His Pastoral Office There*. Boston: Andrews & Prentiss, printers, 1847.
- Mulhern, Katherine Myrick. "Joseph Henry Allen: A Biographical Essay." *The Proceedings of the Unitarian Universalist Historical Society*, vol. 19, pt. 1 (1980–1981): 39–59.

005 Russell Carpenter Allen (1859–1929)

- Letter written by Frederick S. Sherman regarding 1990 reunion of descendants of Rev. Joseph Allen.
- List of descendants of Russell Carpenter Allen, 1990.
- Certified copy of record of birth, Russell C. Allen and copy of record of marriage, Russell C. Allen and Ella B. Copeland.
- Certificate of death, California State Board of Health, Russell C. Allen and Ella Copeland Allen.
- Will, Russell C. Allen.
- Marston, George C. Tribute to Russell C. Allen.
- An article about Russell C. Allen. *City of San Diego and San Diego County*. 212–213.
- "Russell Carpenter Allen." *San Diego County California: A Record of Settlement, Organization, Progress and Achievement*. Chicago: S. J. Clarke Publishing Company, 1913. 344.
- Transcription of correspondence by Frederick S. Sherman between Russell C. Allen and Mr. Carpenter, 1867–1888 and copies of handwritten letters exchanged.
- Photos of 1) Morris Allen, Isabel Kent (aunt of Ella B. Allen) holding David Weld Allen; Ella B. Allen, Bonita, California 1915. 2) School photo of Morris Copeland Allen and Richard Minot Allen. 3) Russell C. Allen, Dick Allen, Morris Allen with son David Weld Allen, Dorothea (wife) Allen, Dehesa, California, 1916. 4) Dick and Morris Allen on porch of old Bonita Store, California, 1898. 5) Work in the packing house, circa 1900. 6) Sweetwater Fruit Company, Bonita, California, circa 1896. 7) Allen Ranch at Dehesa, California, circa 1883. 8) Allen Ranch, "Las Paderes," Dehesa, California, circa 1883. 9) Ella Bradford (Copeland) Allen and Russell Carpenter Allen circa 1925. 10) Russell C. Allen at Sweetwater Fruit Company desk, Bonita, California, 1914.
- Obituaries for Russell C. Allen.
- "Visual and Performing Arts Classes Slated at Allen Academy." *The Star News*, 8 November 1995. An article on Ella B. Allen.

006 Mary Ware Allen (1897–1992)

- Certificate of birth, California, Mary Ware Allen, 3 April 1897.
- Certificate of honors at graduation, B.A., Bacteriology, UC Berkeley, Mary Ware Allen, 10 December 1919.
- Marriage license and certificate, California, Samuel S. Sherman and Mary Ware Allen, married 26 April 1924.
- Certificate, registered nurse, Mary Ware Allen, 21 June 1944.
- Mary Ware Allen's calendar of events, 1936–1964.

- Ward, Mary. "Dambo, A True Pioneer."
- Newspaper article on Ella Bradford (Copeland) Allen. No publication information given.
- Ward, Mary A. (Mrs. E. Butler). "Our Pioneer Heritage: Memories of Russell C. Allen and Ella B. Allen." Paper given at the Wednesday Club of San Diego, 28 November 1951. Published in two parts in an unidentified newspaper on March 1992, p. 6, and May 1992, p. 23.
- Certificate of death, California, Mary (Allen) Ward, 16 March 1992.
- Author's remarks at memorial service of his mother, Mary Ware (Allen) Ward.
- Some photos.

007 Anne (Sherman) Allen

- Allen, Anne. *Borrogo Springs Yesterday Today and Tomorrow*. 59 pages.
- Allen, Anne (Sherman). *Southern California 1905–1915*. 24 pages.

008 Allen Miscellaneous

- Information from rootsweb.com regarding James Allen, 1610–1676.
- Allen, Joseph. *Genealogical Sketches of the Allen Family of Medfield*. Boston: Nichols and Noyes, 1869. Selected pages.
- Court document, reporter's transcript regarding Richard Minot Allen. Superior Court of California, County of San Diego, State vs. Richard Minot Allen, Defendant. 7 May 1956.
- List of letters and other documentary items donated to the American Antiquarian Society by Frederick H. Johnson Jr., 1990.
- Frederick S. Sherman notes.
- Photos: Wespieser thirty-fifth wedding anniversary, October 1987; Ernest and Elizabeth Allen Tribe, Escondido, California, 24 March 1996; Liza Barton Allen and Thomas Halpenny wedding 17 September 1978; Halpenny family, Ridgefield, Washington, 3 July 2000; Halpenny Christmas 2000 newsletter.

Box 2

009 Allen Photos

- Richard M. Allen, 1911.
- Russell Carpenter Allen, at his desk.
- Merry Christmas card from Mr. and Mrs. Samuel S. Sherman, undated.
- Russell C. Allen and Gardner W. Allen.
- Russell C. Allen with child, Bonita, California, 18 March 1894.
- Morris, Dick and Eleanor, Cooper house before it burned (1907).
- Group photo, notation on back: "Camping at El Moro, 1908, Mary B. Ward."
- Individual photos of Fred Allen and Betty Allen.
- Numerous copies of unidentified photos.

010 Awburn

- Family group sheets, pedigree charts, notes, Richmond County.
- Miscellaneous records, deeds and wills.
- Letter to Mr. and Mrs. Sherman from Geoff Nicholson, a researcher in England, dated 10 August 1992, with documents pertaining to the Awburn/Auburn family.

011 Bradford and Related Families

- Family group records.

012 Captain Job Bradford

- Sherman, Frederick S. "Capt. Job Bradford, (1726–1789) of Boston, Proof of Mayflower Descent and Exciting Experiences as a Mariner Before and During the Revolutionary War." Lecture for Alameda Colony of the Mayflower Society, 14 October 2006, 6 pages.
- Sherman, Frederick S. "A Correction and Ending to the Adventures of Captain Job Bradford." *New England Ancestors* (Spring 2007).
- Timeline for Captain Job Bradford.
- Sherman, Frederick S. "The Mysterious Tufts Sisters of Boston."
- Family group sheets.
- Four pages on William Bradford of the Mayflower. Source unknown.

- Notes and miscellaneous articles.
- Tombstone photos of Copps' Hill, Boston: Elizabeth (Adams) Parkman, Parkman family group and Samuel Parkman, father-in-law of Capt. Job Bradford.

013 Chinn

- Information from Chinn Bible, published by Daniel D. Smith, New York, 1829. Family record follows Apocrypha. Lent to Kentucky Historical Society by George M. Chinn Jr. Copied 20 December 1962 by Emma Jane Walker and Virginia Wilson for the Committee, 40–42.
- Family group record, Marcus Aurelius Chinn.
- An article on Marcus A. Chinn, "The Northern Cross Railroad."
- *The Branch, Harris, Jarvis and Chinn Book: A Family Outline*, Benjamin H. Branch Jr. Ann Arbor, Michigan: University Microfilms, Inc., printer, 31 December 1963. 270–272, 288, 292, 296–297, 304–306.

014 Clarke

- Family group records.

015 John Copeland (1658–1714)

- Family group sheets.

016 Samuel Copeland (1686–1746)

- Family group records.

017 Lawrence C. Copeland (1651–1699)

- Family group records, various notes and articles.

018 Samuel Copeland Jr. (1711–1799)

- Family group record, some notes and articles.

019 Abraham C. Copeland (1736–1802)

- Family group sheet, some notes, articles and emails.

020 Nathaniel C. Copeland (1765–1803)

- Family group records and some notes.

021 Benjamin Franklin Copeland (1798–1863)

- Family group sheet.
- Four-page transcription of family records in the Family Bible of Benjamin Franklin Copeland and his son, William Ellery Copeland, in 1997 in possession of Anne Biella, 80 Norwood Avenue, Kensington, California.
- Copy of record of death, Massachusetts, Benjamin Franklin Copeland and Julia Copeland.
- Some notes, articles and census information.
- Forest Hills Cemetery agreement with Elizabeth A. Copeland for perpetual care of lots, 27 September 1968. Original proprietors: Eleanor Kent and Benjamin F. Copeland.

Box 3

022 Robert Morris Copeland #1

- Family group record.
- Copy of record of death, Massachusetts, Robert Morris Copeland.
- Copy of marriage record, Massachusetts, Robert Morris Copeland and Josephine G. Kent.
- Various notes and articles.
- *Statement of R. Morris Copeland, Asst. Adjutant-General and Major of Volunteers, Discharged from Service, August 6, 1862*. Boston: Prentiss and Deland, printers, 1864. 52 pages.
- Blatchford, Margaret Copeland (Mrs. Nathaniel Blatchford). "Out of Step in the Civil War." 16 pages. The story of her grandfather's dismissal from the Union Army.
- Copeland, Frederick W. "The Righteous Major." *The Atlantic Monthly*, no date.
- Shippen, Joseph. "William Ellery Copeland." 4 pages.
- Schnare, Susan E. "The Exeter Landscape Designs of Robert Morris Copeland." *Historical New Hampshire*, vol. 62, no. 1 (Spring 2008): 78–92.
- Notes from the Ernest W. Bowditch Manuscripts, vol. 1 and 2, housed at the Phillips Library, Peabody Essex Museum, Salem, Massachusetts. 5 pages.

- Group photo of James Savage, Robert Gould Shaw, Robert Morris Copeland and Henry Sturgis Russell taken 26 February 1862; photo of Robert Morris Copeland, Major, 2nd Massachusetts Regiment taken in Frederick, Maryland, March 1862.

023 Robert Morris Copeland #2

- Schnare, Susan E. "The Landscape at the Moses-Kent House Museum." Paper for the Moses-Kent House Museum, Board of Directors and Garden Committee, 2000, 44 pages.

024 Ella (Bradford) Copeland (1858–1949)

- Family group sheets, notes.
- Certificate of death, Ella Copeland Allen.
- Notes on will and estate of Ella B. Allen.
- Allen, Ella B. "Is Not This Article Truly American?" Bonita, California, 21 January 1909.

025 Copeland #1

- Roxbury Latin School–Alumni/October 2003 Frederick Winsor, 5 pages.
- Correspondence between Frederick S. Sherman and Dennis Deveney, New England Memorial Monuments, regarding monuments for Robert Morris Copeland, Josephine Gannett (Kent) Copeland and Robert Morris Copeland Jr.
- Record of marriage on 10 October 1899 William R. Copeland and Annie Horton Young. County of Essex, City of Lawrence, Massachusetts: book 10, p. 30.
- Handwritten descendant chart for Eleanor Bradford and Rev. Benjamin Kent.
- Handwritten Kent-Bradford pedigree chart.
- Certificate of birth, Columbus, Ohio, Elizabeth Abbot Copeland, 6 April 1908.
- Letter dated 29 February 1999 to Frederick S. Sherman from Wendell (no last name given) regarding Elizabeth's safe deposit box and her mother's ring (Annie Horton Young).
- Envelope containing deed and papers relating to cemetery lot in the Forest Hills Cemetery.
- Divorce judgment for Fred William Tinney and Elizabeth Copeland Tinney, 23 September 1936.
- Manila envelope containing: deed, Santa Barbara Cemetery Assn. to George H. Young, regarding lot for wife, Abby S. Young; lots purchased by Elizabeth A. Copeland and William R. Copeland, exec. est. of Anne Y. Copeland; lot 49, proprietor Benjamin F. Copeland; lot 2341, proprietor Abigail Banister; map of Forest Hill Cemetery.
- Manila envelope containing: article concerning William R. Copeland's service to the State of Connecticut's State Water Commission for the years 1940–42; power of attorney, William R. Copeland to Elizabeth A. Copeland, 13 April 1959; obituary for William R. Copeland.

026 Copeland #2

- Copeland, Warren Turner. *The Copeland Family, a Copeland Genealogy*. Rutland, Vermont: Tuttle Publishing Company, Inc., 1937. 1, 10–12, 14–15, 26–27, 63–64, 128, 131–132, 289–290, 499–500, 646, 687.
- Numerous pages from R. Morris Copeland's *Country Life*.
- Correspondence between Frederick S. Sherman and Susan E. Schnare, 2001–2002 regarding Copeland family.
- Letter dated 6 November 1804 to which Nathaniel Ruggles is notary.
- Inventory of family papers belonging to Elizabeth Abbot Copeland, 2 pages.
- Family record of births, marriages, deaths in the Townsends family, 1800s, 3 pages.
- In memoriam, Frederick Kent Copeland of Winnetka, Illinois. 11 pages with photographs.
- Wedding invitation of Annie Horton to William Rogers Copeland, 10 October 1899.
- "Frederick Kent Copeland, 1855–1928." 4 pages.
- Ancestral register of Frederick Kent Copeland and Ella Bradford Copeland.

027 Copeland #3

- "Elizabeth Copeland—Her Memory Lives On." Written on her death, 28 January 1999.
- Memorial service for Elizabeth Copeland.
- Letter from Frederick S. Sherman to Elizabeth Copeland, 3 October 1997 in which he relates research done on Nathaniel Copeland and father-in-law, Benjamin Page.
- Copeland photos, scanned.
- Author's handwritten notes, 4 June 1994. Visit to Elizabeth Copeland and documents examined.
- Certificate of death, California, Josephine Garrett Copeland, 14 June 1907.

028 Copeland Letters

- Letters written between 13 August 1851 and 29 August 1862 between Morris Copeland and wife and some other correspondents.

029 Copeland Photos

- Photos: 1) Elizabeth Copeland with grandfather, Rev. George H. Young. 2) Philip Young, Edith Young, Dick Young. 3) Philip Endicott Young. 4) Pat Copeland, 8/68 Rockport. 5) Annie Young (7 years) and Sheila Young (4 years). 6) Mrs. Elizabeth S. Abbot. 7) Nancy, Joseph, Dorothea and Nannie, West Castleton, Vermont, July 1926. 8) West Castleton, Vermont, July, 1926.
- Photos of Elizabeth Copeland and William R. Copeland, Annie Copeland, Josephine G. Kent, Robert Morris Copeland, Forest Hills Cemetery, home of R.M. Copeland.

030 Copeland Papers

- Correspondence, Frederick S. Sherman to Elizabeth Copeland regarding disposal of Copeland family papers.

Box 4

031 Dirksen

- Maiden, Sarah Finch. *The Maiden Family of Virginia and Allied Families, 1623–1991*. Wolfe City, Texas: Henington Publishing Company, 1991. 56–64.
- Letter, notes regarding Dirksen.

032 Fulkerson

- An article on Frederick Fulkerson (1719–1774). No author or date of publication indicated, p. 69–77.
- Various articles, notes, family group records, correspondence on the Fulkersons.
- Sherman, Frederick S. *Early Fulkerson Land Records in Virginia and North Carolina*. 5 pages.
- Photos, Fulkerson family tombstones, Kentucky.

033 Colonel John Hardin (1753–1792)

- “Col. John Hardin.” *Who Was Who in Hardin County*. Hardin County Historical Society. 1 page.
- Family group record, various notes and Internet articles.
- Note on parents of Jane Davies Hardin by Frederick S. Sherman, 8 December 1988.
- Sanders, Robert Stuart. “Colonel John Hardin and His Letters to his Wife–1792, Lexington Kentucky.” *The Filson Club History Quarterly*, vol. 39, no. 1 (January 1965): 5–12. Louisville, Kentucky.
- Walworth, Tracy. “Colonel John Hardin.” *Historical Magazine* (April 1869): 233–237.
- Will of Gen. John Hardin, proved 4 April 1793.
- McBride, David N. and Jane N. McBride, compilers. *Records of the Recorder’s Office of Highland County, Ohio (1805–1850)*. Ann Arbor, Michigan: 1969. 1, 27, 50, 69, 89, 116, 118, 131, 209, 229.
- McBride, David N. and Jane N. McBride, compilers. *Common Pleas Court Records of Highland County, Ohio (1805–1860)*. Ann Arbor, Michigan: 1959. 114, 115, 269, 270.

034 John J. Hardin (1810–1847)

- Copies of paintings of John J. Hardin and wife, Sarah Ellen (Smith) Hardin. Original paintings at Filson Club, Louisville, Kentucky.
- Family group record for John J. Hardin.
- Will of John J. Hardin, 12 July 1847.
- *Obsequies of Col. John J. Hardin at Jacksonville, Illinois, 14 July 1847*. Forgotten Books, 2015. 20 pages. Reception and burial of the remains of Col. John J. Hardin.
- Dalton, Robert Wayne and Dorothy Jean Dalton Long, ed. and compilers. *A Guide to Cemeteries of Morgan County, Illinois*, vol. 3. 13 and 24.
- “Letter written by Col. John J. Hardin in 1830.” Describes Illinois country, visit to Vandalia and meeting with Governor Edwards.
- “Hero Father—Worthy Daughter.” Discusses lives of John J. Hardin and daughter, Ellen Hardin Walworth.
- Rammelkamp, T. C.
- “Talk: The Personal Life of Col. John J. Hardin.” *Journal-Courier*, Jacksonville, Illinois, 10 October 1998. An article on a talk to be delivered by Frederick Sherman, great-great-grandson of Col. Hardin.
- Photos of John J. Hardin and wife, Sarah Ellen Smith.
- Photos of gravesite of John J. Hardin.

035 John J. Hardin Legal Papers

- John J. Hardin's personal and legal practice account book, 1831–1835.
- John J. Hardin's checks for 1836.

036 Martin D. Hardin (1780–1823)

- Family group records, numerous notes, correspondence.
- Births, marriages and deaths in the family of Martin D. Hardin, as the same appears written in the old family Bible, Historical Society of Saratoga Springs,
- Will of Martin D. Hardin, transcribed from handwritten original filed in Franklin County, Kentucky, Will Book A, page 121. Written 26 June 1823, codicil written 3 October 1823, produced at November Court, 1823.
- Quisenberry, A. C. "A Hundred Years Ago the River Raisin." *Register of the Kentucky State Historical Society*. 17–27.
- *Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774–1961*. p. 1005.
- Hon. Martin, D. Hardin in the *Biographical Encyclopedia of Kentucky*, vol. 2, 1878.
- "Life and Times of Robert B. McAfee and His Family Connections." *Register of the Kentucky State Historical Society*, 25 (1927): 134.
- Some transcribed Martin D. Hardin correspondence.
- Little, Lucius P. *Ben Hardin: Times and Contemporaries, Selections from his Speeches*. Louisville: Courier-Journal Job Printing Company, printer. 2–15.
- Indenture, 8 October 1774, between Martin Hardin and Mark Hardin of Augusta County and Charles Wickliff of Prince William County.
- Photos of portraits of Martin D. Hardin and Elizabeth Logan Hardin.

037 Porter Clay

- Spencer, J. H. "Porter Clay." *History of Kentucky Baptists*. 298.
- Staples, Charles R. *The History of Pioneer Lexington, Kentucky, 1779–1806*. Lexington, Kentucky: Transylvania Press, 1959. 190–191, 228–229.
- "The Rev. Porter Clay's Account of the Clay Family." *Register of the Kentucky State Historical Society*, vol. 10 (January 1912): 26–27.
- Rigsby, Judge. "Clays of Virginia." *Historic Georgia Families*. 30–31.
- Timeline for Porter Clay. 15 pages.

Box 5**038 Martin D. Hardin (1837–1923)**

- Obituary. *St. Augustine Evening Record*, vol. 43, no. 35, 12 December 1923.
- "General Hardin's Funeral Saturday." *St. Augustine Evening Record*, vol. 43, no. 36, 13 December 1923.
- "Funeral of Late Gen. M. D. Hardin Largely Attended," *St. Augustine Evening Record*, vol. 43, no. 38, 15 December 1923.
- *History of the Twelfth Regiment*. New York: M. D. Hardin, 1890.
- Biographies and miscellaneous papers
- Record of Gen. Martin D. Hardin's career, from Nelson Thomasson, Headquarters, United States Military Academy, West Point, New York, 5 January 1924, 4 pages.
- Photos of Martin D. Hardin's home in St. Augustine, his tombstone and that of wife, Estelle Graham.

039 Hardin Portrait

- Correspondence with the Filson Club Historical Society, Louisville, Kentucky, regarding Hardin portraits.
- Last will of Evelyn Hardin Sherman.
- Newspaper article and documents regarding Congregational Burying Ground, Bridgeport, Connecticut.
- Correspondence regarding Porter and Elizabeth Clay.

040 Ellen (Hardin) Walworth

- Four lectures and correspondence:
 - "Personal Reminiscences of Three Wars."
 - "Philosophy." New York Genealogical Hall, March 1900.
 - "American Art." Mrs. Henderson's, 1900.
 - "Requirements of Modern Society." Washington Club, 1900 and Mrs. Henderson's, 1900.

- Will, dated December, 1906, cancelled 1910.
- An article on Ellen Hardin Walworth and her work with the Women's National War Relief Association.
- Photos of monument and tombstones relating to Ellen Hardin Walworth and family.

o41 Lemuel S. Hardin #1

- Pardon for Lemuel S. Hardin.
- Various articles and notes.
- Sherman, Frederick S. "Lemuel Smith Hardin, 1840–1909, 'The Unlikely Rebel.'" An informal talk given to the United Daughters of the Confederacy, Berkeley City Club, 26 January 1996.
- Hardin, Lowell Stewart. "The Dairy Calf: Breeding and Raising." Louisville, Kentucky: 1897. 25 pages.
- Photographs of Lemuel S. Hardin.
- Death certificate, Lemuel S. Hardin, 23 May 1909, California State Board of Health, San Diego, California.
- Obituary.

o42 Lemuel S. Hardin #2

- Frederick S. Sherman's correspondence with: Ms. Doris Lamont, Archivist, Historical Society of Saratoga Springs, New York; Prof. James Ramage, Dept. of History, Northern Kentucky University; Kentucky Historical Society; U.S. Army Military History Institute, Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania; Prof. Douglas Wilson, Monticello, Charlottesville, Virginia; Wytheville Community College Library, Wytheville, Virginia.
- A scrapbook of newspaper clippings, among them: "Pickett's Charge, A Confederate's Recollection of the Third Day of Gettysburg," and "Cyclorama of the Battle of Gettysburg," Col. W. M. Owen; article on Gen. John J. Hardin; "Family Pride," article on the Hardin family in Kentucky.
- Photos of Lemuel S. Hardin and Annie Jacob Hardin.

o43 Annie (Jacob) Hardin

- Burial records from Cave Hill Cemetery, Louisville, Kentucky, for Lemuel Smith and Annie Jacob Hardin, John J. and Evelyn J. Jacob.
- Copy of handwritten will of Annie Jacob Hardin.
- Copies of letters written by Annie Jacob Hardin.
- Obituary, Evelyn J. Jacob, *Louisville Courier-Journal*, 31 December 1901.
- Newspaper clipping of original residence of John J. Jacob from the *Courier-Journal*.
- Photos: Johnson and Jacob tombstones; Evelyn Johnson Jacob; four-generations including Annie Jacob Hardin, Evelyn Hardin Sherman, Annie Hardin Sherman, Evelyn Johnson Jacob.

o44 Charles Hardin (1818–1863)

- Family group record.
- Frederick S. (Rick) Sherman's notes.

o45 Davies Hardin (1784–1850)

- Family group record.
- Frederick S. (Rick) Sherman's notes, various articles on Davies Hardin.

o46 Hardin, Kentucky

- Various articles, notes.
- Will of John Hardin of Nelson County.
- Family group record.
- "General William Hardin." *Who was Who in Hardin County*. Hardin County Historical Society.
- Hardin, William Sr., *Genealogical Data from Early Breckinridge County, Kentucky, Deed Books*.
- Obituary, Sarah Ellen Smith, *New York Times*, 16 July 1874.
- Indenture records, John J. Hardin, 1834.
- "The Hardin-Hall Murder." 2 pages. No publication information given.

Box 6

o47 Mark Hardin

- Sherman, Frederick S. "Contemporary References to Mark Hardin of Wiccocomoco Parish and Elk Run, Virginia, 1707–1735." 7 pages.
- Correspondence regarding Mark Hardin.

- Family group records.
- Will of Mark Hardin, 16 March 1734.
- Various notes, research log.
- Photos of Mark Hardin's home, Shelbyville, Kentucky.

o48 Mark Harding

- Land records.
- Deed of fifty acres to Mark Harding, 7 April 1706.
- Various articles and notes including those on Mark Hardin's will, deed of land, ownership of Mark and Mary's parcel in Wiccocomoco Parcel.

o49 Martin Hardewyn

- Contemporary records of "Martin Hardewyn" and his relatives in New York and New Jersey.
- Various notes.
- Court minutes of New Amsterdam regarding Martin Lardewyn, plaintiff, 21 August 1674, page 115.

o50 Hawkins

- Various notes and articles.

o51 Hardin, New Jersey

- Reed, H. Clay and George J. Miller, ed. *American Legal Records, vol. 5: The Burlington Court Book, A Record of Quaker Jurisprudence in West New Jersey, 1680–1790*. Washington, D.C.: American Historical Association, 1944. Reprint, Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc. Various pages.

o52 Hardin Analysis

- Correspondence with various Hardin descendants.
- Irvine, Fredna Tweedt. *Henry Hardin of California*. Belmont, Massachusetts: 1976.
- War of 1812 pensioners.

o53 Hardin Letters 4–L, M, N, O

- Research relating to individuals (surnames L–O) mentioned in the Hardin Letters.

o54 Hardin Letters 4–P, R, S

- Research relating to individuals (surnames P–S) mentioned in the Hardin Letters.

o55 Hardin Letters 4–T, U, V, W, Y

- Research relating to individuals (surnames T–Y) mentioned in the Hardin Letters.

o56 Hardin Correspondence, Lincoln Article

- Wilson, Douglas L. "Abraham Lincoln, Ann Rutledge, and the Evidence of Herndon's Informants," *Civil War History*, vol. 36, no. 4. Kent State University Press. 301–324.
- Wilson, Douglas L. "Abraham Lincoln and That Fatal First of January," *Civil War History*, vol. 38, no. 2, Kent State University Press. 101–130.
- Correspondence with Dr. Douglas L. Wilson, Michael Burlingame and others.

Box 7

o57 Hardin #1

- Family group records
- "An Unlikely Rebel, Lemuel Smith Hardin (1840–1909)."
- Timeline.
- Various notes and articles.

o58 Hardin #2

- *Index to the Old Wars Pension Files, 1815–1926*. p. 307.
- *Northern Neck Grants and Surveys*. p.4. Mark Hardin.
- Various notes, articles, correspondence.
- Plan of the battle of Buena Vista, fought 22 and 23 February 1847, surveyed by Cap. Linnard and Lt. Pope & Franklin, drawn by Capt. T.B.
- Photos of M.D. Hardin, Evelyn Johnson Hardin and John J. Hardin.

o59 Oran Hardin

- Frederick Sherman's correspondence with J. Oran Hardin.

o60 Hardin, Smith, Walworth

- Copies of letters between Sarah Hardin in mid-1800s and various correspondents.

o61 Holgersen

- Bennett, David Vernooy. *The First American Mrs. Rosecrans, New York Historical Biographical Record* (January 1959): 8 pages. Mrs. Rosecrans was daughter of Dirck Volckertsen.
- "The Dutcher Family," *New York Genealogy Biographical Record* (April 1910): 112–113. Regarding Dirck Volckertsen.
- Six pages of information on Volckertsen.
- Evjen, John O. "Dirck Holgersen," *Scandinavian Immigrants in New York, 1630–1674*. Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc., 1972. 68–79.
- Dirrick Volckersten deed, 9 September 1653.
- Conveyances from Dirck Volckertsen.

o62 Holmes

- Pedigree charts, family group sheets, research notes, correspondence, birth and death certificates.
- Photos: Ralph Thomas Holmes's vacation house and home; Grandpa Holmes, Fruitvale, California, baseball team, 1908 or 1909; Auburn family, ancestors of Pat Malone Sherman.

o63 Kenney-McHenry

- Family group records, individual data on McHenry family members.
- Lee, Mrs. A. J. "Rev. J.W. Kenney." *Texas Methodist Historical Quarterly*, vol. 1: 45–55. Georgetown, Texas. Mrs. A.J. Lee was the daughter of Rev. J.W. Kenney.
- Lee, Mrs. A. J. "Some Recollections of Two Texas Pioneer Women." *Texas Methodist Historical Quarterly*, vol. 1: 207–213. Georgetown, Texas.
- "Lydia Ann McHenry and Revolutionary Texas." *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, vol. 74, no. 3 (January, 1971): 393–408.
- Kress, Margaret K. "John Wesley Kenney—Pioneer Methodist Preacher in Texas.," *Southwestern Advocate*, 29 November 1934. Margaret K. Kress is John Wesley Kenney's granddaughter.
- Kenney, M.M. "Recollections of Early Schools." *Quarterly of the Texas State Historical Association*, vol. 1 (July 1897 to April 1898): 285–287.
- Johnson, Sid S. "Martin McHenry Kenney." *Texans Who Wore the Gray*, vol. 1. 285–286.
- *Citizens of the Republic of Texas*. James Harvey Kenney, Reverend John Wesley Kenney, Mariah Estill McHenry, Martin McHenry Kenney, Ann Jane Kenney, Emily Travis Kenney.

o64 Kent

- *Record of Heirs of Mrs. Eleanor Kent, deceased 17 August 1895*.
- Photos of Benjamin Kent family.

o65 Lewis-Sherman

- Deed book information, late 1600s, Virginia, on Edward Lewis.

o66 Lane-Sherman

- Thompson, Dorothy Brown. "Ancestors and Descendants of the Rev. John Taylor (1752–1835)." *Register of the Kentucky Historical Society* (no date indicated): 22–23, 32–35.
- Militia Officer Commissions, Loudon County, Virginia, in the American Revolution. Listed: Capt. Hardage Lane, Capt. William Lane.
- *Westmoreland County, Virginia Order Book, 1698–1705*. Lane entries.
- Nicklin, John Bailey Calvert. "Genealogy, Major Andrew Gilson and Some of His Descendants (1630–1930)." *Virginia Historical Magazine*, vol. 38: 181–185. Regarding William Lane.
- Typed copy of the will of James Lane of Loudon County, Virginia, 29 April 1790, proved 12 November 1790.
- Typed copy of will of William Lane, probated 1808, Fairfax County, Virginia.
- Various notes.

o67 Logan

- Logan family group records.
- Benjamin Logan death information.

- *Biographical Encyclopedia*. Biographical sketch of Judge William Logan, born 1776 in Kentucky.
- Whitsitt, William H. "Life and Times of Judge Caleb Wallace," *Filson Club Publication*, no. 4. Louisville: 1888. 147–148. Information on Judge William Logan and descendants.
- Various notes.

Box 8

o68 McHenry #1

- Abstracts of Virginia's Northern Neck warrants and surveys pertaining to McHenry.
- McHenry family chronology by Col. Gordon McHenry of Florida, June 1991.
- Family group sheets.
- Notes, correspondence, marriage and deed information, articles.
- One-page article on Barnabas McHenry, born 6 December 1767, North Carolina, no source indicated.
- McHenry, Aileen. "Martin D. McHenry." *Virginia Appalachian Notes*. 4 pages.
- Baer, Mabel Van Dyke. "Biographical Sketch of Isaac McHenry, born 1763, Hampshire County, Virginia."
- Abstracts of Revolutionary War pension applications, *National Genealogical Society Quarterly*.
- Taylor, Harrison D. *Ohio County, Kentucky in the Olden Days, A Series of Old Newspaper Sketches of Fragmentary History*. Baltimore: Regional Publishing Company, 1969. 84–93. Prepared for publication in book form by his granddaughter Mary Taylor Logan.

o69 McHenry #2

- Correspondence, numerous notes, family group records.
- "Lawyers and Lawmakers of Kentucky." 339–344. No publication given. Biographical sketch of John Hardin McHenry, born 21 February 1832 in Ohio County, Kentucky.
- Biographical sketch of Hon. John Hardin McHenry, born 13 October 1797, Washington County, Kentucky.
- Stilles, Edward H. *Recollections and Sketches of Notable Lawyers and Public Men of Early Iowa*. Des Moines: Homestead Publishing Co., 1916. 490–493, regarding Martin D. and William H. McHenry.

o70 McHenry #3

- Family group record, Pendleton Harnood and Jane Wallace McHenry.

o71 Minot

- Portrait of Hannah Minot Weld, Hannah Speakman Minot and Jonas Clark Minot.
- Family group records.

o72 Payne

- Payne pedigree chart.
- Payne information from "Cavaliers and Pioneers."
- Deed book information on the Paynes from Old Rappahannock County and Westmoreland County, Virginia, late 1600s.
- Payne, Brooke. *The Paynes of Virginia*. Richmond, Virginia: The William Byrd Press, Inc., 1937. Various pages.

o73 Pope

- Assorted notes and articles on Nathaniel Pope who lived in Virginia in the 1600s, including court and testamentary business, Westmoreland county records. Other Popes of Virginia also mentioned.

o74 Frederick S. Sherman (1853–1935)

- Original letter written by Frederick S. Sherman to L.S. Hardin, Chicago, 17 December 1893, asking for the hand of his daughter in marriage.
- Photos of Frederick Sterling Sherman.
- Unidentified photo, possibly F. S. Sherman and wife.
- Marriage certificate of Frederick Sterling Sherman and Evelyn Johnson Hardin, 30 May 1894.
- Photo of Frederick Sterling Sherman playing golf with President William Howard Taft.
- Three photos of the Chicago homes of Samuel Sherman and Frederick Sherman.
- Quiz: "Who Wanted to Be an Allenaire?" Created for the Allen family 2000 reunion by author and Hannah and Liza Halpenny.
- Cemetery records, Sherman lot, Glen Abby. Burial place of Frederick S. Sherman, Annie Sherman Allen. Centotaph for Samuel S. Sherman, Evelyn Hardin Sherman, Fred S. Allen, Lillian Elley Allen.

075 Sherman

- Ahnentafel.

076 Sherman Pedigrees

- Pedigrees for Sterling Sherman, Josiah Sherman, Miriam Gregory, Captain Nathaniel Seeley, Sarah Silliman.
- Russell, Joan. "The History of Sterling House." Stratford Library Association, 4 January 1984. 2 pages.

077 Sherman Families

- "E.L.S., A Memorial." Memorial to Louise Sherman by her brother, Pasadena, California, 20 October 1923.
- Funeral program of Henry Lancey Sherman, died 30 November 1943.
- Cemetery information from Pasadena Cemetery Association, 4 May 1988, to author regarding cemetery plots for Henry Bond Sherman, Emma L. Sherman, Louise Sherman and Henry Lancey Sherman.
- Correspondence regarding H.B. Sherman will and copy of will.
- Certificate, proof of will, for Henry Bond Sherman, 28 June 1925.
- Inventory and appraisal in the matter of the estate of Henry Bond Sherman, 19 August 1925.
- Petition for probate of will of Henry Bond Sherman, 3 July 1925.
- Order instructing testamentary trustee, estate of Henry Bond Sherman, 10 June 1940.
- Family group records, Frederick Sterling Sherman.
- Death certificates, Frederick Sterling Sherman, 8 December 1935 and Evelyn Hardin Sherman, 11 March 1957.
- Last will of Evelyn Hardin Sherman, 16 January 1945.
- First and Final Account and Report of Executrix, Petition for Final Distribution and for Payment of Attorneys' Fees of Evelyn Hardin Sherman.
- Death certificate, Samuel Sherman, 24 October 1933.
- Notes.
- Narrative of honeymoon trip to San Pedro Martir, Samuel Sterling Sherman and Mary Allen Sherman, April and May, 1924.
- Newspaper notice of death of Samuel Sherman, 24 October, in a San Diego paper, October 1933.
- Will of Annie Sherman Allen.
- Certificate of death, Russell Copeland Sherman, 1 June 2005.
- Photos of tombstones of Sterling Sherman and wife, Jane Noble.

078 Samuel Sterling Sherman (1815–1914)

- Letter written to Kate Upson Clark, Brooklyn, New York, on 4 February 1914 by Samuel Sherman regarding two books she has written and given to him. (Mrs. Clark contributed articles to *Godey's Magazine*, *Atlantic Monthly*, *Christian Herald*, and *Harper's*. She published several children's books as well as short stories and a novel.)
- Deeds, Glen Abbey Memorial Park for Samuel S. Sherman lot and Mary A. Sherman to Evelyn Hardin Sherman.
- Rosehill cemetery deed and correspondence, lot 23, section 100.
- In memoriam card, Mrs. S.S. Sherman (Eliza Dewey), died 14 November 1900.
- Several newspaper articles regarding Samuel S. Sherman.
- Articles and resolution by Howard College, Birmingham, Alabama, on the death of Samuel Sterling Sherman.
- Certificate appointing Samuel S. Sherman to the Board of Regents of Normal Schools of Wisconsin for a term of three years from 1 February 1871.
- Certificate of marriage, Samuel S. Sherman and Eliza Dewey, 19 August 1845.
- Receipt for \$1,150, to S.S. Sherman, 1856 in full payment for Negro girl Amy, age about 14 years.
- Receipt for \$3,500, to S.S. Sherman in payment for Negro man named Anderson about 35 years. His wife, Louisiana, about 30 years with their 4 children named as follows, Frank about 11 years, Amanda about 7 years old, ___ about 5 years old and Edward about three years old. "Said Negro man and his wife and their four children I warrant sound in body and mind and slaves for life."
- Letter of appreciation to President Samuel S. Sherman for his guidance from the senior class at Howard College, Marion, Alabama, dated 29 April 1859.
- "Senior Alumnus of Middlebury, S. S. Sherman Lives in Chicago Now. College President in the South in Antebellum Days." *The Boston Sunday Globe*, 9 January 1910.

- Will of Samuel S. Sherman, 7 June 1913, proved 24 December 1914.
- Sherman, Frederick S. "Business Career of Samuel Sterling Sherman (1815–1914)." From the records of S.S. Sherman on his business relations, associates and times.
- Photos of Samuel Sterling Sherman.
- Photos: tombstones in Augusta, Maine, of Louisa Heywood Dewey; Dewey children who died in Augusta, Maine; and Hannah Bond Dewey.
- Photos: South Baptist Seminary, Louisville, 1983; faculty apartments; main administration building; and approximate site of "Bird's Nest."
- Sketch book of Eliza Dewey, Ipswich Female Seminary.

Box 9

o79 Samuel S. Sherman Autobiography

- *Early Memories of West Rupert, Vermont*. Chicago: Barnard & Miller Print.
- *My Autobiography Continued from My 95th to 99th Year of My Age*. Chicago, 1913.

o80 Samuel S. Sherman (1898–1933) Mexico Trips

- Michoacán trip, 4 November 1930, Milton P. Sessions and S.S. Sherman for General Arturo Bernal, Governor of Baja California, 26 pages.
- *A Citrus Sojourn in Mexico*, 36 pages, no author given.

o81 Sherman Pedigrees

o82 Sherman Forefathers

- Benjamin Sherman (1618–1700), notes, article and correspondence.
- Enos Sherman (1699–ca 1793), notes.
- Josiah Sherman (1724–1816), notes.
- Enoch Sherman (1762–1849), deposition in support of his application of Revolutionary War pension, 28 August 1832.
- Elijah Sherman, abstract of Revolutionary War pension file.
- Sterling Sherman (1794–1865), family group sheet.

o83 Elizabeth (Sherman) Sillon

- "The South African War, as Remembered by Ernest Sillon." Typed copy of article and newspaper copy, page 5.
- Letter from India of Lieutenant Souter to his wife, Hannah, no date given, mentions commencement of insurrection 2 November 1841 with harrowing account of battles.
- Engagement announcement, 16 January 1942, page 10-A. No name of publication given. Capt. Ernest Mark Sellon to Elizabeth Evelyn Sherman.
- Newspaper article. "India-Revisited Trip." No publication information given. Capt. and Mrs. Ernest Mark Sellon when he was 97.
- "Ninety-nine-year-old died in La Jolla Home." 1975. No other publication information. Ernest Sellon obituary.
- Certificate of death, Ernest Mamaduke Sellon, died 27 March, 1975.
- Unidentified photos.
- Book made by Elizabeth (Sherman) Sillon as a young girl.

o84 Shermans, New England

- Photos: tombstones of Enoch and Katherine (Seeley) Sherman, Rupert, Vermont; Sterling Sherman, with first and second wives; Sterling and Jane (Noble) Sherman, Rupert, Vermont.
- Sherman, Roy V. "Descendants of Hon. Samuel Sherman, Son of Edmund & Joanne (Makin) Sherman." *The New England Shermans*. 169–183.
- Lapham, William B., compiler, *Genealogical Sketches of Robert and John Hazelton and Some of their Descendants*. Portland, Maine: F. H. Hazelton, 1892. 41–43, 56–57.
- Hendricks, William O. *M.H. Sherman A Pioneer Developer of the Pacific Southwest*. Corona Del Mar, California: Sherman Foundation, 1973. 3–20.

o85 English Shermans

- Stratton, Bertha L. "Some Sherman Lines." *Colonial Genealogist* vol. 10, no. 1: (1979): 4–12.
- "Wills of the Shermans of Yaxley in Suffolk, England." *New England Register* (January 1900): 62–69, 152–156. Communicated by a descendant of Capt. John Sherman.

o86 Bond Correspondence

- Handwritten account of the descendants of William Bond, one of the founders of Watertown, Massachusetts, no date, no name of writer given.
- Sherman, Frederick S. "Provenance of My Mystery Portrait." Dr. Henry Bond, believed to have been painted by inventor Samuel F.B. Morse. Correspondence on the Bond portrait.
- Letter written February 1907, Philadelphia, by S. S. Dewey (?) to Lizzie regarding the Bond family.

o87 Frederick Sterling Sherman (1928–2008) Personal Documents

- Family group record.
- Birth certificate, Frederick Sterling Sherman, 14 April 1928.
- Birth certificate, Patricia Ruth Malone, 27 April 1929.
- Certificate of marriage, Fredrick Sterling Sherman and Patricia Ruth Malone, 27 June 1953.
- San Diego High School, 1945–1995, fifty-year reunion, mini yearbook.
- Photos of author at fiftieth San Diego High School reunion, 7 October 1995; family photos.
- Wedding invitation, Frederick Sterling Sherman and Patricia Ruth Malone.
- Memorial program, Frederick Sherman, a celebration of life service, 20 December 2008, Berkeley City Club.
- Membership certificate of Frederick Sterling Sherman, General Society of Mayflower Descendants. Mayflower ancestors were John Howland and John Tilley.
- Birth certificate, Bradford Sterling Sherman, 8 October 1956.
- Birth certificate, John Hardin Sherman, 11 June 1959.
- Photo of author and son with portrait of Samuel Sterling Sherman.
- Photos of author in Blandford, Massachusetts, 1994 with stones of his ancestors, Samuel and Eleanor Ferguson.
- Author's early draft, *Allen-Sherman Family Lines*, 97 pages.
- Ahnentafel.
- Sherman, Frederick S., "Tangled Loyalties."

o88 Miscellaneous Documents

- Family record of some Sherman births.
- Descendants of Henry Sherman and Agnes Butler.
- Letter dated 4 October 1911 written by Frank D. Sherman to a Miss Sherman regarding Sherman genealogy.
- Photo of Frank D. Sherman.
- Letter dated 6 December 1904 by Albert M. Sterling to Sterling S. Sherman regarding Sherman genealogy.
- Obituary for Evelyn Hardin Sherman, age 86, of San Diego. No publication information.
- Index, *Portrait and Biographical Album*, Fulton County, Illinois, 1890.
- Copy from *Blue and Gold Yearbook*, 1917, p. 285, listing Annie Hardin Sherman.
- Copy from *Blue and Gold Yearbook*, 1918, p. 528, listing Samuel Sterling Sherman.
- Copy from *Blue and Gold Yearbook*, 1918, p. 492, Photo of Annie Hardin Sherman.
- Notes.
- Programme, Judson Female Institute, Twenty-First Annual Examination, 26–30 June 1859, listing Miss Dewey and Miss M. J. and M. E. Sherman.
- Letter from West Rupert, 1 December 1888, to "Dear Uncle" from Fannie B. Drew regarding Sherman genealogy.
- An article listing descendants of Enos Sherman, born 1690. No publication information.
- An article, "Sherman Genealogy," commencing with Edmund Sherman, born 1572, 105–117. No other publication information.
- *San Diego High School, Class of 1945, 50th Reunion*, October 1995.
- "Abraham Lincoln and His Ties with Early Saratoga." *Chronicle Twenty-five*: 244–55. No other publication information.
- Transcription of deposition of Daniel Seeley, brother of Catherine Jane in Revolutionary pension papers of Enoch Sherman.

Box 10

o89 Rick Sherman, Boston Trip

- Handwritten log of author's trip to Virginia and Massachusetts, May–June, 1999.
- Boston maps.

090 Rick Sherman, Kentucky Research Lecture**091 Sherman Family Trip, San Pedro Martyr Mountain**

- Trip taken in 1908 by Eleanor Bradford Allen, Morris Copeland Allen, Richard Minot Allen, Charles Nordoff, Julia Kommers, Eleanor Allen Mitchum, 51 pages.
- Four photos.

092 Sherman Trip, Through the Kern, F. Jones

- Typed document, "A Three Weeks Trip through the Kern, July 8, 1934," Frances Jones. Members of the party: the Mitchums and Allen; the Shermans, Mary and Ricky; the Witters and Jean, Nancy and Bill; the Joneses and Jack, Dick and Bud. With photos, 35 pages.

093 Sherman Trip, Mexico**094 Sherman Trip, Baja California**

- Letter dated February 1938 from Baja California written to Helen and Alice by Butler Ward.
- Letter with photos dated 30 March 1937 to Helen and Alec from Butler Ward in San Felipe.

095 Sherman Trip, Mary Ward Two Diaries

- Diary of her trip abroad, 1955.
- Diary of her trip abroad, 1958.

096 Sherman Trip Photos

- Photo of La Jolla, California, 1906.
- Two contact sheets and negatives of family and trip photos.
- Photo of Bonita, California.
- Three unidentified photos.

097 Robert Morris Copeland Letters

- Copies of letters written by Robert Morris Copeland, 1850s–1860s.

098 Thomas Smith, died 1816

- Family group record, notes.
- Copy of complaint, 27 June 1818, Horace Smith's heirs versus Thomas Smith's heirs.
- Answers to complaint by various heirs, final decree and survey of settlement.
- Bowman versus Brewer, Smith and others, Judgment Box B 38.

099 Horace Smith, circa 1773

- Family group record.
- Indenture, 4 June 1818, between Edward Northington and David Mosby.
- Abstracts of some Smith deeds found in Mercer County.
- Indenture made 23 December 1835 between Lemuel H. Smith and others and John Haines. Reference is Mercer County, Kentucky, Deed Book 20, 157–58.
- Sale of the land won by Horace Smith's heirs by chancery decree.
- Photos of Horace Smith tombstone.

100 Horace and Thomas Smith

- Notes.
- Author's letter dated 1 October 1981 to Jane Dillon on the ancestors of Horace Smith and Eleanor Fulkerson.
- Tours into Kentucky and the Northwest Territory, three journals by the Rev. James Smith of Powhatan County, Virginia, 1783, 1795, 1797.
- Morrow, Josiah. "Sketch of Rev. James Smith." *Ohio Archeological and Historical Society Publications*: 348, 349, 351, 352.

101 Smith and Turner

- Notes.

102 Smith Family

- Notes.
- Brieger, James F., compiler. *Hometown Mississippi*. 2nd ed. No other publication information. p. 551.
- DeCell, Harriet and JoAnne Prichard. *Yazoo, Its Legends and Legacies*. Yazoo Delta Press, 1976. 138, 148, 149, 246, 252–54, 269.

- Hawks, Joanne Varner. "Like Mother, Like Daughter: Nellie Nugent Somerville and Lucy Somerville Howorth." *The Journal of Mississippi History*: 116–118. No other publication information.
- Cash, William M. and Lucy Somerville Howorth, eds. *My Dear Nellie: The Civil War Letters of William L. Nugent to Eleanor Smith Nugent*. Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 1977. 7, 12, 21, 36, 60, 104–105, 114–115, 236–239.

103 Speed and Sutton

- Notes.
- Letter 15 February 1983 to Mr. Sherman from Alma Ray Ison (?) regarding Dr. Christopher Columbus Graham and his family.
- Five pages from the *History of Garrard County*. No other publication information.

104 Spence

- Notes, including pages noted as Spence hypothesis.
- Miscellaneous published pages concerning various Spences.

Box 11

105 Sturman, Hardwick

- Pages from various court documents relating to Sturmans and Harditchs of Maryland mid-1600s. No publication information.
- Keith, Arthur L. "The Hardwick Family." 845–861. No other publication information. Relating to the Hardwick family of Maryland and Virginia.
- Book review of *A Hardwick Genealogy* by C. Vincent Hardwick Sr. *The Virginia Genealogist*: 67–69. No other publication information.

106 Suggett

- Internet article on James Suggett, circa 1779.
- Letter written to Frederick S. Sherman from Ann Miller dated 3 April 1983 regarding research on the Suggett family.
- Print-out of Family History Library Catalog records for various counties in Virginia 1600s–1800s.
- Email correspondence relating to the Suggett family.
- Notes.

107 Todd

- Handwritten notes.
- *Early Settlers of Sangamon County*, 3 pages on Todd family.
- Various printed pages on Levi Todd and family.

108 Walworth

109 Ward

- Obituaries for Butler E. Ward, July 1973.
- Two photos of Butler Ward.
- San Diego High School graduation certificate for Butler Etter Ward, 23 June 1910.
- Stanford University graduation certificate for Butler Ettter Ward, Bachelor of Arts, 17 May 1915.

110 Ware

- Family group records.
- Photos of two of Ware tombstones, China Ware in Sherborn, Massachusetts, and Henry Ware Sr. at Mt. Auburn Cemetery, Cambridge, Massachusetts.
- Two photos of house in Sherborn where Henry Ware Sr. was born in 1794.

111 Weld

- Family group records.

112 Wickliffe

- Family group record and notes.
- Typed will of Charles Wickliffe, Washington County, Kentucky, Will Book C, 45–48. Transcribed from LDS Microfilm 0241410. Written 1 June 1815, proved at Washington County Court, 9 December 1816.
- Wickliffe Bible. A photostatic copy of the family record pages in the files of the Kentucky Historical Society. Copied by Emma Jane Walker and Virginia Wilson, December 1962.

- An article on Robert Wickliffe born Redstone, Pennsylvania 16 January 1775. No publication information.
- Item in *Connections, The Filson Club Newsletter* no. 9 (June 1992): regarding reenactment of the famous duel between Cassius Marcellus Clay and Robert Wickliffe Jr.

113 Photos, Unidentified**114 Photos, Most Unidentified, Some Negatives****115 Mitchum Album****116 Malone-Holmes-Awburn Album****117 Judson College**

- Program for Judson Female Institute: Concert of Vocal and Instrumental Music, 20 February 1857, 1 July 1857, 19 February 1858 and 29 June 1859.
- An article on the Judson concert, no date given.
- *Bulletin of Judson College*, illustrated edition, vol. 20 no. 3 (June, 1933).

Box 12**118 Sherman Family Album, September 1874****119 L.S. Hardin Scrapbook****Box 13****120 Autobiography of Samuel S. Sherman**

- Samuel S. Sherman's handwritten autobiography.
- Sherman, Samuel Sterling. *Autobiography of Samuel Sterling Sherman, 1815–1910*. Chicago: M. A. Donohue & Co., 1910. 117 pages.

Box 14**121 Butler Ward**

- Ward, Butler E. *Army Letters*. Letters of Mr. Ward written between 1916 and 1919 during his service in the Army. Includes photos.

122 Samuel S. Sherman Articles

- Articles compiled by Samuel S. Sherman.

Box 15**123 Family Origins****124 Family Group Charts****Box 16****125 Logs and Photos–1**

- Author unidentified, possibly author's mother or grandmother.
- Mexican trip, undated with photos.
- Sierra trip, 20 August–7 September 1926, with photos.

126 Logs and Photos–2

- Pages written by unidentified author.
- Photo of Mary Ware Allen (Mrs. Samuel S. Sherman) in front of Hotel Del Coronado, April 1924.
- Photos at Kellogg in San Felipe 1938, San Juan Capistrano.
- Photos of author.
- Many unidentified photos.

127 Russell Copeland Sherman

- Records regarding the conservatorship of Russell Copeland Sherman, 1954–1990.

128 Sherman Ancestry Charts

APPENDIX D

✂ In Memoriam

Frederick Sterling Sherman

Professor of Mechanical Engineering, Emeritus

University of California, Berkeley

1928–2008

Frederick (“Rick”) S. Sherman died on 27 October 2008, of a combination of cancer, pneumonia and a mild stroke. He was eighty years old. Professor Sherman, an internationally renowned fluid mechanician, retired from the Department of Mechanical Engineering in 1991.

Rick was born 14 April 1928, in San Diego, California, where he attended local schools. After high school, he enrolled at Harvard College where he graduated cum laude with a bachelor’s degree in engineering science and applied physics. While at Harvard, he was elected to Phi Beta Kappa and was a member of the crew team. Migrating back to California, he continued his education at the University of California, Berkeley. On 27 June 1953, he married Patricia Malone. In 1950, he earned a master’s degree and in 1954 a Ph.D., both in mechanical engineering. He then became an instructor in the Department of Mechanical Engineering, although this faculty position was interrupted in 1956 by a two-year appointment as the head of the Aeromechanical Research Program in the Office of Naval Research in Washington, D.C. In 1958, Sherman returned to Berkeley as an assistant professor of mechanical engineering. He was promoted to associate professor a year later and to professor in 1965.

When Dr. Sherman joined the Berkeley faculty (1954), he and his colleagues conducted pioneering research on the behavior of rarefied gases encountered at very high altitudes. This team of aeronautical and space scientists, led by engineering professor Samuel Schaaf, used low-density wind tunnels to replicate the conditions that satellites and spacecraft encounter in the upper atmosphere. This

research, extending into the 1960s, played a monumental role in the early years of the U.S. space program. Understanding aerodynamic forces in an environment where there are few air molecules was and is critical for optimizing the function of satellites in orbit and space craft in general. It was apparent that no one would venture to launch a \$200 million hardware package into orbit without knowing how it would behave while there. At the time, Berkeley was one of the leading institutions in the world looking at these problems. The resolution of such questions has made possible today's Geographical Positioning System and Geographical Information System devices, TV broadcasting and other technologies that rely upon satellites for relaying signals.

Sherman's research also influenced the era of supersonic flight. In particular, Rick did seminal research on the behavior of shock waves when gases go from subsonic to supersonic conditions, causing the phenomenon known as the sonic boom. Understanding shock wave behavior is essential in designing aerodynamic shapes for supersonic flight, and such knowledge is now taken for granted. Shortly before he retired, Rick finished a text (senior/graduate level) on viscous flow.

As a faculty member, Rick contributed generously to administrative responsibilities and was known as an excellent teacher. In 1961, he was awarded the Academic Senate's Distinguished Teaching Award. From January 1974 through June 1981, Sherman served as an assistant dean in the Office of Research Services of the College of Engineering. In this capacity, he was in charge of the off-campus Richmond Field Station. While this facility was largely used by engineering personnel, there was a group of biologists who were carrying out research on the grasslands at the station. This grassland is very special, as it represents the sole surviving remnant of the grassland community that covered much of the East Bay lowlands before the advent of Europeans to the area, and therefore supports important ecological research. Rick was quick to recognize and appreciate the value of this research, and on numerous occasions during his tenure as director of the station, he protected these research areas from intrusions by maintenance vehicles and various research groups that inadvertently invaded the grassland experiments. His generosity and understanding were much appreciated.

After Rick retired, he devoted most of his extraordinary talents to two other passions, genealogical research and folk dance. He joined the California Genealogical Society in 1980 and served as its president from 1994 to 1996. After that he was appointed its director of research. In this capacity he not only conducted his own investigations, but generously gave much time to researching for others. He even made special trips to the archives in Salt Lake City largely on behalf of others. At one point the society's office in San Francisco was badly in need of additional space, and so Rick and his wife, Pat, donated funds for acquiring the needed room. This has been called the Frederick and Patricia Sherman room. He was also a member of the Society of Mayflower Descendants. Additionally, Rick was an avid and skilled folk dancer. He joined the Berkeley Folk Dancers in 1976 and was a stalwart contributor to the club until a few weeks before his death. He was president in 1982 and 2001, secretary in 1980, a teacher from 1990 to 1997 and again in 2005 to 2006. He also served on many key committees. Always, he was generous with his time, helpful in innumerable ways, and one of those key players in the dance community who will be genuinely missed.

Rick Sherman is survived by Pat, his wife of more than fifty-five years, and by two sons, John and Brad, and two grandchildren.

William Z. Lidicker, Jr.

Stanley A. Berger

Omer Savas

2009

INDEX

Adams

Alexander 247, 324
Andrew N. 316
Ann (—) 242
Anna 192
Anne (Unknown) 316
Cherry 157, 193
Daniel 243
Ebenezer 247
Elizabeth 194, 247
Henry 275, 316, 324
Herb 118
John 242, 243, 316, 317
Joseph 115, 156, 192, 193, 242, 243, 317
Lucy 192
Margaret (Eames) 192, 193, 242, 243
Mary 179, 192
Mary (Coffin) 247, 324
Rachel (Allen) 156, 192
Rebecca 115, 156, 192, 316
Rebecca (Cutter) 192
Samuel 146, 185
Thomas 192
William 156, 192

Addington

Elizabeth (Bowen) 287
Isaac 287

Agar

Lettice 307, 308

Alberts

Sarah 261, 262

Alden

Elizabeth 246, 322, 323
John 194, 323
Priscilla (Mullins) 323

Aldridge

Henry 277

Mary (—) 276, 277

Allen

Abigail 107
Abigail (Ellis) 107, 144, 145
Abigail (Rogers) 318, 319
Alfreda (Beatty) 29
Anna (Brazier) 192, 243
Anna (Guild) 216, 269, 270, 271
Anna Minot (Weld) 46
Charles 29
Daniel 217, 319
David 29, 217
Deborah 243
Dorothea (White) 29
Edward 83
Eleanor Bradford 3, 22, 27, 28, 29
Eleanor Winsor 29
Eleazar 217
Elizabeth 83
Ella Bradford (Copeland) 3, 22, 24, 25, 27, 29, 30, 50, 58, 59
Ernest 29
Gardner Weld 49, 155
Hannah/Allen Minot (Weld) 49
Hannah/Anna Minot (Weld) 46, 50
Hannah Minot (Weld) 49, 87
Hannah (Sabin) 178, 216, 217
Hezekiah 217
James 108, 216, 269, 270, 271
John 100, 101, 269, 319
Joseph 45, 81, 108, 144, 178, 192, 216, 217, 243, 278, 319
Joseph Henry 25, 45, 47, 48, 50, 83, 108
Lucy 49
Lucy Clark 50

Lucy Clark (Ware) 45, 81, 83, 88, 110, 144

Marion Kent 107

Martha 217, 271

Mary 49, 83, 277

Mary Ware 3, 4, 5, 7, 9, 10, 22, 27, 29, 49, 50

Miriam (Fisher) 107, 144

Morris Copeland 22, 27, 28, 29, 50

Nathaniel 243

Nehemiah 217

Noah 107, 144, 145, 178, 217

Patience 243

Phineas 81, 107, 108, 144

Rachel 156, 192

Rebecca (Unknown) 243, 318, 319

Richard Minot 22, 27, 28, 29, 49, 50

Russell Carpenter 1, 3, 20, 21, 23, 27, 29, 49, 50

Ruth (Smith) 81, 107, 108

Sarah (Gay) 144, 178

Sybil (Hamant) (Smith) 144

Thomas Prentiss 45, 83

Walter 243, 318, 319

William Francis 48

Allyn

Abigail (Bradford) 89, 116

John 89, 116

Anderson

Richard Clough 78

Robert Charles 293, 319

Andrews

Samuel 295

Andros

Edmund 246, 306, 321

- Angell**
Israel 194
- Angier**
Samuel 200, 202, 203
- Anna**
Lucia 285
- Antrobus**
Joan 304
- Appleton**
Nathaniel 181, 182, 223
- Armesby**
Anne 269
- Arnold**
Benedict 122
- Askins**
John 129
- Atherton**
Abigail 281, 282
Humphrey 273, 281, 282, 295
Mary (Wales) 282
Thankful 222, 282
- Atkin**
Henry 185
- Audly**
Abigail (Bright) 253
- Auery**
William 278
- Ayers**
Mary 310
- Ayres**
Mr. Ayres 318
- Babcock**
E. S. 60
Hannah 221
- Bacon**
Elizabeth 188, 234, 299
Hannah (____) 299
Hannah (Mayo) 299, 300
Jeremiah 299
Mary 299
Mary (Hawes) 229, 290
Nathaniel 234, 263, 299, 300
Samuel 299, 300
Sarah (Hinckley) 234, 299, 300
Susannah 238, 308
- Badcock**
Dorothy 180, 220, 221, 280
George 221
Robert 221, 279, 280
- Bailey**
Deborah (Jackson) (Smith) 160, 197
Thomas 160, 197
- Baird**
Eleanor (____) (Mitchell) (Ferguson) 163, 164
James 163, 164
- Baker**
Edward D. 73
Joyce 291, 292
- Ball**
Elizabeth (Fiske) 165, 202
Elizabeth (Pierce) 256
James 165, 202
John 202, 256
Sarah (Bullard) 202, 256
Susan (Bullard) 256
Susannah 128, 165
- Ballard**
Elizabeth 309
- Bamfort**
Rebecca 314
- Banks**
Nathaniel 52, 54
- Banta**
Albert 136
- Barbage**
Isabel 323
- Barber**
Abiel (Ellis) 179, 219
BarberZechariah 179, 219
Elizabeth (Clarke) 219, 275, 276
George 219, 275, 276
Joanna (Faxon) (Fisher) 275
Ruth 145, 179
Samuel 275
- Barclay**
John E., Mrs. 315, 316
- Barker**
Mary 255
- Barlow**
Deborah 198
- Barnard**
James 257
Judith (Jenison) 257
- Barron**
Ellis 253
Grace (____) 253
Hannah 200, 201, 253
- Barry**
William T. 98
- Bartlett**
Joseph 281
- Bass**
Mary (Wood) 279
Sarah (Wood) 279
Thomas 279
- Bassett**
Abigail (Bourne) 300
Mary 188, 234, 235, 301
Mary (Rainsford) 300
Rachel (Williston) 234, 235, 300, 301
William 234, 235, 299, 300, 301
- Batchelder**
Deborah 239
- Bates**
Daniel 117, 118, 119
Mildred (Tufts) 117, 118
- Bayley**
William 213
- Baylis**
Frances 265
Sarah (____) 265
- Beach**
Easter (Gregory) 160
Thomas 160
- Beal**
Sarah 298
- Beamsley**
Martha (Hallor) (Bushnell) 301, 302
William 301, 302
- Beatty**
Alfreda 29
- Beecher**
Catherine 35
- Belcher**
Joseph 219
- Beli Mawr, King of Britain** 286
- Bell**
Abigail (Page) 154
Elizabeth (Cave) (Johnson) 211, 212
Thomas 227
William 211, 212
- Bemis**
Anna (Livermore) 166, 202, 203
Hannah 96, 97, 128, 166
Huldah (Livermore) 128, 166
John 202, 257
Jonathan 128, 166, 202
Joseph 257
Judith (Jenison) (Barnard) 257
Mary (Harrington) 202, 257
Sarah (____) 257
Sarah (Holland) (Phillips) 257
- Benjamin**
Mark 129
- Bennett**
Hannah 197

- Berkeley**
William 263
- Bernal**
Arturo 1
- Bett**
Elizabeth 183
Grace 183, 227
- Beverley**
Harry 212
- Bickley**
Elizabeth (Overton) 211
- Biddle**
Nicholas 152
- Biggs**
John 291
Mary (Dassett) 291
- Bird**
Ann 181, 222
Ann () 282
Thankful (Atherton) 222, 282
Thomas 222, 281, 282
- Biscoe**
Elizabeth (Honor) 251, 252
Nathaniel 251, 252
Sarah 200, 251, 252
- Black**
Elizabeth 104, 105, 137, 138, 171
Elizabeth (Love) 171
George 138, 171
Henry 138, 171
John 138, 171
Robert 138, 171
Robert Love 171
Thomas 138, 171
- Blackburn**
Maj. Blackburn 168
- Blackwell**
Bathsheba (Bourne) 300
Micha 300
- Blanchard**
Anna (Rolfe) 235, 303
Thomas 303
- Blandford**
John 317, 318
Mary 242, 243, 317, 318
Mary () 317, 318
- Blaney**
Benjamin 156
- Bledsoe**
Abraham 265
Anne () 264, 265
Hannah 211, 212, 264, 265
Susannah (Fulkerson) 170
Thomas 170
- William 264, 265
- Boice**
Evert 136
- Boltwood**
Lucius 162, 251
- Bond**
Charles 66
Elizabeth () 251
Elizabeth (Jackson) (Prentice) 200
Grace (Coolidge) 164, 200
Hannah 37, 66, 201
Hannah (Bright) 126, 164
Hannah (Stearns) 66, 96, 97
Henry 66, 96, 97, 127, 128, 164, 165, 166, 200, 202, 251
Jonas 126, 128, 164, 200
Jonathan 66
Leonard 96, 127, 128
Lucy (Brown) 96, 126, 127, 128
Sarah (Biscoe) 200, 251, 252
Susan 66
Susanna (Stearns) 66
Thomas 251
William 66, 96, 126, 128, 156, 157, 200, 251, 252
- Bonney**
Elizabeth (Hatch) 228
- Boone**
Daniel 134
- Borden**
Elizabeth 272
Joanna 271
Joanna (Hooker) 217, 220, 271, 272, 278
John 271, 272
Jonathan 271
Matthew 272
- Boreman**
Joanna 239, 310
Margaret (Offing) 310
Thomas 310
- Bouquet**
Henry 134
- Bourne**
Abigail 234, 300
Bathsheba 300
Bathsheba (Hallett) 300
Elisha 234, 300
Elizabeth 234
Hannah 300
John 234
Jonathan 234
Mary 152, 153, 188, 234, 300
- Mary (Bassett) 188, 234, 235
Nathan 188, 234, 300
Patience (Skiff) 234, 300
Richard 300
Stephen 234
Thomas 234
- Boursiquot**
Aaron 209
Anne Elizabeth 172, 208, 209
Jeanne (Guillet) 209
- Bowen**
Edward Augustus 287
Elizabeth 287
Elizabeth (Johnson) 222, 283
Elizabeth (Tucker) 222
Ellen (Franklyn) 286
Francis 286
Griffith 225, 226, 227, 283, 286, 287
Hannah (Winchester) 181, 222
Henry 222, 226, 227, 283, 287
Isaac 181, 222, 283
Margaret 182, 225, 226, 227
Margaret (Fleming) 225, 226, 227, 283, 286, 287
Mary 146, 181, 183, 226, 227
Richard 270
Richard LeBaron 270, 271
Susannah (King) 283
- Bowers**
John 218
Sarah (Clarke) 179, 218
- Bowes**
Abigail (Boyce) 223
Dorcas 158, 194, 223
Dorcas (Champney) 181, 194, 222, 223
Elizabeth 109
Lucy 109, 110, 146, 147
Lucy (Hancock) 147, 182
Martha (Remington) 181, 223
Nicholas 146, 147, 181, 182, 194, 222, 223, 224
Samuel 223
Sarah (Hubbard) 222
William 223
- Bowles**
John 287
- Bowman**
Jacob 104, 136
Mary 165
- Boyce**
Abigail 223

Boyle

John 67, 102

Boylston

Ann (White) 237, 238

Peter 238

Bradford

Abigail 89, 116

Alexander 194

Alice (Carpenter) 321

Alice (Richards) 245, 322

Ann (Tufts) (Merchant) 89, 90,
116, 117

Claudius 119

Daniel 194

Dorcas 158

Eleanor 51, 57, 89, 90, 91, 92, 119

Elizabeth 119, 245

Elizabeth (Parkman) 116, 157,
158

Gamaliel 245

George 60

Gershom 157, 193, 194, 245, 246

Hannah 245

Hannah (Rogers) 193, 245, 246

Hopedill 116, 158, 194

Israel 245

Jeremiah 194

Jerusha 245

Job 116, 157, 158, 194, 324

John 245

Joseph Nash 89, 90, 116, 118,
120, 157, 158

Martin 60

Mary 60

Mary (Tufts) 116, 118, 119, 120

Mary (Wood) 322

Noah 194

Perez 193, 245, 322

Priscilla 194

Priscilla (Wiswall) 157, 193, 194,
246

Robert Fiske 119

Samuel 158, 193, 194, 245

Sarah (___) (Griswold) 322

Solomon 194

Welthea 245

William 245, 246, 289, 291, 321

William Bowes 116, 118, 119, 120,
157, 158**Bradley**

Robert 211

Bramlette

Thomas Eliot 41, 42

Brattle

William 295

Brazier

Anna 192, 243

Brewer

Daniel 136

Sarah 313

Bridge

Anna 203, 257, 258

Anna (Danforth) 258

Dorcas 222, 223, 284

Dorcas (Dowing) 284

Matthew 258

Thomas 284

Bridges

Edmond 304

Bridgham

Joseph 306

Susannah (Upshall) (Cock) 305,
306**Briggs**

L. Vernon 89

Bright

Abigail 253

Anna 253, 306

Anna (Goldstone) 200, 253

Beriah 253

Elizabeth 253

Hannah 126, 164, 200

Henry 200, 253, 255

John 253

Mary 166, 200, 203, 253

Mary (___) 253

Mary (Coolidge) 164, 200, 201,
203

Nathaniel 164, 200, 203, 253

Brinsmaid

Easter (Gregory) (Beach) 160

Josiah 160

Broadhead

Daniel 131

Brock

William 213

Brooks

Eleazer 156

Brown

Abraham 164, 201, 254

Col. Brown 126

Edmund 254

Elijah 109

Elizabeth (Simonds) 128, 165

Frank 127

H. 178

John 54

Jonathan 127, 128, 164, 165, 201,
254

Lucy 96, 126, 127, 128

Lydia (___) 254

Mary 184, 185

Mary (Hyde) 164, 201

Mary (Shattuck) 201, 254

Thomas 151

Browne

Hannah (Hobart) 322

John 322

Browning

Martah (Cobham) 322

Buck

Frances (Marsh) 242, 315, 316

Isaac 242, 315, 316

Mehitabel 192, 242

Buckminster

Elizabeth (Clarke) 282

Jabez 237

Joseph 282

Lydia 282

Buckner

Thomas 213

Bulkeley

Edward 285

Lucia (Anna) 285

Mary 223, 225, 285

Bullard

Beatrice (Hall) 256

Benjamin 272

George 256

Isaac 272

Jacob 256

John 256

Mary 178, 217, 256

Mary (___) (Grissell) 241, 314

Mary (Richards) 217, 272

Nathaniel 217, 272

Sarah 202, 256

William 241, 242, 272, 314

Bullen

Samuel 220, 279

Bullitt

Thomas W. 42

Burchard

Mr. Burchard 33

Burgoyne

John 95, 130

Burnley

Zachariah 213

Burr

Catherine (Wakeman) 198, 199

Deborah (Barlow) 198

- Elizabeth 294
John 161, 198
Ozias 198, 199
Sarah 123, 161
Sarah (Wakeman) 161
- Burt**
Elizabeth 251
- Bushnell**
Edmund 301, 302
Elizabeth 235, 301, 302
Martha (Hallor) 301, 302
- Bussey**
Benjamin 111
- Butler**
Abigail 159, 196
Joyce (Baker) 291, 292
Lydia 229, 291, 292
Nicholas 291, 292
- Butterfield**
Nathaniel 249, 250
Samuel 249
Sarah (Mitchell) 195, 249, 250
- Byrd**
William 172, 173
- Camp**
Mary 307
- Campbell**
Elizabeth (McCleary) 125
Robert 125
- Canne**
Mary 275, 276
- Cannon**
John 188
- Capen**
Dorothy 305, 306
- Carpenter**
Alice 321
Russell Lant 20, 25
- Carr**
Barbara (Overton) 211
Martha 214, 268, 269
Sarah (___) 268, 269
William 268, 269
- Carter**
Rebecca (Cutter) (Hill) 193
Samuel 193
- Cartwright**
Charles C., Mrs. 258, 259
- Carwithy**
Elizabeth 305
Elizabeth (Farnum) 236, 305
Joshua 305
- Cave**
Ann 265
- Benjamin 211, 212, 264, 265
David 265
Elizabeth 174, 211, 212, 265
Hannah 265
Hannah (Bledsoe) 211, 212, 264, 265
John 265
Richard 265
Sarah 265
William 265
- Cavender**
Ann (Cave) 265
- Chadbourne**
Alice 240, 311, 312
Humphrey 311
Lucy (Treworgy) 311
- Chadwick**
John White 46, 48
- Chamberlain**
Elizabeth 147
Jacob 183, 227
Mary (Child) 227
Sarah (Faxon) (Weld) 182, 183
- Chambers**
Elenor 171
Elizabeth (Sanford) (Jackson) (Jackson) 160, 161, 198
Mr. Chambers 170
Thomas 138, 161, 171, 198
- Champney**
Daniel 222, 223, 284
Dorcas 181, 194, 222, 223
Dorcas (Bridge) 222, 223, 284
Hepzibah (Corlet) (Minot) 284
Jane (___) 284
Richard 284
Samuel 284
- Chaplin**
Clement 249
- Chenery**
Mary 277
- Cheney**
Alice 208
Anne 262, 263
Charity (___) 263
Charles 172
Richard 262, 263
- Chickering**
Ann (Fiske) 273
Francis 269, 273
Henry 273
John 273
Mary 217, 218, 273
- Child**
Benjamin 147, 183, 227
Daniel 257
Elizabeth 227
Ephraim 183, 227, 251
Grace (Morris) 147, 183
John 227
Joshua 183, 227
Margaret 227
Martha 110, 147
Mary 227
Mary (Bowen) 183, 227
Mehetiable 227
- Chinn**
Betty 104
Lucy Jane (Hardin) 102, 104
Marcus Aurelius 102
Martinette 104
Martinette (Hardin) (McKee) 104
- Chittenden**
Henry 314
Isaac 242, 314
Israel 314
Martha (Vinal) 242, 314
Mary (Vinal) 314
Mehitabel (Buck) 192, 242
Rebecca 156, 192
Rebecca (Bamfort) 314
Stephen 192
Steven 242
Thomas 314
- Christian**
William 134
- Church**
Benjamin 301
- Churchman**
Anna 322
- Clap**
Barbara 285
Joan (___) 217, 273
John 217, 273
- Clark**
Benjamin 218, 274
Christopher 229, 230, 292, 293
David 219, 277
Dorcas (Morse) 218, 274
Eleanor 304
Elizabeth 179, 180, 182, 219, 223, 225, 230, 277, 284, 294, 295
Elizabeth (Clark) 230, 284, 294, 295
Elizabeth (Cook) 294
Eunice 234

- George Rogers 134
 Hannah 179, 218
 Jonas 109, 110, 146, 294, 295
 Joseph 274, 277
 Lena J. (Jacob) 80
 Lucy 278
 Lucy (Bowes) 109, 110, 146, 147
 Mary 83, 109, 110, 184, 229, 230
 Mary (Allen) 277
 Mary (Wheelock) 219, 277
 Mercy 184, 230
 Rebecca (Eire) 229, 230, 292, 293
 Rev. Mr. Clark 114
 Sarah () 294
 Susanna 294
 T. 157
 Thomas 146, 223, 225, 294
 Timothy 185, 294
- Clarke**
 Abigail 231
 Abigail () 222
 Abigail (Atherton) 281, 282
 Alice (Fenn) 218, 274, 275
 Ann (Bird) 181, 222
 Elizabeth 219, 275, 276, 282
 Elizabeth () 281
 Elizabeth (Lillie) 185
 Elizabeth (Norman) 282
 Elizabeth (Whiting) 285
 Faith 228, 289
 Faith () 289
 Grace (Tilley) 150, 185, 186
 Hugh 281, 282
 James 150
 John 150, 181, 222, 281, 282
 Jonas 149, 150, 185, 230, 231, 232, 284
 Joseph 218, 275
 Katherine 231
 Lydia (Buckminster) 282
 Mary 231
 Mary (Bowen) 146, 181
 Mary (Bulkeley) 223, 225, 285
 Mary (Canne) 275, 276
 Moses 282
 Prudence 231
 Sarah 111, 149, 150, 179, 185, 218
 Sarah (Richardson) 185, 230, 231
 Stephen 150
 Thomas 181, 230, 275, 276, 284, 285
 Thurston 289
 Timothy 230, 231
- William 282
- Clay**
 Elizabeth (Logan) (Hardin) 101
 F. P. 104
 Henry 79, 100, 102
 James B. 79
 Porter 70, 102, 104
- Clealand**
 Philip 98
- Cleland**
 Thomas 77
- Clements**
 Frances () 267
 William 267
- Cobham**
 Martah 322
- Cock**
 Ann 236
 Elizabeth 305
 Joseph 236, 305, 306
 Mary 177, 189, 190, 236, 305
 Susannah (Upshall) 236, 305, 306
- Cocke**
 Joseph 305
 William 134
- Coddington**
 Emm () 235, 302, 303
 Hannah (Gardner) 303
 John 235, 302, 303
 John Insley 235, 303
- Codman**
 John 156
- Coffin**
 Joane (Kember) 324
 Mary 247, 324
 Peter 324
- Cogswell**
 Elizabeth (Thompson) 304, 305
 John 304, 305
 Sarah 235, 236, 304, 305
 Susanna 190, 238
 Susannah (Hawkes) 238
 William 238
- Coldam**
 Clement 311
 Elizabeth 240, 311
 Mary (Pierce) 311
- Coldham**
 Peter 315
- Cole**
 Elizabeth 254
- Collier**
 George 123
- Collins**
 Lewis 131
 Widow 140
- Conner**
 Lewis 213
- Conyers**
 Ann Holland 142, 175, 176, 177
 Elizabeth (Foote) 215
 Henry 176, 177, 215, 216
 Hester 215
 Jannette (Pattison) 176, 177, 216
 Sarah 216
 William 177, 215
- Cook**
 Elizabeth 294
- Cooke**
 Lucy (Hancock) (Bowes) 182
 Samuel 182
- Coolidge**
 Capt. Coolidge 144
 Elizabeth 252
 Grace 164, 200
 Hannah (Barron) 200, 201, 253
 Hannah (Livermore) 200, 252
 John 200, 252, 253, 255
 Mary 164, 200, 201, 203, 252, 257
 Mary (Bright) 253
 Mary (Ravens) 252, 253
 Mary (Wellington) (Maddock) 252
 Priscilla (Rogers) 253
 Richard 252
 Sarah 252
 Simon 200, 201, 253
- Cooper**
 Elizabeth () 319
 Henry 22
 J. 105
 John 244
 Sarah 192, 243, 244
 Sarah (Morse) 243, 244, 319
 Thomas 270
 Timothy 243, 244, 319
 William 232
- Copeland**
 Abraham 113, 152, 153, 154, 188, 324
 Benjamin Franklin 51, 87
 Charles 87
 Charles Carroll 88
 Elizabeth 153, 317
 Elizabeth (Tupper) 113, 152, 153

- Ella Bradford 3, 22, 24, 25, 27,
29, 30, 50, 52, 58, 59, 61
Fred 52, 58, 59, 61
Jacob 187
Jim 61
Joesphine Gannett (Kent) 60
John 233, 296
Josephine Gannett (Kent) 24,
51, 57, 58, 59, 61, 89, 91, 119
Julia Fellows (Ruggles) 51, 88
Lawrence 296
Lydia (Townsend) 296
Mary (Kingman) 187, 233, 297
Mary (Owen) 152, 187
Mary (Page) 87, 113, 114, 154
Morris 88
Nathaniel 87, 113, 114, 154
Robert Morris 24, 51, 52, 53, 54,
55, 56, 59, 88, 89
Ruth (Newcomb) 233, 296, 297
Samuel 152, 187, 233
Sarah 113, 154
Thomas Jefferson 88, 114
Warren Turner 153, 154, 187
William 59
William Ellery 61, 88, 119
- Corlet**
Hepzibah 284
- Cornwallis**
Charles 105, 137, 171
- Cortelyou**
Pieter 261
- Cosby**
Mary (Overton) 211
- Cotton**
John 286
Rowland 299, 300
Rowland, Mrs. 300
- Cousseau**
Jacques 260
- Cowing**
Desire (Gorham) (Hatch) 183,
184
John 184
- Craft**
Alice (___) 309
Elizabeth (Seaver) 239, 309
Griffin 309
Jonathan 239
Mehitabel 190
Nathaniel 190, 239
Patience (Topliffe) 190, 239
Samuel 239, 309
- Crafts**
James Monroe 309
William Francis 309
- Craik**
James 42
- Crane**
Abigail (Butler) 159
John 196
Josiah 196
- Crittenden**
Isaac 316
- Crocker**
Mary 111
- Crooke**
Elizabeth 277
- Crowe**
Elizabeth 199
- Cudworth**
James 316
- Cumins**
Alexander 203
- Curry**
Randy 140
- Curtis**
Hannah (Polley) 190, 238
Isaac 190, 238, 308
Mary 306
Mary (Camp) 307
Mary (Rawlins) 307
Mehitabel (Craft) 190
Rebeckah 114, 154, 155
Sarah (Eliot) 238, 307, 308
Thomas 307
William 238, 307, 308
- Cushing**
John 116
John F. 252
- Cutler**
Hannah 320
- Cutter**
Benjamin 320
Elizabeth (___) 320
John 193, 244
Lydia (Harrington) 244
Mary (Adams) 192
Rebecca 156, 192, 193
Rebecca (Rolfe) 192, 244, 320
Richard 320
William 192, 244, 320
William Richard 320
- Cutting**
Mr. Cutting 318
Richard 321
- Dally**
Hannah (Volkerts) 261
- Dana**
Stephen 115
- Dane**
Eleanor (Clark) 304
John 304
Philemon 304
Sarah 235, 304
- Danforth**
Anna 258
Thomas 295, 305
- Daniel**
John 221
Mary 221
- Daniels**
Mercy 235
- Darwin**
Charles 106
Erasmus 106
- Dassett**
Mary 291
- Davenport**
Addington 149
- David**
Ebenezer 127
Owen 132, 168
- Davies**
Elery D. 155
Harriet 155
Jane 97, 129, 132
Mary 133
Nathaniel 132, 133, 168, 206
Nicholas 255
Philip 133
Sarah 132
Sarah (Davie) 132
- Davis**
Abigail 191, 240
Bridget (Kinman) 313
Caleb 158
Elias 269
Elizabeth 297
John 240, 313
Marie (___) 313
Mary (Torrey) 240, 313
N. K. 34
Owen 206
Tobias 313
Walter Goodwin 310
- Dawkin**
Alice 286, 287
- Day**
Sarah 239

Dean

Daniel 243
Margaret (Eames) (Adams) 242

Deane

George C. 21

Deeke

Joseph 265, 266
Katherine (Lewis) 212, 265, 266

Delabree

Andrew 268

Delano

Jabez 113

Delgado

Maria 10

Denison

Edward 285
Elizabeth (Weld) 285

Denne

Elizabeth 304

Derrickson

Volker 261
Volkert 170

de Soison

Magdalena 203
Marcus 203

Devotion

Elizabeth 182

Dewey

David 199
Eliza 36, 37, 38, 66
Ellen Lord 66
George Francis 66
Hannah (Bond) 37, 66
Louisa 66
Louisa (Heywood) 66
Louise 37
Rebecca 66
Rebecca (Unknown) 96
Sarah (____) 199
Sarah Comstock 66
Susan (Bond) 66
Unknown 96
William 37, 66, 96

Dewing

Andrew 217

de Witt

Maria 207, 261, 262
Pieter 261, 262
Sarah (Alberts) 261, 262

Dillingham

John 234
Mary 234

Dillon

Patrick, Mrs. 140

Dircks

Annetje (Phillipse) 261
Volkert 261

Dircksen

Dina (van Leeuvin) 207, 262
Dirck 207
Frederick 207
Jacob 261
Volker 207
Volkert 262

Dix

Abigail 256

Doggett

Elizabeth (Hawes) 229, 290

Doling

Mary 235, 302

Donnell

Alice 191, 240
Alice (Chadbourn) 240, 311, 312
Frances (____) 311
Henry 311
Nathaniel 312
Samuel 240, 311, 312
Thomas 311

Dorland

Analche (van Leeuvin) 262
John 262

Doty

Desire 228, 289
Edward 228, 289
Elizabeth 228, 289
Faith (Clarke) 228, 289
Mary 183, 228, 289

Doubleday

Lucy (Adams) 192

Dowing

Dorcas 284

Drake

Samuel 180

Draper

Lyman 132, 168

Duballet

John 117, 119

Dudley

Dorothy (Yorke) 306, 307
Martha 307
Mercy 236, 237, 306, 307
Thomas 306, 307

Dunbar

Charles F. 57

Duncan

Hannah 171
Jesse 171
Joseph 73

Dunmore

John Murray 129, 134

Dunn

Hepzibah 181, 221

Dunnington

Grey, Mrs. 265

Durant

William 296

du Sauchoy

Madeline 260
Marc 260

du Soisson

Lysbeth (Rosiljel) 260
Magdalena 258, 260
Marcus 260

Dutch

Benjamin 311
Elizabeth (Roper) 239, 310, 311
Hannah 191, 239, 311
John 239, 310, 311
Mary (Kimball) 310
Nathaniel 311
Robert 310
Susannah 311

Eames

Margaret 192, 193, 242, 243
Margaret (____) 317
Mary (Blandford) (Padfoot)
242, 243, 317, 318
Thomas 242, 243, 278, 317, 318

Earle

Elizabeth (Holbrook) 216
Samuel 216

Early

Joseph 213

Edenden

Edmund 281
Elizabeth (Wightman) 281
Sarah 222, 281

Edgar

Elizabeth Povall (Price) 177
Thomas 177, 178

Edgecombe

John 212
Sarah 212, 265

Edson

Elizabeth 297

Edward

Deering 213

Edwards

Ann 277

Eire

Dorothy (Paine) 292, 293
Rebecca 229, 230, 292, 293

- Simon 292, 293
- Elder**
Joseph 163
- Eliot**
Bennett 307, 308
EliotLettice (Agar) 307, 308
Jacob 287
John 183, 278, 307, 308
Mr. Eliot 194
Sarah 238, 307, 308
- Ellis**
Abiel 179, 219
Abigail 107, 144, 145
Alice (Phillips) 276
Elizabeth (Metcalf) 179, 217, 218
Hannah (Jones) 179
James 145, 179
Joan (Unknown) (Clap) 217, 273
John 217, 272, 273, 276
Joseph 179, 217, 218
Lydia (Lovell) 217
Mary (Wright) 219, 276
Mathias 299
Micah 153
Remember 234
Samuel 273
Tabitha (Mason) 145, 179
Thomas 219, 276
- Ely**
Joshua 205, 259
- Emerson**
Edward 285
Ralph Waldo 51, 89
- Eskridge**
William 268
- Everett**
Charles Carrol 45
Joanna (Guild) (Kingsbury) 219
William 219
- Everingham**
Ruth Hamilton 169
- Fairfax**
William 168
- Fairfield**
Elizabeth (White) 238
William 238
- Fales**
Joseph 180
Sarah (___) 180
Sarah (Kingsbury) 180
- Farley**
Michael 304
- Farmer**
Isabel (Barbage) 323
- Farnum**
Elizabeth 236, 305
Elizabeth (___) 305
John 305
- Faunce**
John 157
- Fauntleroy**
Moore 268
- Fawdry**
Jane (___) 287, 288
Joane 226, 287, 288
Richard 287, 288
- Faxon**
Deborah (Thayer) 183, 226
Joane (Fawdry) 226, 287, 288
Joanna 275, 277
Sarah 182, 183, 240, 241
Sarah (Mullins) (Gannett) (Sav-
ill) 287
Thomas 226, 287, 288
William 287
- Fellows**
Abigail (Gaines) 191
Caleb 155
Cornelius 115, 155
Deborah (Batchelder) (Tilton)
239
Elizabeth (Norwood) (Saunders)
155, 191
Elney Donnell 155
Hannah 155
Hannah (Dutch) 191, 239
Hannah (Parker) 155
Hannah Pierpont 155
Harriet 155
Isaac 239, 310
Joanna (Boreman) 239, 310
John Williams 155
Jonathan 155, 191, 239, 310
Mary (Ayers) 310
Nancy 155
Nathaniel 155
Sally 88, 155
Sarah 88, 114, 115
Sarah (Day) 239
Sarah (Potter) (Rust) 239
Sarah (Williams) 115, 155
William 310
- Fenn**
Alice 218, 274, 275
- Ferguson**
Ann 94, 124, 163
Eleanor (Unknown) (Mitchell)
163, 164
- Isabel 163
Isabel (___) 162, 163, 247
James 163
Mary 162, 163
Samuel 124, 162, 163, 247
- Fessenden**
Guy 157
- Fisher**
Anne 149
Anthony 275, 277
Joanna (Faxon) 275, 277
John 149, 184
Mary 111, 148
Miriam 107, 144
Sarah 219, 277
Sarah (Harris) 149, 184
Wilfred 149
- Fiske**
Abigail 165, 202
Abigail (Park) 202, 256
Ann 273
Elizabeth 165, 202
Elizabeth (___) 202
Elizabeth (Frye) 256, 257
Hannah (Richards) 256
John 202, 256
Nathan 202, 256
Sarah (Wyeth) 256
Susanna (___) 256
- Fleming**
Alice (Dawkin) 286, 287
Henry 286, 287
Margaret 225, 226, 227, 283,
286, 287
- Floyd**
John 134
- Folkerse**
Dirck 207
Maria (de Witt) 207
- Fontaine**
Aaron 106, 139, 174
Anne Elizabeth (Boursiquot)
172, 208, 209
Anne Overton 78, 106, 140
Barbara Overton (Terrell) 106,
139, 140
Elizabeth (Fourreau) 172, 173
Elizabeth (Whiting) (Thurston)
140
Francis 209
Jacques 172
James 208
John 209
Mary Ann 139, 173

- Moses 209
 Peter 139, 172, 173, 174, 209
 Sarah (Wade) 139, 173, 174
- Fonteyn**
 Helena 203
- Foot**
 Elizabeth 215
 Richard 215
- Foster**
 William 117, 119
- Fountain**
 Sarah (Wade) 210
- Fourreau**
 Elizabeth 172, 173
- Fowle**
 Beriah (Bright) 253
 George 306
 Hannah 236, 306
- Fowler**
 Professor Fowler 33
 Samuel 124
- Fox**
 Henry 177
- Franklin**
 Benjamin 181
- Franklyn**
 Ellen 286
- Freeman**
 John 234
- Fremont**
 John C. 53
- French**
 Ebenezer 197
 Eleanor (Smith) 197
- Frost**
 Ebenezer 244
 Joseph 241
 Sarah 197
- Frye**
 Elizabeth 256, 257
 Elizabeth (___) 256
 Mary 257
 William 256
- Fulkerson**
 Abraham 105, 137, 138, 171
 Abram 104, 105, 138, 171
 Ann (___) (Stonestreet) 138
 Betsey 138
 Dinah 105, 138
 Dirck 137, 170
 Eleanor 75, 104, 105
 Elenor 138
 Elenor (Unknown) 137, 170
 Elizabeth 105
- Elizabeth (Black) 104, 105, 137, 138, 171
 Frederick 137, 138, 170, 171
 Hannah 170
 James 137, 170
 John 138
 Mary 137
 Neeltje (___) 137
 Peter 170
 Richard 137, 170
 Sarah 105, 138, 171
 Susannah 170
 William 138
- Fuller**
 Elizabeth 201, 254, 277
 Elizabeth (Cole) 254
 John 254, 271
 Judah (Gay) 271
 Nathaniel 127
- Gage**
 Anna M. 49
 Charles Sibley 20
 Lucy Clark (Allen) 50
 Margaret W. 49
 Miriam 49
 Sybil 22, 49
- Gaines**
 Abigail 191
- Galland**
 Jane 298, 299
- Gallatin**
 Albert 112
- Gamby**
 Martha 215
- Gannett**
 Ezra Stiles 57
 Sarah (Mullins) 287
 Thomas 287
- Gardiner**
 Anne 263
- Gardner**
 Anna (Rolfe) (Blanchard) 235, 303
 Hannah 303
 Henry 303
 Richard 189, 235, 303
 Ruth 189, 235, 303
 Thomas 126, 156
- Garland**
 Edward 211, 264
 Elizabeth 174, 210, 211
 Jane (Jennings) 264
 Margaret 210
 Martha Jane (Hensley) 211
- Martha Jane (Unknown) 264
 Peter 264
 William 210
- Gay**
 Abiel 271
 Calvin 180
 Eliezer 271
 Frederick Lewis 272
 Joanna 180, 220
 Joanna (Hooker) (Borden) 217, 220, 271, 272, 278
 Joanna (Kingsbury) 180
 John 217, 220, 271, 272, 278
 Jonathan 178, 217, 271
 Judah 271
 Mary (Bullard) 178, 217
 Nathaniell 271
 Samuell 271
 Sarah 144, 178, 217
- George**
 Susanna 257, 320
- George III, King of England** 111
- Gibson**
 Joane (___) (Prentice) 280
 John 280, 281
- Gifford**
 Elizabeth 234
- Gilbert**
 Hannah (Bradford) 245
 Nathaniel 245
- Given**
 John 163
- Glover**
 John 279
- Godfrey**
 Mary 139
- Godwin**
 Mary 198
- Goldstone**
 Anna 200, 253
 Anna (___) 253
 Henry 253
- Gomes**
 Peter G. 286
- Goodenow**
 John 258
 Mary (___) (Livermore) 257
- Gooding**
 Hannah (Mountfort) (Warner) 154, 189, 190
 Thomas 154, 190
- Gordon**
 William 85, 110, 111

- Gore**
John 227
- Gorham**
Desire 183, 184, 229, 291
Desire (Hawes) 183, 184
Desire (Howland) 229, 290, 291
James 291
John 183, 184, 229, 290, 291
Margaret (Stephenson) 290
Ralph 290
- Gott**
Anthony 139
Richard 139
- Graham**
Christopher Columbus 77
- Grant**
Arthur Haskings 199
Hannah (Palmer) 199
Joseph 161, 162, 199
Mary 124, 161, 162
Mary (Warren) 161, 162, 199
Tahan 199
Ulysses S. 55
- Greene**
Nathaniel 126
Sarah 284
- Greenleaf**
Margaret 255
- Greenough**
Elizabeth 154
James Bradstreet 48
- Gregory**
Ann 160
Beulah 196
Daniel 160
Deborah 160
Easter 160
Ebenezer 160
Enoch 122, 159, 160, 196, 197
Esther (Smith) 122, 159, 160, 197
Gilead 160, 196
Mary (Sillaven) 159, 196
Miriam 93, 121, 122, 160, 196
Penina 160
Rebecca (Smith) 197
Rebecca (Wheeler) 196
Samuel 159, 160, 196
Silah 196
Thadeus 159, 196, 197
- Griffin**
Deborah (Norton) (Hill) 319
Matthew 319
- Grissell**
Elizabeth 241, 242, 314
- Francis 241, 313, 314
Hannah 192, 241, 314
Mary 314
Mary (Unknown) 241, 314
- Griswold**
Francis 322
Sarah () 322
- Guild**
Anna 216, 269, 270, 271
Elizabeth (Crooke) 277
Joanna 179, 219
John 219, 270, 277
Samuel 270
Sarah (Fisher) 219, 277
- Guillet**
Jeanne 209
- Hackerel**
Hannah 150, 186
- Hadaway**
Martin 260
- Haieward**
James 255
Judith (Phippen) 201, 254, 255
- Haley**
Elizabeth 181
- Hall**
Beatrice 256
- Hallett**
Bathsheba 300
- Hallor**
Martha 301, 302
- Hamant**
Sybil 144
- Hamilton**
Joseph 319
- Han**
Dorcas 223
- Hancock**
Ebenezer 223
Elizabeth (Clark) 182, 223, 225
Joanna () 284
John 146, 182, 223, 225
Lucy 147, 182
Mary (Prentice) 223, 284
Nathaniel 223, 284
Sarah (Greene) 284
Thomas 185
- Hardage**
Lydia 175, 176, 214, 269
Sarah 214
- Hardewyn**
Madeline (du Sauchoy) 260
Magdalena (du Soisson) 203, 258, 260
- Martin 260
Marty 203, 258, 260
- Hardin**
Abigail 204
Alice 204
Ann 204
Annie Overton (Jacob) 42, 44, 80
Benjamin 98, 204, 205, 259
Charles 102, 104
Elizabeth 39, 77, 105, 204
Elizabeth (Logan) 67, 97, 98, 101, 103
Ellen 19, 73, 75, 102
Evelyn Johnson 1, 15, 18, 19, 80, 140
Hannah 167
Henry 204
Jane (Davies) 97, 129, 132
John 97, 98, 100, 102, 104, 128, 133, 167, 204, 206, 258
John J. 74
John J. 38, 45, 67, 68, 72, 105, 106
Lemuel Smith 15, 38, 40, 43, 128
Lucy Jane 102, 104
Lydia 167
Lydia (Waters) 128, 166, 167, 168
Magdalena 205, 259
Mark 98, 101, 128, 129, 130, 132, 133, 167, 168, 203, 204, 205, 258, 259
Martha 204
Martin 98, 128, 166, 167, 168, 204, 205, 259
Martin D. 14, 39, 44, 67, 97, 99, 101, 133, 204, 206, 258
Martinette 70, 102, 104
Mary 167, 204
Mary (Unknown) 203, 204, 205
Rosannah 167
Sarah 97, 101, 102, 129, 133, 167, 204, 258, 259
Sarah () 205
Sarah Ellen (Smith) 38, 67, 71, 75, 76, 102, 104, 105
Stull 98
- Harding**
Abraham 279
Hannah (Wood) 279
Mark 205
Martin 205
- Harditch**
Anne (Armesby) 269

- James 269
- Hardwick**
Elizabeth 269
Elizabeth (Unknown) 214, 269
James 214, 269
John 269
Sarah 269
Thomas 269
- Harlakenden**
Roger 305
- Harmar**
Josiah 131
- Harmon**
Johnson 162
- Harrington**
Capt. Harrington 126
Hannah (Winter) 244, 320
John 244, 320
Lydia 193, 244
Mary 202, 257
Robert 257, 320
Susanna (George) 257, 320
- Harris**
Desire 233, 297
Isaac 297
Isabella 231, 232
Mercy (Latham) 297
Robert 231, 232
Sarah 149, 184
Thomas 184
- Harrison**
Fairfax 167
Thomas 168
- Hartshorn**
Elizabeth (Kingsbury) 180
Timothy 180
- Hartshorne**
Miriam (Gregory) 196
- Harvey**
Cornelius B. 315, 316
- Hastings**
Elizabeth (Bright) 253
- Hatch**
Anne (Fisher) 149
Christopher 148
Crowell 85
Deborah (___) 148
Desire 148, 228
Desire (Gorham) 183, 184
Desire (Hawes) 148
Ebenezer 228
Elisha 228
Elizabeth 148, 228
Elizabeth (Holbrook) 228, 288
- Ezekiel 228
Hannah 148, 228
Harris 148
Hawes 148
Isaac 148, 149, 228
Jabez 111, 148
Jeremiah 288
Josiah 148, 183, 184, 228
Lucretia 148
Lucy 148
Lydia 148
Mary 111, 148
Mary (Doty) 183, 228, 289
Mary (Fisher) 111, 148
Samuel 183, 228, 289
Sarah 148, 149
Walter 228, 288
William 148, 288
- Hawes**
Abiel (Gay) 271
Benjamin 229, 290, 291
Daniel 271
Desire 148, 183, 184, 229, 290, 291
Desire (___) 290
Desire (Gorham) 229
Ebenezer 229, 290
Edmund 228, 289, 290
Elizabeth 229, 290
Experience 229, 290, 291
Isaac 229, 290
Jabez 290
John 228, 229, 290
Joseph 229, 290
Mary 229, 290
- Hawkes**
Susannah 238
- Hawkins**
Elizabeth 267
Thomas 324
- Hawley**
Ann (Gregory) 160
Elizabeth 198, 199
Thomas 160
- Heath**
Prudence 227
- Henderson**
Richard 134
- Henry**
Patrick 176
- Henry I, King of England** 286
- Hensley**
Martha Jane 211
- Herden**
Marcus 203
- Heywood**
Louisa 66
- Hill**
Abraham 116, 156, 157, 192, 243, 319
Deborah (Norton) 243, 319
Lydia (Harrington) 193
Rebecca (Cutter) 156, 193
Rhoda 89, 115, 116
Sarah (Cooper) 192, 243, 244
Sarah (Long) 319
Susannah (Wellington) 116, 156, 157
Thomas 115
Tillie J. (Jacob) 80
Zechariah 156, 157, 192, 193, 243, 244, 319
- Hinckley**
Mary (Richards) 299, 300
Sarah 234, 299, 300
Thomas 299, 300, 301
- Hirst**
Elizabeth 230
Mr. Hirst 230
- Hoar**
Jonathan 182
- Hoard**
Governor Hoard 42
- Hobart**
Hannah 322
- Hobbs**
Captain Hobbs 151
- Hodgson**
Anne (___) 298
- Hogue**
Mary 205
William 205
- Holbrook**
Daniel 179, 180, 219
Eleazar 219, 277
Elizabeth 216, 228, 288
Elizabeth (Clark) 179, 180, 219
Hannah (Shephard) 277
Jane (Powys) 288
Jannette (Pattison) (Conyers) 176, 177, 216
Martin 41
Meriam 145, 179, 180
Randall 216
Sarah (Pond) 219, 277
Thomas 277, 279, 288

- Holland**
Sarah 257
- Holmes**
Andrew 143, 144, 178
Nancy 143, 144, 177
Tabitha (Price) 107, 143, 178
William 143, 144, 177
- Holt**
Samuel 177
- Holtzclaw**
B. C. 258
- Holway**
Abraham 153
Barnabas 153
Elizabeth 153
Elizabeth (Copeland) 153
- Honor**
Elizabeth 251, 252
- Hooker**
Henry 60
Joanna 217, 220, 271, 272, 278
Robert 272
- Hooper**
Laura (Kent) 90
- Hornsby**
Daniel 212, 265
- Hosmer**
Joseph 157
Stephen 182
- Hough**
Atherton 287
- Houghton**
Mary 319
- How**
Ezekiel 155
Rebeckah (Curtis) (Ruggles)
154, 155
- Howard**
Simeon 118, 119
Susanna 172
- Howland**
Desire 229, 290, 291
Elizabeth (Tilley) 290, 291
John 290, 291
- Hubbard**
H. 60
Sarah 222
- Hubbell**
Sarah (Seeley) 161
- Hudnall**
Joseph 178
- Hudson**
C. 223
William 295
- Huggins**
Electra 49
- Hughes**
William 52
- Hull**
Ann 266
George 250
Joseph 288
Penelope 266
Sarah 198
Sarah (___) (Phippen) 250
- Hunt**
Abel 310
Nancy 155
Phoebe (Tilton) 310
Samuel 167
- Hunting**
Esther (Seaborn) 278
John 278
Margaret 220, 278
Susan 272
- Huston**
Felix 69, 70
- Hutchinson**
Anne 285, 286
Capt. Hutchinson 295
Edward 280
William 286
- Hyatt**
Deborah 197
- Hyde**
Elizabeth 254
Elizabeth (Fuller) 201, 254
Hannah 254
Job 201, 254
John 201, 254
Jonathan 254
Mary 164, 201, 254
Samuel 254
Sarah 254
Temperance (___) 254
- Inman**
Ralph 150, 186
Susannah (Speakman) 150
- Irvine**
Christopher 133
- Jackson**
Andrew 141, 142
Ann 198
Deborah 160, 197
Deborah (Hyatt) 197
Elizabeth 122, 160, 161, 198, 200
Elizabeth (Sanford) 160, 161, 198
- Elizabeth (Sanford) (Jackson)
160, 161, 198
- Ephraim 198
James 45
John 323
Jonathan \ 52
Joseph 160, 161, 198
Joshua 198
Mary (Godwin) 198
Moses 197
Penina (Gregory) 160
Samuel 160
Sarah 198
- Jacob**
Anne (Cheney) 262, 263
Anne Overton (Fontaine) 78,
106, 140
Annie Overton 42, 44, 80
Benjamin 263
Charity 208
Edwina 44
Elizabeth 263
Evelyn \ 44
Evelyn (Johnson) 44, 79, 80, 107
Jeremiah 208
John 172, 208, 262, 263
John I. 106
John Jeremiah 44, 78, 106, 139,
140
Joseph 263
Lena J. 80
Lucy Donald (Robertson) 78,
106
Mary 208
Mary (Godfrey) 139
Mary (Monk) 106, 138, 139
Mary (Swanson) 172, 208
Matilda 44
Rachel 208
Richard 263
Samuel 263
Susan Maria 79
Susannah 263
Susannah (Jones) 138
Susannah (Unknown) 172
Tillie J. 80
William 106, 138
Zachariah 138, 172, 208
- Jacobus**
Donald Lines 159, 285, 296
- James**
John 216
Thomas 216

Janse

Dina 207, 262

Jefferson

Thomas 97, 112

Jenison

Judith 257

Jenne

Job 188

Jennings

Anne 215

Elizabeth (Seeley) 160, 161

Jane 264

Nehemiah 161

Rebecca 160

Jepson

Anna 189, 303

Apphia (Rolfe) 235

Emm 303

Emm (Unknown) (Coddington)
235, 302, 303

John 189, 235, 302, 303

Ruth 154, 189, 303

Ruth (Gardner) 189, 235, 303

Jewett

Milo 33

Mr. Jewett 252

Johnson

Andrew 40

Anne 211

Benjamin 211, 212

Betsy 215

Charles Lincoln 247

Darwin 79, 106, 107

Edward Anne (Payne) 79, 106,
107

Elizabeth 222, 283

Elizabeth (Cave) 174, 211, 212,
265

Elizabeth (Porter) 283

Evelyn 44, 79, 80, 107

George Ann 107

Isaac 283

James 93, 106, 141, 142

Jemima (Suggett) 141, 174, 175,
213, 214, 215

Joshua J. 83

Mary (Allen) 83

Mildred 211

Nancy (Payne) 106, 141, 142

Rev. Mr. Johnson 121

Richard Mentor 141

Robert 141, 174, 176, 211, 212,
213, 214, 215

Valentine 211, 212

William 174, 211, 212

William Cave 211

Johnston

John 132

Joseph 40

Jones

Alice 208

Alicia 176, 215, 268

Alicia (Samford) (Lunn) 215,
268

Benjamin 172

Charles 268

Edward 215, 267, 268

Hannah 179, 278

Hezekiah 162

John 268

Mary () 268

Mary (Grant) (Noble) 161, 162

Roderick 268

Samford 268

Susan 172

Susannah 138

Thomas 278

William 172

Jordan

Dorcas () 266

James 269

Josephus

Flavius 263

Judson

Esther 219, 276, 277

Mary () (Aldridge) 276, 277

Samuel 276, 277

Keen

Oliver 143

Sanford 143

Kemball

Elizabeth 245, 321

Henry 321

Susanna () 321

Susan (Stone) 321

Kember

Joane 324

Kendall

Elizabeth 309

Kent

Benjamin 51, 57, 89, 91, 115, 116,
156, 192

Eleanor (Bradford) 51, 57, 89,
90, 91, 92

Elouisa 90, 91

Hannah 241

Hannah (Grissell) 192, 241, 314

Isabel 60, 90, 91

John 192, 241, 314

Joseph 156, 192

Josephine Gannett 24, 51, 57, 58,
59, 60, 61, 89, 91, 119

Joshua 241

Laura 90, 91

Mehitabel 192

Rachel 115

Rebecca 115, 192

Rebecca (Adams) 115, 156, 192

Rebecca (Chittenden) 156, 192

Rhoda (Hill) 89, 115, 116

Samuel 89, 115, 156, 192

Sarah 90, 91, 115, 156

Stephen 192

Kimball

Mary 310

King

John 283

Susannah 283

Kingman

Bethia (Newcomb) 297

Desire (Harris) 233, 297

Elizabeth (Edson) 297

John 233, 297

Mary 187, 233, 297

Kingsbury

Arthur Murray 276

Asa 180

Daniel 145, 180

Eleazar 219, 276, 277

Elizabeth 180

Esther (Judson) 219, 276, 277

Joanna 180

Joanna (Guild) 179, 219

John 269

Joseph 180, 276

Meriam 107, 108, 145, 180

Meriam (Holbrook) 145, 179,
180

Millicent () 276

Ruth () 180

Samuel 179, 180, 219

Sarah 180

Seth 145, 179

Solomon 180

Kinman

Bridget 313

Knight

Alexander 293

Knox

Ann (Montgomery) (Logan)

133, 135

James 130, 133, 135

- Lacy**
Sarah (Seeley) 160
Tabatha 160
- Lafayette**
Marquis de 93
- Lamb**
Abiel 282
Judith A. 171
- Lamkin**
George 213
- Lane**
Anne 142, 175, 176
Betty 176
Cherry (Adams) (Stone) (Wellington) 157, 193
Cyowny 214, 269
Hannah 268
Hardage 175, 214, 269
James 175, 176, 193, 214, 268, 269
Jane 176
Joseph 214, 268, 269
Keren Happuch 176
Lydia 176
Lydia (Hardage) 175, 176, 214
Martha (Carr) 214, 268, 269
Martha (Tidwell) 268
Sarah (Hardage) 214
Susan (Whipple) 294
William 214, 268
William Carr 214, 268
- Latham**
Mercy 297
- Lathrop**
John 113
- Lawrence**
Charles 152
- Lawson**
Stephen Martin 201
- Lee**
Abel 207
- Leveret**
John 280
- Lewes**
James 299
- Lewis**
Charles 178
Edward 265, 266
John 133
Joseph 178
Katherine 212, 265, 266
Mary 178
Mary () 265, 266
Thomas 260
- William 178
Zachary 139, 140
- Lide**
Elizabeth () 210
J. H. 34
Robert 210
Sarah 173, 174, 210
- Lillie**
Elizabeth 185
- Lilly**
William 213
- Lincoln**
Abraham 42, 55, 73
Mary (Otis) 109
- Little**
Lucius 205, 259
- Livermore**
Anna 166, 202, 203
Anna (Bridge) 203, 257, 258
Daniel 202, 203, 257, 258
Elijah 97
Grace (Sherman) 252, 258
Hannah 200, 252, 258
Huldah 128, 166
John 252, 258
Mary 201, 321
Mary (Bright) 166, 203
Mary (Coolidge) 257
Mary (Unknown) 202, 203, 257
Samuel 203, 257, 258
Thomas 166, 203, 257
- Lloyd**
Margaret 261
Mary 261
Philemon 261
Thomas 194
- Lock**
Benjamin 156
- Lockwood**
John 107
Samuel D. 102
- Logan**
Abram 102
Ann (Montgomery) 101, 133, 135
Benjamin 98, 101, 133, 169, 207
David 133, 135, 168
Elizabeth 67, 97, 98, 101, 103
Jane (McKinley) 133, 168, 169
John 101
Mary 104, 135, 169
Robert 135
Stephen T. 73
William 97, 135
- Long**
Martha (McCleary) 125
Sarah 319
- Lord**
Abigail 160
Ann (Seeley) 160, 161
Catee 160
Ebenezer 160
Sarah 160
- Loreson**
Abiel (Thornton) (Page) 235
Cornelius 235
- Loring**
Welthian 322
- Lothrop**
Thomas J. 307
- Lott**
Hendrick Pieters 261
- Love**
Elizabeth 171
Nancy 171
- Lovell**
Lydia 217
- Loving**
Adam 207
Dorothy () 207
Edith 207
- Luce**
Hiram 291
- Lumia**
Carol Ann 19
- Lunn**
Alicia (Samford) 215, 268
William 268
- Lusey**
Easter (Sherman) 121
John 121
- Lyon**
Abigail 197
Ann (Tolman) 283
Mary 222, 283
Peter 283
- Maddock**
John 321
Mary (Wellington) 252
- Madison**
Gabriel 141
James 97, 142, 211
- Maiden**
Sarah Finch 207
- Makin**
Joan 249
- Manly**
Rev. Dr. Manly 33

- Mann**
Horace 88
- Manning**
Dorothy () 255, 256
Hannah 202, 255, 256
William 255
- Marsh**
Frances 242, 315, 316
John 315
Mary 233, 234, 298
Sarah (Beal) 298
Theophilus 315
Thomas 298
- Marshall**
John 285
Louis 67
Ruth 296, 297
- Marston**
George W. 24
- Mason**
Ebenezer 179, 218, 274
Elizabeth () 273
Hannah (Clark) 179, 218
John 274
Marjery (Partridge) 218, 273, 274
Robert 273, 274
Tabitha 145, 179
Thomas 218, 273, 274
- Mather**
Increase 246
- Maudesley**
John 251
- Maury**
Mary Ann (Fontaine) 173
- Mauze**
Hester (Conyers) 215
John 215
- May**
John 313
Sarah 240, 313
Sarah (Brewer) 313
- Mayhew**
Jane (Galland) 298, 299
Martha 298, 299
Thomas 298, 299, 318
- Mayo**
Hannah 299, 300
Simeon 117, 119
- McAfee**
Robert B. 97
- McCarty**
Daniel 213, 267
Elizabeth (Pope) (Payne) 267
- McCleary**
Daniel 95, 125, 126, 164
David 125
Elizabeth 125
Jane 125
John 125
Martha 125
Mary 64, 65, 95, 125
Mary (Mulliken) 95, 125, 126, 164
Thomas 125
William 95, 125
- McDonald**
Angus 129
- McDonnell**
James 204
Martha (Hardin) 204
- McHenry**
Barnabas 97, 98, 102
Elizabeth (Smith) 70, 105
John 98, 106
John H. 67
Lydia Ann 67, 101
Martin D. 67, 70, 106, 204, 206, 258
Sarah (Hardin) 101, 102, 133
- McIntosh**
Col. McIntosh 115
- McKee**
Martinette (Hardin) 104
- McKinley**
Benjamin 207
Jane 133, 168, 169
- McLane**
Hannah (Page) 154
- McMahan**
John 131, 167
Rosannah (Hardin) 167
- Merchant**
Ann (Tufts) 89, 90, 116, 117
John 117, 118, 119
Nancy 119
- Meriwether**
Becky (Terrell) 174
- Merriman**
Frances 140
- Merry**
Catherine (Suggett) 214
Mary (Doling) 235, 302
Prettyman 213, 214
Walter 302, 324
- Metcalf**
Elizabeth 179, 217, 218
John 217, 218, 273
- Leonard 60
Mary 220
Mary (Chickering) 217, 218, 273
Michael 273
Sarah () 273
- Metcalf**
Thomas 278
- Middlebrook**
Mary 294
- Middleton**
Hannah (Lane) 268
- Mingey**
Jeffery 269
- Minor**
Nicholas 213
- Minot**
Christopher 149, 150
Francis 113, 150
George 291
George Richards 112, 149, 150
Hannah 49, 85, 86, 87, 113
Hannah (Speakman) 87, 150
Hepzibah (Corlet) 284
James 150, 284
John 150, 229, 291, 292
Jonas Clarke 87, 111, 112, 113, 150
Joseph Graphton 291
Lydia (Butler) 229, 291, 292
Margaret M. 113
Martha (Stocke) 291
Mary 113
Mary (Brown) 184, 185
Mary (Clark) 184, 229, 230
Mary (Dassett) (Biggs) 291
Mary (Speakman) 150
Salley 149
Sarah 87, 113, 150
Sarah (Clarke) 111, 149, 150, 185
Sarah (Wainwright) 149, 184, 185
Speakman (Hannah) 112
Stephen 149, 150, 184, 185, 229
Steven 111
- Mitchell**
Catherine 163, 164
Eleanor () 163, 164
Matthew 249, 250
Moses 162, 163, 164
Sarah 195, 249, 250
Sarah (Wood) 249, 250
William 163, 164
- Mitchum**
Colis 29
Eleanor Bradford (Allen) 3, 22, 27, 28, 29

- Monk**
 Mary 106, 138, 139
 Rachel (Unknown) (Riston) 139, 172
 Renaldo 138, 139, 172
- Montgomery**
 Alexander 169
 Ann 101, 133, 135
 Betsey 169
 Flora 169
 Jane (McKinley) 133
 Jean (Patterson) 135, 169
 John 169
 William 133, 135, 169
- Morehouse**
 Ephraim 121
 Huldah (Sherman) 121
 Mary (Sumners) 198
- Morgan**
 Daniel 129, 130, 131
 John Hunt 40, 41, 42
 John S. 42
 Zacquil 129
- Moriarty**
 G. Andrews 320
- Morris**
 Edward 183, 227
 Elizabeth (Bett) 183
 Grace 147, 183
 Grace (Bett) 183, 227
- Morrison**
 Edward 227
 Prudence (Heath) 227
- Morse**
 Abner 180, 220, 279
 Capt. Morse 144
 Dorcas 218, 274
 Hannah (Phillips) 274
 Hester (Peirce) 319
 John 270
 Joseph 180, 274, 319
 Sarah 243, 244, 319
- Mortimore**
 Dorothy 226, 288
 William 288
- Mosby**
 John S. 42
- Moulton**
 Alice (Chadbourne) (Donnell) 311, 312
 Jeremiah 312
- Mount**
 Elenor (Chambers) 171
 William 138
- Mountfort**
 Benjamin 305
 Edmund 236, 305
 Edward 305
 Elizabeth (Farnum) (Carwithy) 236, 305
 Hannah 154, 189, 190, 236
 Henry 305
 John 189, 236
 Joseph 190
 Mary (Cock) 189, 190, 236
- Muckleroy**
 Elizabeth (___) 266
- Mulhern**
 Katherine Myrick 45, 46
- Mulkey**
 Daniel 107
- Mulliken**
 John 164
 Mary 95, 125, 126, 164
 Mary (Pore) 164
- Mullins**
 Priscilla 323
 Sarah 287
- Murphey**
 Archibald 171
- Muse**
 William 213
- Nachtegal**
 Elizabeth 260
- Nash**
 Ann 119
 Elizabeth (Hardwick) 269
 Hopestill (Bradford) 116, 158, 194
 Joseph 116, 119, 194
- Neal**
 Hannah (Hardin) 167
 James 129, 167
- Nelson**
 William \ 39
- Newcomb**
 Bethia 297
 John 296, 297
 Ruth 233, 296, 297
 Ruth (Marshall) 296, 297
- Nicholas**
 George 98
- Nichols**
 Harry Frederick 118
- Niles**
 Samuel 234
- Noble**
 Aaron 199
- Ann (Ferguson) 94, 124
 Asa 199
 Ephraim 95
 Hannah (Stebbins) 199
 Hannah (Warriner) 199, 251
 Jacob 199
 Jane 31, 64, 65
 Luke 64, 65, 94, 95, 124, 125, 161, 162, 199
 Mary (Grant) 124, 161, 162
 Mary (McCleary) 64, 65, 95, 125
 Moses 124, 161, 162, 199
 Naomi 199
 Reuben 94, 95, 124, 162
 Ruth 199
 Ruth (Wright) 161, 199
 Samuel 199
 Sarah (___) (Dewey) 199
 (___) (Scovett) 124
 Tahan 94, 95, 124
 Thomas 199, 250, 251
- Norman**
 Elizabeth 282
- Norton**
 Deborah 243, 319
 Francis 244, 319
 Mary (Houghton) 319
- Norwood**
 Alice (Donnell) 191, 240
 Caleb 191, 240
 Elizabeth 155, 191
 Elizabeth (Coldam) 240, 311
 Francis 240, 311
 Thomas 311
- Nye**
 Mary (Bourne) 234
- O'Bannion**
 Robert 129
- Odell**
 Abigail (Smith) 197
 Deborah (Smith) 197
 Hannah 160, 197
 Hezekiah 197
 John 197, 198
 Mary (Walker) 197
 William 197
- Offing**
 Margaret 310
- Olmstead**
 Frederick Law 55
- Osborne**
 Thomas 168
- Otis**
 John 299

- Mary 109
- Overton**
- Ann 140, 174, 211
- Anne (Gardiner) 263
- Barbara 211
- Elizabeth 211
- Elizabeth (Garland) (Truhart) 174, 210, 211
- Elizabeth (Waters) 210, 263, 264
- James 174, 210, 211
- John 211
- Margaret (Garland) 210
- Mary 211
- Robert 263, 264
- Samuel 211
- William 210, 211, 263, 264
- Owen**
- Deborah (Parmenter) 187, 233, 234
- Elizabeth (Davis) 297
- Mary 152, 187
- Mary (Unknown) 233, 297
- Nathaniel 187, 233, 297
- William 297
- Pabodie**
- Elizabeth 245, 246, 322
- Elizabeth (Alden) 246, 322, 323
- Isabel (___) 323
- John 323
- Priscilla 193, 194, 246, 322
- William 246, 322, 323
- Packenham**
- Margaret (Topley) 272
- Padlfoot**
- Jonathan 317, 318
- Mary (Blandford) 242, 243, 317, 318
- Page**
- Abiel (Thornton) 189, 235
- Abigail 154
- Abigail (Warner) 114, 154
- Anna (___) 279
- Benjamin 113, 114, 154
- Edward 154, 189, 235, 301, 302
- Elizabeth (Bushnell) 235, 301, 302
- Hannah 154
- Mary 87, 113, 114, 154
- Ruth (Jepson) 154, 189
- William 279
- William Wingfield 154
- Paige**
- Edward 235
- Nicholas 294
- Paine**
- Dorothy 292, 293
- Elizabeth (Burr) 294
- Mr. Paine 317
- Palfrey**
- John Gorman 109
- Palgrave**
- Anne (___) 320
- Mary 245, 320, 321
- Richard 320, 321
- Palmer**
- Elizabeth (Grissell) 242
- Hannah 199
- Josiah 242
- Park**
- Abigail 202, 256
- Abigail (Dix) 256
- Thomas 256
- Parke**
- Theoda 313
- Parker**
- Bethia 191
- Edward 139
- Hannah 155
- Jane (___) 288
- John 288
- Miss Parker 306
- Robert 307
- Thomas 306
- Parkhurst**
- Charles Dyer 296
- Parkman**
- Abigail 158
- Bridger (___) 324
- Dorcas (Bowes) 158, 194
- Elias 247, 324
- Elizabeth 116, 157, 158
- Elizabeth (Adams) 194, 247
- Felipe 247
- Samuel 116, 158, 194, 247
- Sarah (Trask) 247, 324
- William 194, 247, 324
- William Bowes 158
- Parmenter**
- Deborah 187, 233, 234
- Joseph 233, 234, 298
- Leah (Saunders) 298
- Mary (Marsh) 233, 234, 298
- Robert 298
- Parsival**
- John 300
- Mary (Bourne) 300
- Partridge**
- Ebenezer 274
- John 274
- Marjery 218, 273, 274
- William 274
- Patten**
- Nathaniel 319
- Sarah (Morse) (Cooper) 319
- Patterson**
- Elenor (Porter) 169
- Jean 135, 169
- Robert 169, 176
- Pattison**
- Jannette 176, 177, 216
- Payne**
- Alicia (Jones) 176, 215, 268
- Anne 267
- Anne (Jennings) 215
- Anne (Lane) 142, 175, 176
- Ann Holland (Conyers) 142, 175, 176, 177
- Betsy (Johnson) 215
- Betty 267
- Brooke 142, 176, 267
- Edward 142, 143, 175, 176, 177, 215, 267
- Edward Anne 79, 106, 107
- Elizabeth (Pope) 215, 267
- Frances (___) (Clements) 267
- George Rex 144
- Henry 142, 143, 175
- Hugh 107, 143
- James Orlando 107, 142, 144, 175, 177
- Jilson 143
- John 215, 267
- L., Mrs. 263
- Margaret (___) 267
- Mary 267
- Nancy 106, 141, 142
- Orlando F. 144
- Patrick 176
- Sanford 107, 215
- Tabitha (Price) (Holmes) 107, 143
- William 143, 176, 215, 267
- Peck**
- Abigail 118
- Peirce**
- Hester 319
- Perkins**
- Simeon 152
- Perrin**
- Joanna (White) (Ruggles) 190
- Mehetiab (Child) 227
- Noah 190

- Samuel 227
- Peyton**
Valentine 168
- Phillips**
Alice 276
Faith (Clarke) (Doty) 228, 289
Frederick 260
Hannah 274
Irene 29
John 289
Jonathan 257
Sarah (Holland) 257
Theophilus 167
- Phillipse**
Annetje 261
- Phippen**
Benjamin 195, 250
David 195, 250
Eleanor (___) 250
Joseph 250
Judith 201, 254, 255
Mary 195
Rebeckah 159, 195, 250
Sarah (___) 250
Wilmot (Yeo) 195, 250
- Phipping**
Judith (___) 254, 255
William 254, 255
- Phipps**
William 200
- Pidge**
Mary 220, 278, 279, 280
Mary (Sothy) 278
Thomas 278
- Pierce**
Elizabeth 256
Mary 311
Mary (___) 222
Persis 181, 222
Richard 188
Thomas 222
- Pitcher**
Andrew 279
- Plummer**
Susannah 208
- Polhemus**
Hendrik 261
- Polley**
Hannah 190, 238
John 238, 308, 309
Susannah (Bacon) 238, 308
- Pomeroy**
Hannah (Warriner) (Noble) 251
Medad 251
- Pond**
Ann (Edwards) 277
Daniel 277
Sarah 219, 277
- Pope**
Curran 78
Elizabeth 215, 267
Elizabeth (Hawkins) 267
Hannah (Bourne) 300
Humphrey 267
Jemima 213, 266
Jemima (Waddy) 266
John 300
Lawrence 266, 267
Lemuel 188
Matilda 78
Seth 300
- Pore**
Mary 164
- Porter**
Elenor 169
Elizabeth 283
- Potter**
Sarah 239
- Powers**
Joseph Allen 83
- Powys**
Jane 288
- Prather**
Thomas 106
- Pratt**
Deborah 179
- Prentice**
Dorothy 165
Elizabeth (___) 221, 280
Elizabeth (Haley) 181
Elizabeth (Jackson) 200
Elizabeth (Rand) 145, 181
Henry 145, 181, 221, 280, 281, 284
Hepzibah (Dunn) 221
Joane (Unknown) 221, 280, 281, 284
Jonas 115
Joshua 181
Martha 109, 145
Mary 223, 284
Rachel (Kent) 115
Solomon 181, 221
- Prentiss**
Thomas 81
- Preston**
H. Wm. 294
William 134
- Price**
Ann 177
Daniel 177
Daniel Lewis 178
Elizabeth Povall 177
Elvira 178
John 143
Mary (___) 143
Mary (Cock) 177
Robert 143, 177, 178
Tabitha 107, 143, 178
- Probasco**
Jacob 262
Mary (van Leeuvin) 262
- Proctor**
Joseph 236
- Pryor**
W. S. 263
- Putnam**
Elizabeth Anne (Ware) 88
George 88, 89
- Rainsford**
Mary 300
- Rand**
Alice (Sharpe) 281
Elizabeth 145, 181
Persis (Pierce) (Shephard) 181, 222
Robert 281
Sarah (Edenden) 222, 281
Thomas 222, 281
William 181, 222
- Ravens**
Mary 252, 253
- Rawlins**
Mary 307
- Rawson**
Edward 318
- Redfield**
James 197
Sarah 197
Sarah (Smith) 197
- Rees**
Azor 136
Dinah (___) 136
- Remington**
Martha 181, 223
- Revere**
Paul 146
- Reyner**
Humphrey 294
Martha 230, 294
Mary (Middlebrook) 294

Richards

Alice 245, 322
 Edward 272
 Hannah 256
 Mary 217, 272, 299, 300
 Susan (Hunting) 272
 Thomas 322
 Welthian (Loring) 322

Richardson

Amos 230, 231, 295, 296
 Mary (Smith) 230, 231, 295, 296
 Rosell L. 296
 Sarah 185, 230, 231

Richmond

William 322

Rigby

Lewis W. 205

Riston

Edward 139, 172
 Henry 139
 Rachel (—) 139, 172

Robert

John 178

Robertson

Lucy Donald 78, 106

Robinson

Charles Frederick 285

Rodriguez

Maria 11

Rodriquez

Maria 10

Rogers

Abigail 318, 319
 Anna (Churchman) 322
 Anne (Johnson) 211
 Elizabeth (Pabodie) 245, 246, 322
 Elizabeth (Snow) 246
 Hannah 193, 245, 246
 Hannah (Hobart) (Browne) 322
 John 245, 246, 322
 Joseph 228
 Martah (Cobham) (Browning) 322
 Priscilla 253
 Robert 151
 Thomas 246
 William 211
 William Barton 55

Rolfe

Anna 235, 303
 Apphia 235
 Benjamin 235
 Henry 303

Honour (—) 303

John 303, 320

Mary (Scullard) 320

Rebecca 192, 244, 320

Rollins

Sarah Finch (Maiden) 207

Romer

Col. Romer 231

Roper

Elizabeth 239, 310, 311
 Susan (—) 310, 311
 Walter 310, 311

Rosaboom

Garret 261

Rose

George Stearns 97
 Hannah (Stearns) (Bond) 97
 Zebedee 66, 97

Rosiljel

Lysbeth 260

Roundy

Alice 276

Rouse

Elizabeth (Doty) 228, 289
 John 228, 289

Rowe

Hannah (Speakman) 150
 John 150, 186

Royce

John 261

Ruggles

Abigail (Davis) (Williams) 240
 Anna (Bright) 253, 306
 Edward 240
 Hannah (Fowle) 236, 306
 Joanna (White) 154, 190, 238
 Joseph 114, 154, 190, 238
 Julia Fellows 51, 88
 Martha (Dudley) 307
 Martha (Woodbridge) 190, 236, 237
 Mary (Curtis) 306
 Mary (White) 237, 238
 Nathaniel 88, 114, 115, 155
 Rebeckah (Curtis) 114, 154, 155
 Sally (Fellows) 88, 155
 Samuel 190, 236, 237, 287, 306
 Sarah (Fellows) 88, 114, 115
 Thomas 306
 Timothy 238

Russell

Flora 169
 Henry S. 53, 54
 Jonathan 299

Joseph 169

Rust

John 239
 Sarah (Potter) 239

Rutter

Capt. Rutter 139

Sabin

Abigail 271
 Benjamin 271
 Elizabeth 271
 Experience 271
 Hannah 178, 216, 217, 271
 Hezekiah 271
 James 271
 John 271
 Joseph 271
 Margaret 271
 Martha (Allen) 217, 271
 Mary 271
 Mary (Wright) 216, 217, 271
 Mehitabel 271
 Noah 271
 Patience 271
 Samuel 271
 Sarah 271
 William 216, 217, 270, 271

Saltonstall

Nathaniel 257
 Richard 257

Samford

Alicia 215, 268
 James 268
 Mary (—) 268

Samson

Simeon 152

Samuel

Giles 101
 Reuben 101

Sanders

Robert Stuart 132

Sanderson

Esther 128

Sandford

Elizabeth (Spence) 266
 Jemima 266

Sanford

Elizabeth 160, 161, 198
 Ezekiel 198
 Rebecca (Wakelee) 198

Sanger

D. 116

Sargent

Christopher 125

- Sassamon**
John 270
- Satterwhite**
Ann (Price) 177
- Saunders**
Elizabeth (Norwood) 155, 191
John 191
Leah 298
Ned 256
- Savage**
James 53, 54, 238, 273, 283, 316
- Savill**
Sarah (Mullins) (Gannett) 287
William 287
- Scant**
Joanna 251
- Schenk**
Mary (Volkerts) 261
Peter 261
- Schouiwtten**
Jenneke 261
- Scott**
Robert W. 102
- Scovett**
Mrs. Scovett 124
- Scullard**
Mary 320
- Seaborn**
Esther 278
- Sealis**
Hannah 283
- Searle**
Nathaniel 322
- Sears**
M. 60
- Seaver**
Elizabeth 239, 309
Elizabeth (Ballard) 309
Robert 309
- Sebree**
Mildred (Johnson) 211
- Seeley**
Abigail 160, 197
Ann 160, 161
Catee 160
Catharine 122, 123
Catharine Jane 63, 93, 94
Daniel 122
Deborah (Gregory) 160
Elizabeth 160, 161
Elizabeth (Jackson) 122, 160, 161, 198
Ephraim 160, 161
Ezra 160, 161
- Hannah (Bennett) 197
Hannah (Odell) 160, 197
Hezekiah 161
James 198
Jemima 160
Nathan 160
Nathaniel 122, 160, 161, 197, 198
Robert 249
Samuel 94, 122, 124, 160, 161
Sarah 160, 161
Sarah (Silliman) 94, 122, 123, 160
Titus 123
- Sessions**
Milton P. 3
- Sewall**
Abigail (___) (Woodmancey) (Tilley) 232
George 293
Philippa 230, 293
Samuel 185, 190, 230, 231, 232, 237, 252, 295, 298, 317
Sarah (___) 293
- Shaler**
Harace William 51
- Shapleigh**
Catherine 312
- Sharp**
Benjamin 170
Hannah (Fulkerson) 170
Robert 238
Susanah (White) 238
- Sharpe**
Alice 281
- Shattuck**
Mary 201, 254
Susannah (___) 254
William 254
- Shaw**
Robert Gould 53, 54
- Sheers**
Mary 307
- Shelby**
Evan 129
Isaac 98
- Sheldon**
Isaac 251
Mary (Woodford) 251
Ruth 199, 251
- Shephard**
Hannah 277
John 222
Persis (Pierce) 181, 222
- Sherman**
Abigail (Walker) 121, 159
Abijah 94, 121
Annie 3, 15
Annie Hardin 1, 80
Benjamin 159, 195
Betty 3
Catharine Jane (Seeley) 63, 93, 94
Charles Austen 94
Desire (Doty) 228, 289
Easter 121
Edmund 249
Eleanor 8, 9, 10
Elizabeth 15
Elizabeth Evelyn 1
Eliza (Dewey) 36, 37, 38
Enoch 63, 93, 95, 107, 121, 123
Enoch S. 31
Enos 121, 159, 195, 196
Evelyn 45
Evelyn Johnson (Hardin) 1, 15, 18, 19, 80, 140
Frederick Sterling ii, 1, 8, 9, 10, 13, 14, 15, 17, 37
Grace 252, 258
Henry 15
Henry Lancey 15
Hulda 121
Isaac 93, 94, 121
Jane (Noble) 31, 64, 65
Joan (Makin) 249
John 249, 252
Josiah 93, 121, 160
Josiah Beach 121
Mary (Phippen) 195
Mary Ware (Allen) 3, 4, 5, 7, 9, 10, 27, 29
Miriam 121
Miriam (Gregory) 93, 121, 122, 160
Nathaniel 195
Rebeckah (Phippen) 159, 195
Roger 93
Samuel 15, 95, 195, 249
Samuel Sterling 1, 2, 7, 8, 9, 31, 32, 35, 37, 38, 63
Sarah (Mitchell) (Butterfield) 195, 249, 250
Seeley 94
Sterling 31, 63, 64, 94
Walker 93, 121
William Tecumseh 41

Shipp

Laban 211

Shirley

William 125, 164

Shryock

Gideon 102

Sillaven

Mary 159, 196

Silliman

Ann 122, 161

Bigadier General 122

Catherine 123, 161

Daniel 123, 161

Isaac 161

Joseph 161

Justus 161

Mary 161

Mary (Sumners) (Morehouse)
198

Rhoda 161

Robert 161, 196, 198

Ruth 161

Ruth (Treadwell) 161, 198

Sarah 94, 122, 123, 160, 161

Sarah (Burr) 123, 161

Sarah (Hull) 198

Simmons

David A. 115

Simonds

Elizabeth 128, 165

James 201

Joseph 165, 201, 202

Judith (Phippen) (Haieward)
201, 254, 255

Mary (Tidd) 165, 201, 202

Sarah () 254

William 201, 254, 255

Skiff

James 300

Mary () 300

Patience 234, 300

Slaughter

Gabriel 98

Smith

Abigail 197, 234

Abigail (Lyon) 197

Abraham 69

Abram 38, 75

Alfred Cox 39

Alice 296

Asa 107, 108, 145, 179, 180

Betsy 105

Charles 213

Daniel 179

Deborah 197

Deborah (Jackson) 160, 197

Deborah (Pratt) 179

Dolly 45, 78

Eleanor 197

Eleanor (Fulkerson) 75, 104, 105

Elisha 144

Elizabeth 69, 70, 77, 105

Elizabeth (Suggett) 213

Elizabeth (Turner) 218

Elizabeth (Unknown) 218, 274

Esther 122, 159, 160, 197

George 105, 136, 213

Henry 145, 179, 218, 274

Horace 75, 104, 105, 136, 137

Horace, Mrs. 69

Jane 136

John 197, 274, 275, 296

Kirby 39

Lemuel 69, 77

Mary 230, 231, 295, 296, 313

Mary (Adams) 179

Mary (Logan) 104, 169

Mary (Unknown) 104, 136, 137

Meriam (Kingsbury) 107, 108,
145, 180

Moses 145

Rebecca 197

Richard 184, 281, 295, 296

Ruth 81, 107, 108

Ruth (Barber) 145, 179

Samuel 160, 179, 197, 218, 275

Sarah 105, 197

Sarah (Clarke) (Bowers) 179, 218

Sarah Ellen 38, 67, 71, 75, 76,
102, 104

Sarah (Frost) 197

Seth 274, 275

Sybil (Hamant) 144

Thomas 104, 136, 137

Turner 136, 137

Smock

John 136

Snow

Elizabeth 246

Solomon

Bettie 104

Somes

Abigail 310

Elizabeth (Kendall) 309

John 310

Joseph 310

Morris 309

Patience 239, 309

Sortor

Jacob 136

Sothy

Mary 278

Speakman

Gilbert 149

Gilbert Warner 150

Hannah 87, 112, 150

Hannah (Hackerel) 150, 186

Mary 150, 233

Mary (Warner) 112, 113, 150, 151,
187, 233

Salley (Minot) 149

Sarah (Minot) 150

Susannah 150

Thomas 113, 150, 186, 187, 233

William 150, 186, 187, 233

Speed

Henry 75, 105

Spence

Elizabeth 266

Jemima 174, 175, 213, 266

Jemima (Pope) 213, 266

Mary 266

Patrick 213, 266

Penelope (Youell) 266

Youell 266

Spencer

Edward 212

Spotswood

Alexander 213

Sprague

Abigail (Tufts) 118

Ebed 118

Waldo Chamberlain 234, 298

Springer

Charles 98

Jonathan 236

Stacy

Marjery (Partridge) (Mason)
273, 274

Susanna 294

Stalham

Elizabeth 312

Standish

Miles 270

Stanley

Josiah M. 81

Stanton

Secretary Stanton 53

St. Clair

Gen. St. Clair 131

Stearns

Abigail (Fiske) 165, 202

- Dorothy (Prentice) 165
 Esther (Sanderson) 128
 George Washington 128
 Hannah 66, 96, 97
 Hannah (Bemis) 96, 97, 128, 166
 Hannah (Manning) 202, 255, 256
 Isaac 255
 John 165, 202
 Josiah 128, 165
 Mary (Barker) 255
 Mary (Bowman) 165
 Phineas 96, 97, 128, 255
 Samuel 202, 255, 256
 Susanna 66
 Susannah (Ball) 128, 165
- Stebbins**
 Hannah 199
- Stephenson**
 Margaret 290
- Sterling**
 David 124
 Ephraim 63, 124, 160
 Hannah (Odell) (Seeley) 160, 197
 Jacob 160, 197
 Sarah (Silliman) (Steeley) 123
- Stetson**
 Robert 314
- Stocke**
 Martha 291
- Stone**
 Cherry (Adams) 157, 193
 Jonathan 193
 Susan 321
- Stonestreet**
 Ann (___) 138
 James 138
- Straight**
 Elizabeth 193, 245, 321
 Elizabeth (Kemball) 245, 321
 Susanna 321
 Thomas 245, 321
- Strong**
 Ruth (Sheldon) (Wright) 251
 Samuel 251
- Stryker**
 Gertje (van Leeuvin) 262
 John 262
- Stuart**
 Sarah (Fulkerson) 171
- Suggett**
 Bernie 265
- Catherine 214
 Edgecomb 212
 Elizabeth 213
 Frances (Baylis) 265
 James 174, 175, 212, 214, 265, 266
 Jemima 141, 174, 175, 213, 214, 215, 266
 Jemima (Spence) 174, 175, 213, 266
 John 212, 213, 214, 265
 Katherine (Lewis) (Deeke) 212, 265, 266
 Mary (___) 212
 Sarah (Edgecombe) 212, 265
 Thomas 212, 265
- Sulzer**
 Pam 177
- Summers**
 Francis 214
 Sarah (Hardage) (Lane) 214
 Sarah (Hardwick) 269
- Sumner**
 Increase 114
 Senator 55
- Sumners**
 Mary 198
- Sutton**
 David 138
 Dinah (Fulkerson) 138
 John 213
- Swanson**
 Francis 208
 Mary 172, 208
 Susannah (Plummer) 208
- Swift**
 Obadiah 281, 282
- Swigert**
 Jacob 70
- Taft**
 William Howard 17
- Talbert**
 Charles Gano 133
- Terrell**
 Ann (Overton) 140, 174, 211
 Barbara Overton 106, 139, 140
 Becky 174
 Richard 174
 Richmond 140, 174, 210, 263
 Samuel 174
- Thatcher**
 Col. Thatcher 156
- Thayer**
 Deborah 183, 226
- Dorothy (Mortimore) 226, 288
 Jane (___) (Parker) 288
 Katherine (___) 288
 Nathaniel 288
 Richard 226, 288
 Thomas 226, 288
- Theodosia**
 Conyers 216
- Thomas**
 Lewis 129, 133
 Mary (Davies) 133
 Miriam (Sherman) 121
 Samuel 121
- Thompson**
 Elizabeth 304, 305
 Mary 312
- Thornton**
 Abiel 189, 235
 Mary (Doling) (Merry) 235, 302
 Rebecca 302
 Robert 235, 302
- Thorpe**
 Elvira (Price) 178
 William 178
- Thurston**
 Elizabeth (Whiting) 140
 John 220, 279
 Mary (Wood) 220, 279
 Sarah (Wood) 279
- Tidd**
 John 201, 255
 Margaret (Greenleaf) 255
 Mary 165, 201, 202
 Rebecca (Wood) 201, 255
- Tidwell**
 Martha 268
- Tilley**
 Abigail (___) (Woodmancey) 232
 Elinor 232
 Elizabeth 290, 291
 Grace 150, 185, 186
 Isabella (___) 185, 186
 Isabella (Harris) 231, 232
 John 231, 232
 William 185, 186, 231
- Tilton**
 Deborah (Batchelder) 239
 Phoebe 310
- Tinker**
 Alice (Smith) 296
 John 295
- Tinkham**
 Hannah (Hatch) 228

Todd

David 143
Levi 176

Tolman

Ann 283

Tomlinson

William 213

Topley

Margaret 272

Topliffe

Clemt 309
Patience 190, 239
Patience (Somes) 239, 309
Samuel 239, 309, 310
Sarah (___) 309

Torrey

Clarence Almond 273
Mary 240, 313
Mary (Smith) 313
Philip 313

Townsend

Lydia 296

Trask

Sarah 247, 324
Sarah (___) 324
William 324

Treadwell

Beulah (Gregory) 196
Edward 198
Gilead 196
Mary (Turney) 198
Ruth 161, 198

Treworgy

Catherine (Shapleigh) 312
James 312
Lucy 311

Truhart

Elizabeth (Garland) 174, 210, 211

Truman

Alexander 132

Tryon

General Tryon 122

Tubbs

Marcy (___) 323
William 323

Tucker

Elizabeth 222

Tufts

Abigail 118
Abigail (Peck) 118
Ann 89, 90, 116, 117
Betsey 117, 118, 119
Eliza 118
Hannah 118

John 118

Lydia 118

Mary 116, 118, 119, 120

Mildred 117, 118

Tupp

Anne (___) (Hodgson) 298

Tupper

Bethia 299
Eldad 299
Eliakim 299
Elizabeth 113, 152, 153
Elizabeth (Bacon) 188, 234
Elizabeth (Gifford) 234
Ichabod 299
Israel 152, 153, 188, 234, 299
Martha (Mayhew) 298, 299
Mary (Bourne) 152, 153, 188, 234
Medad 299
Nathan 188
Samuel 299
Thomas 188, 234, 298, 299
Ward 188

Turberville

George 214

Turner

Elizabeth 218

Turney

Mary 198

Tuttle

Abigail 189, 235, 236
Joan (Antrobus) 304
John 304
Sarah (Cogswell) 235, 236, 304, 305
Simon 235, 236, 304

Upham

Lieutenant Upham 283

Upshall

Dorothy (Capen) 305, 306
Nicholas 305, 306
Susannah 236, 305, 306

Vanarsdalen

Cornelius 137

Van Brunt

Charles 60

Vane

Henry 286

van Leeuvin

Analche 262
Dina 170, 207, 262
Dina (Janse) 207, 262
Elizabeth 262
Frederick 262
Frederick Hendricksen 207, 262

Gertje 262

Henry 262

John 262

Mary 262

Vannoy

Jane 137

van Wicklin

Elizabeth (van Leeuvin) 262
Evert 262

Varnum

Gen. Varnum 194

Vinal

Ann (___) 314
Martha 242, 314
Mary 314
Steven 314

Vincent

Philip 293

Volkerts

Deborah 261
Dirck 261, 262
Geertje (Zynietse) 261
Hannah 261
Jenneke (Schouiwten) 261
Maria (de Witt) 261, 262
Mary 261
Nicholas 261
Philip 261

Volkertsen

Dirck 170
Neeltje (Unknown) 170

Waddy

Jemima 266

Wade

Joseph 173, 174, 210
Robert 210
Sarah 139, 173, 174, 210
Sarah (Lide) 173, 174, 210

Wainwright

Francis 185, 230, 293
Philippa (Sewall) 230, 293
Sarah 149, 184, 185
Sarah (Whipple) 185, 230

Wakelee

Rebecca 198

Wakeman

Catherine 198, 199
Elizabeth (Hawley) 198, 199
Joseph 198, 199
Samuel 122
Sarah 161

Wales

Mary 282

Walker

Abigail 121, 159
 Abigail (Butler) (Crane) 159, 196
 Elizabeth (Wheeler) 196
 Jacob 159, 196
 Mary 197
 Samuel 159, 196

Walworth

Clara Grant 41
 Clarence 77
 Ellen (Hardin) 19
 Ellen Hardin 19, 41
 Frank 42
 John 130
 Johnnie 39
 Mansfield Tracy 128
 Reuben Hyde 39, 77
 Sarah Ellen (Smith) (Hardin)
 76, 77

Ward

Andrew 249
 Butler Etter 11
 Goodman 318

Wardell

James 292

Ware

Abigail 220
 Benjamin 220
 Dorothy (Badcock) (Wood)
 220, 221
 Duty (slave) 180
 Ebenezer 278
 Edmond 101
 Eleazar 180
 Elezer 220
 Elizabeth Anne 88
 Elizabeth (Bowes) 109
 Emma F. 221
 Ephraim 278
 Hanah 220
 Hannah (Jones) 278
 Hannah (Wood) 145, 180
 Henry 46, 83, 109, 110
 Joanna (Gay) (Whiting) 180,
 220
 John 109, 145, 180, 220, 221, 271,
 278
 Joseph 145, 180, 220
 Lucy (Clark) 278
 Lucy Clark 45, 81, 83, 88, 110
 Margaret (Hunting) 220, 278
 Martha (Prentice) 109, 145
 Mary 220
 Mary (Clark) 83, 109, 110

Mary (Metcalf) 220
 Mary (Otis) (Lincoln) 109
 Mehetebell 220
 Moses 220
 Robert 220, 278, 317
 Samuel 278
 William 109, 220

Warner

Abigail 114, 154, 189
 Abigail (Tuttle) 189, 235, 236
 Daniel 235, 304
 Elizabeth (Denne) 304
 Gilbert 150, 151, 186, 187
 Hannah (Mountfort) 154, 189,
 190, 236
 John 304
 Mary 113, 150, 151, 187, 189, 233
 Mercy 304
 Nathaniel 154, 189, 190
 Philemon 189, 235, 236, 304
 Sarah (Dane) 235, 304
 Sarah (Wass) 151, 186, 187
 Seth 94
 William 189

Warren

Elizabeth (Crowe) 199
 John 199
 Mary 161, 162, 199
 William 199

Warriner

Hannah 199, 251
 Joanna (Scant) 251
 William 251

Warwick

Earl of Warwick 313

Washington

George 109, 110, 130, 131, 156,
 166, 176

Wass

Alice (Unknown) 232, 296
 Ann (Wilmot) 187, 232, 233, 296
 Elizabeth (___) 233
 John 186, 187, 232, 233, 296
 Katherine (___) 296
 Sarah 151, 186, 187
 Thomas 232, 296
 Walter Preston 296
 Wilmot 233

Wasser

Mary (Coffin) (Adams) 324
 William 324

Waters

Ann (___) 263, 264
 Elizabeth 210, 263, 264

John 261
 Lydia 128, 166, 167, 168, 205
 Mary (Lloyd) 261
 Philemon 167, 168, 205
 Richard 261
 Rosa (Wickliffe) 168, 205
 Samuel 263, 264
 Thomas 168, 205, 261
 Thomas Franklin 37

Waugh

David 216

Wayne

Anthony 131

Webb

Giles 265
 John 185

Webster

Daniel 73, 88

Weddle

Henry Headley 22
 Joseph 22
 Sybil (Gage) 22

Weld

Deborah 182
 Dorothy 313
 Dorothy (Whiting) 313
 Edmund 286
 Eleazar 85, 110, 111, 147, 148
 Elizabeth 285
 Elizabeth (Chamberlain) 147
 Elizabeth (Devotion) 182
 Elizabeth (Wise) 225, 285, 286
 Hannah/Anna 50
 Hannah/Anna Minot 46, 49, 50
 Hannah (Minot) 49, 85, 86, 87,
 113
 Hannah (Speakman) 112
 John 182, 225, 226, 227
 Joseph 110, 147, 148, 182, 183,
 225, 240, 241, 285, 286
 Margaret (Bowen) 182, 225, 226
 Margaret M. 87
 Martha (Child) 110, 147
 Mary (Hatch) 111
 Prince (slave) 111
 Sarah 191, 240, 241
 Sarah (Faxon) 182, 183, 240, 241
 Thomas 285, 313
 Thomas Swan 87
 William Fletcher 85
 William Gordon 49, 85, 87, 113

Welles

Arnold 112

Wellington

Anna (Bridge) (Livermore) 258
Benjamin 321
Cherry (Adams) (Stone) 157, 193
Elizabeth (Straight) 193, 245
John 321
Joseph 193, 245, 321
Mary 252
Mary (Palgrave) 245, 320, 321
Oliver 258, 321
Palgrave 321
Roger 245, 320, 321
Sarah () 245
Susannah 116, 156, 157
Thomas 157, 193

Wheeler

Elizabeth 196
Rebecca 196

Wheelock

Eleazar 144, 277
Elizabeth (Fuller) 277
Mary 219, 277
Mary (Chenery) 277

Whipple

Elizabeth (Burr) (Paine) 294
John 230, 294
Joseph 294
Martha (Reyner) 230, 294
Matthew 294
Sarah 185, 230, 294
Susan 294
Susanna (Clark) 294
Susanna (Stacy) 294

White

Alice (Donnell) (Norwood) 240
Ann 237, 238
Benjamin 190, 237, 238, 307
Dorothea 29
Edward 238
Elizabeth 238
Frances (Unknown) 237, 307
Joanna 154, 190, 238
John 237, 240, 307
Joseph 237, 307
Mary 237, 238, 307
Susannah 238
Susanna (Unknown) 190, 237, 238

Whitefield

George 182

Whiting

Dorothy 313
Elizabeth 140, 285
Joanna (Gay) 180, 220

Nathaniel 220

Samuel 122, 285

Whitmore

John 320
Rebecca (Rolfe) (Cutter) 320

Wickliffe

Charles 167
Lydia 258
Lydia (Hardin) 167
Martin Hardin 167
Mary (Hardin) 167
Robert 167
Rosa 168, 205

Wightman

Elizabeth 281

Wilkinson

James 130, 132

Willard

Capt. Willard 310
WillardMaj. 281
WillardSamuel 181

Willett

Thomas 270

William \

286

Williams

Abigail (Davis) 191, 240
Anne 280
Bethia (Parker) 191
Debra 280
Dorothy (Weld) 313
Eleazer 240
Elizabeth 155, 191, 240, 280
Elizabeth () 280
Elizabeth (Stalham) 312
Elizabeth (Williams) 155, 191
John 155, 191, 240, 280
Jonathan 240
Joseph 191, 240
Mary 240, 279, 280
Nancy (Hunt) 155
Nicholas 312
Robert 279, 280, 312
Samuel 240, 279, 280, 313
Sarah 115, 155, 191, 240
Sarah (May) 240, 313
Sarah (Weld) 191, 240, 241
Sarah (Wise) 240, 312
Stephen 240
Steven 279, 312
Theoda (Parke) 313
William 168, 192

Willis

William 97

Williston

Rachel 234, 235, 300, 301
Thomas 301

Wilmot

Ann 187, 232, 233, 296
Richard 232, 233, 296

Wilson

Josiah 98
Richard 313

Winchester

Elhanan 283
Hannah 181, 222
Hannah (Sealis) 283
John 283
Josiah 222, 283
Mary (Lyon) 222, 283

Wingfield

Elizabeth (Greenough) 154
William 154

Winslow

John 151, 166, 192
Josiah 270

Winsor

Frederick 51
Justin 292

Winston

Isaac 139
Mary Ann (Fontaine) 139

Winter

Hannah 244, 320
Hannah (Cutler) 320
John 320

Winthrop

John 286, 295, 302, 318

Wise

Elizabeth 225, 285, 286
Joseph 312
Mary (Thompson) 312
Sarah 240, 312

Wiswall

Ebenezer 323
Elizabeth (Unknown) 246, 323
Enoch 323
Ichabod 193, 194, 246
Isabel () 323
Isabel (Barbage) (Farmer) 323
Noah 323
Priscilla 157, 193, 194, 246
Priscilla (Pabodie) 193, 194, 246
Thomas 246, 322, 323

Wood

Abiel 153
Abigail 279
Anna () (Page) 279

- Bethia 221, 279, 280
 Dorothy (Badcock) 180, 220, 221, 280
 Eleazar 180, 220, 221, 279, 280
 Hannah 145, 180, 279
 Hannah (Badcock) 221
 Jonathan 220, 221, 279
 Mary 220, 279, 322
 Mary (Daniel) 221
 Mary (Pidge) 220, 278, 279, 280
 Mary (Williams) 279, 280
 Mehetable 279
 Nicholas 220, 221, 278, 280
 Rebecca 201, 255
 Sarah 249, 250, 279
- Woodbridge**
 John 236, 237, 306, 307
 Martha 190, 236, 237, 307
 Mercy (Dudley) 236, 237, 306, 307
- Woodfield**
 Ester 315
- Woodford**
 Mary 251
- Woodmancey**
 Abigail (___) 232
- Worthington**
 John Tolley 77
- Wright**
 Abigail (Butler) (Crane) (Walker) 159, 196
 Alice (Roundy) 276
 Benoni 251
 Elizabeth (Burt) 251
 Joseph 199, 251, 278
 Mary 216, 217, 219, 271, 276
 Richard 271
 Ruth 161, 199
 Ruth (Sheldon) 199, 251
 Samuel 196, 251
 Thomas 276
- Wulfeck**
 Dorothy Ford 258, 259
- Wyeth**
 Sarah 256
- Yates**
 Richard 74
- Yeo**
 Wilmot 195, 250
- Yorke**
 Dorothy 306, 307
- Youell**
 Penelope 266
- Young**
 Joshua 54
- Zynieltse**
 Geertje 261



CALIFORNIA GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY AND LIBRARY

